GUEST FAMILY HISTORY

VOLUME II

Part B

MATERNAL HERITAGE

Family Extension Edition

Found within this book are documents and life stories of family members according to their relationship to the researcher who are his matrilineal ancestors Hay/Simmie, McArdle, Orsino, Mirabella, and Hallifax. Included are the similar authentic materials for more matrilineal ancestors enjoyed beyond the earliest listed within the College of Arms Hallifax registered pedigree, Ms 7D 14/45, 16th December, 1788.

Researcher and author:

John Lindsay Robert Guest
M.Bus, Grad Dip IR/HRM, B.Ed, B.A.

24th September, 2024

GUEST FAMILY HISTORY

VOLUME II

MATERNAL HERITAGE

Found within this book are documents and life stories of family members according to their relationship to the researcher who are his matrilineal ancestors Hay/Simmie, McArdle, Orsino, Mirabella, and Hallifax. Included are the similar authentic materials for more matrilineal ancestors enjoyed beyond the earliest listed within the College of Arms Hallifax registered pedigree, Ms 7D 14/45, 16th December, 1788.

Researcher and author:

John Lindsay Robert Guest
M.Bus, Grad Dip IR/HRM, B.Ed, B.A.

24th September, 2024

COPYRIGHT STATEMENT

John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) of Melbourne, the writer and researcher of this work, and creator of the companion website to this study, the Guest Family Trove, states he has complied with the copyright protection given to others by the Australian Commonwealth Copyright Act 1968 and decisions made by courts.

As the creator of this book, the researcher is genuinely using materials sourced from others, to educate himself, his immediate family and other Guest family members, as well for the enjoyment of other interested person(s) wanting to learn more about the history of the Guest family of Melbourne, Australia to Tewkesbury, England, and the parent stock it sprung from.

All sources are attributed to those who created them, or made available by in the public domain by credible authorities the Crown relies.

All materials sourced was through the researcher's compliance to the 'fair dealing' provisions of the Australian Copyright Act 1968. These thresholds are very generous and no threshold has been breached.

Further, as the copyright owner of the work (Volume I, II and III as a series), John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-), has not transferred any or all of these rights to users or a third party, although he is permitted under Copyright law to do so.

In respect to other books in the series, and the Guest Family Trove, also known colloquially as the Guest family website, and any other future technological creations are further protected by Copyright law.

The researcher understands that generally copyright lasts for 70 years after the death of the creator or 70 years after the first publication. In this study the writer and researcher, states he has also not knowingly breached any personal privacy issue and if found that he has, he is pleased to redact or remove any information promptly.

When the researcher expires, his copyright for the foresaid creations shall pass to his son, Robert John Guest (1982-) of Melbourne, Victoria, and subsequently thereafter, his heirs.

.

ISBN: 978-0-6486183-1-7

This page is intentionally left blank.

INTENDED READERSHIP

The intended audience of this Guest family study is not limited to curious present family members, or those of future rising generations, but may extend to prospect family members, either bearing the Guest surname, or other readers who suspect a maternal connection to the Guest family.

Matrilineal bloodlines by surname within this book, include, but are not limited to Hay, McArdle, Orsino, Mirabella, Hay/Simmie-Justice-Mclean; and the ancient Hallifax matrilineal bloodline flowing down into the Hay line, before Guest.

These bloodlines are enjoyed by the researcher, John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-), his son, Robert John Guest (1982-), and his sons, Harris Robert Guest (2018-) and Levi John Guest (2020-). They are equally enjoyed by the researcher's cousins Hay and Hanley; and further by cousins by various degree, Paul, Lillee, Matherson, Powell, and Halifax, and all of their offspring.

The matrilineal lineages flowing to Harris and Levi Guest of Melbourne submitted in this Volume II were validated by the Crown, by Mr Grant Bavister, Officer in Waiting, College of Arms, former Assistant Head of the Crown's Office (2006-2018), and Officer of Arms, College of Arms, Lawyer and Peerage Law expert.

To make easy quick reference to a particular person of interest, a table of names is located at the back of each volume, combined the two volumes form a "Who's Who of the Guest family" directory, so to speak.

The genealogical continuity records within this volume accord with those the Crown relies upon for a person to prove their ancestry (Refer Crown's advisors of proving ancestry - F.B. Palmer, 1907, pp 235-240, Peerage Law in England: A Practical Treatise for Lawyers and Laymen, refer also Gadd, R, P, 1985, pp 140-144, Peerage Law).

This page is intentionally left blank.

EDITORIAL METHOD

In this Volume II, the great variations in spelling and usage found amongst family documents created by authorities and historians for centuries and as far back as the Norman conquest, posed certain editorial challenges.

On the principle that the main purpose of this study is to make the content accessible, whilst preserving the general idiom of the original record(s), the compromise solution adopted in the main is as follows: spelling and punctuation have largely been modernised, except for surnames in which they appear in records, including the variation found within documents attributed to a specific individual, i.e., Amelia, Emelia, or Hallifax, Halifax, or misspelling Hallifox, and similar for place names.

The same is the case for selected place names, where an older form was judged worthy of record. Elsewhere, selected words and expressions also retain their original phrasing and orthography.

This page is intentionally left blank.

THE PEOPLES OF AUSTRALIA & OTHER LANDS

The researcher's Guest family acknowledges the first indigenous people of Australia; and pays respect to Elders past, present and emerging, and celebrate the continuation of cultural, spiritual and educational practices of Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander peoples.

The same respect is intended for other indigenous peoples of other lands Guest family members cited within also settled and their faith in whatever form that may take.

Acknowledged further are the Guest original immigrants to the colonies of Australia from various places in Britain, and also from Sicily.

In this personal genealogical study of the researcher's own family heritage, no disrespect whatsoever is intended, whether read by others being explicit or implied, to any other peoples.

The researcher's family history written across Volume I, II and III, is intended to pay respect to the researcher's lineal ancestors, their toil and their memory as amongst Australia's earliest free settlers, and that of the researcher's early adventurer Guest family of Ireland and his indigenous Irish lineal ancestors more generally (refer also Volume 1).

This page is intentionally left blank.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

In preparation of this most interesting, evidence-based trace ascending, taking examiners back beyond a millennium, to which no template for presentation of the research produced was available, or could possibly be referred, gratitude goes to many who have assisted me over a long and sustained period.

Gratitude first goes to Sir Thomas Woodcock, the former Garter Principal King of Arms, and Mr Grant Bavister, Officer at the College of Arms. They both gave so freely and generously their time and sage advice over a sustained period from 2018-2024.

I also thank Professor Turi King from the University of Leicester. Her patience in explaining the meaning of the genetic science results of my DNA test, as well as the strengths and shortfalls that DNA testing has for a mixed male-female bloodline trace.

Professor King's encouragement for the researcher to pursue mixed research to retore the identities of family members was insightful. So too was her advice for the researcher to continue with the traditional genealogical continuity tracing firstly to the College of Arms record Ms 7D14/45 dated 16th December 1788 to the last lineal ancestor linked further beyond Ms 7D 14/45 by other authentic records; and then to double back to do the same to determine the fate of the researcher's Hallifax collateral bloodlines after 16th December 1788, was immensely helpful.

This encouragement by Professor King in 2021/2, for this aspect of restoring the Guest family's maternal heritage, was matched by the support further given by Sir Thomas Woodcock, Mr Bavister, and Mrs Ceri King, LVO, Head of Crown Office, Deputy Clerk of the Crown in Chancery, Registrar of the Peerage, Privy Council Office, UK.

Gratitude is given to the researcher's beloved wife, Elizabeth Guest for her incredible support, and patience. I would also like to thank relatives and friends Dennis and Helen Lillee, and Darren Halifax. If not for their sustained involvement, research assistance and encouragement, Volumes II and III could not have been produced.

Researcher and author:

John Lindsay Robert Guest
M.Bus, Grad Dip IR/HRM, B.Ed., B.A.
Melbourne, Victoria, Australia
24th September, 2024

This page is intentionally left blank.

CONTENTS

BRIEF OVERVIEW AND INTRODUCTION 15
NORMA IRENE HAY, THE RESEARCHER'S MOTHER 17
RESEARCHER'S GRANDPARENTS, GUS & EMILY HAY 23
LEGACY LEFT BY GUS & EMILY HAY'S OTHER CHILDREN 31
Graham Malcolm Hay's genealogical legacy 33
David Christoper Hay's miltary service 47
The Hay family of Western Australia's love of football 51
SECTION 1 - MCARDLE-ORSINO BLOODLINE 59
Grandmother Emily Florence Matilda McArdle 59
Great grandfather Frederick Vaughan Leslie McArdle 61
2nd grandparents John James McArdle & Lucy Jane McIntosh 62
Great grandmother Emily Florence Matilda McArdle 67
SECTION 2 - HAY/SIMMIE-JUSTICE-MCLEAN BLOODLINE 73
Great grandparents James Sinclair Hay & Violet Ethel Hallifax 73
2nd great grandparents William Hay & Isabella Innes Sinclair 77
Convoluted history by adoption out by his biological parents Hay/Simmie 77
William's history with the major focus on his adoptive parents Simmie/Justice 77
3rd great grandparents, James & Elizabeth Sinclair of Madeline Street Carlton 93
4th great grandparents, George & Agnes Sinclair of Athelstaneford, East Lothian, Scotland 93
Extended family of Sinclair also of Madeline Street, Carlton 94
3rd great grandparents' John Simmie & Ann Justice (Adoptive) 99
George Simmie (1828-1906) the family's original pioneer and patriarch 103
3rd great grandparents' John Hay & Amelia Justice (Biological) 107
John Hay's (1824-1857) family heritage and military service 123
SECTION 3 - HALLIFAX BLOODLINE 125
2nd great grandparents Augustus New Hallifax & Annie Maria Denham 129
3rd great grandparents Ambrose William Hallifax & Harriet Richards 131
2nd great grandaunt Harriet Maria Hallifax 149
4th great grandparents Thomas New Hallifax & Sarah Maria Gaze 155
Dennis Lillee's ascent to Thomas Hallifax & Sarah Gaze 157
Darren John Halifax's ascent to Thomas Hallifax & Sarah Gaze 187
SHARED ANCIENT LINEAL BLOODLINES 195
4th great grandparents Thomas New Hallifax & Sarah Maria Gaze 195
5th to 10th great grandparents 199
11th great grandparents Robert Waterhouse & Jane Waterton 209
12th great grandparents Thomas Waterton & Beatrice Restwold 215
13th great grandparents Thomas Waterton & Joan Tempest 219
14th great grandparents Robert Waterton & Muriel Leeke 221
Muriel Waterton, daughter of John Leeke and Elizabeth Stanley 224
Elizabeth Leeke, daughter of Sir John Savage and Katharine Stanley 225
Katherine Savage, daughter of Lord Thomas Stanley and Joan Goushill 228
Joan Stanley, daughter of Sir Robert Goushill and Elizabeth Fitzalan 229
Elizabeth Fitzalan, great granddaughter of Edward I & Eleanor of Castile 230
15th great grandparents Sir John Robert Waterton & Agnes Fairfax 237
16th great grandparents Robert Waterton & Elizabeth Savile 239
17th great grandparents Richard Waterton & Constance Assenhull 243
18th great grandparents John Waterton & Catherine de Burgh 247
19th great grandparents Thomas de Burgh & Lady Fellbrigge 251

20th great grandparents John de Burgh & Mary de Grey 253
21st great grandparents Roger de Grey & Elizabeth de Hastings 255
22nd great grandparents John Hastings & Isabel de Valence.....257
23rd great grandparents Henry de Hastings & Joan Cantilupe 265
24th great grandparents Henry de Hastings & Ada de Huntingdon.....269
25th great grandparents David 8th Earl of Huntingdon & Matilda of Chester 271
26th great grandparents Henry of Scotland & Ada de Warenne.....273
27th great grandparents David I of Scotland & Maud of Huntingdon.....275
28th great grandparents Margaret of Wessex & Malcolm III of Scotland 277
Margaret of Wessex and her brother, Edgar Ætheling's lineal ancestry.....278
GENERAL DNA ETHNICITY RESULTS 281
EPILOGUE.....287
Recent developments.....287
ATTACHMENT 1 – 289
William Hay's (1850-1926), Simmie/Justice Adoptive Family.....289
William Hay's (1850-1926) brother John Simmie (1861-1950).....291
William Hay's (1850-1926) sister, Mary Ann Irons (1863-1959) 293
William Hay's (1850-1926) uncle & aunt William and Flora Simmie 297
Annie Simmie and Alfred Balding 297
Janet Simmie and Thomas Mathew Trewick.....299
Sellwood bloodline.....305
Hamblin bloodline.....307
William Hay's (1850-1926) uncle George Simmie (1928-1906) 311
TABLE OF NAMES.....321

BRIEF OVERVIEW AND INTRODUCTION

A1. This study of the Guest family history's maternal heritage accounts for the bloodlines flowing to the researcher's mother, Norma Irene Hay (1932-2021) of Melbourne, Australia through her parents Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985) and Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1909-1976). It includes life biographies of many of her father's ancestors, and to a lesser extent those flowing to her from her mother.

A2. **SECTION 1 (pp 59-72)** – Takes the ascending route beyond Norma's mother, Emily Florence Matilda Guest (1909-1976) accounting for the researcher's Irish McArdle bloodline; and her Orsino and Mirabella lineal ancestors. Emily's grandfather Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933), and his two brothers Salvatore Orsino (-1914), and Peter Orsino (1844-1868) successfully sailed from Scilly to Queenscliff, arriving in Victoria around 1860. Their vessel was a privately owned and built fishing boat. Their generational younger maternal cousin, Sebastiano Mirabella (1857-1946) joined them at Hastings, Victoria in the early 1870s, also migrating from Scilly. They are important early pioneer figures in the formation of the Victorian fishing industry in themed 19th- early 20th century.

A3. **SECTION 2 (pp 73-124)** – Steps out the Hay/Simmie-Justice-Maclean bloodline beginning with the Hay patronymic trace, beyond Norma's father, Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985). The researcher's maternal grandfather, Augustus ("Gus") was adopted by the Simmie family to whom he is further related by blood. It is the same Simmie family synonymous with the grazing, agricultural, civil infrastructure and economic development of the Colony of Victoria and other Australian colonies, during the middle 19th and early 20th century (Simmie, Fraser and Craig Company).

A4. This aspect of the trace will take the reader to the original immigrant ancestors of Australia, Hay and Simmie, with their intwined pre-Australia roots in Ruthvenfield, Tibbermore, Perthshire Scotland. Various life biographies of family members are also shared with the reader. Remembered are the researcher's 3rd great grandparents adoptive, John Simmie (1823-1867) and Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice and biological, John Hay and Amelia Hay (1828-), nee Justice.

A5. **SECTION 3 (pp125-280)** – Will take the more curious reader beyond Norma's patrilineal grandmother Violet Ethel Hay (1882-1955) nee Hallifax back to family members documented at the time of the Norman conquest of England and beyond. It is their ancient bloodlines which flow through to Violet and Norma; and then subsequently onto the researcher's son, Robert John Guest (1982-) and his two sons, Harris Robert Guest (2018-) and Levi John Guest (2020-). It is these same ancient bloodlines which pass through the researcher's Hallifax lineal ancestors recorded by the Crown's authority, the College of Arms on the 16th December 1788 (Hallifax registered pedigree, Ms 7D14/45). Only recently was this record Ms 7D14/45 updated. It previously remained dormant and unattended for 246 years. From 2018 the College of Arms, Officer in waiting Mr Grant Bavister worked with the researcher; and on 22nd January 2024, the College of Arms validated Harris and Levi Guest's dynastic lineage. This was after concluding a 6-year project jointly with the researcher, whereby an ongoing supplemental project has sprung (refer Volume III, Attachment 1 – Letter of Expert Opinion, page 79-82).

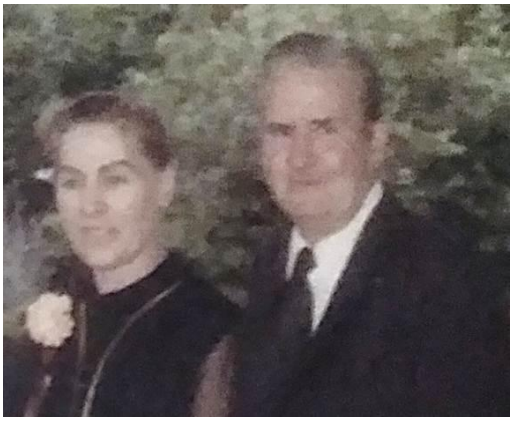
This page is intentionally left blank.

NORMA IRENE HAY, THE RESEARCHER'S MOTHER

A6. Despite being vaccinated, Norma Irene Guest (1932-2021), nee Hay caught COVID-19 in 2021, which ended her life on 30th September 2021. Her passing occurred on the evening prior to the 100th birthday anniversary of her late husband, Jack Guest's (1921-1987) 100th year birth day anniversary (refer Volume I for Jack's heritage). Norma and Jack s rest together at Fawkner Memorial Park, Melbourne (FMPM):

A7. Immediately prior to Norma being infected by COVID-19, the researcher was planning a small celebration with his immediate family to honour his father's 100th birthday. At the time Norma became fatally ill, she was previously diagnosed a year earlier with breast cancer, aged 88 years.

A8. Submitted below is a picture of Norma and Jack taken in 1981 when they both enjoyed better health:



A9. The researcher's parents married in a civil ceremony in East Melbourne on the 17th November, 1957 in East Melbourne. Victoria, Australia. All six of their children are listed below:

- Wendy Marlene Share (1958-), married Karl Raymond Share.
- **John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) (the researcher), married Elizabeth Ellen Jusic**.
- Ricky Graham Guest (1962-), unmarried/without issue.
- Anita Louise Bowen (1964-), married divorced.
- Terry Norlene Landt (1965-), married Tony Landt.
- Mitchell Jason Guest (1973-), married Tanya Jane Wilson.

A10. As a young adult, Norma worked for some time as a nurse's aide at Prince Henry hospital. This was after she completed general education at St Monica's Roman Catholic School in Moonee Ponds near Essendon. She commenced school there in 1937 and completed her leaving certificate in 1946.

A11. Norma's siblings, Shirley Hanley (1931-), Kevin Hay (1935-2021) and Graham Hay (1944-2005) did the same, and all were parishioners of St Monica's, Moonee Ponds, Victoria, Australia.

A12. Such was Norma's affinity and affection for her School and preferred place of worship that she let it be known that she wanted her funeral service to be held there. Her children honoured her wish and, on the 11th October, 2021, Father Tony Feeney gave Norma a wonderful service. Father Feeney was cognisant of Norma's strong ties to St Monica's and that of her Hay/Simmie family.

A13. Norma and her family's affinity to St Monica's is well justified. Not only did Norma receive a sound general education and a faithful place to worship she was introduced by her teachers to her lifelong joy of dance, craft, and reading. There she learned to paint, knit, crochet, and make dresses.

A14. Encouraged by her father, Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985), Norma loved Scottish dancing which was an interest passed down by her grandfather, James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955) and his brothers, all known to be champion Scottish dancers. They in turn were earlier encouraged by their father, William Hay (1850-1926) who established in Melbourne, the Carlton Caledonian Society (Obituary for William Hay 1850-1926, The Scot Magazine, November 1926, Royal Victorian Caledonian Society; Carlton Caledonian Society, November, 1926).

A15. Norma's father, Augustus Hay (1910-1976), also known informally as Gus Hay (1910-1985), helped complete construction of St Monica's Chapel in Moonee Ponds. He did this after moving across Melbourne from Dandenong in 1930 to take up contract painting and decorating work offered to him by his 1st cousin once removed, Jock Simmie (1892-1968). Jock is celebrated as one of Australia's legendary builders (National Trust, 2023; Royal Victorian Historical Society, 2023).

A16. Jock Simmie (1892-1968) had the means to provide Pop with secure employment from 1930 throughout the 1930s (the depression years) until Gus enlisted with the Australian Imperial Forces (AIF) in 1941 as a volunteer to fight in World War II (WWII) (refer Dr Richard Simmie M.D, Collection Online, "Family Business, The Simmies of Simmie & Co. and Harpsdale).

A17. In return for employment Gus worked from 1930 until 1941 on many Simmie Brothers, construction and repainting projects. He fondly recalled most of all to his four children the times he spent working on the repaint of their school St Monica and later helping as a contractor, the Simmie brothers introduced above, Jock, William and George, complete the final painting stage of St Monica's Chapel in 1935.

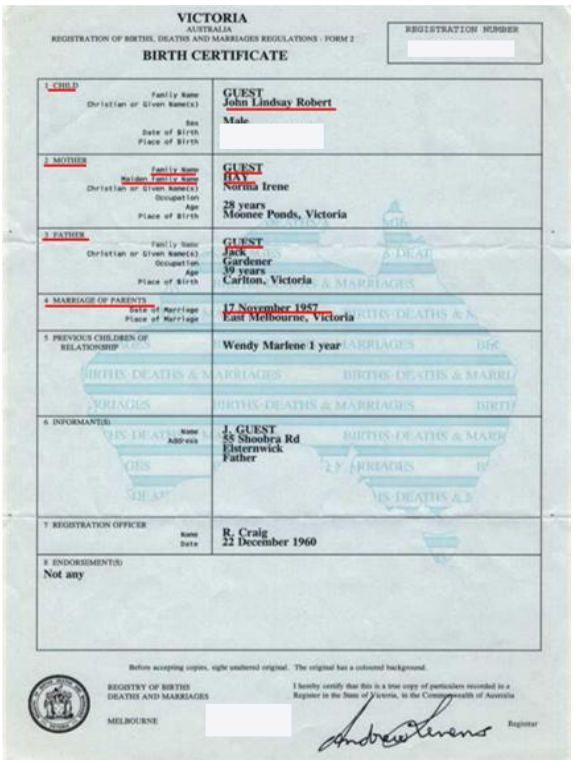
A18. A picture of the school Gus helped re-paint in 1934 is pictured below. The exterior has altered very little since it was built in 1917 (Image source; On-site photograph of St Monica's Roman Catholic School, Moonee Ponds):

A19. Sourced from the researcher's relative, Richard James Simmie (The R.J. Simmie Collection) are pictures of the exterior of the chapel. The first picture shows the Chapel partially completed in 1934:

A20. Next is a more recent photograph of the exterior of the Chapel taken in 2021:

A21. The photograph below provides insight to the level of craftmanship expected to be displayed by the painting and decorating contractors, Jock Simmie engaged, to which Gus Hay was a long-term member:

A22. Submitted next is a facsimile of the researcher, John Lindsay Robert Guest's (1960-) of Melbourne, Victoria, Australia, birth certificate, birth record showing he is the son of Norma Irene Hay (1932-2021) and Jack Guest (1921-1987) (Victoria, BDM records; Birth: John Lindsay Robert Guest; Born: 2nd December 1960: Where born: Carlton; Parents: Jack Guest, aged 39 years; Norma Irene Hay; aged 26 years; When and where married: 17th November, 1957 at East Melbourne; Siblings: Wendy Marlene Guest; Aged 1 year; Registration Number: 79577):



VICTORIA
AUSTRALIA
REGISTRATION OF BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGULATIONS - FORM 2
REGISTRATION NUMBER

BIRTH CERTIFICATE

1 CHILD Family Name Christian or Given Name(s) Sex Date of Birth Place of Birth	GUEST John Lindsay Robert Male
2 MOTHER Family Name Maiden Family Name Christian or Given Name(s) Occupation Age Place of Birth	GUEST HAY Norma Irene 28 years Moonee Ponds, Victoria
3 FATHER Family Name Christian or Given Name(s) Occupation Age Place of Birth	GUEST Jack Gardener 39 years Carlton, Victoria
4 MARRIAGE OF PARENTS Date of Marriage Place of Marriage	17 November 1957 East Melbourne, Victoria
5 PREVIOUS CHILDREN OF RELATIONSHIP	Wendy Marlene 1 year
6 INFORMANT(S) Name Address	J. GUEST 55 Shoobra Rd Elsternwick Father
7 REGISTRATION OFFICER Name Date	R. Craig 22 December 1960
8 ENDORSEMENT(S)	Not any

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS DEATHS AND MARRIAGES
MELBOURNE

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of Victoria, in the Commonwealth of Australia

Registrar

A23. The same certificate above issued by Victoria BDM further recognises the researcher's eldest sibling, Wendy Marlene Guest (1958-) and that John and Wendy Guest's parents married on the 17th November, 1957 in East Melbourne.

A24. Upon Norma or Jack's eventual passing, it is fair to say Norma become totally consumed by the fact at the time that it was taboo for a Roman Catholic priest to give her a rite of committal at her gravesite when she expired, if mum was to be buried in the same plot as Jack, an Anglican.

A25. Norma subsequently placed considerable pressure on Jack to re-marry in a roman catholic church which he capitulated and in 1974 at St Pius Roman Catholic Church, Heidelberg West, they wed.

A26. Such restrictions or impediments to rite of committal by a catholic remained in place during the 1980s and only recently abolished by Victorian Law in the year 2000 (Refer: The Hon. P.D. Cummins AM Chair, Victorian Law Reform Commission September 2016; Funeral and Burial Instructions, Report September, 2016; Catholic funerals in Australia, 2017, Rite of Committal).

This page is intentionally left blank.

RESEARCHER'S GRANDPARENTS, GUS & EMILY HAY

A27. The researcher's maternal grandfather, Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985), otherwise known as Gus Hay (1910-1985), and to his 17 grandchildren as "Pop," rests with his second wife, Doris Irene Hay (1910-1968), born Gilby, was Newlan at Cohuna, Victoria (Cohuna Cemetery, Cohuna, Gannawarra Shire, Victoria, Australia):

A28. He died on 3rd February 1985 and his death certificate below further confirms Norma Irene Guest (1932-2021) (nee Hay) is the daughter of Augustus and Emily Hay (nee McArdle), and the same said for her siblings, older sister Shirley, and two younger brothers, Kevin, and Graham Hay:

THIRD SCHEDULE

04100/85

DEATHS IN THE STATE OF VICTORIA

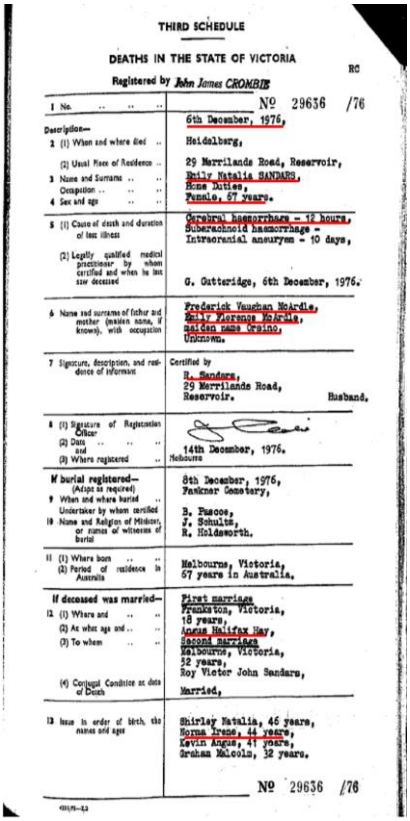
REGISTERED BY L. P. H. LABONNE

1. No.	04100
Description— 2. (1) When and where died. (2) Usual Place of Residence	03 February 1985 Cohuna 18 Kirby Street Cohuna 3568
3. Name and Surname Occupation	Augustus Halifax HAY Painter and Decorator
4. Sex and Age	Male 74 years
5. (1) Cause of death and (2) Duration of last illness	Cerebrovascular accident - 7 days Diabetes - 5 days Previous cerebrovascular accident
(3) Legally qualified medical practitioner by whom certified and (4) When last saw deceased	Dr. Graham 03 February 1985
6. Name and surname of father and mother (maiden name if known), with occupation	James Sinclair Hay Violet Hay maiden name Halifax Engine Driver
7. Signature, description and residence of informant	Certified by K. A. Hay 83 Long Street Camp Hill, Queensland 4152 Son
8. (1) Signature of Registration Officer (2) (3) Date and where registered	Louis P. Labonne 15 February 1985 Melbourne
9. When and where buried Undertaker by whom certified	05 February 1985 Cohuna Cemetery
10. Name and Religion of Minister, or names of witnesses of burial	T. Adams E. Kingma Uniting Church
11. (1) Where born (2) Period of residence in Australia	Dandenong, Victoria 74 years
If deceased was married— 12. (1) Where and (2) At what age and (3) To whom (4) Conjugal condition at date of death	First Marriage Hastings, Victoria 18 years Emily Natalia McArdle Second Marriage Cohuna, Victoria 45 years Doris Irene Newlan Widower
13. Issue in order of birth, the names and ages	Shirley Natalia 54 years Norma Irene 52 years Kevin Angus 49 years Graham Malcolm 40 years

A29. The researcher's maternal grandmother, Emily, also known as "Bobby," and "Nan," to her grandchildren with Gus, was born Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1909-1976), later Hay, and late Sandars, otherwise known as Emily Sandars (1909-1976), or Emily Natalia Sandars (1909-1976).

A30. Nan died on the 5th December 1976 and was laid to rest on the 8th December 1976 and her grave inscription name "Emily Sandars" with the byname "Wobby" added by her husband Roy, obscures somewhat her full identity, further making search amongst the cemetery's digital records more difficult (Great Melbourne Cemeteries Trust; Location: Fawkner Memorial Park; Victoria Australia; Roman Catholic Compartment, W, Grave 174):

A31. Emily's death certificate recognising her as "Emily Natalia Sandars," and lists her four children born to Gus Hay, namely Shirley, Norma, Kevin and Graham Hay (Australia Birth Index, 1788-1922; Record details – Name; Emily Florence Matilda McArdle; Birth Date: Abt 1909; Birth Place: Carlton, Victoria; Registration Year: 1909; Registration Place: Victoria, Australia; Father: Fred Vaughan McArdle; Mother: Emily Florence Orsino; Registration Number: 17221) (informant, Roy Sandars, Emily's second husband married 1964, incorrectly gives her second name as Natalia, rather than "Florence Matilda") (Refer also previous article, A20, page 18):



THIRD SCHEDULE

DEATHS IN THE STATE OF VICTORIA

RC

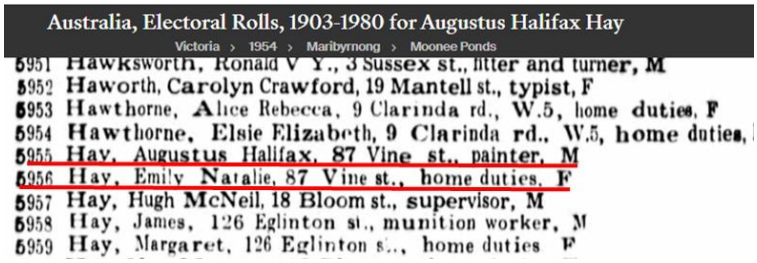
Registered by *John James CROBIE*

1 No.	Nº 29636 /76
Description— 2 (1) When and where died	6th December, 1976, Heidelberg,
(2) Usual Place of Residence	29 Merrilands Road, Reservoir,
3 Name and Surname	Emily Natalia SANDARS,
Occupation	Home Duties,
4 Sex and age	Female, 67 years.
5 (1) Cause of death and duration of last illness	Cerebral haemorrhage - 12 hours, Subarachnoid haemorrhage - Intracranial aneurysm - 10 days,
(2) Legally qualified medical practitioner by whom certified and when he last saw deceased	G. Gutteridge, 6th December, 1976.
6 Name and surname of father and mother (maiden name, if known), with occupation	Frederick Vaughan McArdle, Emily Florence McArdle, maiden name Orsino, Unknown.
7 Signature, description, and residence of informant	Certified by R. Sandars, 29 Merrilands Road, Reservoir. Husband.
8 (1) Signature of Registering Officer	
(2) Date and (3) Where registered	14th December, 1976. Melbourne
If burial registered— (Action as required) 9 When and where buried	8th December, 1976, Fawkner Cemetery,
Undertaker by whom certified 10 Name and Religion of Minister, or names of witnesses of burial	B. Pascoe, J. Schultz, R. Holdsworth.
11 (1) Where born	Melbourne, Victoria,
(2) Period of residence in Australia	67 years in Australia.
If deceased was married— 12 (1) Where and	First marriage Frankston, Victoria,
(2) At what age and	18 years,
(3) To whom	Angus Halifax Hay, Second marriage Melbourne, Victoria, 52 years, Roy Victor John Sandars,
(4) Conjugal Condition at date of Death	Married,
13 Issue in order of birth, the names and ages	Shirley Natalia, 46 years, Norma Irene, 44 years, Kevin Angus, 41 years, Graham Malcolm, 32 years.
	Nº 29636 /76

A32. The researcher's grandfather, Augustus Halifax Hay (1910–1985) was the youngest of five children born to James and Violet Hay, nee Hallifax. Pop was a painter and decorator, and home owner at the age of 23 years. He purchased 87 Vine Street, Moonee Ponds, Victoria in 1931 and the house was the researcher's mother, Norma's childhood home. He Pop, also known as Gus, was an amateur cyclist and later in life greyhound trainer. He also served in WWII as a sapper (engineer).

A33. He and the researcher's beloved grandmother, Emily Florence Matilda McArdle's (1909-1975) four children, Shirley, Norma, Kevin and Graham gave rise to their 17 grandchildren listed subsequently (refer paragraph A40, p27, below).

A34. In 1955 Gus and Emily Hay still lived at the family home at 87 Vines Street Moonee Ponds as a married couple (1954 Australia, Electoral Rolls, 1903-1980; Name(s): Augustus Halifax Hay; Emily Natalia Hay; Address: 87 Vine Street, Moonee Ponds; Electoral Date: 1954; Electoral Place: Moonee Ponds, Maribyrnong, Victoria, Australia):



Australia, Electoral Rolls, 1903-1980 for Augustus Halifax Hay

Victoria › 1954 › Maribyrnong › Moonee Ponds

5951 Hawksworth, Ronald V Y., 3 Sussex st., fitter and turner, M
5952 Haworth, Carolyn Crawford, 19 Mantell st., typist, F
5953 Hawthorne, Alice Rebecca, 9 Clarinda rd., W.5, home duties, F
5954 Hawthorne, Elsie Elizabeth, 9 Clarinda rd., W.5, home duties,
5955 Hay, Augustus Halifax, 87 Vine st., painter, M
5956 Hay, Emily Natalie, 87 Vine st., home duties, F
5957 Hay, Hugh McNeil, 18 Bloom st., supervisor, M
5958 Hay, James, 126 Eglinton st., munition worker, M
5959 Hay, Margaret, 126 Eglinton s.., home duties F

A35. Norma and her youngest sibling 11-year-old brother Graham Malcom Hay (1944-2005) remained living with their mother in the Hay family home held from 1930 until 1957. The Hay family home still stand and is pictured below:

A36. Not long after Gus and Bobby divorced in 1957, Norma and her husband Jack Guest in 1958, became the guardian of Nan and Pop's youngest child, the researcher's uncle Graham Malcolm Hay (1944-2005). For reasons never disclosed, Nan and Pop preferred Graham's care to Norma and Jack Guest, whereby they enthusiastically obliged until January 1962 when Graham enlisted as a 17-year-old voluntary recruit in the Australian Army.

A37. The researcher fairly suspects Norma and Jack's guardianship of Graham had something to do with Graham's wish to remain close to his sister Norma. The researcher's maternal grandparents, are pictured below in happier times attending to a ceremony at St Monica's Roman Catholic Church circa 1950, both aged in the early 40s:

A38. Gus served as a volunteer in the Australian Imperial Force (AIF) during World War II from 22nd May 1940 until 12th November, 1941. He was discharged on medical grounds after his hearing had diminished as a consequence of his service abroad when he was attached to the 2/8 Field Company Engineering. His general service records follow validating his service contribution (Department of Veteran Affairs [DVA] Nominal Roll, Augustus Hay, VX16538; 2/8 FLD COY ENG):

Australian Government
Department of Veterans' Affairs

Home / Service Record

World War Two Service

Veteran Details

Name	HAY, AUGUSTUS
Service	Australian Army
Service Number	VX16538
Date of Birth	05 Jul 1910
Place of Birth	DANDENONG, VIC
Date of Enlistment	23 May 1940
Locality on Enlistment	NORTH FITZROY, VIC
Place of Enlistment	CAULFIELD, VIC
Next of Kin	HAY, EMILY
Date of Discharge	12 Nov 1941
Rank	Sapper
Posting at Discharge	2/8 FLD COY ENG
Prisoner of War	No
Honours	None for display

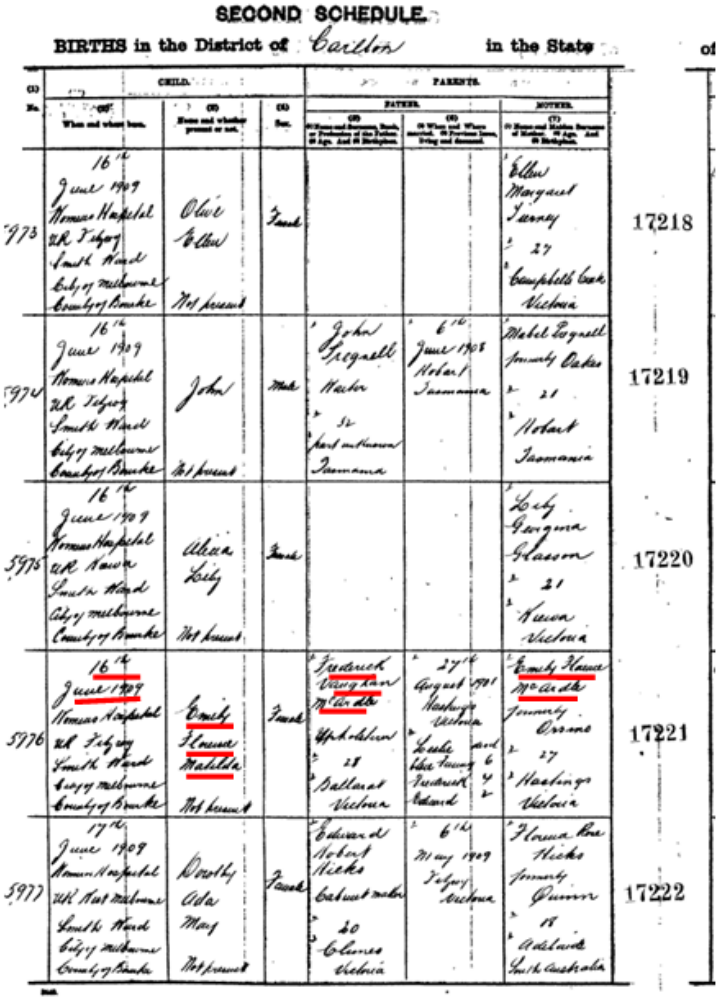
World War Two Service
SAPPER
AUGUSTUS HAY
VX16538
SERVICE AUSTRALIAN ARMY
DATE OF BIRTH 5 JULY 1910
PLACE OF BIRTH DANDENONG, VIC
DATE OF ENLISTMENT 23 MAY 1940
LOCALITY ON ENLISTMENT NORTH FITZROY, VIC
PLACE OF ENLISTMENT CAULFIELD, VIC
NEXT OF KIN HAY, EMILY
DATE OF DISCHARGE 12 NOVEMBER 1941
POSTING AT DISCHARGE 2/8 FLD COY ENG
Australian Government
Department of Veterans' Affairs

A39. The researcher's grandfather trained as a "Sapper" becoming in the process, a combat engineer. He was engaged as a combat soldier with a wide range of tactical and technical skills. He is photograph found far left back row with his mates in 1941, aged 22 years old, sporting his familiar stance:

A40. Gus and Bobby's genealogical legacy is extensive. Listed below are their 17 grandchildren to whom most have offspring with rising generations extending to Gus and Emily's 3rd great grandchildren:

- Cheryl Hanley.
- Vicki Hanley.
- Wendy Marlene Guest.
- John Lindsay Robert Guest.
- Michael John Hay (deceased).
- Wayne Hanley.
- Deborah Hanely.
- Susan Hay.
- Brett Hanley.
- Ricky Graham Guest.
- Anita Louise Guest.
- Terry Norlene Guest.
- Craig Hanley.
- Michelle Hanley.
- Vanessa Joanne Hay.
- Mitchell Jason Guest.
- David Christopher Hay.

A41. Nan's full name Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1910-1976) is shown on her detailed birth certificate submitted on this page below (Victoria, Australia, Birth Index, 1837-1917; Record details – Name: Emily Florence Matilda McArdle; Birth Registration Date: 16th June 1909; Birth Registration Place: Women Hospital, Melbourne; Victoria, Australia; Father: Fred Vaughan McArdle; Mother: Emily Florence McArdle, nee Orsino; Reference Number: 17221).

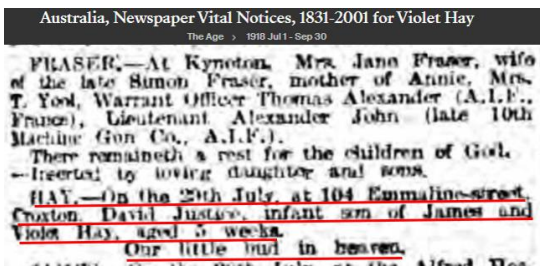


SECOND SCHEDULE.

BIRTHS in the District of Carlton in the State of

No.	When and where born.	Name and whether present or not.	Sex.	Father	Mother	
5973	16th June 1909 Women Hospital 1R Fitzroy South Ward City of Melbourne County of Bourke	Olive Ellen Not present	Female		Ellen Margaret Tierney 27 Campbells Creek Victoria	17218
5974	16th June 1909 Women Hospital 1R Fitzroy South Ward City of Melbourne County of Bourke	John Not present	Male	John Fergusson Waiter 32 Hobart Tasmania	6th June 1908 Hobart Tasmania Mabel Ferguson formerly Oakes 21 Hobart Tasmania	17219
5975	16th June 1909 Women Hospital 1R Kawa South Ward City of Melbourne County of Bourke	Alma Lily Not present	Female		Lily Georgina Glasson 21 Kawa Victoria	17220
5976	16th June 1909 Women Hospital 1R Fitzroy South Ward City of Melbourne County of Bourke	Emily Florence Matilda Not present	Female	Frederick Vaughan McArdle Upholsterer 28 Ballarat Victoria	27th August 1901 Hastings Victoria Louie and 6 other young 4 children 2 Frederick Leland	Emily Florence McArdle formerly Orsino 27 Hastings Victoria 17221
5977	17th June 1909 Women Hospital 1R Kew Melbourne South Ward City of Melbourne County of Bourke	Dorothy Ada May Not present	Female	Edward Robert Hicks Cabinet maker 40 Clunes Victoria	6th May 1909 Fitzroy Victoria	Florence Rose Hicks formerly Quinn 18 Adelaide South Australia 17222

A42 At age 8 years old Pop was living at 104 Emmaline Street Croxton, a Melbourne suburb, where his father James was employed as a locomotive driver for the Victorian Railways. The Hay family home in Croxton is known by public notice in the Age Newspaper informing of the death of Pop's infant 5-year-old brother, David Justice Hay (23rd June 1918 - 29th July 1918) who passed at the family home (Death of David Justice Hay 1918-1918 - Pop's infant younger brother). In 1918 (Source: The Age Newspaper, Melbourne, Australia, Tuesday July 30th 1918, Death Notices, Page 8):



Australia, Newspaper Vital Notices, 1831-2001 for Violet Hay

The Age › 1918 Jul 1 - Sep 30

FRASER.—At Kyneton, Mrs. Jane Fraser, wife of the late Simon Fraser, mother of Annie, Mrs. T. Yool, Warrant Officer Thomas Alexander (A.I.F., France), Lieutenant Alexander John (late 10th Machine Gun Co., A.I.F.).

There remaineth a rest for the children of God. —Inserted by loving daughter and sons.

HAY.—On the 29th July, at 104 Emmaline-street, Croxton, David Justice, infant son of James and Violet Hay, aged 5 weeks.

Our little bud in heaven.

A43. The Hay family home held in 1918 at Croxton still stands and is pictured below. With photographs taken at a recent home open (vacant possession):

A44. At the time James Hay (1879-1955) and Violet Hay (1882-1955), nee Hallifax held the home; and when the researcher's maternal grandfather Gus was aged 8 years old, it is hard to imagine how a family of nine, with seven surviving children manged living there. The property is currently a two bedrooms home with relatively modern living areas, but earlier was probably a 3-bedroom home when the Hay family lived there (Images courtesy of Real Estate.com.au).

A43. Prior to living in Croxton (Park) the researcher's great grandparent's immediate family including the researcher's grandfather a young child, stayed temporarily in 1914 with Pop's grandparents at the family seat "Ruthven Park, Springvale".

A45. Previous to the temporary arrangements in which his occupation as locomotive drive probably had something to do with the residential house moves, and up until Pop was 4 years old, James and Violet's Hay family enjoyed living at Hull Street South Dudley, near Wonthaggi, Victoria. This place was close to the beach it was a great location for him and his sibling to grow up.

A46. He, James became passionate about locomotives after experiencing them close up introduced to them by his father William Hay (1850-1926) and his uncle, George Simmie (1828-1906) both early pioneers of the Victorian rail industry and also southern central NSW.

A47. Whereby, it was likely he was employed by the Wonthaggi coal mine company to operate their coal hauling locomotive for a period (Australia, Electoral Rolls, 1903-1980 for James Sinclair Hay, and Violet Ethel Hay, Hull Street South Dudley; Victoria; 1914; Flinders, Wonthaggi; Map source: Google GPS, 2023):

Australia, Electoral Rolls, 1903-1980 for James Sinclair Hay

Victoria › 1914 › Flinders › Wonthaggi

1204 Hawkins, Paul, Bass, farmer, M
1205 Hawkins, Richard John, Bridge Creek, grazier, M
1206 Hawkridge, Edith Mary, St. Joseph's Convent, Wonthaggi, teacher, F
1207 Hawthorn, William George Thomas, Wonthaggi, fitter, M
1208 Hay, James Alexander Leith, Graham st., Wonthaggi, clerk, M
1209 Hay, James Sinclair, Hull st., Sth. Dudley, engine-driver, M
1210 Hay, Violet Ethel, Hull st., Sth. Dudley, home duties, F
1211 Hayes, Annie Violet, Archie's Creek, hotelkeeper, F

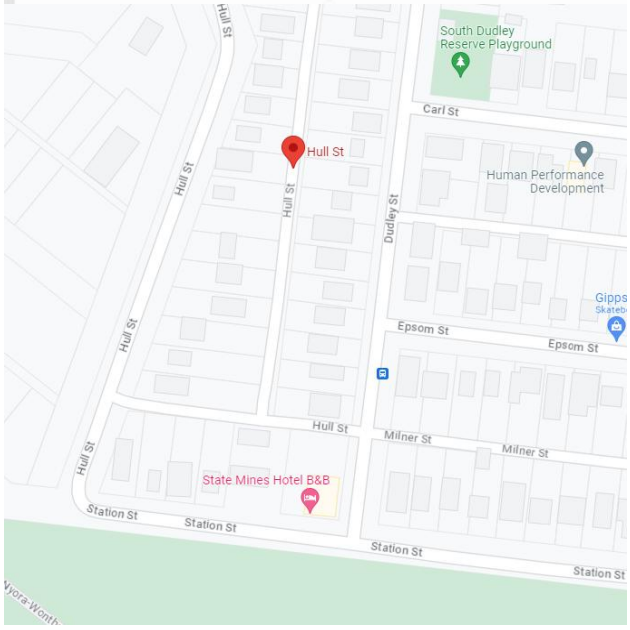
A48. The researcher believes the move away from Hull Street and the subsequent temporary arrangements to stay with James parents, the researcher's 2nd great grandparents, William Hay (1850-1926) and Isabella Innes Hay (1856-1928) nee Sinclair (probably had something to do with the community's opposition to further rail infrastructure expansion within Wonthaggi at the time – refer below: The Argus, Melbourne, Victoria, Thursday 9th October 1913, Page 7, Wonthaggi Railway):

WONTHAGGI RAILWAY.

LAND DOUBLY LOADED.

PROTEST BY FARMERS.

Landholders along the route of the Woolamai-Wonthaggi railway waited on the Premier (Mr. Watt) yesterday with reference to the loading of land in the vicinity of the line. Mr. Downward, M.L.A., who introduced the deputation, said that unusual circumstances surrounded the building of the railway. It was constructed as a result of the Newcastle coal strike in order to supply the railways with coal, and benefited very few landholders. Many of them had never agreed to their land being loaded. In a number of cases, farmers near whose



A49. The they moved nearby to father James's parents, William Hay (1850-1926) and Isabella Innes Hay (1856-1928), nee Sinclair who held a large property in Springvale called Ruthven Park from 1911/2.

A50. Gus frequently and fondly recalled visiting his beloved grandparents William and Isabella and recalling playing in their garden for hours. Most of all he recalled the large family reunion held at Ruthven Park. The researcher has come to recognise this event as his grandfather's 70th birthday party.

LEGACY LEFT BY GUS & EMILY HAY'S OTHER CHILDREN

Shirley Natalia Hanley (1931-) nee Hay

A51. Eldest of Gus and Emily's four children is Shirley Nathalia Hay (1930-), married Thomas Charles Coppard Hanley (1929-2006), They have 7 children:

- Cheryl Hanley (1957-) married and issue.
- Vicky Hanley (1959-) married and issue (divorced).
- Deborah Hanley (1960-) married and issue.
- Wayne Hanley (1961-) married and issue.
- Brett Hanley (1963-) married and issue.
- Michelle Hanley (1965-).
- Craig Hanley (1967-).

Kevin Angus Frederick Hay (1935-2021) legacy

A52. The researcher's Uncle Kevin Hay (1935-2021) was the primary informant to this study for the researcher's matrilineal bloodlines Hay, McArdle and Orsino. In which he was handed down some materials from the family research and updates his aunts, Maureen and June Mclean conducted (1984, 1987, 1997).

A53. Kevin is the father of Michael John Hay (1961-1999) born 29th October 1961and died 26th November 1999; and Susan Paterson (1963-) (nee Hay). He served in the Korean War and returned a decorated veteran and continued serving until a serious motor car accident at Puckapunyal base in Victoria ended his, military career.

A54. Kevin married Veronica Denise "Nesse" Bowers (25th February 1939 – 28th August 1998) "Nese," in Victoria in 1961, when posted to Puckapunyal (Victoria, Australia, Marriage Index, 1837-1950; Record details – Name: Veronica Denise Bowers; Gender: Female; Marriage Registration Date:1961; Marriage Registration Place: Victoria, Australia; Spouse: Kevin Angus Fred Hay; Reference Number: 8791):

Name	Veronica Denise Bowers
Gender	Female
Marriage Registration Date	1961
Marriage Registration Place	Victoria, Australia
Spouse	Kevin Angus Fred Hay
Reference Number	8791

A55. Denise, the researcher's aunt, is one of eight children born to James Benjamin Bowers (1900-1966) and Catherine Isabel "Katie" Wilson (1903-1989). Her children, Michael and Susan's maternal uncles and aunts, are:

- Jack Bowers (1927–?).
- Leslie Bowers (1929–1962).
- Joan Frances Bowers (1930–2002).
- Thomas Bowers (1932–1977).
- Henry Bowers (1933–1975).
- Patricia Mary Bowers (1934–?).
- Margaret Bowers (1943–1977).

A56. Michael and Susan's parents settled their family in Brisbane, Queensland. Micheal died aged 38 years, unmarried and without issue. Susan has forged a very successful business career. She was previously married to Ron and has two daughters from her second marriage named Lauren Petersen and Tahnee Paterson.

A57. Her family is well settled in her home town of Brisbane and Susan has forged a stella career in the financial sector. She is a Fellow Chartered Financial Practitioner, previously she has worked in financial services with a banking background, Currently Susan is a Principal of Business Insurance Group is an Authorised Representative of Insurance Advisernet, one of Australasia's largest General Insurance Brokers:

A58. Uncle Kevin and Aunt Denise's genealogical legacy continues matrilineally. They are buried along with their son Michael, Susan's beloved brother at Mount Gravatt Cemetery and Crematorium, Brisbane, Queensland, Plot: LAWN-L15-11; and they were joined recently by beloved husband Kevin, after his death on 20th January, 2021.

A59. Kevin, wife Denise, Michael and Susan are all listed on the family memorial below for Denise and Michael (Ron is Susan's first husband, then there are her daughters. Lauren and Tahnee):

Graham Malcolm Hay's genealogical legacy

A60. The researcher's younger uncle, Graham Malcolm Hay (1944-2005), died on 23rd March 2005, in Western Australia. He rests at Western Australian Garden of Remembrance, Nedlands, Western Australia, Australia (Memorial ID: 248449299).

A61. The Royal Australian Army Service Corps struck a plaque memorialising him which is also located at Karrakatta Cemetery, Service Number: 37504.

A62. Graham from the aged of 13 until turning 17 years old was living under an informal guardianship arrangement made between his parents and his sister Norma and brother in law Jack Guest. From late 1957 until May/June 1961 he lived with his Guest family at 55 Shoobra Road Elstenwick. In addition to his sister Norma and brother in law Jack Guest, he lived with his infant niece Wendy born 20 September 1958, and John Guest born 2nd December 1960. In January 1962 Graham made his own way in life joining the Australian Army.

A63. After completing basic training at Kapooka, near Wagga Wagga NSW, Graham was posted to the Royal Australian Transport Corp at Randwick NSW. There he joined the newly formed Air dispatch unit.

A64. Between the years 1962-1966, he served abroad and was regularly placed in harm's way. His engagement in the Indonesian Confrontation, including being attached to the British Army, best described as 'hidden" service is confirmed below:

A65. Between 1962 and 1966 Indonesia and Malaysia fought a small, undeclared war which came to involve troops from Australia, New Zealand, and Britain. The conflict resulted from Indonesia's President Sukarno's belief that the creation of the Federation of Malaysia, which became official in September 1963, represented a British attempt to maintain colonial rule behind the cloak of independence granted to its former colonial possessions in south-east Asia.

A66. The term "Confrontation" was coined by Indonesia's Foreign Minister, Dr Subandrio, in January 1963, and has come to refer to Indonesia's efforts at that time to destabilise the new federation, with a view to breaking it up. The actual war began when Indonesia launched a series of cross-border raids into Malaysian territory in early 1963.

A67. Earlier, after completing basic training, he was then posted to the Royal Australian Transport Corp at Randwick, NSW. He joined the newly established Air dispatch unit, known as the 40 Air Supply Platoon, RAASC, ex “Nutcracker”. During the Indonesian Confrontation, in 1963, he was engaged in Malaya on various assignments as part of an Australian unit attached to the British Army.

A68. Like his brother in-law Jack Guest (1921-1987), who served before him in WWII, certain aspects of Graham’s engagements remain unclear, hidden and left unrecorded. On the 15th May, 1978, Graham Malcolm Hay was recognised in the Australia, Government Honour Records, 1900-2023 being granted the National Medal whereby the researcher is reliably informed he operated undercover, in-country for a period of time mid 1970s (Detail Source; Australian Government; Department of Prime Minister and Cabinet; Name: Graham Malcolm Hay; Award Date: 15 May 1978; Award Place: Australia; Award: National Medal).

A69. The National Medal recognises long and diligent service, by members of recognised government who risk their lives or safety to protect or assist the community in enforcement of the law or in times of emergency or natural disaster. There is no application form for the National Medal award. Nominations are made by the chief officer of the nominee’s organisation:

A70. Consistent with the Australian equivalent of the British Secrets Act, recognition of that part of military service is not forthcoming. Graham was not permitted to speak publicly about these engagements including parents, siblings, spouse children or friends.

A71. Despite these understandable limitations, other service engagements are available and photographic evidence treasured by Graham, widow Linda, and his children Vanessa and David, provides further insight to his exemplar service. Graham is pictured below with his mate Mick Malone at the time they took leave in Singapore in April 1963:

A72. Later that month, Graham and Ray Opie, were given the substantial honour to be the Australian Guards at Kranji War Cemetery, Singapore on Anzac Day. This honour attests to the esteem both Graham and Ray were held by the Australian Army:

A73. Noting importantly from a genealogical perspective, a chance meeting in Coogee, NSW between Graham and Linda Crews (1946-) became fortuitous. Linda was enjoying a night out with friends when they met by chance, at the "Moon Bar" in the Oceanic Hotel at the southern end of Coogee Bay.

A74. The researcher's uncle and aunt met and danced, and soon became inseparable. They married the following year on the 18th March, 1967 at All Saints Church in Liverpool NSW. Graham and Linda are pictured below enjoying the first moments of married life:

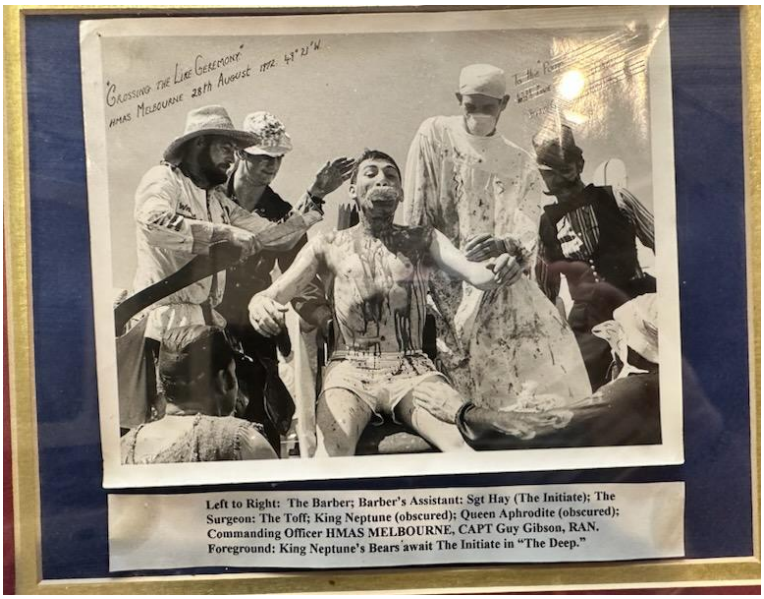
A75. Linda was immediately thrusted into military life and shortly after they married Graham and Linda called Puckapunyal, Victoria home for a couple of years. This occurred when Graham was transferred to the unit as an instructor at the School of Transport.

A76. During those years Graham, a Sargent, was a frequent visitor at the Guest home at 8 Griffiths Street West Heidelberg, whereby he would normally arrive in a platoon truck full of soldiers. He would stand them down for an hour or so whilst Graham caught up with his sister Norma, brother in-law Jack, and his growing band of nieces and nephews.

A77. The researcher vividly recalls along with his elder sister serving cool drinks to the troops resting on the front lawn in which there were as many as 20 soldiers. Graham and the troops always put on a great show to the delight of the neighbours.

A78. After leaving Puckapunyal, Graham and Lin returned to NSW when he was posted once more to 176 Air Dispatch at Penrith NSW. He was attached to the Royal Australian Airforce and required to parachute and engage regularly to make air drops to field troops (cf. son David's analogous service, cf., guardian, Jack Guest's WWII service, Volume I, paragraphs, A286-A291, pp105-106). The picture below shows Graham standing back row, 6th from the right along with his mates after completing his parachute training program:

A79. In 1972 Graham was detached to the Royal Australian Navy on board the HMAS Melbourne. Graham is pictured below receiving is custom and practice initiation when he crossed the equator on ship for the first time:


"Crossing the Line Ceremony"
HMAS Melbourne 28th August 1972 43° 23'W
Left to Right: The Barber; Barber's Assistant; Sgt Hay (The Initiate); The Surgeon: The Toff; King Neptune (obscured); Queen Aphrodite (obscured); Commanding Officer HMAS MELBOURNE, CAPT Guy Gibson, RAN. Foreground: King Neptune's Bears await The Initiate in "The Deep."

A80. Continuing to be placed in harm's way, Graham was then posted to HMAS Albatross. At the time the researcher's Aunt Lin kept their Army provided "Married Quarter" home at Nowra, NSW.

A81. Graham and Lin's first child, the researcher's maternal 1st cousin Vanessa Joanne Hay (1973-) arrived on 16th April 1973, followed a couple of years later by her brother, David Christopher Hay (1975-), born on the 24th October 1975.

A82. Once more Graham was posted back to 176 Air dispatch at Penrith NSW after receiving a promotion to Warrant Officer Class 2. This appointment began his period of in-country (under-cover) service and was further placed in harm's way (cf., Department of Prime Minister and Cabinet; Award Date: 15 May 1978; Award Place: Australia; Award: National Medal, cf., son David Hay's Police Overseas Service Medal, paragraph A136, p 49 below; cf., guardian Jack Guest's analogous unconventional WWII, ibid, Volume I, paragraphs, A300-A320, pp 109-114).

A83. Subsequently he was further posted to Army Head Quarters Sydney as a Work Study Officer, then elevated to the rank of Warrant Officer Class 1. This is when he was deployed to a further Work Study in Head Quarters Brisbane Queensland.

A84. Returning to Sydney in 1978 he was attached to Victoria Barracks, Paddington, Sydney, NSW. Shortly thereafter, he was offered promotion to Captain conditional upon relocating to Canberra ACT. He had to decline the offer due to 5-year-old Vanessa being ill during this period.

A85. Vanessa recovered, and Graham and Linda opted to move permanently to Perth Western Australia where Linda was born and raised. The move was a pre-cursor to Graham's retirement from military service in 1983.

A86. Post military service Graham took up employment with Qantas Air ways in the cargo section and retired permanently in 1997. Prior to the move Graham was diagnosed with Post Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD).

A87. Graham later had a number of heart attacks and sadly passed on the 23rd March 2005, aged 60 years. Graham is sadly missed by his entire family, but celebrates his life here, along with his love of family, great sense of humour, and the wonderful service he gave his country.

A88. Graham was born in Melbourne on the 10th October 1944 and arrived to live with his parents Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985) and Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1909-1976) at the family home at 87 Vine Street Monee ponds.

A89. There at 87 Vine Street, he joined his older siblings Shirley, aged 13 years; Norma "Midge," aged 12 years; and his brother Kevin, aged 9 years.

A90. Like them, Graham would later attend school at St Monica's Roman Catholic School, Essendon, where he also took communion.

A91. Graham's wife, the researcher's Aunt Linda Joan Hay (1946-), nee Crews was born Linda Joan Crews on the 1946. Aunt Lin grew up in Perth Western Australia living at Leederville and then later at Floreat Park, Western Australia when her parents moved there.

A92. Linda's mother is Yutha "Joan" Crews (1925-1990) (nee Chinnery), but she was most commonly known as Joan and was a very talented musician and singer. Joan was proficient on the piano, ukelele and guitar.

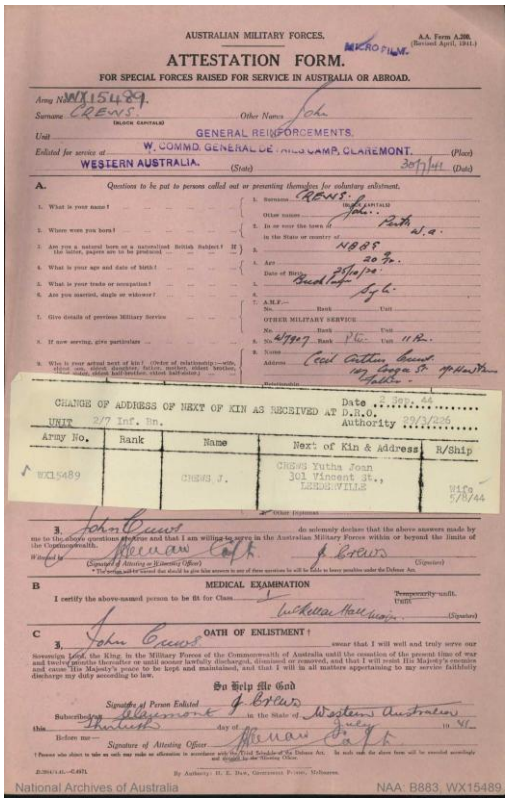
A93. Linda's mother Joan died in 25th December 1990 aged 65 years (Yutha Joan Crews; Birth: 1925; Death: 25th December, 1990 Burial: Karrakatta Cemetery and Crematorium; Karrakatta Nedlands City, Western Australia, Australia; Plot: Lawn-K-0225) where husband Jack joined her in 1994:

Name	Yutha Joan Crews
Birth Date	1925
Death Date	25 Dec. 1990
Cemetery	Karrakatta Cemetery and Crematorium
Burial or Cremation Place	Karrakatta, Nedlands City, Western Australia, Australia

A94. Linda and her siblings, and all the grandchildren have fond memories of Joan playing the piano on their visits and sending taped recordings of ditties to Linda, her husband Graham, and the kids in the Eastern States, whilst Graham was serving in the Army.

A95. Linda's father John "Jack" Crews was born on the 25th October, 1920 and died on 26th March 1994. Jack served in the 2nd/ 7th Battalion AIF in New Guinea during World War II.

A96. He and Joan married during the war on the 5th August, 1944. Jack Crew's voluntary service enlistment form is submitted below (John Crews, 1920-1994 in the Australia, World War II Military Service Records, 1939-1945; Name: John Crews; Gender: Male; Birth Date: 25 October, 1920; Birth Place: Perth, Western Australia; Enlistment Date: 30th July, 1941; Enlistment Place: Claremont, Western Australia; Military Service Branch, Army, Second Australian Imperial Force; Service Number: WX15489; Spouse: Yutha Crews; Next of Kin: Yutha Crews; Series Description: B883: Army, 2nd AlF):



AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES. A.A. Form A.388. (Revised April, 1941.)

MICRO FILM

ATTESTATION FORM.

FOR SPECIAL FORCES RAISED FOR SERVICE IN AUSTRALIA OR ABROAD.

Army No. WX15489. Surname CREWS. (BLOCK CAPITALS) Other Names John

Unit GENERAL REINFORCEMENTS.

Enlisted for service at W. COMMD. GENERAL DE[illegible] CAMP, CLAREMONT. (Place)

WESTERN AUSTRALIA. (State) 30/7/41 (Date)

A. Questions to be put to persons called out or presenting themselves for voluntary enlistment.

1. What is your name? CREWS. (BLOCK CAPITALS) John
2. Where were you born? Perth W.A.
3. Are you a natural born or a naturalised British Subject? If the latter, papers are to be produced. N828
4. What is your age and date of birth? 20 Yrs. Date of Birth 25/10/20
5. What is your trade or occupation? Bud Pntr Sgl.
6. Are you married, single or widower?
7. Give details of previous Military Service A.M.F.— No. Rank Unit OTHER MILITARY SERVICE No. 47907 Rank Pte. Unit 11 Bn.
8. If now serving, give particulars
9. Who is your actual next of kin? (Order of relationship:—wife, children, father, mother, brother, sister, half-brother, half-sister.) Name Cecil Arthur Crews Address 107 Vigia St. Yokine Perth

CHANGE OF ADDRESS OF NEXT OF KIN AS RECEIVED AT D.H.Q. Date [illegible] Authority 20/3/226

UNIT 2/7 Inf. Bn.

Army No.	Rank	Name	Next of Kin & Address	R/Ship
WX15489		CREWS J.	CREWS Yutha Joan 301 Vincent St., LEEDERVILLE	Wife 5/8/44

Other Distinctions

3. John Crews do solemnly declare that the above answers made by me to the above questions are true and that I am willing to serve in the Australian Military Forces within or beyond the limits of the Commonwealth. Witness (Signature of Attesting or Witnessing Officer) Capt. (Signature)

* The words will be struck out should be give false answers to any of these questions he will be liable to heavy penalties under the Defence Act.

B MEDICAL EXAMINATION

I certify the above-named person to be fit for Class 1 Permanently unfit. Until (Signature)

C 3. John Crews OATH OF ENLISTMENT †

swear that I will well and truly serve our Sovereign Lord, the King, in the Military Forces of the Commonwealth of Australia until the cessation of the present time of war and twelve months thereafter or until sooner lawfully discharged, dismissed or removed, and that I will resist His Majesty's enemies and cause His Majesty's peace to be kept and maintained, and that I will in all matters appertaining to my service faithfully discharge my duty according to law.

So Help Me God

Signature of Person Enlisted J. Crews

Subscribed at Claremont in the State of Western Australia this 30th day of July 19 41

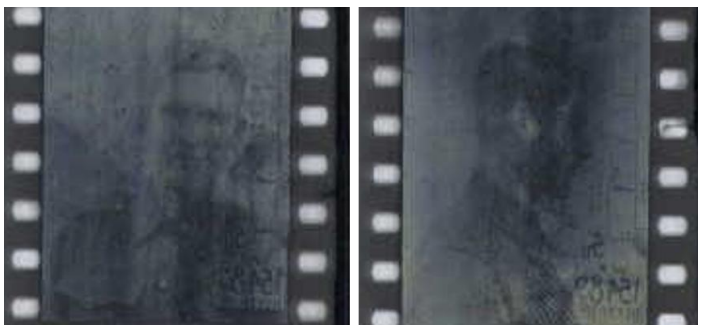
Before me— Signature of Attesting Officer [illegible] Capt.

† Persons who object to take an oath may make an affirmation in accordance with the Third Schedule of the Defence Act. In such case the above form will be amended accordingly and signed by the Attesting Officer.

2:20(4)41.—C.4371. By Authority: H. E. Dax, Government Printer, Melbourne.

National Archives of Australia NAA: B883, WX15489

A97. Whilst barely visible, his enlistment photograph aged 21 years, whilst extremely poor in quality, is submitted below and was taken on the day he enlisted 30th July 1941 at Claremont, Western Australia:



A98. Jack Crews (1920-1994) was discharged on the 19th December 1945, and rose to the rank of Lance Sergeant, WX15489, 2nd/7th Infantry Battalion.

A99. In total Jack served 1011 days aboard in harm's way, serving abroad first in the middle east from 7th November 1941 until the 4th August 1942.

A100. He then further survived two tours of duty in New Guinea, being placed in harm's way spanning from 11th October 1942 until 30th September, 1943; and returning before ending his serving there, on the 5th December 1944.

A101. In January 1946 he immediately resumed life continuing as a self-employed brick layer, which he continued to do even beyond his retirement until the day he died in 1994.

A102. Jack and Joan Crews, born Yutha "Joan" Chinnery (1925-1990), daughter Linda Hay (1946-) is one of three children and all three listed below were born in Subiaco, Perth, Western Australia:

- Cornell John Crews (Con) born 1952 (passed September, 2024).
- Cherie Annette Crews born in 1954.
- Robin Peter Crews born in 1962.

A103. Linda, or Lin as she prefers, attended primary school at St Marys in Leederville, before commencing her secondary education at Perth Modern School. There she met her lifelong friend Jude Lewis (nee Green).

A104. Aunt Lin recalled her first job was as a salesperson in the Ladies Department of John Allen's in Mt Hawthorn. Linda then moved to Bairds Department Store in Perth City where she worked in Ladies Sports Wear.

A105 During her school years and early working career Linda's hobbies included netball, softball and the occasional game of squash. Linda frequented dances and music concerts along with her friend Jude before making the decision to move to the Eastern States at aged 20.

A106. Later when she called Sydney home, she worked in the Ladies Shoe Department at David Jones. It was not long thereafter she met Graham.

A107. Today, Linda continues to enjoy going to her favourite country music club every Sunday, catching up with her grandkids and playing games on her iPad.

Vanessa Joanne Hay's (1973-) legacy

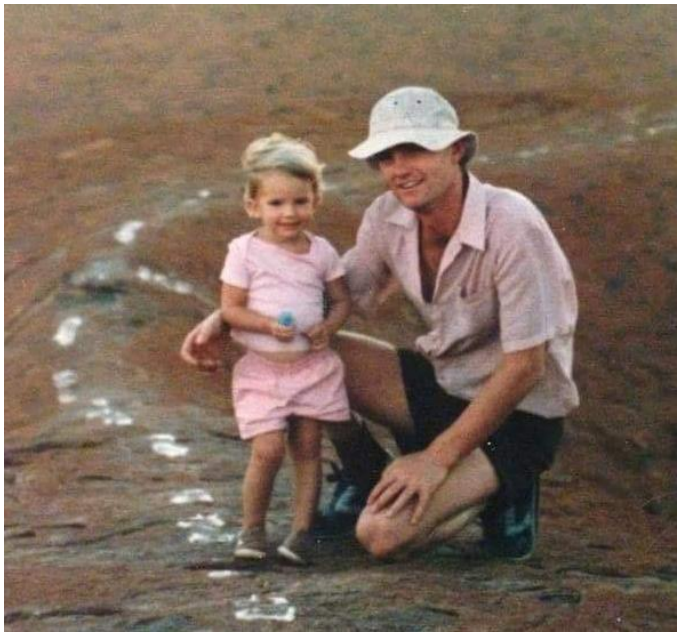
A108. Vanessa Joanne Hay (1973-) is Graham and Linda Hay, nee Crew's first born of two children. "Ness," as she prefers, is pictured below with her husband Patrick Robert Ian Annesley (1955-) married in Broome on August 10, 2013:

A109. Ness and Patrick have three daughters Chelsea, Kira and Molly Annesley, and Patrick has a further daughter Ruth. Patrick legally adopted Ness's two older daughters born to her first marriage to Paul Siebert, Chelsea and Kira. Ness and Paul also enjoy their shared biological daughter, youngster Molly.

A110. All four of their daughters are pictured below at a family gathering, from left to right, back row first, is Chelsea Annesley, Kira Annesley, and arm in arm front row left is Ruth Annesley, with Molly Annesley:

A111. Molly Katelyn Annesley (2014-) now aged 9 years and well enjoying school, was born with a congenital heart condition and had a coarctation of the aorta repair in 2018. Molly is pictured below aged about 3 years:

A112. On adventure, Patrick's eldest daughter, Ruth Katherine Annesley (1984-) is pictured with her father Patrick when she too was about 3 years old. Ruth's mother is Pamela Joyce Pryke (1950-):



A113. Chelsea and Kira Annesley are forging notable careers in their chosen fields. Chelsea is currently living and working in England as a nurse. Kira is an Education Assistant at Scotch College in Western Australia. They are pictured below enjoying a recent holiday in London:

A114. Ruth and Molly's biological father Patrick is the son of John Edmund Campbell Annesley (1925-) former British Army Captain during WWII. John Annesley (1925-) later became a dairy/beef farmer in St Agnes Cornwall. Patrick's mother and John's wife, Katheine R Annesley (1920-2014), nee McIntyre, was born in Tiensen, China. She migrated as a 10-year-old to the United Kingdom from China the 20th April, 1931 to her parent's place of birth.

A115. During WWII, Katherine served as a British Government, First Aid Nursing Yeomanry "FANY". This was at the time code for an, "Intelligence service operative". Patrick's mother, and Vanessa's mother-in-law, Katherine, was further referred to in her role as a Special Operations Executive (SOE).

A116. It is now publicly known that female recruits to the Special Operations Executive [SOE], FANY role, were trained in one of four fields: Motor transport, wireless telegraphy, codes or general. They worked on coding and signals, acting as conductors for agents and providing administration and technical support for the Special Training Schools. Their work was top secret and often highly skilled (Source: Special Operations Executive, National Army Museum, Chelsea, London:

Special Forces
Special Operations Executive
Formed in 1940, the Special Operations Executive was an underground army that waged a secret war in enemy-occupied Europe and Asia. Its agents demonstrated incredible courage and resourcefulness in their guerrilla war. By working with resistance forces, they provided a boost to the morale of occupied societies.

A117. According to Foot (2000), the SOE was a secret British World War II organisation. It was officially formed on 22 July 1940 under Minister of Economic Warfare, Hugh Dalton, by the amalgamation of three existing secret organisations.

A118. The SEOs' conducted espionage, sabotage and reconnaissance in occupied Europe, and later, also in China and occupied Southeast Asia, against the Axis powers, and to aid local resistance movements.

A119. Few people were aware of SOE's existence. Those who were part of it, or liaised with it, were sometimes referred to as the "Baker Street Irregulars", a term coined after the location of its London headquarters. It was also known as "Churchill's Secret Army" or the "Ministry of Ungentlemanly Warfare".

A120. For British security purposes, the SEO, its various branches, and sometimes the organisation as a whole, were concealed behind names such as the "Joint Technical Board" or the "Inter-Service Research Bureau", or fictitious branches of the Air Ministry, Admiralty or War Office (Foot, M. R. D., 2000, page 62, SOE in France. Frank Cass).

A121. Patrick's parents, John Annesley and Katherine McKillop, married on the 1st August 1953. They are pictured below, at home in England, enjoying their six children as youngsters, Patrick, the eldest of six children, is pictured far left, along with his five siblings from left to right: Philippa Caroline, Peter, infant Victoria held by mother Katherine, and far right, Rosamund:

A122. Patrick's father, John Edmund Campbell Annesley (1925-), is the son of Ian Douglas Campbell Annesley (1881-1973) and Eileen Mary Annesley, nee Fenton, otherwise known as "Peggy".

A123. Douglas and Peggy married in July 1921 after Douglas retired from the British army. He also served the British army abroad in Burma and India. When he retired from the army, he became a stockbroker.

A124. Patrick's grandmother Peggy was born in Ireland (1899-2002) and lived across three centuries. Further, Patrick and Ruth's Annesley bloodline appears to run deep and investigations by Patrick continue and he is seeking to confirm or refute speculative ties to James Annesley's lineage recognised by Robert Louis Stevenson's in his acclaimed historical fiction book, "Kidnapped" (Stevenson, R.L 1911, Kidnapped, The Works of Robert Louis Stevenson, Swanston edition, Vol X, London: Chatto and Windus, 1911).

A125. In Broom Western Australia, Patrick and Ness, have grown a successful business called "Think Water Broome". They provide progressive water solutions to the local Broome businesses and the mining and agriculture industries in general.

A126. Ness and Patrick further support community programs in the region. Below Patrick is pictured far left kneeling, and Vanessa "Ness" Annesley (1973-) nee Hay, is found wearing the cap (back row, middle):

A127. The photograph below to the left shows Ness with mother Linda Hay (1946-) (nee Crews), the researcher's aunt Lin. The photograph to the right captures Aunt Linda nearest to camera enjoying lunch with friends:

This page is intentionally left blank.

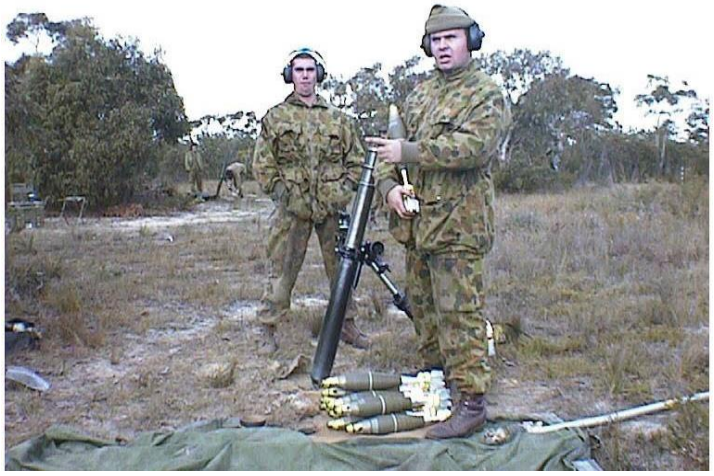
David Christoper Hay's miltary service

A128. Graham and Linda Hay's only son, David Christopher Hay (1975-) enlisted in the Australian Army in January 1993 as an Infantryman.

A129. After he completed basic training at Kapooka, near Wagga Wagga NSW he was posted to Enoggera Barracks in Brisbane, where he was attached to the 8th/9th Battalion, Royal Australian Regiment. Dave is pictured below completing an intensive training drill whilst at Kapooka (Regimental number: 5800233):

A130. In April 1994, he was posted to the 3rd Battalion, Royal Australian Regiment as an Infantry Paratrooper at Holdsworthy Barracks near Liverpool NSW.

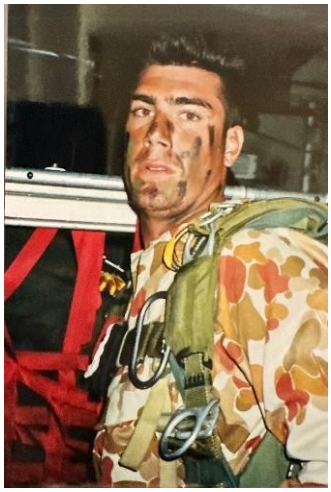
A131. David then spent time in Charlie company before completing a Recon Course and a Mortar Course. Once he completed the mortar course, he then moved to Mortar Platoon, Support Company, 3 RAR (David is standing to the left):



A132. Whilst awaiting a promotion to Lance Corporal, and after 2 years in mortar platoon David was posted to Alpha Company as an acting Section Commander for the tour of Penang Malaysia in 1998.

A133. David completed 76 Parachute jumps and just prior to undertaking the Cadre Course for selection into the Australian Special Air Services (SAS), that he was selected for, he was injured in a jump.

A134. The injury incurred ended his dream of serving in the SAS and his parachuting engagements. The photograph below was taken a few minutes prior to his last parachute jump as he was about to exit the C130 Hercules:



A135. David nevertheless, continued to serve and is pictured below in the jungle of Kulim Malaysia:

A136. David is further shown below along with his platoon mates also in Malaysia. Dave is standing second from the right:

A137. After serving for 7 years, he left the army in 1998 and commenced a Bachelor of Science at Edith Cowan University, WA. In 2002 Dave made the decision to join the Australian Federal Police (AFP) Counter Terrorism Unit.

A138. Shortly thereafter, in 2003, he was deployed to the Solomon Islands as part of the RAMSI peacekeeping operations. He remained in-country for 8 Months until April 2004 and for his AFP service abroad, awarded the Police Overseas Service Medal (POSM):

A139. On David and Melanie Anne Dziuba (1981-) married in Perth, Western Australia. Mel is the daughter of Richard Miroslaw Dziuba (1953-) and Cheryl Anne Pratt (1956-):

A140. After choosing a civilian career in OH&S management after he resigned from the AFP, he was hired first by Noble Drilling and operated on the Semi-Submersible Rig, the Noble Clyde Boudreaux. Dave further worked off the coast of Broome upon the Shell Prelude Gas Project. This project was one of WA and Australia's biggest gas well projects:

A141. He was then recruited as Regional Safety Manager for Asia Pacific for Boart Longyear, a role he held for 3 years. He then was hired as the Australian HSEQ Manager with McKay Drilling.

A142. David continues his employment with McKay Drilling today; and has just returned home after being sent to Porcupine Canada to complete an assignment with the Major Drilling Parent Company of McKay Drilling. He is pictured far left at Porcupine Canada where he was deployed in January 2023 by McKay Drilling Company:

A143. David is also a successful coach of Australian Rules Football. He began coaching at Kingsley Football Club in Perth Western Australia in the Perth Football League (PFL). Prior he played and coached at Kingsley Amateur Football for a total of 14 years where he was bestowed life membership and award Best Club Person on 2 x Occasions.

A144. David is third generation veteran and his Guest family are understandably very proud of his service to Australia. Further noteworthy, is that during his 10-year service with the AFP, he meritoriously was engaged as the close personal Protection for Australian Prime Ministers John Howard and Kevin Rudd. He was further engaged for the same personal Protection for Solomon Island Prime Minister, Allan Kemakeza when deployed to the Solomon Islands, as part of the RAMSI peacekeeping operations.

The Hay family of Western Australia's love of football

A145. Below the entire Hay Family was awarded the Jarrad Dorney Medal for Best Club Person in 2022. The first time the award was presented to a whole family:

A146. Dave accepted a new coaching role in 2023 and is now amongst the coaching panel of the Subiaco Football Club in the WAFL (West Australian Football League).

A147. Mel and David's eldest son Riley Alexander Hay (2008-) was selected as co- Captain of the Western Australia Under 15 Schoolboys team that played the national carnival in Ballarat Victoria in July 2023. Riley is pictured below flanked by his father David pictured right, along with another member of the Subiaco coaching panel:

A148. Riley is pictured below leading out the WA state team against Victoria in the National Championship Grand Final. Both teams were undefeated after the early rounds and West Australia were gallant in defeat in a tightly fought match, Victoria 4 goals 11 behinds, 35 points defeated Western Australia, 5 goals straight, 30 points:

A149. Riley Hay (2008) is further shown below in action. He was recognised as amongst the best performing of WA players throughout the national carnival:

A150. Pictured below is the researcher and wife Liz with Riley to whom they are proud of the young man he has become. He and his siblings Jazmyn and Noah are a credit to how Dave and Mel have raised them. Pictured also below is Riley with his mum and dad:

A151. Riley's older sister, Jazmyn Anne Hay (2006-) is a talented young player in her own right. Jazmyn Hay is pictured below taking a shot at goal playing for the Subiaco Football Club in the elite women's football league competition in Western Australia (Image attributed to West Oz Sports Photography, 2022). "Jaz" is also pictured below now playing for Subiaco:

A152. Youngest, Noah Jack Hay (2009-) is showing signs he may have also have inherited the athletic gene. Noah pictured below playing for the Kingsley Cats (left):

Noah at the birthplace of the Ashes, Ruperts wood, Victoria, 2023

A153. Mother Melanie Anne Hay (1981-), nee Dziuba, after completing studies for the qualification of primary teaching at University of Notre Dame Australia, from 2004 to 2006, she has long occupied the role of kinder garden teacher at Peter Moyes Anglican Community School. Mel as she prefers, is also engaged as the Marketing at The Greenwood Hotel, Greenwood, Perth, Western Australia. Her work as volunteer extends to the Kingsley Junior Football Club where she is a long-term committee member. She has developed excellent community-based systems to assist families involved in the club lower the costs of football development extending to skills development camps visited by Kingsley families to Victoria that she plays a lead role in organising each season.

Hay family's Dziuba heritage

A154. Mel Hay, nee Dziuba's parents, Richard and Cheryl Dziuba married at St Cecilia Church in Floreat (Western Australia) on the 27/03/1976:

A155. Richard is the son of Wladislav "Wally" Dziuba and Leokadia "Laurie" Zolnier, both Polish citizens. Due to WWII, no further trace is possible along Mel and Richard's patronymic.

A156. Richard's parents, and Mel's paternal grandparents, Wally and Laurie Dziuba are pictured below with the image taken at their wedding in Poland:

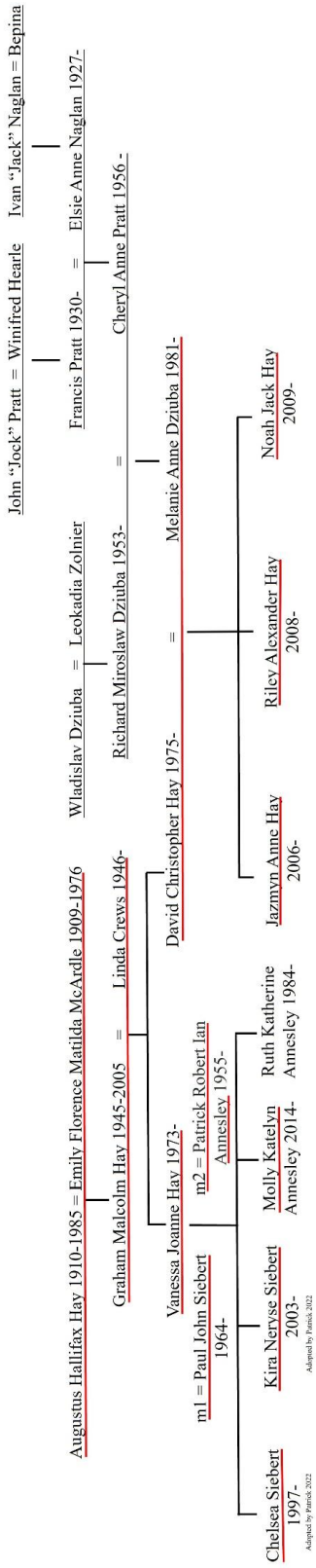
A157. Mel's mother, Cheryl Anne Pratt (1956-) is the daughter of Francis "Frank" Pratt (1930-) and Elsie "Anne" Naglan (1927-). Anne and Frank are pictured below signing their marriage certificate, married on the 20th September 1951:

A158. Frank is the son of Jack and Winifred Pratt, nee Herle and are pictured below, centre couple:

A159. Elsie "Anne" Naglan is the daughter of Ivan Naglan and Bepina Naglan (nee, unknown):

A160. Dave and Mel's three children are pictured below with their parents enjoying a trip to Singapore, when they were younger. From left to right is Riley Alexander Hay (2008-); Jazmyn Anne Hay (2006-); and Noah Jack Hay (2009-):

A161. Suffice to say, Uncle Graham and Aunt Linda Hay's (1946-) genealogical legacy is robust. Submitted on the following page is the Hay family chart with Graham and Lin's legacy clearly marked together with ascending traces of matrilineal bloodlines enjoyed by Graham and Lin Hay's children, David and Vanessa Hay:


John "Jock" Pratt = Winifred Hearle
Ivan "Jack" Naglan = Bepina
Augustus Hallifax Hay 1910-1985 = Emily Florence Matilda McArdle 1909-1976
Wladislav Dziuba = Leokadia Zolnier
Francis Pratt 1930- = Elsie Anne Naglan 1927-
Graham Malcolm Hay 1945-2005 = Linda Crews 1946-
Richard Miroslaw Dziuba 1953- = Cheryl Anne Pratt 1956 -
Vanessa Joanne Hay 1973-
David Christopher Hay 1975- = Melanie Anne Dziuba 1981-
m1 = Paul John Siebert 1964-
m2 = Patrick Robert Ian Annesley 1955-
Riley Alexander Hay 2008-
Noah Jack Hay 2009-
Jaznyn Anne Hay 2006-
Chelsea Siebert 1997-
Adopted by Patrick 2022
Kira Neryse Siebert 2003-
Adopted by Patrick 2022
Molly Katelyn Annesley 2014-
Ruth Katherine Annesley 1984-

A162. The McArdle and Orsino bloodlines enjoyed by the researcher, his siblings, and their first cousins, Hay and Hanley, now follows.

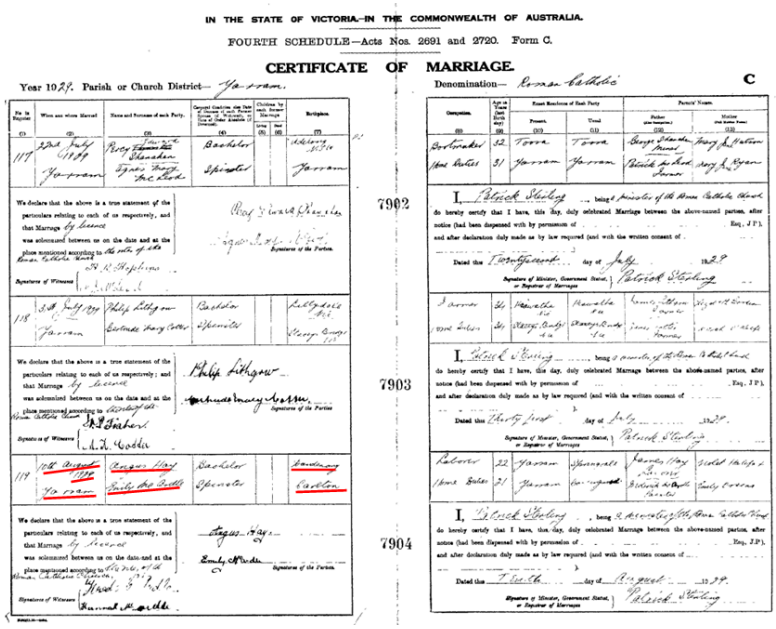
This page is intentionally left blank.

SECTION 1 - MCARDLE-ORSINO BLOODLINE

Grandmother Emily Florence Matilda McArdle

A163. The researcher's maternal grandmother, Emily Florence Matilda "Bobby" (McArdle) (1909-1976), is pictured below aged about 19 years. The photograph was taken in 1928, perhaps a year prior to her marriage with Gus (Source Hay family of West Australia, collection, circa 1929):

A164. Emily and Gus married on the 10th August 1929 in Yarram Victoria the researcher's maternal grandfather, Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985) (Victoria, Australia, Marriage Index, 1837-1950; Marriage record details – Name: Emily McArdle; Gender: Female; Marriage Registration Date: 10th August 1929; Marriage Registration Place: Yarram, Victoria, Australia; Spouse: Angus [Augustus Hallifax] Hay; Reference Number: 7904):



IN THE STATE OF VICTORIA.—IN THE COMMONWEALTH OF AUSTRALIA.

FOURTH SCHEDULE—Acts Nos. 2691 and 2720. Form C.

CERTIFICATE OF MARRIAGE.

C

Year 1929. Parish or Church District— Yarram. Denomination— Roman Catholic

7902

7903

7904

A165. They subsequently divorced in 1957 after 28 years of marriage. The researcher's grandmother then married second, Roy Victor John Sandars. All of Emily's four children, Shirley, Norma, Kevin and Graham Hay are the children of "Gus" Hay (1910-1985). Nan and Roy had no children.

A166. Making genealogical tracing more complicated perhaps for future generations, but cleared up here, is Emily changing her middle names from Florence Matilda to be known on her marriage certificate to Roy as Emily Natalia Sandars. Roy listed on Emily's death certificate her name as "Emily Natalia Sandars," further binding her in record, to that name. Certain however, is that her name at birth given by her parents is Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1909-1976).

A167. The researcher's grandmother is pictured below aged around 51 years, when the photograph was taken circa winter 1961 at Ormond Park, Moonee Ponds. Behind the camera was the researcher's mother Norma, and the photograph was taken when they visited their former Hay family home at 87 Vine Street Moonee Ponds, Victoria (Guest Family Trove):

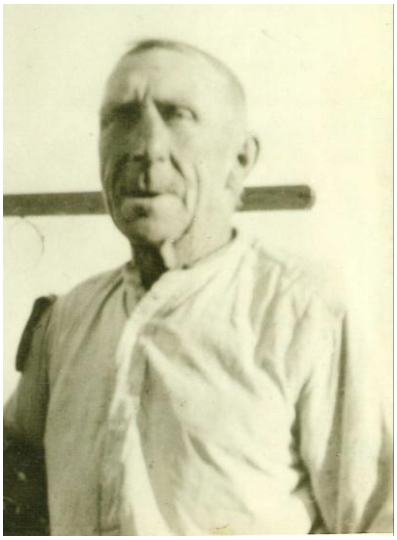
A168. Born Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1909-1976), Nan is the daughter of Frederick Vaughan McArdle (1878-1960) and Emily Florence Orsino (1881-1969) (refer paragraph A186, page 67, below). Her parents were married for 59 years and had 12 children with two dying in infancy including Nan's twin Robert McArdle (1909-1909) (Victoria, Australia, Birth Index, 1837-1917; Record details – Name: Emily Florence Matilda McArdle; Birth Registration Date: 1909; Birth Registration Place: Carlton, Victoria, Australia; Father: Fred Vaughan McArdle; Mother: Emily Florence McArdle, maiden name: Orsino; Reference Number: 17221):

Name	Emily Flor Matda Mcardle
Birth Date	Abt 1909
Birth Place	Carlton, Victoria
Registration Year	1909
Registration Place	Victoria, Australia
Father	Fred Vaughan Mcardle
Mother	Emily Flor Orsino
Registration Number	17221

Great grandfather Frederick Vaughan Leslie McArdle

A169. Emily's father Fred McArdle (1878-1960), was born in Ballarat and died on the 8th February 1960 in Fitzroy, Victoria, Australia, aged 82 years.

A170. He was first a qualified upholsterer and later tuned his hand to become a Painter and Decorator, which paid more than an upholster. Fred is pictured below on the job aged 70 years:



A171. Fred rests at Fawkner Memorial Park, Melbourne with his wife Emily Florence Orsino (1881-1969), he like his immediate patrilineal ancestors preferred taking communion in the roman catholic faith (Australia and New Zealand, Find A Grave Index, 1800s-Current; Record details – Name: Frederick Vaughn McArdle; Gender: Male Birth Date; 1878; Birth Place: Ballarat, Ballarat City, Victoria, Australia; Death Date: 8th February, 1960; Death Place: Fitzroy, Yarra City, Victoria, Australia; Cemetery; Fawkner Memorial Park; Burial or Cremation Place: Fawkner, Moreland City, Victoria, Australia; Children: Emily Florence McArdle; Roman Catholic Compartment U Grave 15939):

A172. The researcher's grandmother Emily, was the fourth born of 10 surviving children from 12. Her twin Robert, died in infancy, so too did her eldest brother Leslie who died aged no older than 12 months.

A173. The researchers maternal great grandparents Fred and Emily McArdle, nee Orsino's 59-year marriage resulted in the birth of 12 children:

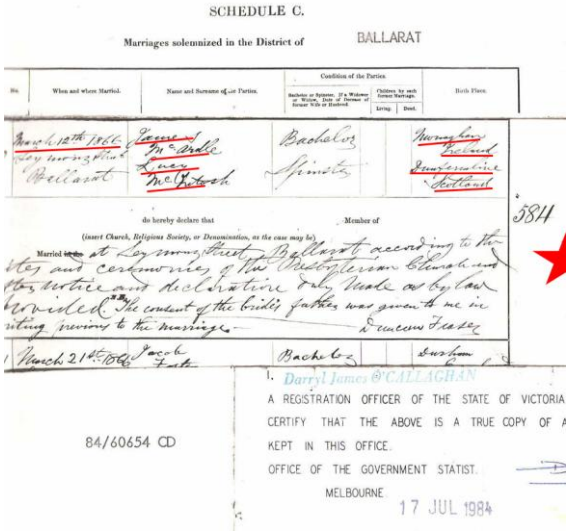
- Leslie Fredrick Hall McArdle (1901-1902).
- Elsie Frances "Googie" McArdle (1902-1967).
- Frederick "Johnny" McArdle (1905-1989).
- Edward Charles "Diddy" McArdle (1907-1971).
- **Emily Florence Matilda "Bobby" McArdle (1909-1976) married Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1986)** and later Roy Victor John Sandars.
- Robert McArdle (twin of Emily) (1909-1909).
- Reginald Vaughan "Reggie" McArdle (1912-1968).
- Cyril Francis McArdle (1916-1997).
- Mary Veronica "Bonnie" McArdle (Robertson) (1922-2008).
- Dorothy Josephine "Dossie" McArdle (1923-2005).
- Vincent "Vince" McArdle (1924-1995).
- Patricia "Pat" McArdle (–1960).

A174. The researcher's great grandfather Fred McArdle (1878-1960), died the year the researcher was born, 1960 and he, Fred McArdle was of Scottish ancestry.

2nd grandparents John James McArdle & Lucy Jane McIntosh

A175. His father, John James McArdle (1843-1900), was born Ireland, and late of Manchester, England. The researcher's great grandfather John "James" McArdle (1843-1900) was his original immigrant ancestor McArdle to call Australia home.

A176. John James McArdle (1843-1900), the researcher's 2nd great grandfather; born in Monaghan, Ireland in 1843 migrated to Victoria as early as 1860. In Ballarat, Victoria, he met the researcher's great grandmother, Lucy Jane McIntosh (1849-1889) in Ballarat Victoria and they married on March 12, 1866 (Australia Marriage Index, 1788-1949; Record details – Name: James McArdle; Marriage Date: 12th March, 1866; Marriage Place: Ballarat: Victoria; Registration Date: 1866; Registration Place: Ballarat, Victoria, Australia; Spouse: Lucy McIntosh; Registration Number: 584):



SCHEDULE C.

Marriages solemnized in the District of BALLARAT

No.	When and where Married.	Name and Surname of each Parties.	Condition of the Parties.		Birth Place.
			Bachelor or Spinster. If a Widower or Widow, Date of Decease of former Wife or Husband.	Children, by each former Marriage. Living. Dead.	
	March 12th 1866 at the house of Mr Lucy Ballarat	James McArdle Lucy McIntosh	Bachelor Spinster		Monaghan Ireland Inverness Scotland

5814

do hereby declare that Member of

(insert Church, Religious Society, or Denomination, as the case may be)

Married ~~under~~ at the house of Mr Lucy Ballarat according to the Rites and Ceremonies of the Presbyterian Church and after notice and declaration duly made as by Law provided. The consent of the Bride's father was given to me in writing previous to the marriage. Duncan Fraser

	March 21st 1866	Jacob Fuhr	Bachelor		Germany

I, Darryl James O'CALLAGHAN

A REGISTRATION OFFICER OF THE STATE OF VICTORIA

CERTIFY THAT THE ABOVE IS A TRUE COPY OF A

KEPT IN THIS OFFICE.

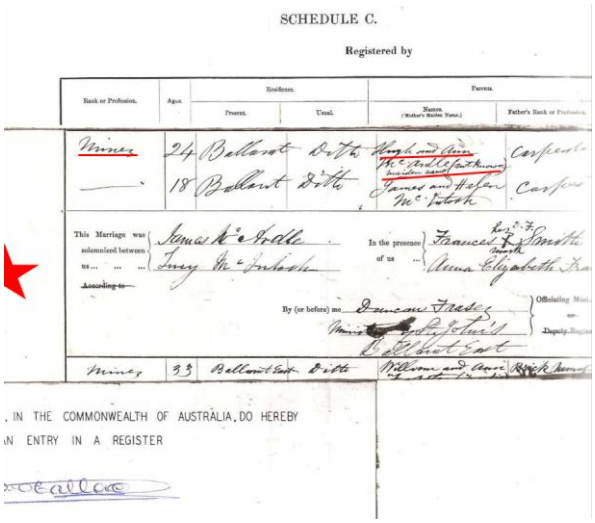
OFFICE OF THE GOVERNMENT STATIST.

MELBOURNE.

17 JUL 1984

84/60654 CD

Continued …


SCHEDULE C.

Registered by

Rank or Profession.	Age.	Residence. Present.	Residence. Usual.	Parents. Names. (Mother's Maiden Name.)	Parents. Father's Rank or Profession.
Miner	24	Ballarat	Ditto	Hugh and Ann (Mc Cartle)	Carpenter
—	18	Ballarat	Ditto	James and Helen Mc Intosh	Carpenter

This Marriage was solemnized between us ... James Mc Ardle ... Lucy Mc Intosh ... According to ...

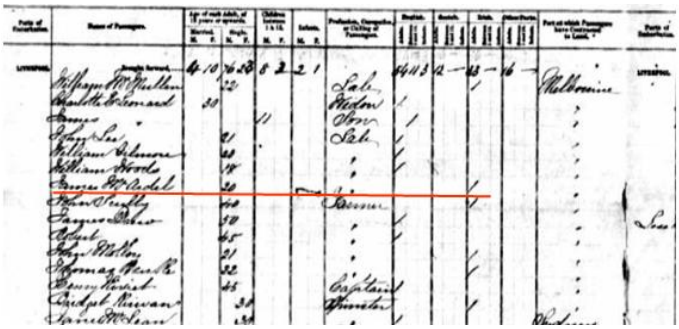
In the presence of us ... Frances J. Smith ... Anna Elizabeth Fra...

By (or before) me ... Duncan Fraser ... Minister of the Gospel ... Deputy Registrar ... Ballarat East

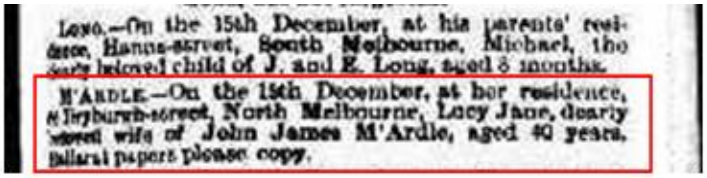
Miner | 33 | Ballarat East | Ditto | William and Ann Rock (Name)

. IN THE COMMONWEALTH OF AUSTRALIA, DO HEREBY
N ENTRY IN A REGISTER

A177. The closest matching passenger arrival record for John James McArdle (1843-1900) makes for speculation he arrived on the ship Hope, in 1860, making him the researcher's original immigrant ancestor McArdle first to call Australia home. If this passenger list is correctly attributed to the researcher lineal ancestor he probably travelled with a close relative Thomas McArdle, and James McArdle (1843-1900) passed himself off as 20-year-old but was only 17 years ("James" McArdle in the Victoria, Australia, Assisted and Unassisted Passenger Lists, 1839-1923, Name: James McArdle; Nationality: Iris; Arrival Age: 20; Birth Date: about 1840; Departure Place: Liverpool; Arrival Date: 21st June 1860; Arrival Place: Melbourne, Australia; Ship Hope):



A178. It is possible a more definitive date of arrival may arise subsequently within a prospective passenger list sometime in the future. The researcher's 2nd great grandmother Lucy "Jane" McArdle, (1849-1889) nee Mcintosh, of Dunfermline, Fife, Scotland (cf., John "James McArdle and Lucy McIntosh; Marriage Registration Number: 584, Vic BDM, 12th March 1866, Ballarat, Victoria); and died in 1889, at the family home in Dryburgh Street North Melbourne as evidenced overleaf.


LONG.—On the 15th December, at his parents' residence, Hanna-street, South Melbourne, Michael, the dearly beloved child of J. and E. Long, aged 8 months.

M'ARDLE.—On the 15th December, at her residence, Dryburgh-street, North Melbourne, Lucy Jane, dearly beloved wife of John James M'Ardle, aged 40 years. Ballarat papers please copy.

A179. James's father, Hugh McArdle (1809-1881) called Cornwall, Killeenavarra, Monaghan, Ireland home; and was found living there in 1825.

A180. In 1839 he met and married the researcher's 3rd great grandmother Anna Vaughan in Muckno, Ireland (1815-1885) (Ireland, Catholic Parish Registers, 1655-1915; Record details – Name: Hugo McArdle; Gender: Male; Event Type: Marriage; Marriage Date: 7th July 1839; Marriage Place: Muckno, Ireland; Parish Variants: Castleblayney; Diocese: Clogher; Spouse: Anna McArdle).

A181. Hugh and Anna McArdle, nee Vaughan later migrate to Manchester, England where Hugh served as a policeman for many years.

A182. Hugh and Anne rest together at Toxteth Park, Lancashire, United Kingdom (England & Wales, BMD Death Index, 1837-1915; Record details – Name: Hugh McArdle; Age: 73; Estimated Birth Year: 1808; Anna McArdle, Aged 68 years; Estimated birth year 1815, aged Registration Quarter: Apr-May-Jul; Death Registration Place: Toxteth Park, Lancashire, United Kingdom; Death Date: Hugh McArdle June 1881; Death Date Anne McArdle 29th December, 1884, Registered 1885; Inferred Death Place: Lancashire, United Kingdom; Volume: 8b; Page: 174; Burial Plot: Sec. I or 1, Grave 720).

A183. From James and Lucy McArdle, nee Mcintosh's 1866 marriage union in Ballarat the researcher's great grandfather was born in 1878 in Ballarat (Frederick McArdle in the Australia, Birth Index, 1788-1922; Name: Frederick McArdle; Birth Date: 1878; Birth Place: Ballarat East, Victoria; Registration Year: 1878; Registration Place: Victoria, Australia; Father: James John McArdle; Mother: Lucy Jane Macintosh; Registration Number: 20485).

A184. The McArdle bloodline passed down from Hugh McArdle (1809-1881) and Ann Vaughan (1815-1885), to the researcher is stepped out below:

Hugh McArdle 1809-1881 = Anna Vaughan 1815-1885
Hugh born in Ireland and migrated with wife Ann Vaughan to Manchester England. They are the parents of James John McArdle who immigrated from Manchester, England to Victoria.
3rd great grandparents

James John McArdle 1843-1900 = Lucy Jane McIntosh 1849-1889
Son of Hugh McArdle
2nd great grandparents

Frederick Vaughan Leslie McArdle 1878-1960 =
Emily Florence Orsino 1881-1869
Son of James John McArdle
Great grandparents

Emily Florence Matilda McArdle 1909-1976 =
Augustus Halifax Hay 1910-1985
Daughter of Frederick Vaughan Leslie McArdle
Grandparents

Norma Irene Hay 1932-2021 = Jack Guest 1921-1987
Daughter of Emily Florence Matilda McArdle
Parents of the zero participants for this study, John.

John Lindsay Robert Guest 1960- = Elizabeth Ellen Jusic 1960-
*Parents of **Robert,** parents in law of Fiona and paternal grandparents of **Harris and Levi Guest***

A185. Lucy McArdle, nee Mcintosh's parents, James McIntosh (1806-1883) and Helen Reddie (1806-1862), are the researcher's 3rd great grandparents. Submitted below is his descent from them, of the place, Dunfermline, Fife, Scotland:

James McIntosh 1806-1883 = Helen Reddie 1806-1862
Son of William McIntosh
Lucy Jane Mcintosh 1849-1889 = James John McArdle 1843-1900
Daughter of James McIntosh
Frederick Vaughan McArdle 1878-1960 = Emily Florence Orsino 1881-1969
Son of Lucy Jane Mcintosh
Emily Florence Matilda McArdle 1909-1976 = Augustus Halifax Hay 1910-1985
Daughter of Frederick Vaughn McArdle
Norma Irene Hay 1932-2021 = Jack Guest 1921-1987
Daughter of Emily Florence Matilda McArdle
John Lindsay Robert Guest 1960- = Elizabeth Ellen Jusic 1963-
John is the son of Norma Irene Hay and zero participants for this study.
John and Liz Guest are the parents of Robert John Guest also of Melbourne, Victoria and grandparents of Harris Guest and Levi Guest

This page is intentionally left blank.

Great grandmother Emily Florence Matilda McArdle

A186. The researcher's great grandmother Emily Florence McArdle (1881-1969), nee Orsino is pictured below (Guest Family Collection attributed earlier to Casper McArdle, 2007):

A187. Her father, Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933), the researcher's 2nd great-grandfather, is recognised as an early pioneer of Hastings, Victoria and is recognised by historians as a founding father of the Victorian fishing industry (Hay, Kevin F, A 1986, 2004, Hay-Orsino Family Heritage; McLean Maureen & McLean, June, 1982, McArdle-Hay, Orsino Heritage; Cole, V, 2012, "A History of Hastings). In her research, Valda Cole, OAM (2012, p7) lists Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933) amongst the fisherman of the area of Hastings in 1870:

Timeline – 1850 to 1870

1850s–60s: The first general store is built in The Parade, now Marine Parade.
1860 The first hotel and post office are built.
1861 Gazetting of town of Tyabb (later called Hastings).
1861 Reverend J Glover appointed as first Church of England vicar of Mornington, with the Hastings and the Western Port area under his ministry.
1861 King's Creek inlet is a popular mooring spot for fishermen.
1861 The first Melbourne Cup.
1862 Most of the small community of Hastings are fishermen or boatmen earning about £100 ($200) a year. One of the fishermen is Giuseppe Incignari from Sicily.
1863 A dozen fishermen, including Edward Salmon, are charged in court for being illegal occupants of houses on Crown lands at Star Point (Hastings). Alex McKay (1810-66) fishes at Star Point.
1863 A post office is opened on 4 February 1863 in the Bayview Hotel with Richard Pearce Rogers as postmaster.
1863 The first mail service contract runs between Schnapper Point (Mornington) and Star Point (Hastings) – by horseback two days a week.
1864 A wooden jetty at Star Point (Hastings) is erected at a cost of £590 ($1180).
1864 The freehold of 'Bungoyan' (Martha Jane King's property) is transferred to John O'Neill.
1864 John Charles King purchases Crown allotment 94 and builds the first brick, single-storey house in the township proper.
1865 Captain James Hall draws a sketch of early Hastings showing the jetty.
1865 Henry Hawkins Peddle arrives in Hastings.
1865 A Gippsland newspaper reports that a party of Chinese people had started fish curing on the beach at Hastings.
1866 John Skinner is the Sandstone Island lessee and obtains the freehold on 21 August 1866.
1867 Henry Hawkins Peddle applies for a hotel licence.
1867 Duke of Edinburgh visits Victoria.
1868 William Pout's Western Port Hotel is built (not the double-storey hotel now known as the Westernport on the corner of High and Salmon streets).
1869 Tyabb Rural School No. 73 opens.
1870 Henry Hawkins Peddle buys land at Hastings (also known jokingly as "Peddle-town").
1870 Tyabb Rural School No. 73 has an official inspection on 10 September 1870 and records show an average attendance of 21 children.
1870 Included in the fishermen of the area are Richard Grayden, Joseph Engeene (Incigneri), Richard Roberson, Charles Davice (Davis), Edward Salmon, James White, Charles Romeo, John Wilson, Evan Jones, Harry Kermot, Sebastiano Orsino, Henry Prosser, Daniel Sheehey, William and John Carstairs, Thomas Lothian, Edward Sainty, John Cairns (Kearns) and Arch, David, James and Thomas Mentiplay.

A188. Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933) called Australia and the place of Hastings Victoria home from 1860. His is the researcher's original immigrant ancestor, Orsino born in Sicily. It is historian Davies, S (2020), of the Hastings-Westernport Historical Society who recognises Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933), as well as other family members bearing the surname Mirabella, as amongst the earliest Scillian's to settle in the Colony.

A189 Other family records show Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933), was born in Catania, Sicilia, Italy, and that he is the son of Vincenzo Orsino/Orsini and Nathalia Mirabella of Catania (Hay, K, 2004; McLean and Mclean, 1982).

A190. Davies (2020) of the Hastings-Western Port Historical Society, also recognises his brother Salvatore Orsino and family friends from Scilly with Garibaldi who was the first of the Scillian's to arrive in Western Port Bay about 1859:

> "*Sebastiano Orsino had been born in Sicily in 1843 but by 1869 he had a fisherman's hut at Hastings. He married Emily Taylor at St Peter's Mornington in 1869. Sebastiano and his brother, Salvatore, are believed to have left Sicily after Garibaldi first went there c1859".*

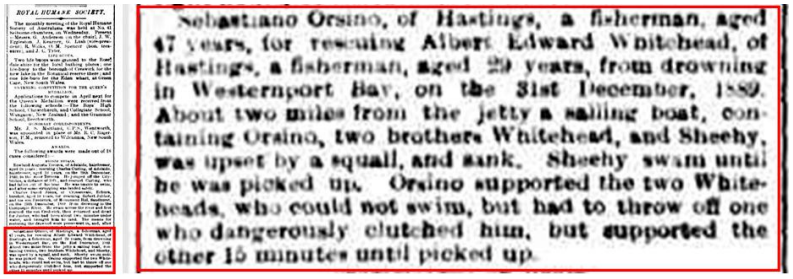
A191. Sebastiano and his two brothers, Peter (Pierre) Orsino and Salvatore Orsino are all buried at Tyabb Cemetery, Hastings. They left Catania, arriving in Victoria in 1860. Their mother, Nathalia Orsino (nee Mirabella) was born and raised in Catania and her family home passed down over many generations before she was born, still stands.

A192. The historically significant Orsino-Mirabella home, located at Via Grimaldi, 30, 95121 Catania CT, Italy, nearby to the fishing port and also to Castello Ursino (Castle Orsino) is pictured below. Adding perhaps the "Orsino" family name was taken as geographical surname from the location of the castle (Hay, K, 2004):

A193. The Guest, Hay, and Hanley families are very proud of their shared descent from Sebastiano. Heritage authorities in Victoria know him to have owned and operated the first fish market in Hasting opposite the Hasting pier and fish shed he helped erect from 1864-1866. Bennet (2004) in his book *The Old General Store,* recognised from his study that:

> "*Cobb & Co had a station, stables and repair shop with an iron fence all around it opposite, Orsino's store at Hastings".*

A194. Sebastiano also received in 1890 a bravery award from the Royal Humane Society for saving the life of Albert Edward Whitehead of Hastings, also a fisherman aged 29 years from drowning on the 31st December, 1889. The researcher's 2nd great grandfather at the time was aged 47 years (The Argus, Melbourne, Victoria, Newspaper, Friday 21st February 1890, Page 9; Royal Human Society):



ROYAL HUMANE SOCIETY.

Sebastiano Orsino, of Hastings, a fisherman, aged 47 years, for rescuing Albert Edward Whitehead, of Hastings, a fisherman, aged 29 years, from drowning in Westernport Bay, on the 31st December, 1889. About two miles from the jetty a sailing boat, containing Orsino, two brothers Whitehead, and Sheehy, was upset by a squall, and sank. Sheehy swam until he was picked up. Orsino supported the two Whiteheads, who could not swim, but had to throw off one who dangerously clutched him, but supported the other 15 minutes until picked up.

A195. A short factual story about Sebastiano's heroic efforts as a 46-year-old (Vintage Victoria Online – Hastings Jetty) was written by Moore (1890 p134) and appearing in the South Bourke and Mornington Journal 8 January 1890):

> *"Another boating incident in a storm had a less happy ending just a few months later. Four men were dumped into the water about two miles from Hastings Pier when their boat capsized; two brothers on board couldn't swim; one of them was saved by another crew member, a Sebastiano Orsino, who had hero status in the village as a result; sadly, the other brother drowned.*

A196. After re-publishing the story of Sebastiano's heroic efforts to save those who were on aboard the capsized vessel, Vintage Victoria further wrote:

> *A quick genealogy search suggested that Orsino lived on to the ripe old age of 95, and he's buried in the cemetery just across the bay near the Esso buildings. What an amazing character he [Sebastiano] must have been".*

A197. A most pleasing aspect of Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933) settling in Australia, is an oral account of him rejecting any notions of him being discriminated against for being a Scillian immigrant.

A198. Rather, he was very open to share his pleasure that as a consequence of a formal survey into the dwelling and lands occupied by early settlers, Sebastiano was given along with all British subject's titles to the properties they built and development and the land these properties sat (Ibid Hay, K, 2004).

A199. This action by Government to include land title granted to Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933) as a non-British pioneer, is further confirmed independently by Valda Cole, OAM, a Fellow of the Royal Historical Society of Victoria (Cole, V, 2012, p3):

> *"Only three of the fishing families who gained ownership of their cottages when the village of Hastings was surveyed were not of British origin; Kong War and Ah Khan, who were active in the curing of fish, and Sebastiana Orsino of Sicily".*

A200. Joining Valda Cole (RHSV Annual Report, 2019, p46; 2012, p7), is Nichols (2013, p1, Southern Riverina News, 11th June 2013), who further recognises Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933) as one of a group of fishermen who as friends established the Hastings fishing industry.

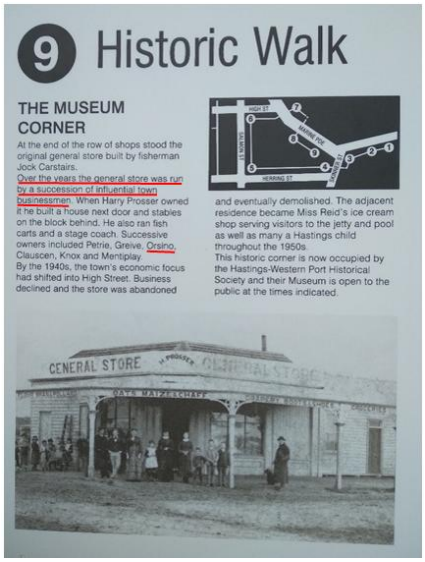
A201. The fish market Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933) established and operated should not be confused with the fish market established by his cousin, the younger Sebastiano Mirabella (1857-1946), some years later (Hastings-Westernport Historical Society).

A202. The latter fish market held by his younger cousin Sebastiano Mirabella also at Hastings, however, was the longer lasting of the two fish markets. The Mirabella fish market only closed its doors for the last time recently, circa 1992 (Hastings-Western Port Historical Society; Hay, K, 2004).

A203 Sebastiano Mirabella's (1857-1946) fish market, the second operated by the family at Hastings, was situated about a kilometre away from the Jetty, later becoming the present site of the Hastings-Westernport Historical Society.

A204. The Orsino Hastings fish market, i.e., Sebastiano Orsino's fish market was located on the allotment now occupied by the Hastings-Westernport Historical Society.

A205. Thoughtfully Sebastiano Orsino (1834-1934) saw a business opportunity and picked out the site of his fish market as close as possible to the pier he helped build. His fish market is pictured below after he sold it and it became a general store (Source: Hastings-Westernport Historical Society):

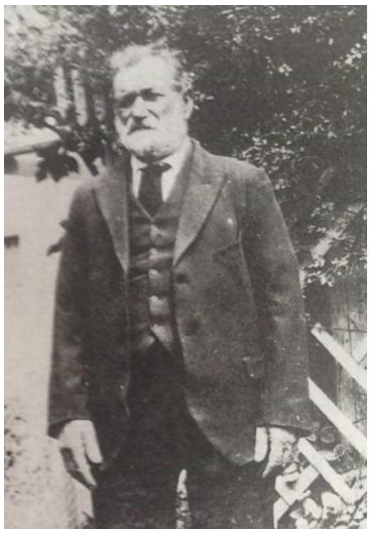

9 Historic Walk
THE MUSEUM CORNER
At the end of the row of shops stood the original general store built by fisherman Jock Carstairs.
Over the years the general store was run by a succession of influential town businessmen. When Harry Prosser owned it he built a house next door and stables on the block behind. He also ran fish carts and a stage coach. Successive owners included Petrie, Greive, Orsino, Clausden, Knox and Mentiplay.
By the 1940s, the town's economic focus had shifted into High Street. Business declined and the store was abandoned and eventually demolished. The adjacent residence became Miss Reid's ice cream shop serving visitors to the jetty and pool as well as many a Hastings child throughout the 1950s.
This historic corner is now occupied by the Hastings-Western Port Historical Society and their Museum is open to the public at the times indicated.
HIGH ST
MAIN PIER
HEARING ST
GENERAL STORE

A206. Emily's father Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1933), aged 87 years in 1930, was living with his daughter and her husband Fred McArdle's home in Thornbury, Victoria.

A207. They along with Emily's surviving siblings laid their beloved father to rest in 1934 at Tyabb Cemetery Hastings, Victoria, Australia (Plot; C/E Row F2 No 95) with his wife, Emily's English mother, Fanny Orsino (1856-1925), nee Palmer.

A208. Sebastiano a firm Roman Catholic, preferred to be buried with the researcher's 2nd great grandmother Fanny in the Church of England compartment, rather than face being separated in rest from Fanny in the catholic area where his two brothers are buried (Catholic Section, Row E, No 7 & No 13).

A209. Resting at the same cemetery is Sebastiano's first wife Emily Sophia Taylor (1850-1877); and so too are his brothers Salvatore Orsino Catholic Section, Row E, No 13) and Peter (Pierre) Orsino (1844-1868) (Catholic Section, Row E, No 7):



A210. Submitted below is a picture of Sebastiano and Salvatore Orsino's brother Peter Orsino (1844-1868) gravestone (To the memory of Bro. Peter Orsini Corsican…Aged 24 years…Accidentally shot…July 18th 1868'):

A211. The researcher's grandsons, Harris and Levi Guest are Sebastiano's 4th great grandsons. They are pictured below Infront of the Jetty shed and sitting on the pier their lineal ancestor helped build in the 1860s (November 2020):

A212. From the researcher's observations, Sebastiano's 3rd great grandson, Rob Guest (1982-) and his eldest child, Harris Guest (2018-) appears to have inherited their love of fishing from him and other lineal ancestors, along the Orsino and Mirabella lines of Catania, Scilly:

SECTION 2 - HAY/SIMMIE-JUSTICE-MCLEAN BLOODLINE

Great grandparents James Sinclair Hay & Violet Ethel Hallifax

A213. The researcher's grandfather, Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985) was the youngest of five children born to his parents James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955), and Violet Ethel Hallifax (1882-1955). Both of his parents died in 1955. They were married for 54 years.

A214. James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955), was a locomotive driver and he died on the 9th July 1955 aged 76:

James Sinclair Hay
9 Jul. 1955
Fawkner Memorial Park
Fawkner, Moreland City, Victoria, Australia

A215. His wife, the researcher's great grandmother, Violet Ethel Hallifax (1882-1955), died on 2nd May 1955, aged 72 (Australia, Death Index, 1787-1985; Name: Violet Ethel Hay; Death Age: 72; Birth Date: 1882; Death Date: 1955; Death Place: Cheltenham; Victoria; Registration Date: 1955; Registration Place: Australia; Father: Augustus New Hallifax; Mother: Annie Denham; Registration Number: 4180):

Name	Violet Ethel Hay
Death Age	72
Birth Date	abt 1883
Death Date	Abt 1955
Death Place	Chel, Victoria
Registration Date	1955
Registration Place	Australia
Father	Augus Hallifax
Mother	Annie Denham
Registration Number	4180

A216. Married in 1901, James Hay and Violet Hay, nee Hallifax's five children are listed below, recognising also below that two died in infancy; namely William Hallifax Hay (1902-1902); and sister Isabella Innes Sinclair Hay (1906-1907):

- William Hallifax Hay (1902-1902), 4th December, 1902, buried at Melbourne General Cemetery, Plot: MGC-CE-MM-807-466, with his 17-year-old aunt, Florence Maria Hallifax 17879-1895, his mother's sister **(Status- Extinct)**.
- Florence Wisteria Hay (1903-1974), married but without issue (**Status: Extinct**).

- Isabella Innes Sinclair Hay (1906-1907), buried Ararat, Victoria (**Status: Extinct**).
- James Sinclair Hay [II] (1908-1982) married Sophie Eva Rose Clarke (1909–1993) (married a Mr Rupert Clarke of Richmond, Victoria, Australia). They had issue, June Eva Rose Jarvis (1930-1980). James and wife Sophia had a maternal grandson John Clifford Jarvis (whereabout and marital status and issue unknow) **(Status of Hay patronymic – Extinct).**
- **Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985), married Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1909-1976).** Pop and Nan (Gus & Bobby Hay had four children and 17 grandchildren the researcher John Guest is the first-born maternal grandson. The researcher and his Hay family recognise that John's 1st cousin, David Christopher Hay (1975-) is the present representative of the Hay family descending from James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955) of Australia. This Hay family is Extant and James's legacy well-preserved patronymically and also along matrilineal bloodlines (**Status – Extant**).

A217. James and Violet married in 1901 and their marriage record is submitted below (Australia Marriage Index, 1788-1949; Name – James Sinclair Hay; Spouse Name - Ethel Violet Hallifax; Marriage Place – Victoria; Registration Place – Victoria; Registration Year – 1901; Registration Number – 7809):

Name:	Violet Ethel Hallifax
Spouse Name:	Sinclair Jas Hay
Marriage Place:	Victoria
Registration Place:	Victoria
Registration Year:	1901
Registration Number:	7809

A218. James Hay (1878-1955), is pictured below aged about 15 years old. The photo was taken when his family lived in Pretoria, South Africa from 1893 until early 1895. This was at the time his father William Hay (1850-1926) was contracted to supervise stone and general building construction for the Palace of Justice (Ibid, Obituary for William Hay 1850-1926, The Scot Magazine, Melbourne, 16th October 1926; refer paragraph A239, p80, below):

A219. The person pictured on the right next to him above, is his, James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955), 2nd great grandson, Noah Jack Hay (2009-) of Perth, Western Australia, aged 14 years. Noah, the son of David Hay (1975-), who is James's patronymic, great grandson.

A220. In October 2023, David and Noah of Perth Western, Australia was in Melbourne to attend the Simmie Family Reunion held at "Harpsdale" homestead on Craigieburn Road, Yuroke, on the 28th October, 2023. The family re-union was organised by their cousin by degree, and also that of the researcher, Dr Richard James Simmie M.D. (1954-).

A221. David and Noah Hay are pictured below with David's 1st cousin, researcher John L.R. Guest and wife Liz Guest. All attended the Simmie family reunion with David the patrilineal representative of the Hay/Simmie family and John representing the Guest maternal line of Hay/Simmie:

Simmie Family Reunion

Saturday October 28th

At Harpsdale

860 Craigieburn Road YUROKE
11.30am onwards
Refreshments and lunch provided

RSVP Saturday October 14th
Richard Simmie

Left to right: John L.R. Guest (1960-), wife Liz Guest (1963-); John's 1st cousin David C. Hay (1975-) and his 3rd child, Noah A. Hay (2010-) John's 1st cousin, once removed).

Left to right, David Hay, son Noah and John, with Liz Guest behind the camera.

A222. All members attending the reunion descended either from William Hay (1850-1926) (a.k.a. 11-year-old Marco Polo William Simmie, and descendent Simmie from his adoptive parents John Simmie (1823-1867) and Ann Simmie (1822-1877) nee Justices; as well as the more heavily populated descendants of John Simmie's younger brother, William Simmie (1825-1901) and Flora Simmie (1827-1897) nee Penny. They included members of the Sellwood, Hamblin & Simmie, lines.

This page is intentionally left blank.

2nd great grandparents William Hay & Isabella Innes Sinclair

Convoluted history by adoption out by his biological parents Hay/Simmie

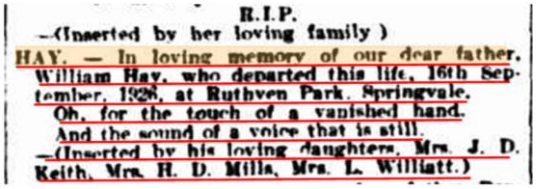
A223. James Sinclair Hay's (1879-1955), father, William Hay (1850-1926) died on the 16th September 1926, aged 76 years (Refer, article A232, p80, below).

A224. William was adopted by his biological aunt, Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice, and her husband, John Simmie (1823-1867), in Scotland probably in 1861. He further was cognisant of who his biological parents were.

A225. For the present researcher, seeking to document his grandsons bloodlines, along with added twist of recognising their "legal" adoptive Hay/Simmie lineal history, the task to present the records in a way which makes comprehension simpler, was indeed challenging. The section which is the evidence submitted between pages 77 to 124 represents the researcher's best attempt to explain progressively these family matters in a way that makes sense to others.

William's history with the major focus on his adoptive parents Simmie/Justice

A226. One year after William's death on the 16th September 1926, his three surviving daughters, sisters of James Hay (1879-1955), namely Helen Keith (1875-1846), nee Hay; Christina Isabel Mills (1884-1958), nee Hay; and Isabella Sinclair Williatt (1892-1974), nee Hay placed a memorial notice in in the Argus Newspaper, Melbourne, for their beloved father William on Saturday 17th September 1927, Page 17, Family Notices):



R.I.P.
—(Inserted by her loving family.)
HAY. — In loving memory of our dear father, William Hay, who departed this life, 16th September, 1926, at Ruthven Park, Springvale.
Oh, for the touch of a vanished hand.
And the sound of a voice that is still.
—(Inserted by his loving daughters, Mrs. J. D. Keith, Mrs. R. D. Mills, Mrs. L. Williatt.)

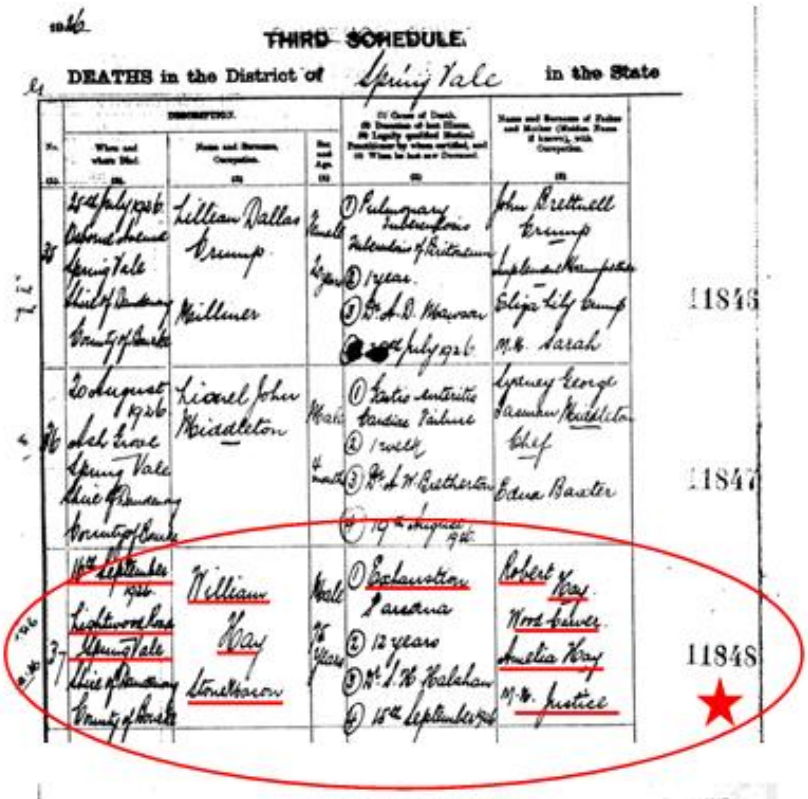
Hay. – In loving memory of our dear father, William Hay, who departed this life, 16th September, 1926, at Ruthven Park, Springvale.
Oh, for the touch of a vanished hand.
And the sound of a voice that is still.

A226. A year earlier, the obituary below for William Hay (1850-1926) was produced by the Mason Order of Victoria (Obituary by Grand Chaplain of the Msonic Order. Rev. Tregarm 18th September, 1926):

OBITUARY BY GRAND CHAPLAIN OF THE MASONIC ORDER, REV. TREGEAR

In the-passing on Thursday morning last of Mr. William Hay, aged 75, at residence, "Ruthven Park," Lightwood Road, Springvale, the district loses one of its most highly esteemed residents. Deceased was always most genial and had a personality which endeared him to everyone. His death has been received with much regret and sympathy towards his wife and relations. Evidence of the regard in which he was held was. shown by the 200 mourners who attended the funeral at the Melbourne General Cemetery on Saturday last. The Reverend N. M. Jaboor conducted the Presbyterial burial service, assisted by the Reverend Tregear, Grand Chaplain of the Masonic Order, who read the Masonic Service… "The deceased was a member of the Victorian Naval and Military Lodge, also of the Springvale Lodge. He was born in Glasgow, Scotland, was a colonist of 63 years, and leaves a grown-up family of six sons and three daughters. He was a stone carver by profession, and stone that is now in the Equitable Buildings, Melbourne, was cut by him from the east entrance of Westernport Bay at Philip Island. Mr. Hay's sons are champion Scotch dancers."

A227. William Hay's (1850-1926) died at his 10-acre home called Ruthven Park, situated on Lightwood Road, Springvale; and his death was hastened after sustaining a serious injury from a work accident in Pretoria, South Africa in 1895 (Australia Death Index, 1787-1985; Record details – Name: William Hay; Death Age: 75; Birth Date: 1851; Death Date: Abt 1926; Death Place: S Vale, Victoria; Registration Date: 1926; Registration Place: Australia; Father: Robert Hay; Mother: Amelia Justice; Registration Number: 11848):



THIRD SCHEDULE.

DEATHS in the District of Spring Vale in the State

No.	When and where Died	Name and Surname, Occupation	Sex and Age	(1) Cause of Death, (2) Duration of last Illness, (3) Legally qualified Medical Practitioner by whom certified, and (4) When he last saw Deceased	Name and Surname of Father and Mother (Maiden Name if known), with Occupation	
25	25th July 1926 Ruthven Avenue Spring Vale Shire of Berwick County of Evelyn	Lillian Dallas Crump Milliner	Female 42 years	(1) Pulmonary tuberculosis Tuberculosis of Peritoneum (2) 1 year (3) Dr. A. D. Marran (4) 22nd July 1926	John Brettnell Crump Upholsterer Eliza Lily Crump M.M. Sarah	11846
26	20 August 1926 Ash Grove Spring Vale Shire of Berwick County of Evelyn	Lionel John Middleton	Male 4 months	(1) Status dentitis Tuberculous Peritonitis (2) 1 week (3) Dr. J. W. Butterton (4) 19th August 1926	Sydney George Saunders Middleton Chef Edna Baxter	11847
27	15th September 1926 Lightwood Road Spring Vale Shire of Berwick County of Evelyn	William Hay Stonemason	Male 75 Years	(1) Exhaustion Paresina (2) 12 years (3) Dr. J. W. Holehan (4) 15th September 1926	Robert Hay Wood Turner Amelia Hay M.M. Justice	11848

THIRD SCHEDULE.

of Victoria, Registered by Andrew Erickson

Signature, Description, and Residence of Informant.	Signature of Registrar and When Registered.	If Buried Registered. When and where buried. Name and Rank or Profession of Minister of Religion who officiated.	Where Born, and how long in the Australian Dominion residing within.	If Deceased was Married. (1) Where, and to whom Married. (2) Date. Ages at Death.
J. B. Crump Father 25 Evelyn Avenue Spring Vale	A. Erickson 27th July 1926 Spring Vale	29th July 1926 Boyle's Cemetery Minister Church of England 3 days	Ballarat 42 years Victoria	Wid Wid
11846				
L. J. Middleton Father Ash Grove Spring Vale	A. Erickson 23 August 1926 Spring Vale	24th August 1926 Spring Vale Cemetery R. Catholic Priest	Spring Vale 4 months Victoria	Wid Wid
11847				
J. Hay Author and Retired Agent 380 Lygon St. Carlton	A. Erickson 16 September 1926 Spring Vale	17th September 1926 National Cemetery Minister of Religion	Glasgow Scotland 63 years Victoria	Melbourne Victoria 13 years Widow Lindsay
11848				

A228. William's death record above, lists his and Isabella's 10 children. The researcher's great grandfather was fourth born as shown below:

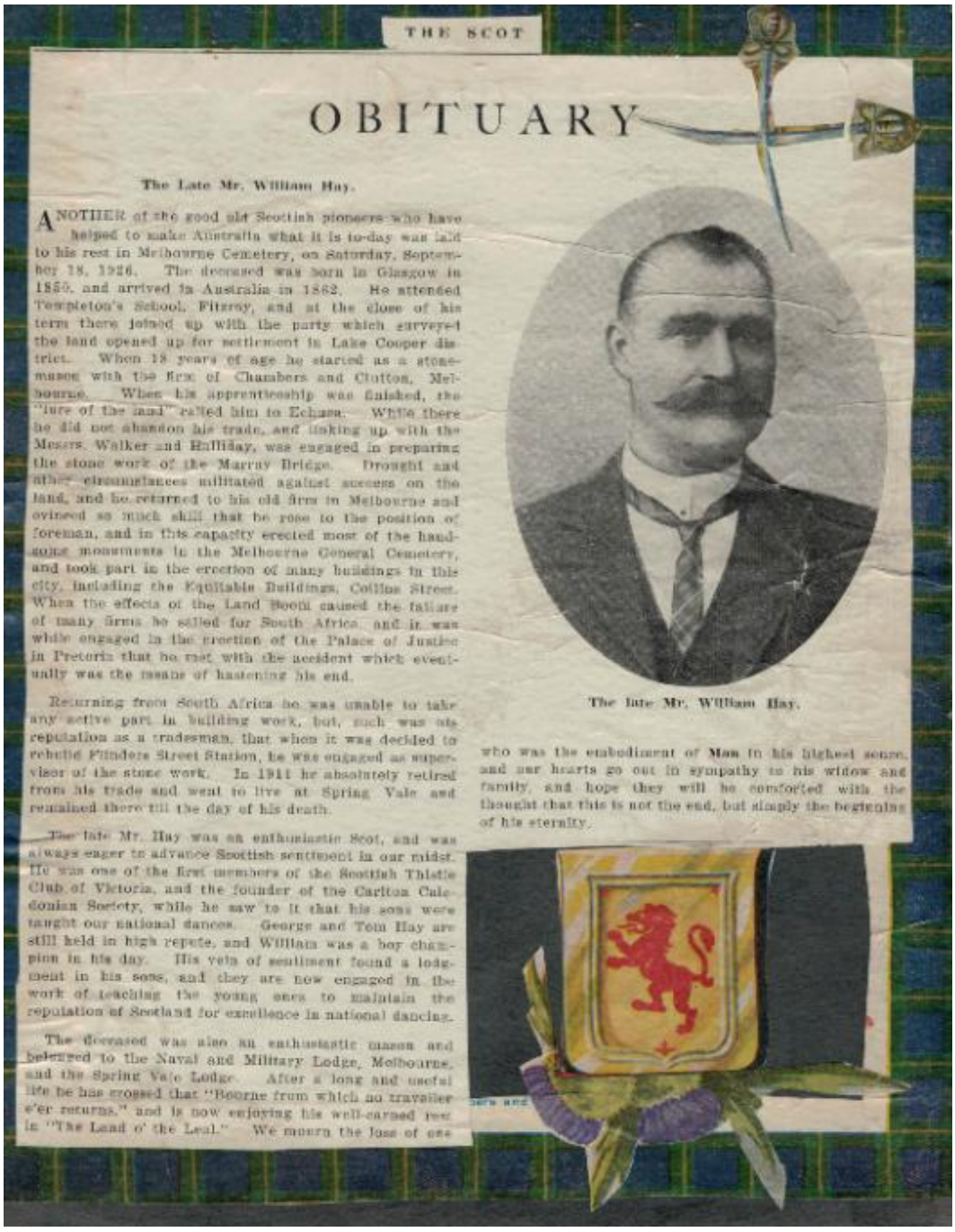
- Elizabeth Inglis Hay (deceased 1919).
- Helen Hay.
- John Simmie Hay.
- **James Sinclair Hay.**
- William Hay, junior.
- Christina Isabella Hay.
- George Sinclair Hay.
- David Justice Hay.
- Isabella Sinclair Hay.
- Thomas Alexander Hay.

A229. The authorised agent who provided the information recorded on William's death certificate was not a family member. He made error in making William's father's name, "Robert Hay" occupied in employment as a "Wood Carver".

A230. Evidence submitted subsequently will make reasonably certain William Hay's (1850-1926) biological father, the certain John Hay was an officer in either the British Army of Navy.

A231. William Hay (1850-1926) was laid to rest with his adoptive parents John Simmie (1823-1867) and Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice, at the Melbourne General Cemetery (MGC-PRE-Comp-D-No-415/416). Two years later his beloved wife Isabella Innes Hay (1856-1928), nee Sinclair, joined him and William's adoptive parents John and Ann Simmie, Ann being his biological aunt, buried at the family plot, respectively 52 and 62 years earlier for Ann and John Simmie:

A232. Submitted below is a detailed and independent account of William's stella career. It was written by senior office bearers of the Royal Victorian Caledonian Society and Carlton Caledonian Society, in March 1926 A233. The document is considered by the family as a companion to the obituary further given to William by the Mason Order of Victoria. He is further recognised by the Mason Order of Victoria to have been a respected long serving members of the Victorian Military & Naval Lodge (Ibid, Obituary for William Hay 1850-1926, The Scot Magazine, Melbourne, October 1926). His membership of the Military & Naval Lodge approved on recognition of his father's service as an officer (neither William or his adoptive father served in either the British Military or Navy):



THE SCOT

OBITUARY

The Late Mr. William Hay.

ANOTHER of the good old Scottish pioneers who have helped to make Australia what it is to-day was laid to his rest in Melbourne Cemetery, on Saturday, September 18, 1926. The deceased was born in Glasgow in 1850, and arrived in Australia in 1862. He attended Templeton's School, Fitzroy, and at the close of his term there joined up with the party which surveyed the land opened up for settlement in Lake Cooper districts. When 18 years of age he started as a stonemason with the firm of Chambers and Clutton, Melbourne. When his apprenticeship was finished, the "lure of the land" called him to Echuca. While there he did not abandon his trade, and linking up with the Messrs. Walker and Halliday, was engaged in preparing the stone work of the Murray Bridge. Drought and other circumstances militated against success on the land, and he returned to his old firm in Melbourne and evinced so much skill that he rose to the position of foreman, and in this capacity erected most of the handsome monuments in the Melbourne General Cemetery, and took part in the erection of many buildings in this city, including the Equitable Buildings, Collins Street. When the effects of the Land Boom caused the failure of many firms he sailed for South Africa, and it was while engaged in the erection of the Palace of Justice in Pretoria that he met with the accident which eventually was the means of hastening his end.

Returning from South Africa he was unable to take any active part in building work, but, such was his reputation as a tradesman, that when it was decided to rebuild Flinders Street Station, he was engaged as supervisor of the stone work. In 1911 he absolutely retired from his trade and went to live at Spring Vale and remained there till the day of his death.

The late Mr. Hay was an enthusiastic Scot, and was always eager to advance Scottish sentiment in our midst. He was one of the first members of the Scottish Thistle Club of Victoria, and the founder of the Carlton Caledonian Society, while he saw to it that his sons were taught our national dances. George and Tom Hay are still held in high repute, and William was a boy champion in his day. His vein of sentiment found a lodgment in his sons, and they are now engaged in the work of teaching the young ones to maintain the reputation of Scotland for excellence in national dancing.

The deceased was also an enthusiastic mason and belonged to the Naval and Military Lodge, Melbourne, and the Spring Vale Lodge. After a long and useful life he has crossed that "Bourne from which no traveller e'er returns," and is now enjoying his well-earned rest in "The Land o' the Leal." We mourn the loss of one

The late Mr. William Hay.

who was the embodiment of **Man** in his highest sense, and our hearts go out in sympathy to his widow and family, and hope they will be comforted with the thought that this is not the end, but simply the beginning of his eternity.

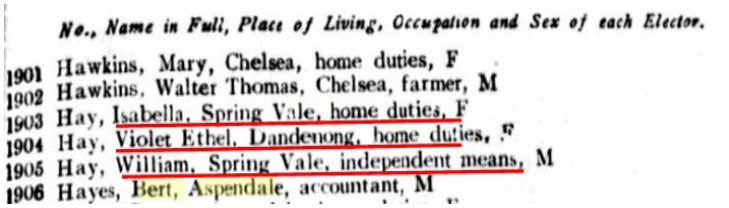
A233. Five years prior to William's death, and 7 years prior to the death of the researcher's 2nd great grandmother, Isabella Innes Hay (1856-1928), nee Sinclair, the couple, then married for 48 years, are pictured together taken at the gathering organised for William's 70th birthday at Ruthven Park, Springvale. The picture taken on the 16th September 1920 shows William favouring his injured left leg:

A234. The local newspaper had a few words to say about his birthday and the family get together (South Bourke and Mornington Journal, Richmond, Victoria, Thursday 9th December 1920, page 3, Springvale Supplement):

Springvale.

From near and far came members of the Hay family last week to convey congratulations to their father, Mr William Hay, who had attained the age of three score years and ten. It was a perfect "home, sweet home." and with relatives and invited friends, the birthday was most joyfully homered. Innumerable congratulatory messages have been extended to our esteemed resident of "Ruthven Park."

A235. Between the years 1907-1910, William received an undisclosed windfall. It is now believed to be an inheritance from his uncle George Simmie (1828-1906). William appears also to have used the funds to purchase his aspirational property, Ruthven Park, situated on Lightwood Road, Springvale (Australia, Electoral Rolls, 1903-1980; Record details – Names: Isabella Hay, Spring Vale; Violet Ethel Hay, Dandenong; William Hay, Spring Vale; Occupation: Independent Means; Electoral Date: 1913; Electoral Place; Dandenong, Flinders, Victoria, Australia; Residence Address: Spring Vale, Dandenong, Springvale):



No., Name in Full, Place of Living, Occupation and Sex of each Elector.

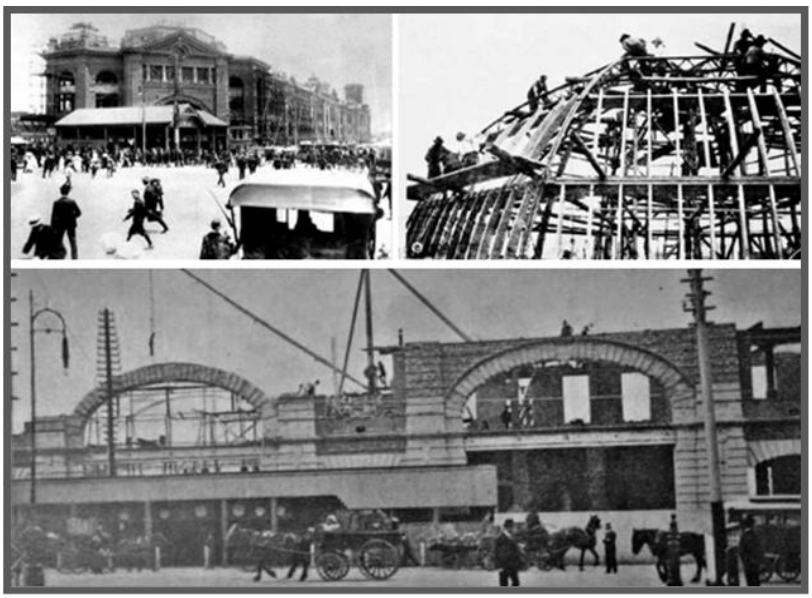
1901 Hawkins, Mary, Chelsea, home duties, F
1902 Hawkins, Walter Thomas, Chelsea, farmer, M
1903 Hay, Isabella, Spring Vale, home duties, F
1904 Hay, Violet Ethel, Dandenong, home duties, F
1905 Hay, William, Spring Vale, independent means, M
1906 Hayes, Bert, Aspendale, accountant, M

A236. Above, the 1911 Electoral Roll further lists William and Isabella's daughter in law, Violet Ethel Hay (1882-1955), nee Hallifax, living nearby in Dandenong.

A237. No doubt this is where their son fourth born James resided as well as Violet and James surviving children, including the researcher's maternal grandfather, then aged only 2-year-old, Augustus "Gus" Halifax Hay (1910-1985), a.k.a., "Pop".

A238. Dandenong, Victoria, then in 1911, was an important rural town south east of Melbourne and an important central staging area for locomotives travelling to and from Melbourne to far east Gippsland.

A239. Below is James father, William Hay's (1850-1926) lasting civil infrastructure legacy to Australia. The photographs were taken of the present Flinders Street Railway Station in Melbourne, which from 1900-1910, was redeveloped under the supervision Mr William Hay (1850-1926). The researcher ancestor was responsible for all of the practical construction work, foundations, stonework, brickwork, general and steel/iron work construction (Construction images from the Guest family trove):



A240. The present researcher further consulted the State Library of Victoria's historical photograph collection of Flinders Street Station, and Flinders Street; to uncover the following photograph taken between 1911-1914. The photograph below was taken between 1911-1914, and shortly after William helped complete the project as the site stone and construction supervisor 1900-1910, and after he retired in 1911 (Flinders Street, Melbourne, Victoria; Source: State Library of Victoria; Date: [ca. 1911 - ca. 1914]; Identifier(s): H2008.105/25; Restored by: Ernst Zimmer; Contents/Summary: Looking west along Flinders Street from east of Swanston Street, horse and buggies on road, Ball & Welch store on right, Flinders Street Station left background; Description: 1 negative: glass; 16.5 x 21.5 (full plate); More information: ID 1810767; Filename: cr004021):

A241. The present image below of Flinders Street Station, Melbourne, image may resonate more with the current generations of Australians who view it as iconic (public domain, photographer unknown):

A242. It was further reported in The Scot Magazine (Ibid, October, 1926, paragraph A232, page 80, above), that the researcher's 2nd great grandfather had a serious accident on site, whilst engaged in construction of the Palace of Justice building in Pretoria, South Africa from 1893-1895. This work accident prematurely sent him and his family home (cf., William Hay's 16th September 1926, death certificate).

A243. Pictured below is the Palace of Justice in Pretoria that William was engaged as supervisor of stone masons for the foundations, stonework and brick work between the period, 1893-1895 (Refer also The Scot Magazine, 1926, Obituary, The Late Mr. William Hay' Image attributed to artefacts.co.za/architect, accessed 2nd May, 2011; Ibid, paragraph A234, p80, above):

A244. The cropped picture of William below is taken from his immediate family's portrait taken in Pretoria in 1894, just prior to his industrial accident which saw his left leg crushed. At the time, William was aged 44 years old:

A245. William and Isabella Hay, nee Sinclair along with the first nine of their ten children are pictured together below. The family portrait was taken in Pretoria, South Africa, in 1894:

A246. Missing from the photograph above is youngest of William and Isabella's ten children, Thomas Alexander Hay (1896-1970). He was born in Melbourne in 1896.

A247. As previoulsy noted, rare for the time, all of William and Isabela Hay's 10 children, all survived to adult-hood and lived full lives. The researcher's great grandfather, James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955), was fourth born as shown below in bold text::

- Elizabeth Ingles Hay (1873-1919), married Henry Herbert Linegar (1864-1915) (no issue/extinct).
- Helen Hay (1875-1946), married James Dey Keith (1861-1942) had issue, patronymic extinct, matrilineal bloodline extant South Australia.
- John Simmie Hay (1877-1940), married had issue. A matrilineal bloodline known to continue today through Sandra Jean Walker, daughter of Newman Augustyn Hay (1913-1960), son of John Simmie Hay (1877-1940).
- **James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955), married Violet Ethel Halifax (1882-1955),** had issue, Hay, Guest, Hanley lines and matronymic extensions, et al (extant). Born Cornelia Creek Station delivered at Dr Crossons residence and private Echuca hospital, built 1875).
- William Hay (1882-1972), had issue, grand children now appear extinct, 2009 (Born at Melbourne Hospital Carlton ,1882).
- Christina Isabel Hay (1884-1958), married had issue, bloodline appears extinct.
- George Sinclair Hay (1886-1950), married had grandchildren, bloodline appears extinct.
- David Justice Hay (1890-1957), married, no issue (extinct).
- Isabella Sinclair Hay (1892-1974) married had grandchildren, probable extant – Watson line.
- Thomas Alexander Hay (1896-1970) married, had issue probably extant Forshaw line, perhaps also Roberts.

A248. After William suffered the serious leg injury in South Africa, his uncle, George Simmie (1828-1906), assisted William and Isabella's family to safely, and expediently, return to their home at 172 Princess Street Carlton. Consistent with other records held by the Guest family archives, they probably held this house on Princess Street Carlton for twenty years from 1881 until 1911 (Australian Electoral Rolls, 1903-1980 for William Hay; Victoria: 1905; Northern Melbourne; 172 Princes Street Carlton:

A249. During William's recovery period 1895-1900, he returned to the employer who first indentured him to his stonemason/carver apprenticeship, the firm Chambers and Clutton of Melbourne.

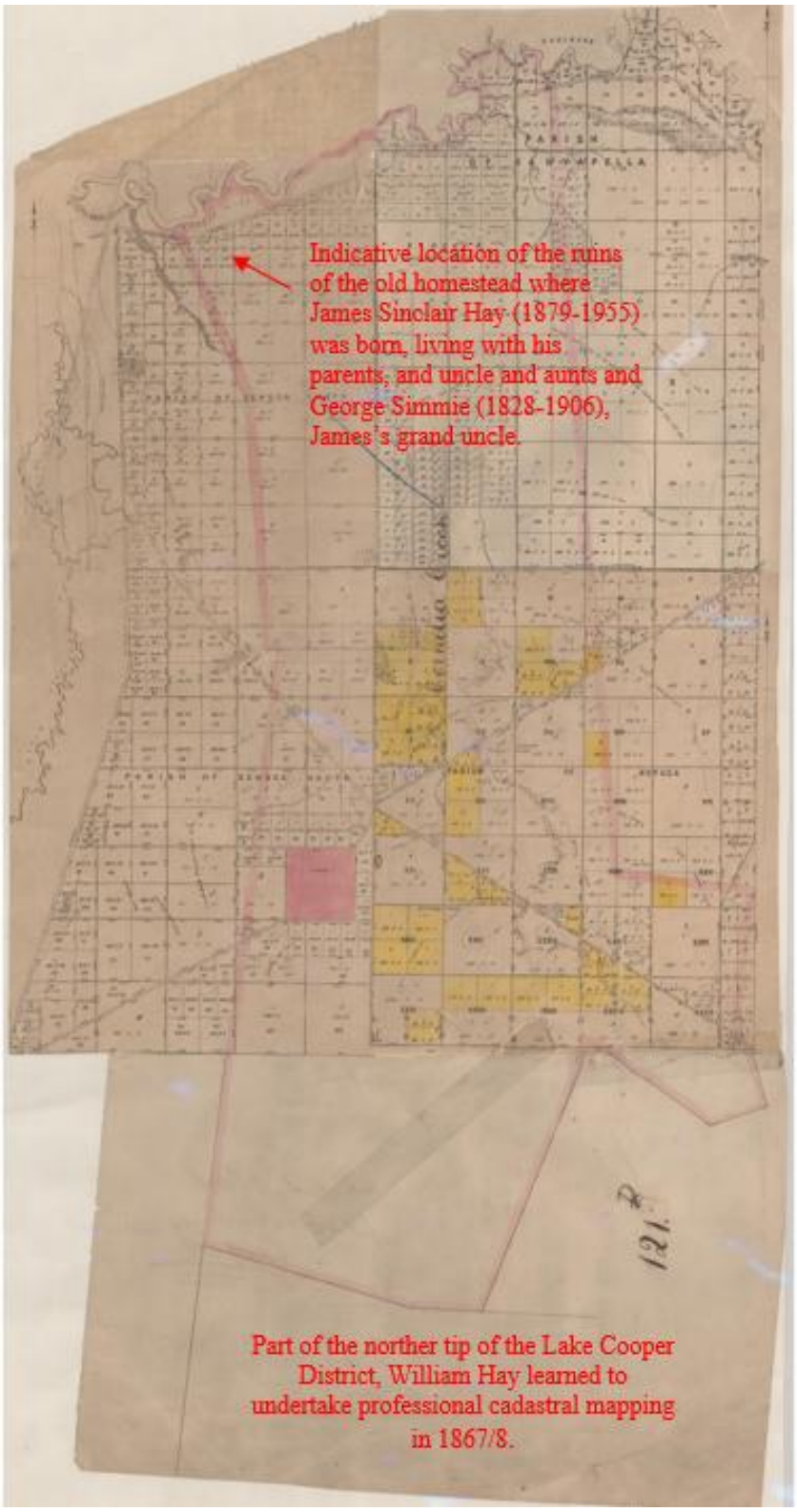
A250. During that period, he completed a number of fine stone carvings in entrance ways of grand buildings along Collins, Bourke and Spring Steets Melbourne; as well as completing some fine grave inscriptions which adorn historical gravesites at the Melbourne General Cemetery further attributed to him (Ibid, The Scot Magazine, October 1926; Ibid, paragraph A239, p80).

A251. Taking the reader back to William's early career 1868-1881, and immediately after his adoptive father, John Simmie (1823-1867) died in November 1867, he finished schooling in December 1867 and was taken by John's youngest brother George to work for 14 months at Lake Cooper District, located just south of Rochester in Victoria.

A252. There he remained in a cadastral surveying internship with the Watson brothers before returning to Melbourne. He returned in March 1860 to resume living at his adoptive mother's home at 8 Palmerston Place Carlton. There he remained to complete the first three years of his stonemason/carver apprenticeship with the Melbourne firm. Chambers and Clutton.

A253. The map to follow generally shows the spot where William learned cadastral surveying in 1867/8. The 37, 000-acre property came to William's uncle George Simmie (1828-1906) and his business partners in 1871; and then as a whole concern and privately held by George since 1877 until his death in 1906 (Hamblin, M, 2020; Dr Richard Simmie, 2023 George Simmie's Cornelia Creek Station, The Simmie Family).

A254. At the southern boundary is the area of Rochester and immediately below the southern boundary is the northern area of Lake Cooper District. The pink lineal boundary shows at the northern boundary the location of Echuca, the Murry River and the Colony of Victoria and NSW border. Whilst the allotment within, coloured filled in solid pink is the original Cornelia Creek estate held previously by O'Dea which gave George's Cornelia Creek Station its name (Source Public Records of Victoria, PROV, VPRS 8168/P0002, RUN121D; Cornelia Creek, Historical Plan Collection, VPRS8168, cf. Ibid, Hamblin, M, 2020, p 149):


Indicative location of the ruins of the old homestead where James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955) was born, living with his parents, and uncle and aunts and George Simmie (1828-1906), James's grand uncle.
Part of the norther tip of the Lake Cooper District, William Hay learned to undertake professional cadastral mapping in 1867/8.

A255. William moved from his childhood home 8 Palmerston Place Carlton aged 21 years in 1872 to Cornelia Creek Station, Echuca with his you bride, 16-year-old bride Isabella Innes Sinclair (1856-1928).

A256. There William and Isabella lived from 1872-1881, in the homestead situated in the north-west corner of the vast 37,000-acre estate. The homestead was less than 2 kilometres from the Echuca post office and railway station that William helped construct (Echuca Historical Society, 12th February, 2023).

A257. William's apprenticeship was transferred from Chambers & Clutton of Melbourne to Walker & Halliday, which he completed in 1875.

A258. In 1877 when William's adoptive mother Annie Simmie (1822-1877) died in Carlton in 1877, William and Isabella and their three infant children at the time were joined at the homestead by William's two teenage siblings, John Simmie (1861-1950) and Ann "Mary" Simmie (1863-1959).

A259. The researcher's great grandfather James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955) arrived home to the homestead at Cornelia Creek Station after his birth at Echuca hospital in 1879.

A260. Doubtless during the period 1877-1881, Isabella stood up to become also the primary carer giver to William's teenage siblings, John and Ann Simmie. Along with four youngsters of her own.

A261. John Simmie (1861-1950) and Ann "Mary" Simmie (later Irons) (1863-1859) were well known to Isabella prior to her marriage to William. This is so because all grew up living on the same street, per se, close to the corner of Madeline Street (Swanston Street) and Palmerston Place, Carlton (refer to the photograph of the house found at Attachment 1, p319).

A262. There at the homestead at Cornelia Creek Station, located no further south than a short walk to Echuca post office, and railway station, the Hay/Simmies children were reunited and remarried living together under one roof until 1881.Noting that in 1875 George was living for some time mostly in Sydney.

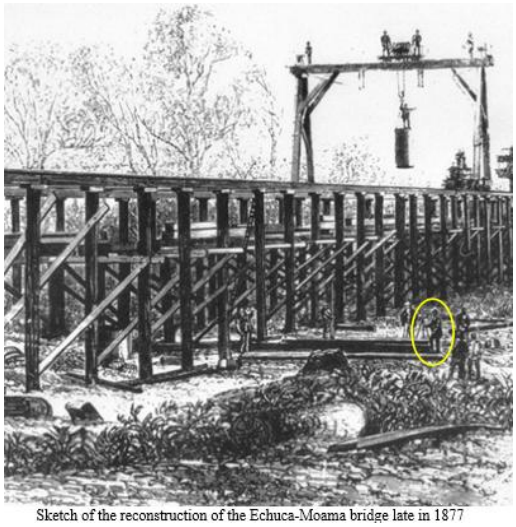
A263. The image below is George Simmie's (1828-1906) Cornelia Creek Homestead in the North west corner of the station near Echuca where the Hay/Simmie family lived from 1872/1881 (Image courtesy of the State Library of Victoria; refer also Cornelia Creek Homestead late 1800s by Mike Hamblin's 2020, p155, A Family History of Cornelia Creek Run and the Simmies):

A264. After William qualified as a stonemason/carver in December 1876, and still employed by the firm Walker & Halliday, he was promoted to be the site construction supervisor and surveyor for rectification of the Echuca-Moama bridge.

A265. Walker & Halliday identified as early as 1873 William was a talented and highly skilled young apprentice. During the period his skills became apparent when engaged on several earlier projects completed by the firm. They came to the forefront when worked on the Echuca post office project (1873-1877).

A266. When in late 1877, the firm Walker & Halliday took charge after the collapse of the bridge, they elevated William to the position of surveyor and construction supervisor for the bridge rectification project (cf., Obituary for William Hay, The Scot Magazine, Melbourne, 16th October, 1926).

A267. The sketch below is believed to capture the image of William Hay (1850-1926) found towards the foreground in the sketch below. Apparently, he is the man circled below by the researcher who has his hand on the surveying equipment checking the construction levels. He is the figure also found to be resting as it seems, his foot on the reinforced steel girder (Source: Terrible Accident at Echuca', The Australian sketcher with Pen and Pencil, 12 May. 1877, 23):



Sketch of the reconstruction of the Echuca-Moama bridge late in 1877

A268. This rectification work by the firm Walker & Halliday, which commenced late in 1877, put William Hay in good standing so to speak, with the Victorian Railways Board. No doubt the bridge rectification project he supervised helped with him making his mark as a most capable young stone, steelwork and general construction works supervisor (Ibid, Obituary for William Hay 1850-1926, The Scot Magazine, Melbourne, October 1926; refer paragraph A232, p80, above).

A269. When William and Isabella Hay and their children left Caledonia Creek Station, Echuca in 1881, to return to live in Melbourne in 1881, this is when it is believed they purchased their family home at 172 Princess Street Carlton, where they raised all ten children.

A270. Re-hired by the Melbourne firm Chambers and Clutton of Melbourne, William went on to complete some of Melbourne most appreciated 19th century stone carvings which adorned the grand building entrances on Bourke and Colins Street (Ibid, Obituary for William Hay 1850-1926, The Scot Magazine, Melbourne, October 1926).

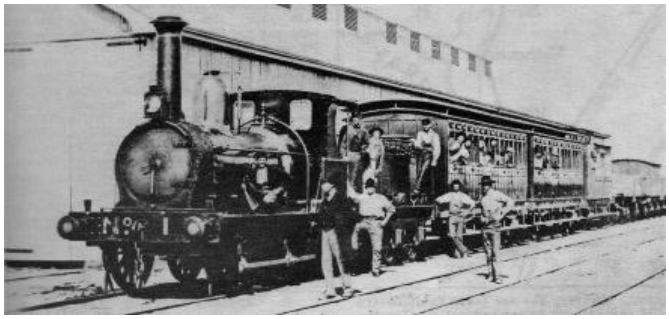
A271. William Hay's (1850-1926) major career highlights are summarised below:

- Supervision of all stone and other civil construction work for the Flinders Street Railway Station redevelopment project from 1900 to late 1910.
- Supervision of all stone and other civil construction work for the Palace of Justice Pretoria, South Africa, from late 1893 until 1895.
- The craftsman for many of the fine stone carving entry ways for stone buildings in Melbourne's Bourke and Collins Streets, including the Equity Building from 1881to 1893.
- Ditto for many of the fine stone carvings which adorn the graves at Melbourne General Cemetery from 1867-1877 and also 1881 to 1893. Perhaps also 1895-1900 or the supervision thereof).
- Master stone mason, civil construction supervisor and surveyor of the Murray Bridge (Echuca-Moama railway bridge, 1877-1880 reconstruction project), employed by Messrs Walker and Halliday of Echuca (1872-1881). Walker & Halliday of Echuca being a preferred contractor to George Simmie & Simon Fraser's (1832-1919) railway infrastructure company (Sandhurst [Bendigo] to Echuca railway line construction project); and the Deniliquin and Moama Railway Company Chaired for many years by William Hay's uncle, George Simmie, and owned by George's partners in other ventures, namely Messrs Collier and Fraser. This bridge was only recently replaced and was the first railway bridge crossing connecting His Majesty's separate realms which were the Colony of Victoria and NSW.
- Master stonemason for all stone and brickwork construction by Walker and Halliday's Echuca Post Office construction project, 1872-1877; and railway buildings and viaducts for the Deniliquin-Moama railway from 1877-1882.

Continued …

- Trainee land surveyor for the opening of land for the Lake Cooper district of Victoria, east of Elmore, near Bendigo and north through Rochester to Echuca (encapsulating Cornelia Station estate) (during the period 1867-1877) (Confirmed in 2013, VicRoads Principal Cadastral Surveyor, Frank Culliver, retired).
- Founder of Carlton Caledonian Society, Victoria and respected leader of the Victorian Caledonian community after 1882.

A272. Pictured below is the Deniliquin and Moama Railway Company's locomotive No.1, with Mixed Train, at Deniliquin Station/Workshop, on the Opening Day, 4 July 1876. The researcher is inclined to view this is where the researcher's great grandfather, James Sinclair Hay 1878-1955 first of Cornelia Creek Station, George' Simmie's homestead developed his passion to become a locomotive driver (Image source: J.L. Buckland Coln. - Aust. Rail. Hist. Soc. Bulletin 2/1961):



A273. George Simmie (1828-1906), was the long term Chairman of the Deniliquin-Moama Railway Line, a project which provided work for Wiliam Hay (1850-1926) between 1877-1882 (Sources: The Argus Newspaper, Melbourne, Victoria, Saturday 11th August, 1888, Page 5, The Deniliquin and Moama Railway Company; The Pastoral Times, South Deniliquin, NSW, Saturday the 10th August 1895, Page 3, Deniliquin-Moama Railway).

A274. It is conceivable William and his uncle through marriage, George Simmie (1828-1906), who is also William's 1st cousin once removed, allowed toddler James in 1882 to handle to controls of the locomotive. Then, the rail industry in Australia and elsewhere around the world was fascinating and high-tech.

A275 By 1885 The Moama- Deniliquin service running to and from Echuca and Echuca railway station a busy centre (caption courtesy Phil Dunn, 2020, enthusiast):

A276. The researcher's 2nd great grandmother, William Hay's (1850-1926) wife of 54 years, Isabella Innes Hay (1856-1928) nee Sinclair, late of Ruthven Park Springvale, is pictured below. The photograph was also taken in 1894 in a photographic studio in Pretoria, South Africa (Guest family trove):

A277. Isabella Hay's (1856-1928) parents, James Sinclair (1821-1893) and Elizabeth Innes Sinclair (1821-1877) nee Inglis, late of Madeline Street Carlton are the researcher's 3rd great grandparents (for an image of the Sinclair Links Cottage on Madeline Street, refer to Attachment 1, p319).

A278. They married in Scotland in 1849 and approximately 4 years later they arrived, in Melbourne, about 1853. James either constructed their family home situated on Madeline Street, Carlton, long known as Swanston Street, or worked with George Simmie (1828-1906) to construct it. It is conceivable, near certain he was employed by George, a self-employed builder/ironmonger, as well as his neighbour.

A279. The record below confirms that in 1856, both men lived on Madeline Street, near the corner of Palmerston Place opposite the University of Melbourne, which is situated on Swanston Street Carlton. The northern end of Swanston Street in Carlton, as it is now known, was then named Madeline Street (Australia, Electoral Rolls, 1903-1980; [1] James Sinclair; Gender: Male; Residential Address: Madeline Street, Carlton, Occupation: Stonemason; [2] George Simmie; Gender: Male; Residential Address: Madeline Street, Carlton; Occupation: Builder & Own Occupation Ironmonger; Electoral Date: 1856; Electoral Place: University, Melbourne, Victoria, Australia):

3rd great grandparents, James & Elizabeth Sinclair of Madeline Street Carlton

A280. They, James Sinclair (1821-1893) and George Simmie (1828-1906) also from 1862, lived well within 150 meters from where James's daughter, William Hay (1850-1926), and James's future son in law lived at 8 Palmerston Place, Carlton from March 1862 until moving to Caledonia Creek Station. William and his young bride 16-year-old Isabella Innes Sinclair (1856-1928) obtaining a special marriage licence with the support of Isabella's father lived on Cornelia Creek Station from 1872-1881.

A281. The researcher's 3rd great grandfather, James Sinclair (1821-1993) died in Euroa in 1893, visiting John Simmie (1823-1867) and George Simmie (1828-1906) middle brother, William Simmie (1825-1901) and wife Flora Simmie (1827-) nee Penny. James death occurred when daughter Isabella and son in law William were in Pretoria, South Africa.

A282. Isabella's father's body was returned home to Madeline/Swanston Steet Carlton and he was laid to rest with his wife Elizabeth Sinclair, nee Innes at nearby Melbourne General Cemetery (Australia and New Zealand, Grave Index, Record details; Name: Elizabeth Sinclair; Birth Date: 1821; Death Date: 9th July, 1877; Cemetery: Melbourne General Cemetery; Burial or Cremation Place: Parkville, Melbourne City, Victoria, Australia; Plot: MGC-PRE-Comp-C-No-02) also James Sinclair, husband, died at Euroa 3 Mar 1893 age 73.

4th great grandparents, George & Agnes Sinclair of Athelstaneford, East Lothian, Scotland

A283. Isabella's father, James Sinclair (1821-1993) is the son of George Sinclair (1788-1841) and Agnes Sinclair (1791-1866), nee Grieve of Athelstaneford, East Lothian, Scotland. James father George died in 1841 and is buried at Prestonkirk Parish Church Graveyard, Scotland.

A284. His mother Agnes Sinclair nee Grieves, the researcher's 4th great grandmother, migrated to New Zealand with her sons family. There she later died on the 12th January, 1866 in Onehunga, Waitakere, Auckland, New Zealand):

Extended family of Sinclair also of Madeline Street, Carlton

A285. James Sinclair's (1821-1893) brother, William Sinclair (1818-1892), also lived on Madaline Street Carlton, and also opposite the Melbourne university. He, William Sinclair, and his wife, Helen Sinclair (1832-1899), nee Walker, are the researcher's respective 3rd great uncle and aunt.

A286. Their children, Isabella's paternal cousins were Agnes Sinclair (1865-) and (Dr) Thomas Walker Sinclair (1876-1932), M. D., a Collins Street Melbourne Medical Practitioner (93 Collins Street Melbourne).

A287. Isabella's male cousin, Dr Thomas Sinclair married Scottish born, Mary Simpson Robinson (1881-1950), nee Ferguson, in Melbourne. They lived at one of Australia's first New York style residential apartment, at 93 Collins Street Melbourne.

A288. Thomas and Mary Sinclair were both well known for their travels and visits to exotic places. Mary's continued her passion for traveling and taking professional photographs of the people she met long after Thomas's death at sea in 1932.

A289. Mary wrote books and took over 1800 historically significant photographs of indigenous people and colonists she met along the way. Her collection is held by the British Museum and can be found online under her full name Mary Simpson Robinson Sinclair (1881-1950), nee Ferguson:

The British Museum

Mary S R Sinclair

Information Related objects

Also known as

Mary S R Sinclair

primary name: primary name: Sinclair, Mary Simpson Robertson

other name: other name: (Mrs) Sinclair, Walker

Maiden: Maiden: Ferguson

Details

individual; Female

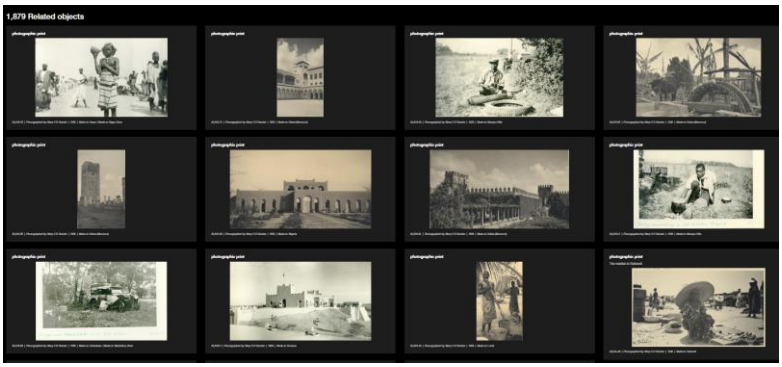
Life dates

1876-1950

Biography

Mary Simpson Robertson Ferguson, born in Scotland.
Married Thomas Walker Sinclair (1876-1932) in Australia.

A290. Submitted below but a very small sample of Mary Sinclair's (1891-1950) impressive portfolio of photographic work held at the Brittish Museum:



A291. Mary's paternal niece, Dr Janet Niven (1902-1974), M.D. (Pathology) pictured below, inherited her work. Janet who never married, near end of life in 1974, donated Mary's works to the British Museum. Like Mary, her niece Janet Niven overcome gender prejudice to graduate in medicine from Glasgow University. She was the first women to be awarded the Brunton medal prize as the most distinguished graduate medicine. She went on to become one of the world's finest early-mid 20th century medical professionals and in 1932, completed a PhD Thesis (Refer: Niven, Janet S. F (1932) Studies in Tissue Culture. PhD thesis, University of Glasgow):

Dr Janet Niven

Dr Janet S. F. Niven, recognised as a world authority on certain aspects of virus diseases, has died in London. She was 71.

Dr Niven was educated at Glasgow High School for Girls and in 1925, as a student at Glasgow University, she was the first woman to be awarded the Brunton Memorial Prize as the most distinguished graduate in medicine.

After graduating, Dr Niven worked for some years on the staff of the pathology department at the university. During the Second World War she joined the Royal Army Medical Corps where she was assigned to the task of preparing vaccine against scrub typhus fever.

Dr Niven returned to Glasgow after the war but soon joined the permanent staff of the National Institute for Medical Research in London where she became the head of the laboratories of cytopathology.

In 1967 she was awarded an honorary degree of Doctor of Laws by Glasgow University.

Resting places for the researcher's Sinclair pioneer family of Melbourne

A292. The researcher's 2nd great grandmother, Isabella, like her husband William Hay (1850-1926), also died at home at Ruthven Park, Springvale. She passed on the 27th July, 1928. As previously submitted Isabella is buried with her beloved husband, William Hay (1850-1926), and his parents, John Simmie (1823-1867) and Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice, at the Melbourne General Cemetery (MGC) (refer paragraph A232, p80).

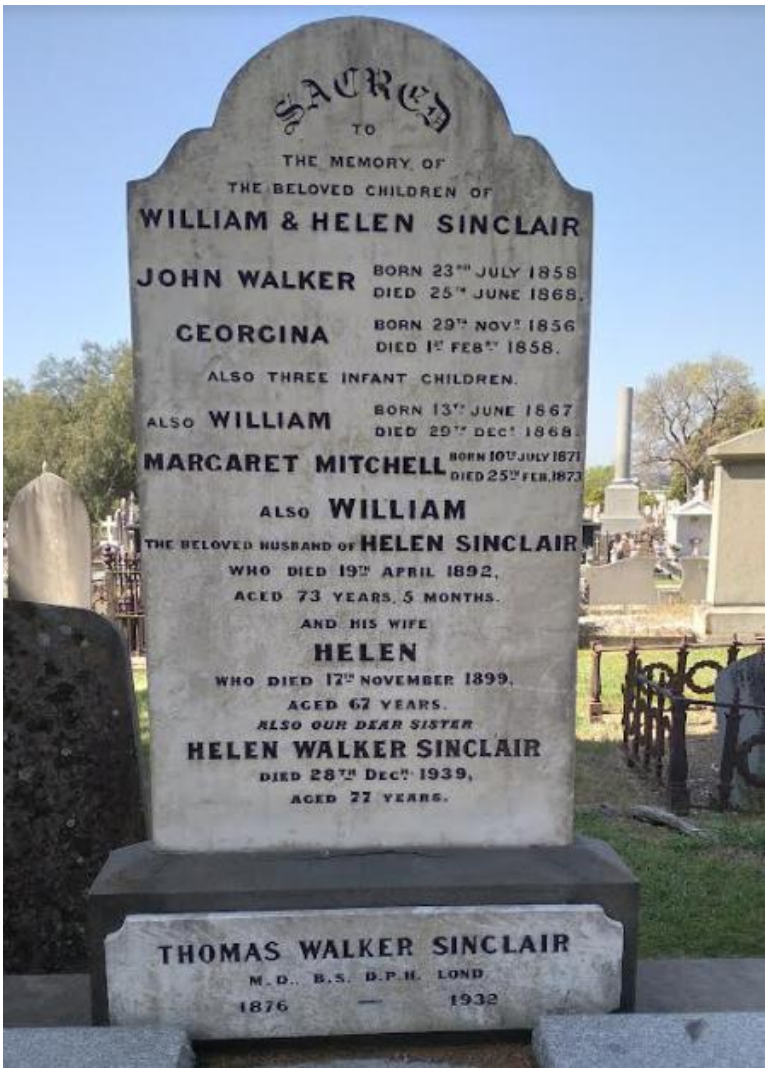
A293. Their plot is only meters from where Isabella's parents James Sinclair (1821-1893) and Elizabeth Sinclair (1821-1877), nee Inglis, rest (MGC-Carlton North, Melbourne City, Victoria, Australia; Plot: MGC-PRE-Comp-C-No-02). As shown below, many of their children are buried with their parents in the Sinclair family plot:

A294. Isabella Hay (1856-1928), nee Sinclair and all of her siblings, issue of James Sinclair (1821-1893) and Elizabeth Sinclair (1821-1877), nee Inglis, are listed below:

- George Sinclair (1850-).
- Isabella Innes Sinclair (1853-1854).
- Isabella Innes Sinclair (1856-1928), the researcher's 2nd great-grandmother). Agnes Grieve Sinclair (1859-1940).
- Richard Inglis Sinclair (1861-1863).
- Jemima Inglis Sinclair (1865-1869).

A295. Isabella's paternal uncle, brother of her father, James Sinclair (1821-1893) William Sinclair (1882-1892) and Helen Walker (1832-1899), parents of Agnes Sinclair (1865-) and her younger brother Dr Thomas Sinclair Walker Sinclair (1876-1932) (who died at sea), are buried at Melbourne General Cemetery in the same cluster of family graves within 20 meters of one another.

A296. There at Melbourne General Cemetery on the memorial adoring his families burial plot, Thomas, husband of renowned photographer Mary Sinclair (1891-1950), is remembered at the base of the Sinclair memorial stone. The stone itself further remembers his parents, William Sinclair and wife Helen Sinclair, nee Walker. This William being the brother of researcher's third great grandfather, James Sinclair (1821-1893):



A297. Overleaf is a succinct lineal pedigree ascending from the researcher's 2nd great grandmother, Isabella Innes Hay (1856-1928), nee Sinclair to her great grandparents George Sinclair (1791-1841) and Agnes Grieve (1791-1866) (the researcher's 4th great grandparents on his maternal Sinclair bloodline).

Guest-Sinclair Maternal Bloodline

George Sinclair 1791-1841 = Agnes Grieve 1791-1866

George Sinclair's birth - Scotland, Select Births and Baptisms, 1564-1950; Record details – Name: George Sinclair; Gender: Male; Age: 0; Birth Date: 20 February 1791; Baptism Date: 21 February 1791; Baptism Place: Athelstaneford, East Lothian, Scotland; Residence Date: 1791; Residence Place: Athelstaneford, East Lothian, Scotland; Father: George Sinclair; Mother: Katherine Tait.

Marriage - Scotland, Select Marriages, 1561-1910; Record details – Name: George Sinclair; Gender: Male; Marriage Date: 20th May 1811; Marriage Place: Prestonkirk, East Lothian, Scotland; Spouse: Agnes Greive; FHL Film Number: 1067854.

James Sinclair 1821-1893 = Elizabeth Inglis 1821-1877
Son of George Sinclair and Agnes Grieve

Death - James Sinclair in the Australia, Death Index, 1787-1985; Name: James Sinclair; Death Age: 71; Birth: Date: 1822; Death Date: 1893; Death Place: Euroa, Victoria; Registration Date: 1893; Registration Place: Australia; Father: George Sinclair; Mother: Agnes Grieve: Registration Number: 1682.

Marriage - Scotland, Select Marriages, 1561-1910; Record details – Name: James Sinclair; Gender: Male; Marriage Date: 13th April, 1849; Marriage Place: Garvald, East Lothian, Scotland; Spouse: Elizabeth [Eliza] Inglis.

Isabella Innes Sinclair 1856-1928 = William Hay 1850-1926
Daughter of James Sinclair and Elizabeth Inglis

Birth - Australia Birth Index, 1788-1922; Record details – Name: Elizabeth Inglis; Gender: Female; Spouse: James Sinclair; Child: Isabella Innes Sinclair; Registration Number: 11401.

Marriage - Australia Marriage Index, 1788-1949; Record details – Name: Isabella Innes Sinclair; Marriage Date: 1872; Marriage Place: Victoria; Registration Date: 1872; Registration Place: Victoria, Australia; Spouse: William Hay; Registration Number: 3151.

James Sinclair Hay 1879-1955 = Violet Ethel Hallifax 1881-1956

James, the son of Isabella Innes Sinclair and William Hay 1851-1926

Augustus Halifax Hay 1910-1985 = Emily McArdle 1909-1976

Gus, the son of James Sinclair Hay and Violet Hallifax

Norma Irene Hay 1932-2021 = Jack Guest 1921-1987

Norma, daughter of Augustus Halifax Hay and Emily McArdle

John L.R. Guest 1960- = Elizabeth Ellen Jusic 1963-

John the son of Norma Irene Hay and Jack Guest

Robert John Guest 1982- = Fiona Louise Cummane 1985-

Robert, son of John Guest and Elizabeth Guest, nee Jusic.

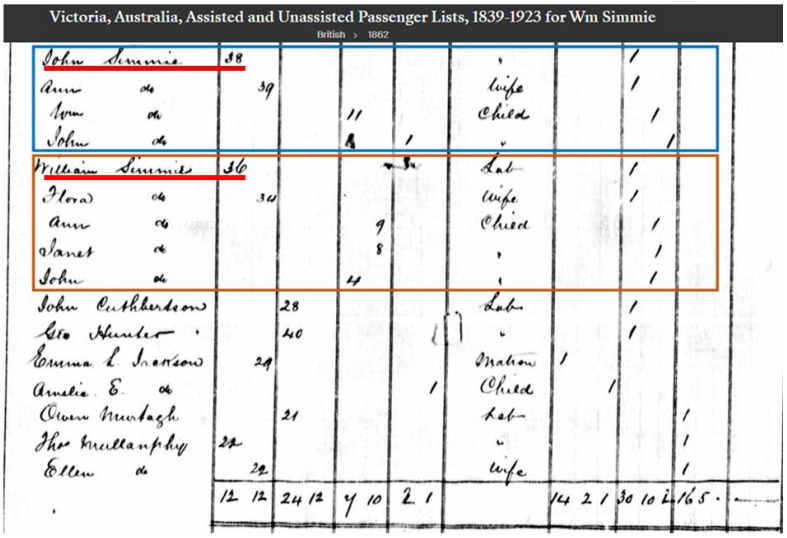
Harris Robert Guest 2018- and brother **Levi John Guest (2020-**

Sons of Robert and Fiona Guest, nee Cummane

3rd great grandparents' John Simmie & Ann Justice (Adoptive)

A298. Submitted below, marked by the blue block are the specific four member of John Simmie's (1823-1867) family unit that migrated to Melbourne aboard the ship Marco Polo arriving in March 1862.

A299. The five names marked in the orange block of text below, are the include middle apex brother William Simmie's (1828-1901) his wife and three children (Source: Marco Polo Ship List 1862, Table for Simmie Passengers Arriving in Melbourne from Scotland, Source: PROV, 2011; Victoria, Australia, Assisted and Unassisted Passenger Lists, 1839–1923; Name: William Simmie [Hay]; Nationality: Scottish; Arrival Age: 11; Birth Date: about 1851; Departure Place: Liverpool; Arrival Date: Mar 1862; Arrival Place: Melbourne, Australia; Ship: Marco Polo) ([Italics mine]):



A300. The names of William and Flora Simmie (1827-1897), nee Penny are: Ann Balding (1852-1891) (nee Simmie), aged 9 years; Janet "Jessie" Trewick (1853-1941) (nee Simmie) aged 8; and another of the name John Simmie (1857-1915), aged 4 years.

A301. William and Flora's toddler son listed above, John Simmie (1858-1915) is the same person John Simmie late of "Ruthven" Echuca East (1858-1915) recognised by the researcher relative by degree, author Mike Hamblin (2020, p111, A Family History of Cornelia Creek Run & The Simmies).

A302. This John Simmie (1858-1915) should not to be confused with John Simmie (1861-1950) who went on to become a multiple elected mayor of Echuca. He, John Simmie (1861-1950) is William Hay's (18950-1926) adoptive brother and further by blood tie William's 1st maternal cousin through Ann Simmie (1822-1877). It is Ann, William's adoptive mother who is William's biological aunt, the sister of his biological mother Amelia Justice (1828-) who remained in Scotland.

A303. William Hay (Simmie) (1850-1926) beloved adoptive parents, John Simmie (1823-1867) and Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice, adopted, him, most likely in 1861 (cf., Dr Mann, PhD 2017).

A304. The first known record in regards to his adoption is the 1861 Scotland Census placing William Hay, aged 10 years living with John and Ann Simmie, nee Justice, who, in 1862 are explicitly recognised as his parents when they journeyed to Melbourne in 1862 and deliberately listed him on the 1862 Marco Polo ships list as their 11-year-old child, William Simmie (1850-1926), along with their one-year-old infant child, John Simmie (1861-1950 (later Mayor of Echuca).

A305. These minimum records, 1861 and 1862, gathered and submitted satisfied, William's legal status, pre-1930, under the Scotland irregular adoption law, that William was the son of John Simmie (1823-1867) and Ann Simmie (1822-1877). They further help link him through his mother Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice to his biological mother Amelia Justice (1828-) and her husband by civil marriage in 1849, the mysterious but certain named, John Hay.

A306. Prior to submitting evidence to support the above claim of William's biological parents are in fact John Hay and Amelia Hay, nee Justice, and during the period back in Melbourne for the years 1862-1865, John and Ann Simmie and their three children were surrounded by family/friends living in Carlton. Most of them it appears, mostly originated from Ruthvenfield/Tibbermore, Perthshire Scotland, or nearby, Haddintonshire, Scotland in the case of the Sinclair family line.

A307. John Simmie (1823-1967) had steady work with his younger brother George in Goerge's house building company. He John Simmie (1823-1867), William's adoptive father also stepped in to help George to complete his "ironmonger' jobs.

A308. John Simmie worked side-by-side in George's house building company with James Sinclair (1821-1893), the father of Isabella who were later, in 1872, six-years after John Simmie (1823-1867) died, John's adoptive son, William Hay. They, John Simmie (1823-1867) of Palmerston Place, Carlton and co-worker, James Sinclair (1821-1893) of Madeline Street, Carlton, were both qualified as stonemasons, worked for the same firm, were neighbours, and posthumously united in family by marriage of their children.

A309. John's wife, and William's beloved adopted mother, Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice was assisted in the successful birth in 1863 by her sister-in-law, and neighbour, Flora Simmie in the birth of William Hay's youngest adoptive sibling, Ann "Mary" Irons (1863-1959), nee Simmie (Ann [Mary] Simmie in the Victoria, Australia, Birth Index, 1837-1921; Detail Source – Name: Ann Simmie; Birth Place: Palmerston Place, Carlton, Victoria, Australia; Birth Registration Date: 1863; Birth Registration Place: Victoria, Australia; Father: John Simmie; Mother: Ann Simmie; Maiden name: Justice; Reference Number: 3728) [mine].

A310. John's middle brother William Simmie (1825-1901) and wife Flora Simmie (1827-1897) actually lived across the road in Palmerston Place, until opportunity knocked in 1865 after George's rapid business venture expansion into civil rail infrastructure, as a contractor to George's large scale, rail construction firm.

A311. William and wife Flora Simmie (1827-1897), nee Penny moved to Euroa after taking up George's offer to contract rail materials and building supply materials to help service George Simmie and Simon Fraser's (1832-1919) railway construction company from Euroa.

A312. This proved lucrative for William and Flora and through their hard toil, persistence and own business savvy forged a very good life settling the family branch permanently in Euroa (The Elmore Standard, Thursday 31 October 1901, Page 2, Deaths; Ibid, Hamblin, M 2020) (refer also to Attachment 1 – paragraphs A1-17 – A1-50, pp 297-310; and obituary submitted in full below):

SIMMIE. - On the 30th October, at Ruthven Park, Elmore, William Simmie, aged 75.

Obituary
MR. W. SIMMIE [1825-1901] [mine]
Another of the old pioneers passed away in the person of Mr. Wm. Simmie, of Ruthven Park, Elmore, on Wednesday at half-past one, at the advanced age of 75 years. He has lived in these district 26 years, and came to Victoria in 1862. He has not been well during the winter, and the cause of death was acute pneumonia, supervening on a severe cold. He leaves two sons, John and George, also a daughter, Mrs. T. M. Trewick, Elmore. The funeral took place today (Thursday) and was largely attended, the service being conducted by the Rev. Neilson, of the Presbyterian Church. The Hon. G. Simmie, M.L.C. for the Northern Province, is brother to the deceased, and was present at the funeral.

A313. Below is 44-year-old John Simmie's (1823-1867) Funeral Notice, which was arranged by the researcher's 3rd great uncle, George Simmie (1828-1906) (The Argus, Melbourne, Victoria, Saturday 16th November 1867, Page 8, Family Notices):

THE Friends of Mr. GEORGE SIMMIE, contractor, are respectfully invited to follow the remains of his late brother, John, to the place of interment, Melbourne General Cemetery.
The funeral to move from his residence, Palmerston-place, off Madeline-street, Carlton, on Sunday, 17th inst., at 4 o'clock, p.m.
JOHN DALEY, undertaker, Latrobe and Spring streets.

A314. When John died in November 1867, he left behind his widow Ann, aged 45 years and their three children, William, and his two siblings John Simmie (1861-1950) the younger, aged 6; and Ann "Mary" Irons (1863-1859), nee Simmie aged only 4 years old in 1867 and John the younger's biological sibling.

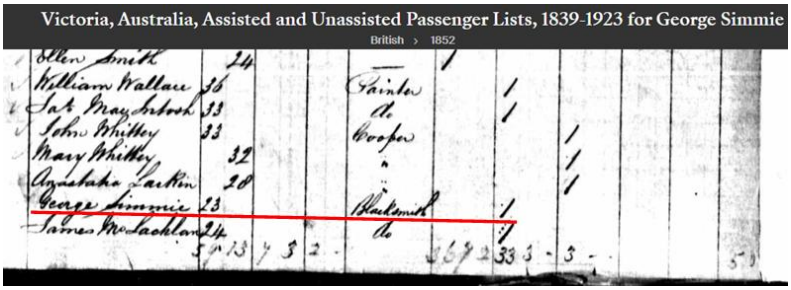
This page is intentionally left blank.

George Simmie (1828-1906) the family's original pioneer and patriarch

A315. Whilst George was the youngest of the three apex Simmie brothers, first of Australia, he was the undisputed patriarch of the family.

A316. As previously declared George's migration to the Colony of Victoria came almost ten years earlier than that of his two elder brothers, John Simmie (1828-1867) and William Simmie (1825-1901) who both arrived aboard the ship Marco Polo in March 1862, along with their young families in a party of nine.

A317. For the families record, submitted below is a facsimile record of his arrival in Melbourne on the 11th October 1852, disembarking from the ship Hibernia on the 11th October 1852 (Victoria, Australia, Assisted and Unassisted Passenger Lists, 1839-1923; Name: George Simmie; Nationality: Scottish; Arrival Age: 23; Birth Date: 1828; Departure Place: Liverpool; Arrival Date: 11 October, 1852; Arrival Place: Port Phillip Bay, Australia; Ship: Hibernia; Occupation: Blacksmith) (refer also Attachment 1 – paragraphs A1-51 – A1-77, pp 311-320, below):



A318. Amazingly, just a few years later from 1859 fortune changed dramatically. In 1859 he won larger scale government contracts building a fair proportion of the Beechworth Gaol with Mr H. Dalrymple. He and his partner Simon Fraser then backed up with other Government contracted projects erecting buildings around the Colony.

A319. By 1864 they along with the firm Messrs Collier & Barry they collaborated with, and completed successfully, the major rail infrastructure project, the Sandhurst-Echuca railway line extension.

A320. In 1865, George and Simon, along with Mathew Craig (dec 1877) and William Forrest, formed the "Squatting Investment Company."

A321. The Squatting Investment Company became part of Australian business folk law and in 1865 their firm purchased Mt Hutton Station in Queensland. It was one of Australia's largest ever land holdings, grazing and cattle stations (Pastoral Station records, 1875 - 1973, 3 & N104; Noel Butlin Archives Centre, Australian National University, formerly Archives of Business and Labour).

A322. In 1871 George Simmie and his partners Simon Fraser (1832-1919) and Mathew Craig further established another business called Simmie, Fraser & Craig. In 1872 Simmie, Fraser & Craig & Co. purchased from the Colonial Bank, Cornelia Creek Station in the Colony of Victoria.

A323. George would within 7 years own the Station outright and by the time he purchased it from his partners Simon and Mathew it had grown to 37, 000 acres; and stretched from Rochester in the south to Echuca in the north, right up to the Murry River border with the Colony of NSW (Ibid, Hamblin, M, 2020, p111-155; Ibid Dr Richard Simmie, 2023).

A324. In 1877, George sold his interest in Mt Hutton Station and negotiated with his friends and partners, Simon Fraser (1832-1919) and Mathew Craig (dec 1877) to buy them out of their share of Cornelia Creek Station. From that point in time, 1877 to his death in 1906, George was the sole owner of Cornelia Creek Station, a property he adored (Ibid, Hamblin, M, 2020, p111-155).

A325. George's friend Simon continued to hold the vast majority of shares in the business and the Squatting Investment Company that he and George built; and registered in Victoria in 1882. Under Simon's ownership the business went from strength to strength.

A326. One hundred years after it was created, in 1965 the Squatting Investment Company merged with the Western Queensland Pastoral Co Ltd.

A327. It was not until 1974 the firm was taken over by the company Elders Smith Goldsborough Mort. The takeover company changed its name in 1982; to the become well-known company to most Australians, Elders IXL (Guide to Australian Business Records Online).

A328. George's career like that of Simon recognised he lived a big life. Like Simon, George also went onto to serve as a member of parliament in the Colony of Victoria, representing the Northern Provence (Echuca and surrounding districts).

A329. Adding further it is George's death certificate which is a family heirloom because it lists him, perhaps uniquely so, as a "Squatter".

A330. This is a unique qualification in Australia making him part of the nations "Squattocracy" (NSW State Library) (Australia Death Index, 1787-1985; Record details – Name; George Simmie; Death Age: 78; Birth Date: 1828; Death Date: 1906; Death Place: Melbourne, Victoria; Registration Date: 1906; Registration Place: Australia; Registration Number: 2685; Daughter: Maud Jordan) (refer Attachment 1 – A1-50 – A1-77, p311-320).

A331. He George Simmie (1828-1906), MP and Simon Fraser (1832-1919), MP, were also friends of NSW Colony politician, Wiliam Hay (1816-1908) born in Banff shire, Scotland, who should not be confused with the researcher's 2nd great grandfather William Hay (1850-1926). William Hay the NSW politician, was the NSW member of Murray in the NSW parliament, 1877-1882, who opened the Deniliquin-Moama rail line in 1882.George was Chairman and Simon one of the Companies owners.

A332. By anyone's reckoning, this remarkable turnaround in fortune in 1859 for George, further mirrors the most remarkable change in circumstances for his nephew by marriage, and cousin, once removed by blood, William Hay (1850-1926). No doubt also George stepped in and was present when William's adoptive father, George's brother John died in 1867. Then George assumed the role of William's male guardian.

A333. When it is considered William Hay (185-1926) was a 10-year-old-boy working at a quarry pit in Cadder near Glasgow in1861 and in 12 months or so found himself enrolled the then salubrious, and respected commercial college known as the Templeton School, Victoria, Melbourne, in the Colony of Victoria - a half a world away, something incredible had occurred.

This page is intentionally left blank.

3rd great grandparents' John Hay & Amelia Justice (Biological)

A334. In full context of the researcher's endeavours above to explain Williams life inn his adopted homeland commenced with the love and care of his adoptive parents he adored, the trace leads the researcher to present fresh evidence, perhaps sufficient to reveal the true identity of William Hay (Simmie) (1850-1926) mysterious biological father, John Hay.

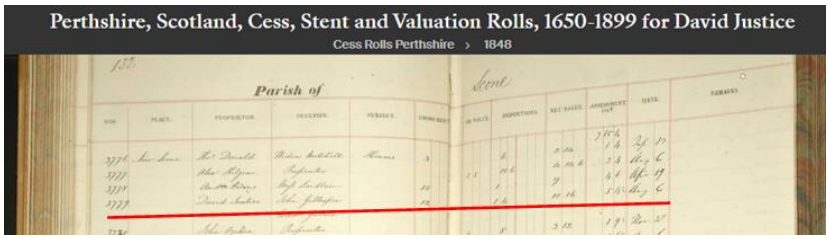
A335. Under the law of Scotland that was in place, pre-1930s, William Hay's (1850-1926) adoption by Amelia Justice's (1928-), elder sister Ann Simmie (1822-1877) and brother in-law, and blood relative by degree, John Simmie (1823-1867) was invoked no later than at the time 11-year-old son "William Simmie" (1850-1926) migrated aboard the ship Marco Polo to Melbourne in 1862.

A336. The authorities consulted for the legal irregular Scotland law of adoption, pre-1930 were Dr Meagan Lee Butler (2014) "Husbands without wives, and wives without husbands": divorce and separation in Scotland, c. 1830-1890, a PhD thesis, Glasgow University) and Keating J (2008,) A Child for Keeps: The History of Adoption in England, 1918-1945.

A337. This consultation was necessary after being informed by the National Records of Scotland that whilst the Government of Scotland recognised the irregular law of adoption in existence pre-1930 they held no adoption records before 1930 due to the informal nature of those records. They may have simply been a letter exchanged between the parties or a public, oral declaration of the adoption arrangement:

National Records of Scotland
Search our website...
Preserving the past | Recording the present | Informing the future
Registration
Statistics & Data
Research
Record Keeping
About Us
Home » Research » Research Guides » Research Guides A-Z » Adoption Records
Research Guides A-Z
Adoption Records
Birth, Death and Marriage Records
Buildings
Burgh Records
Canal Records
Catholic Parish Registers
Census Records
Chancery Records
Adoption Records
For advice about tracing your original birth record or a child that you have given up for adoption please see also our Adoption page in the Registration area of this website.
This guide provides information about:
adoptions before and after 1930
legal records of adoption (where they are held, the information they contain and how they can be accessed)
advice and counselling
Adoptions Before 1930
Before 1930 adoptions were arranged on a private basis, either by individuals or by one of a number of charitable adoption agencies. We do not hold records for adoptions before 1930.

A338. Stepping back in time to William's biological maternal grandparents David Justice (1791-1860) and Helen Mclean (1799-1872) leaving the area where they were born, Tibbermore/Ruthvenfield, Perthshire, to live in Glasgow between the years 1822-1828, it appears they may have held onto property there until as late as 1848. The record below shows a David Justice in 1848, leasing property to John Gillespire David Justice as recorded in the 1848 Perthshire, Scotland, Cess, Stent and Valuation Rolls, 1650-1899):



A339. This time period between 1822-1828 set for their move away from the family seat in Perthshire to Glasgow is certain by birth records held for Amelia's elder sibling, Ann Justice (1822-1877) who married John Simmie (1823-1867) in 1850 in Tibbermore compared to Glasgow where her younger sister Amelia was born and baptised in 1828 (**cf.,** Scotland, Select Births and Baptisms, 1564-1950; Record details - Name: **Ann Justice**; Gender: Female: Age: 0; **Birth Date: 7th June 1822**; Baptism Date: 9th June 1822; Baptism **Place: Tibbermore, Perth, Scotland**; Father: David Justice; Mother: Helen Mclean; **cf.,** Scotland, Select Births and Baptisms, 1564-1950; Record details – Name: **Amelia Justice**; Gender: Female; Age: 0; **Birth Date: 20 July 1828**; Baptism Date: 27th July 1828; **Baptism Place: Gorbals, Lanark, Scotland**; Father: David Justice; Mother: Helen Mclean) (Emphasis mine).

A340. For the sake of transparency, Amelia's Mclean-Bain matrilineal ascending bloodline is stepped out below. It further shows Amelia's biological legacy through the son she adopted out, William Hay (1850-1926) taken to the researcher and his sibling, traced through their mother Norma Irene Guest (1932-2021), nee Hay:

John Mclean 1764-1834 = Ann Bain 1764-1836
The researcher, John L.R. Guest's
5th great-grandparents

Helen McLean 1799-1872 = David Justice 1791-1860
Helen is the daughter of John Mclean
4th great-grandparents

Amelia Justice 1828-? = John Hay
Amelia is the daughter of Helen McLean
3rd biological great-grandparents

William Hay 1850-1926 = Isabella Innes Sinclair 1856-1928
William is the biological son of Amelia Justice and adoption son of her sister Ann Simmie, nee Justice

James Sinclair Hay 1879-1955 = Violet Ethel Hallifax 1882-1955
James is the son of William Hay

Augustus Halifax Hay 1910-1985 = Emily Florence Matilda McArdle 1909-1976
Gus is the son of James Sinclair Hay

Norma Irene Hay 1932-2021 = Jack Guest 1921-1987
Norma is the daughter of Augustus Halifax Hay, parents of Wendy, John, Ricky, Anita, Terry and Mitchell Guest.

A341. Prior to Amelia's parents moving away from Ruthvenfield/Tibbermore, Perthshire for Glasgow, her father David Justice (1791-1860) worked as a gatekeeper at Balhousie Castle.

A342. The castle where he worked was about one mile from the Justice family home in Ruthvenfield and living close by was the Simmie family and their shared family's Mclean and Bain (Dr Geoffrey Mann, PhD, 2017, "Ämelia Justice, Balhousie Castle and the Earl of Kinnoull', Tay Valley Valley Historical Society [TVHS], Journal, Article Number 988, 2017).

A343. David and Helen Justice, nee Mclean and six of their nine children, were all listed together in the 1861 Scotland Census. (1861 Scotland Census: Father: David Justice; Mother: Helen Justice; Gender: Female; Where born: Govan, Lanark; Parish Number: 644/2: Civil parish: Gorbals; Town: Glasgow; County: Lanarkshire; Address: 15 Commercial Road; Occupation: Cotton Weaver; ED: 27; Page: 6; Household schedule number: 19; Line: 7; Roll: CSSCT1851_164):

- David Justice, 56, Head.
- Helen Justice, 52, Wife.
- Mary Justice, 23, Daughter.
- George Justice, 18, Son.
- Jean Justice, 16, Daughter.
- David Justice, 14, Son.
- Marion Justice, 11, Daughter.
- Helen Justice, 9, Daughter.

A344. David and Helen Justice, nee Mclean's only two missing children from the 1861 census were eldest daughters Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice who married in 1850, John Simmie (1823-1867); and Amelia Hay (1828-), nee Justice who married in 1849 by civilian ceremony John Hay in 1849, and probably a widow from the 14th September 1857.

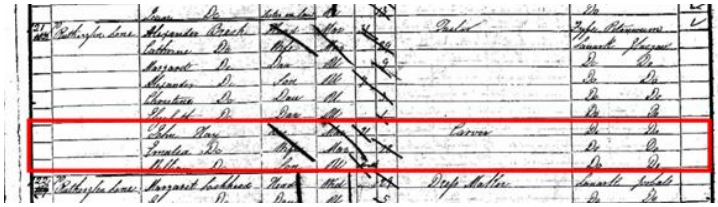
A345. Made by Dr Mann's (2019) research, Amelia and John Hay were divorced legally by the year by the 1855/6 after Dr Mann PhD, recognised from other public records of Scotland that Amelia reverted back to her maiden name Justice. This is sufficient under the law which was before 1930, the legal way for couples to divorce by the Scottish irregular law of divorce. Further, and also according to Dr Mann's (2017) research the first time William is recorded living with his adoptive parents in the 1861 Scotland Census and in 1862 travelling with his adoptive parents to Melbourne aboard the ship Marco Polo as the 11-year-old son, William Simmie (a.k.a., Hay).

A346. The marriage of William's much loved adoption parents, Ann Justice (1822-1877) married John Simmie (1823-1867) in Tibbermore, Perthshire, Scotland on the 18th January 1850, confirms the Simmie and Justice families remained socially connected despite the passing of 26 years since David and Helen Justice, nee Mclean moved their young family away from Ruthvenfield/Tibbermore to settle in Glasgow (cf., David Justice Property Owner, 1848 Perthshire, Scotland, Cess, Stent and Valuation Rolls, 1650-1899, refer paragraph A338, p107, above).

A348. Confirmed further is that in 1851 Ann Justice (1822-1877) and John Simmie (1823-1867) had settled in 1850 in Cadder, near Glasgow. There they remained as it seems until migrating to the Colony of Victoria in 1862. This is where 11-year-old Marco Polo William Simmie in 1862, is later found living with them in the 1861 Scotland Census and listed as 10-year-old William Hay.

A349. Another Scotland Census record made 10 years prior, in 1851, recognises a 21-year-old man named John Hay (1830-), a "Carver" by trade, living with his 22-year-old bride named "Emalia", and their new born son William, all Rutherglen Lane, Glasgow.

A350. The record is submitted below and appears to have been considered by Irene Meagher, nee Mills, of Frankston North, Victoria Mills a contemporary cousin of the researcher as a source for proving William Hay's (1850-1926) father was a wood carver and piano tuner of Glasgow:



A351. The researcher consulted Dr Geoffrey Mann, PhD of London England, 2024, evidence-based research into the present researcher's Hay/Simmie-Justice-Mclean-Bain Bloodline. There the present researcher found Mrs Irene Meagher, nee Mills, wife of Roger Meagher, who live in Frankston North, Melbourne.

A352. Prima facie, Irene, is the present researcher's cousin by degree, and the daughter of David Justice Mills, son of Harris Mills and Christian Isabella Hay (1884-1858). This Christian Hay (1884-1958) is the sixth born child of the researcher's 2nd great grandparents.

A353. To understand properly the occupation "Carver" the researcher then consulted the authority "Obscure Old English Census Occupations." This authority describes a Carver as listed in the Scotland Census in 1851 to mean an engraver of paper-based printing products, sculpture, or perhaps a dock worker who burned and tarred the underneath side of a ship to clean them.

A354. Considering that the 21-year-old John Hay, Carver lived in Glasgow at the time Glasgow was the world's powerhouse for ship building, the latter description of his occupation submitted above as a dock worker seemed probable.

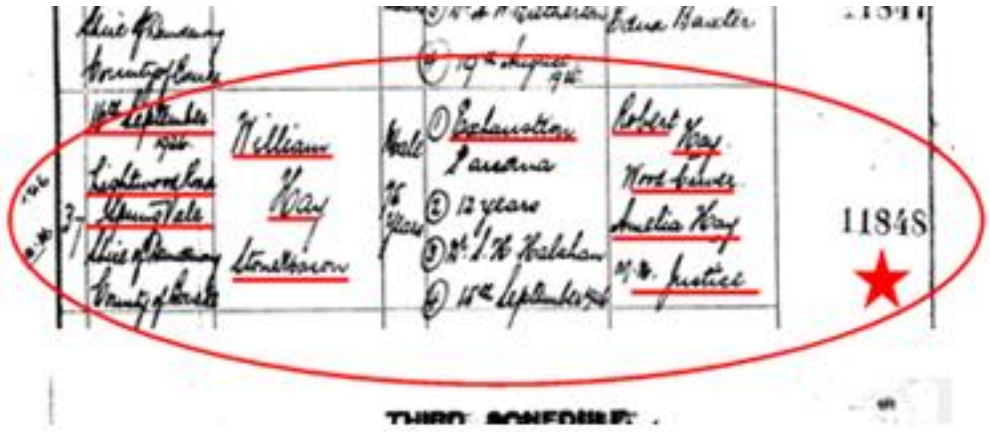
A355. However, after the researcher examined in detail all of the information entered into his 2nd great grandfather's death certificate entered by an "authorised agents" (name unable to be deciphered), the true identity of William's biological father, including his occupation, become problematic.

A356. The authorised agent no doubt informed by a close family member, grieving at the time, made error in informing the agent that their deceased loved one, William Hay (1850-1926) was made by certain error, the son of a "Robert Hay" and have also given him perhaps in error, the occupation "Wood Carver".

A357. After studying William's death certificate, and the probable false companion record, the 1851 Scotland Census record, making the distractor, 21-year-old John Hay, with the trade of Carver of Rutherglen Lane Glasgow, William's father, the present researcher had major concern that there were too many cross over errors to confirm the true identity of William's certain father John Hay.

A358. The present researcher felt the specific details of William's incorrectly named father, in his otherwise valid death certificate, coupled with the occupation "Carver", probably gleaned from the 1861 Scotland Census record referred above, unintentionally obscured the true identity of William's father, the certain "John Hay".

A359. Re-submitted below is William's death certificate, whereby the first sheet of his record below is where error is found in making his father named Robert Hay, and most dubious that his father was a "Wood Carver"; when the 1861 Scotland Census record is fully considered:



A360. When it is further considered the 21-year-old John Hay the Craver known to the 1851 Scotland Census married "Emalia" not "Amelia" both valid female names rather than corrupted spelling of the other, lent itself for William Hay's father to be given the corrupted name Rober Hay, a Wood Carver entered into William's death certificate raised after he died on the 16th September 1926.

A361. This makes near impossible to determine from linking these two records the true identity of William's father John Hay.

A362. Whereby the only two trustworthy records are the marriage certificate of his parents (**John Hay and Amelia Justice in the Scotland, Select Marriages, 1561-1910**; Groom: John Hay; Gender: Male; Spouse: Amelia Justice; Gender: Female; Marriage Date: 23rd November, 1849; Marriage Place: Gorbals, Lanark, Scotland; and his birth certificate (**William Hay in the Scotland, Select Births and Baptisms, 1564-1950**; Record details – Name: William Hay; Gender: Male: Birth Date: 21st November, 1850; Birth Place: Gorbals, Lanark, Scotland; Father: John Hay; Mother: Amelia Justice).

A363. Whilst the 1861 Scotland record for 21-year-old John Hay, Carver, of Rutherglen Lane Glasgow, and husband of "Emalia" with baby William is not yet rejected, problems uncovered, failing proper identification of John Hay, William's father, challenged the need for a fresh investigation into the matter.

A364. The researcher then seeking new leads, consulted the 1850-1851 Post Office Directory for Glasgow. There he found four individuals bearing the name John Hay. They were all listed on page 135.After checking other evidence gathered for them all four were eliminated as prospect father for William.

A365. However, for the sake of transparency and to assist research by others, these four distractor John Hay, are listed below:

- Hay, John, victualler, 178 Stirling's road.
- Hay, John, commission agent, 52 Brunswick Street, house, 74 Abbotsford place.
- Hay, John, wine and spirit merchant, 69 Saltmarket street and 92 High St., house, 53 Charlotte Street.
- Hay, Jonathan, N. B. Advertiser Office, house, 19 Ronald Street.

A366. Also listed on page 135, was Mrs Hay, Grocer, of 15 Crown Street, Glasgow. She was in turn matched to a grocer named John Hay found in post 1851 directories and eliminated because she and her husband's marriage did not dissolve.

A367. On pages 435-438, thirty-three Carvers & Gilders were found operating their business in the same post office directory. Each of these small firms engaged in the finer crafts of carving prints, final metal inscriptions and gilding:

CARVERS AND GILDERS.
Allan, M. & J., 10 Watt St., cf Broomielaw.
Booklass, George, 27 Dunlop Street.
Brodie, Archibald, 60, 62 Buchanan St.
Dobbie, John P., 8 Coburg Street.
Finlay, J., 49 Buchanan Street.
Fisher, John, 19 Gordon Street.
Forbes, George, 24 Jamaica street.
Galletti, Antoni, 24 Argyll arcade.
Galloway, James, 5 Miller Street.
Gerletti, Dominick, 10 Candleriggs St.
Gibson, Robert, 54 Union Street.
Grant, Alex., 72 Sauchiehall street.
Hastie, John, 88 Stockwell Street.
Houston, William, 85 Mitchell Street.
Kay, T., 40 Fox street.
M'Arthur, Thomas, 33 Gordon Street.
M'Avoy, George, 8 Sauchiehall street.
M'Clure, J., & Son, 6 Royal Bank place.
Martin, James, 61 Union Street.
Martin, fm., 88 West George street.
Mitchell, James, & Co., 45 Argyll arcade.
Morton, Win., 15 Royal Exchange sqr.
Murray, Win., 14 St. Enoch square.
Nisbet, Wm., 19 Croy place.
Niven, Alex., 28 Queen Street.
Peacock, Thomas, 30 Garscube place.
Pritty, Francis, 36 Argyll arcade.
Rankin & Gray, 52 Gordon Street.
Eenton, John, 102 Stock-well Street.
Riva, J. & M., 147 High Street.
Russell, James, 9 South Portland Street.
Warren, Wm., 95 Argyll Street.
West, Daniel, 115 High Street.

A368. Conceivable was that any one of them could have been the employer of 21-year-old John Hay, "Carver" of Rutherglen Lane, Glasgow. However, no new information could be gleaned from the information. The search for John Hay Carver, in Glasgow, was then abandoned.

A369. Supplemented for the shortfall, of information in Glasgow, an expanded search to include any John Hay found in the record to be a Carver anywhere else in Scotland.

A370. One match was found, but ruled out as a distractor. That was for a John Hay (1824-1896) junior, son of another Carver and Gilder of the same name. They operated in succession a Carver shop in Aberdeen which continued for the better part of the 19th century.

A371. This John Hay junior married on 2nd August 1849, Ann Lynall. They had issue, but there is no evidence whatsoever this John Hay had a child out of wedlock (Source: Doric Columns, 2024, The History & Heritage of the City of Aberdeen, cf., Smith, J. 1913 pp87-89, "Genealogies of an Aberdeen Family" for John Hay's 1825-1896, lineage). He was therefore also ruled out being William Hay (1850-1926) biological father John Hay.

A372. Then came a break through which came in the form of a serendipitous discovery, when the researcher made a search of bearers of the name John Hay in Perthshire. What was uncovered changed the direction of the research entirely.

This page is intentionally left blank.

Dr Geoffrey Mann PHD 2017 Evidence-based field research

A373. The material found was an article which appeared in the Tay Valley Valley Historical Society [TVHS], Journal, Article Number 988, 2017. The article the present researcher refers, was researched and written by a most credible authority, Dr Geoffrey Mann (2017) "**Ämelia Justice, Balhousie Castle and the Earl of Kinnoull'. H**is journal article is submitted, in full, below:

Amelia Justice, Balhousie Castle, and the Earl of Kinnoul by Dr. Geoffrey Mann (No 998)

My wife's gr.great aunt Amelia JUSTICE was "the daughter of the gatekeeper at Balhousie Castle" - so the family legend claimed - "and married the son of the Earl of Kinnoul!" This fascinating story was not known in my wife's branch of the family but came to us only after making contact with a direct descendant of Amelia in Australia. We treated the story with the usual suspicion given to family legends because we knew Amelia was born and brought up in the Gorbals of Glasgow. One of a family of ten children, her father, David JUSTICE, was not a romantic castle gatekeeper, but a calico printer living in Glasgow's Commercial Rd.

David died in 1860 and his death certificate gave his parents as James JUSTICE and Mary LENNOX, while the 1851 census showed he was born in Tibbermore, Perth. The Tibbermore parish register provided David's baptism in 1791, his marriage to Helen MCLEAN in 1821, and the baptism of their first two children Ann and James JUSTICE in 1822 and 1824. Fortunately, the register also stated that David was a bleacher and printer of Ruthvenfield while his father was "in Newhouse of Huntingtour". All these places are on the ordnance survey near Perth, so it was time to visit that fair city.

Newhouse, where David was born, is a farm some two miles from Perth. David's father was a blacksmith, and my wife and I wandered around some of the disused buildings, wondering which might have been the smithy where David's father worked. Half a mile across the fields lay the ancient castle of Huntingtower and beyond that the now disused bleach fields for which Ruthvenfield was once renowned. The neat rows of worker's cottages and the tower of the bleach works are all that remain. David worked there for at least two years before moving to Glasgow to continue his trade.

But then the family legend came to life! We found Balhousie Castle in Perth, just two miles down the hill from Ruthvenfield. For all we knew previously it could have been anywhere in Scotland, but to find it so close to David's workplace could not be coincidence. David Justice was 30 years old when he was working at Ruthvenfield. Did he travel the two miles to be gatekeeper before he became a bleacher - or did he moonlight the gatekeeper's job to supplement a bleacher's pay?

Balhousie Castle is now the Museum of the Black Watch Regiment (see TVFH September 1997). We joined the tourists and spoke to the curator. He showed us a picture of the derelict state of the Castle in the last century when David may have been the gatekeeper. We also learned that it was owned by the Earl of Kinnoul - whose son Amelia was supposed to have married! We knew Amelia had married John HAY, so it was with added surprise that we heard from the curator that HAY is the family name of the Earls of Kinnoul. Was the story true after all?

Through the Tay Valley FHS, we have now been in touch with another descendant of Amelia, Margaret BULMER (nee THOMSON). Margaret had a photograph of Amelia and had found that she married three times in Glasgow - to John HAY in 1849, James MCKENZIE in 1862 and Peter WHITELAW in 1871. Her first husband, John HAY, was a woodcarver and pianoframe maker in Glasgow. He died at an early age and Amelia must then have had a hard time, because her daughter Helen was brought up by her grandparents, while her only son William HAY sailed to Australia without her at the tender age of 11. He went in 1861 with his uncle and aunt, John & Ann SIMMIE. He did well in Australia and must have treasured the story about the mother he left behind in Scotland, since it was passed down to his gr.granddaughter, our Australian correspondent.

So was John HAY a son of the Earl of Kinnoul? It seems unlikely - but then so did the story of the castle gatekeeper and that is probably true! The research continues.

This page is intentionally left blank.

Fact checking post-Dr Mann's 2017 journal article

A374. The article by Dr Mann PhD (2017) also cites Australian Irene Meagher, nee Mills of Frankston, North Victoria, Australia, a person previously unknown to the present researcher. On face value accepted to descend subsequently along a matrilineal bloodline from William Hay (1850-1926).

A375. The present researcher was inclined to view that the informant to the agent who entered the incorrect facts about William's father and his occupation was a lineal ancestor of Irene Meagher, nee Mills, the granddaughter of Christian Isabella Mills, the sixth child of William and Isabella Hay and the present researcher great aunt.

A376. After reading Dr Mann's article above, a further cross over error, or perhaps best described as slicing and dicing of records, is that either or both distractors' fathers attributed to William, i.e. Robert Hay Wood Carver (16th September 1926) and 21-year-old John Hay, in the trade of "Carver" of Rutherglen Lane Glasgow (1851 Scotland Census) have morphed to become by 2017, William Hay's (1850-1926) father, described as a John Hay Wood Carver and Piano Tuner, of Glasgow. It is conceivable these historical materials morphed by Christian's private research was passed down subsequently to Irene.

A377. Dr Mann PhD (2017) appears also somewhat perplexed at the contradictory information he sourced from Irene Meagher, nee Mills or her husband Roger of Frankston North, Victoria, Australia.

A378. In any case the information from Australia along Christian Isabella Mills (1884-1958) and husband Harris Mill's line appears at odds with what the curators at the Balhousie Castle told Dr Mann PhD (2017) about the "John Hay" of the family of the former owner of the castle Earl of Kinnoull, who is made by the curator to have married Amelia Justice the daughter of gatekeeper, David Justice.

A379. Despite contradictory information, Dr Mann gathered from Mrs Irene Meagher, nee Mills, or her husband Roger Meagher, Dr Mann lean appears to be towards the possibility Amelia's husband John Hay, was a noble related to the Earl of Kinnoull of Balhousie Castle, Hay Street, Perth, Scotland:

> So was John HAY a son of the Earl of Kinnoul? It seems unlikely - but then so did the story of the castle gatekeeper and that is probably true! The research continues.

A380. The present researcher, also remaining sceptical but open minded, picked up where, Dr Mann PhD, field research left off in 2017.

A381. Abandoning the notion of John Hay being a Carver, Wood Carver or Piano Tuner, or for that matter any occupation altogether, but keeping the door a jar, the likely probability based on solid evidence that John Hay, William's biological father was a military or naval officer (Hudson, D., 2024, Mason Lodge Administrator and Online Curator, Membership Approvals for Non-Serving Applicants Military and Naval Lodge of Melbourne; cf., paragraphs A232, p80; and A242, p 84 above; cf. Obituary for William Hay 1850-1926, The Scot Magazine, 16th October, 1926, Melbourne).

A382. Whereas, it is known William Hay's (1850-1926) adoptive father John Simmie (1823-1867) did not serve. Deductively, it was William's biological father that was an officer in either the British Army of Navy who served (Ibid, Consultation with Mr Hudson 2024 research).

A383. For the sake of brevity, 16 additional prospects were found. They are all submitted below along with some critical detail about each of them.

A384. Each profile below, further includes the present researcher's analysis of the strength of them as a prospect father of William and 13 of the 16 were summarily eliminated as a poor match (e.g., too young, too old, not married to Amelia, or pre-deceased John and Amelia's marriage date).

A385. The 16 identities listed below each have a Unique Identifier Numbers and it is the John Hays' with the UIN 11, UIN-12 and UIN 16, marked below in bold script, which emerged as the strongest prospects. They are further found to be blood relatives:

UIN-1 - John Hay, employed by J.W. Cambell & Co from 1848-1850 (Home: 11 West Street, Tradeston; 110 Crown Street; 74 Abbotsford Place) (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-2- John Hay, from 1850-1858 (Commission Agent) (Home: Murrow's Park, Govan; Garthland street, Shawlands; Shawlands, Crossmyloof (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-3- John Hay from 1851-1863, Contractor and Victualler (Home: 178 Stirling's Road (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-4- John Hay from 1859-1861 (Home, 11 Kent Street) (eliminated/poor match).

UID-5- John Hay from 1845-1849, Weaver Street, Grocer (eliminated/poor match, cf. Mrs Hay, Grocer).

UID-6- John Hay, 1860-1863, Heating and Ventilating Engineer, Business: 76 Mitchell Street (Home: 9 Oxford Street (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-7- John Hay from 1845-1849, Surgeon and Oculist (Home: 434 Parliamentary Street and 408 Argyll Street) (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-8- John Hay (Rev) from 1855-1861, (Home: 48 Whitevale; 19 Richmond Street) (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-9- John Hay from 1849-1854, Wine and Spirits Merchant (Home 15 McFarlane; 53 Charlotte Street).

UIN-10- John Hay, 1859-1860 (Home: 10 Newton Street, with previous listing extending as far back to 1853 and directory lists "Mrs John Hay") (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-11- Rear **Admiral John Hay (Lord Hay of Tweeddale and Yester (1793-1851).** This John was certain to be a frequent visitor with associated regular and ongoing, but temporary residence in Glasgow. This John Hay married in 1846. His wife died shortly after in 1849, John died not long after on September 1851 without issue. He is the patrilineal uncle and career mentor of Lieutenant John Hay (1827-1916) listed below. Both John Hay (R.N) senior and John Hay R, N, junior (uncle and nephew) are well settled as close kin of the Earl of Kinnoull. By deduction, he is certain to have visited frequently Balhousie Castle to socialise and stay with his relatives and would have met gatekeeper David Justice in

person and perhaps became friends (The Scots Peerage, 1911) (Considered an advanced prospect).

UIN-12- Lieutenant John Hay (1827-1916), like his uncle above, also known as (Lord Hay of Tweeddale and Yester), enlisted as a 12-year-old in 1839 under the command of his uncle and mentor (not a common practice of the day). He is placed firmly in Glasgow during the investigation period to study ship building for the Royal Navy. His service record affords him being land based from 1846 to 1853, with Glasgow the principal place determined by his study there, and thereafter 1853/4, at sea for most of his time, occasionally returning to land, assumed in Glasgow, Scotland. He subsequently was elevated in rank to Captain in 1854 and commanded his own ship. Later he rose also to Rear Admiral and had an illustrious career retiring in 1884 and living to the year 1916. He married late in 1776 and had three children. He too by deduction, is reasonably certain to have visited Balhousie Castle to socialise and stay with his relatives. He may have been further been introduced to the Justice family in Glasgow by his uncle UIN-11 Lord John Hay (1793-1851) (Considered an advanced prospect).

UIN-13- Admiral John Hay (1804) married and had issue. He is also a distance relative of the two John Hay R.N previously cited but cannot be John Hay married to Amelia Justice in 1848 (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-14- John Holman Hay (1782-1853) senior, Chief Clerk to the Admiralty (ruled out as previously submitted) (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-15- Son of the above John Holman Hay junior (ditto above) (eliminated/poor match).

UIN-16. Captain John William Hay (1824-1857), Captain of His Majesty's 70th Foot and Military Secretary to Lord Harris, and died in Madras aged 33 years. Lord Harris (1810-1872), is George Francis Robert Harris (1810-1872), Baron Harris was a British peer, Liberal politician and colonial administrator. He as the Governor of Madras from 1854 to 1859.This information in regards to him being the Military Secretary to Lord Harris was taken directly from his grave inscription. His father is Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) of Smithfield and Haystoun, brother and heir, being the 7th son of the 5th Baronet; born 14 December 1795, in St Andrews parish, Edinburgh; was a banker at Edinburgh; M.P. for Linlithgowshire, 1826-30; succeeded to the Baronetcy, 1 November 1838; Vice Lieut. of co Peebles, 1839-67. His late mother, Henrietta Collander (1802-1849) died aged 46 years and they both rest at Cross Kirk Burial Ground, Peebles, Scottish Borders, Scotland. He, Captain John William Hay is further traced subsequently to be a blood relative of the two Rear Admirals, Lord Hay - R.N John Hay (UID's 11 and 12 above). He died on the 14th September 1857 in Chennai (Madras), Tamil Nadu, India. No record of him being married or having issue is known unless of course he is the same man John Hay who married Amelia Justice on the 23rd November, 1849 in Glasgow where his regiment was based. His father Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) of Haystoun, Peeblesshire, Scotland, was a member of the Hay family branch connected to the Hay family of Kinnoull, Balhousie Castle, Ruthvenfield, Perthshire. He is another John Hay almost certain to have visited his Hay of Kinnoull family relatives holding Balhousie Castle.

A386. There are many reasons why Captain John William Hay (1824-1857) emerged as the strongest prospect of all contemporaries of all Scotland named John Hay to be Amelia's husband and William's biological father. These reasons are stepped out below:

a) Captain John William Hay (1824-1857) military service in which his is known to have served in Madras from 1853/5 until 14th September 1857, recognises, he was based in Glasgow prior, from 1848 until 1852.
b) His life span "1824-1857' and military service is compatible with explaining the breakdown per se of his and Amelia's marriage by the year 1856 (cf. Dr Geoffrey Mann, PhD, 2019, Hay/Simmie-Justice-Mclean-Bain Evidence Based Lineage for William Hay 1850-1926). This suggests Amelia's return to her maiden name late 1855 meant an irregular divorce by Scotland's pre-1930 law.
c) His death coincides as a precursor to why William Hay came to be adopted, no later than 1861, by Amelia's sister Ann Simmie (1822-1977), nee Justice and her brother-in-law, Ann's husband, John Simmie (1823-1867).
d) Amelia reverted back to her maiden name in 1856/6 suggesting she and John Hay divorced through the Scotland system of irregular divorce law (Ibid, Dr Mann, 2017).
e) She did not remarry until 1862 (Ibid, Dr Mann, 2017). suggesting she may have tried hard to hold on to William, but convinced William's welfare was in jeopardy by 1861, reluctantly adopted him out officially to her sister, Ann Simmie (1822-1867) and brother-in-law, John Simmie (1823-1867) (Ibid, Dr Mann, 2017).
f) The actions above are considered to be in the advantage of the father of the late John Hay's (1824-1857), Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) and second born son Robert Hay.
g) This John Hay's burial date 14th September 1857 accords, prima facie, with negotiations which must have occurred for William to be adopted out by divorcee Amelia, to her sister and brother-in-law (Cotton, J.J, 1905, 1945, p69, List of Inscriptions on Tombs or Monuments in Madras).
h) This John Hay's full name, John William Hay points to why his son was given the name "William. "No other prospect can be gleaned from the available evidence to make such a connection to Willliam's first name.
i) The unique Hay family connection that Captain John William Hay, 1824-1857 had with Balhousie Castle, Hay Street, Perth, Scotland emerges significant also for military service reasons (cf. Obituary for William Hay 1850-1926, The Scot Magazine, 16th October 1926, Melbourne; cf. Cotton, J.J 1905, p 50; cf., Dr Geoffrey Mann, 2017, "Ämelia Justice, Balhousie Castle, and the Earl of Kinnoull" Tay Valley Valley Historical Society [TVHS] Journal, Article Nnumber 988).
j) This Captain John William Hay (1824-1857) was in fact a military officer of the British Army and a Captain in the service of the fusiliers guard (HM 70th Regiment, Cotton 1905, 1945, p69, "List of Inscriptions on Tombs or Monuments in Madras." [Captain John William M Hay, 1824-1857], of his Majesty's 70th Regiment, and Military Secretary to the Right Honourable Lord Harris).

Continued …

k) His service was with the fusilier guards and a member of the 70th regiment, binds him further to be the same John Hay the Black Watch Museum curator at Balhousie Castle informed Dr Geoffrey Mann PhD had married Amelia [Justice], who was the daughter of Balhousie Castle's gatekeeper, pre-1826, David Justice (Ibid, Dr Mann, PhD, 2017, Article No: 988, Tay Valley Historical Society), as well as based from 1812 in Glasgow reverting to the old title of 70th (Glasgow Lowland) Regiment of Foot in October 1812 (Cannon, Richard, 1849, Historical Record of the Seventieth, or the Surrey Regiment of Foot, London: Parker, Furnivall and Parker).

l) John's father is Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) whose career predates that of William Hay's uncle, George Simmie (1828-1906).

m) Sir Adam Hay's (1795-1867) prolific career in Scotland matched later by William Hay's (1850-1926) uncle George Simmie (1828-1906) in Australia, whereas they are found to be, near identical.

n) Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) and George Simmie (1828-1906, MP, are both well documented to be pioneer forefathers of rail civil construction and railway network operations in their respective countries.

o) Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) in Scotland owned the Peebles Railway Company, whilst George Simmie (1828-1906) along with his business partner Simon Fraser (1832-1919) and partnering with the firm Messrs Collier and Barry & Co constructed the Sandhurst-Echuca railway line (cf., Dr John Stuart Duncan, PhD, 2005, The Royal Burgh of Peebles in the Nineteenth Century: The Impact of a Locally-Organised Railway on a Moribund Scottish County Town, PhD thesis).

p) Both Adam and George were respective Members of Parliament and substantial, wealthy land owners in Peeblesshire Scotland Northern Provence of the Colony of Victoria (Hay, Adam 1795-1867, published in The History of Parliament: The House of Commons 1820-1832, ed. D.R. Fisher, 2009, Available from Cambridge University Press; George Simmie 1828-1906 in "Legislative Council Elections since 1856", Parliament of Victoria, Current).

q) The researcher is inclined to view that Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) was George Simmie (1828-1906) and his partner Simon Fraser's (1832-1919) early financial backer. He, Adam Hay helped George and Simon perhaps, to kick start their successful and rapidly developed railway construction business ventures pre-1867.

r) Prior to the death of Sir Adam Hay's (1795-1867) eldest son, John Hay (1824-1857), George Simmie (1828-1906), the younger man, to his personal credit and hard work built a small house construction business, but by no means at the time could he be considered to be a wealthy man.

s) George Simmie (1828-1906) fortunes dramatically changed for the better by1859, and somehow had the means by 1862 to build and gift his two elder brothers and their families a house each in Palmerston Place Carlton.

t) George's wealth had grown exponentially since 1859 whereby he further had the means fund a large-scale civil construction railway building projects successful

completed by 1864. This strongly suggests he had a silent financial backer of some extraordinary note.

u) Whereby someone of the ilk of Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) fits the bill.

v) It is conceivable that pre- migration to Australia, in 1852, the builder and ironmonger of Carlton, earlier a blacksmith, George Simmie (1828-1906) may have worked in Sir Adam Hay's railway as a steelworker. Perhaps there he came to the attention of Sir Adam Hay, who welcomed him to keep in touch with Sir Adam learning of his migration to the new world.

w) Given the complex set of genealogical, cultural, and occupational antecedents stepped out above, with no other alternative financial backer, other than Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867), Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) and George Simmie (1828-1906) were well known to each other.

x) Such a friendship or successful business association between the persons Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) and George Simmie (1828-1906) is the only plausible conclusion able to be taken from the present evidence to justify how the rapid success enjoyed by the young men, George Simmie (1828-1906) and Simon Fraser from 1858-1867, can be credibly explained.

y) So, what on earth would motivate Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) to allow his grandson first to work in a quarry pit aged 10 years old; and then intervene in such a way to lose his grandson in the process? The answer appears simple. If he did not have William adopted out, or air brushed out of his Hay family so to speak, Sir Adam Hay's (1795-1867) surviving second born son, Robert Hay (1825-1885) would not have inherited Sir Adam Hay's considerable lot in life, peerage and real property.

A387. The researcher is inclined further to view that Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) was displeased with Captain John William Hay's (1825-1857) choice of bride, Amelia, the researcher's biological 3rd great grandmother.

A388. That said a few outstanding important facts about Captain John William Hay (1824-1857 life need to be evidenced, including confirmation of his heritage, his military service, and his final resting place at St Mary's Cemetery, Madras India.

John Hay's (1824-1857) family heritage and military service

A389. The first submission of fact is Captain John William Hay (1824-1857) was the eldest son of Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) and he was Captain in the service fusilier guards (Refer: Hay of Smithfield, Peebles, Scotland in Burke's Genealogical and Heraldic History of Peerage, Baronetage and Knightage, p982):

Sir James Hay, 4th Bart., M.D., Edinburgh, eldest son of John Hay, of Hayston, who d. 1702 (see above), was (as 9 Nov. 1805) served heir at Peebles to John Hay, of Kingsmeadows, his great-great-grandfather, and assumed the title as heir male of the 3rd baronet. Sir James m. 1751, Dorriel, youngest dau. and co-heir of Daniel Campbell, of Greenyards, and had issue,

1. John (Sir), **5th bart.**
2. Adam, lieut.-col. 31st regt.; *d. s.p.* in 1796.
3. James, b. 7 Jan. 1757.
1. Elizabeth, m. in 1770, Sir W. Forbes, Bart. of Pitsligo.
2. Grace. 3. Jane, m. in 1791, S. Anderson, of Edinburgh.
4. Barbara Dorriel Anne.

Sir James *d.* 21 Oct. 1810, and was *s.* by his eldest son,

Sir John Hay, 5th Bart., b. 15 Jan. 1755; m. 9 July, 1785, Mary Elizabeth, youngest dau. of James, 16th Lord Forbes, by whom (who *d.* 2 Nov. 1830) he had issue,

1. John (Sir), **6th bart.** 2. Robert, b. 27 Feb. 1793; *dec.*
3. Adam (Sir), **7th bart.**
4. Charles Murray, lieut.-gen., col. 91st regt., *d.* 3 July, 1864.
5. Samuel, b. 5 Aug. 1809; *d.* 11 Jan. 1879.
1. Catherine.
2. Mary, m. 9 Feb. 1819, George Forbes, 3rd son of Sir William Forbes, 6th Bart. of Pitsligo, and *d.* 2 March, 1877.
3. Elizabeth, m. 5 Jan. 1825, Sir David Hunter Blair, bart., who *d.* 26 Dec. 1857. She *d.* 3 Aug. 1859.
4. Grace, m. 26 July, 1831, Matthew Norman Macdonald, and *d.* 5 Jan. 1857.
5. Jane, m. 25 April, 1817, Col. Charles Fraser, of Castle Fraser, who *d.* 7 March, 1871. She *d.* 12 Jan. 1861.
6. Jemima Barbara, *d.* 31 July, 1815.

Sir John *d.* 23 May, 1836, and was *s.* by his son,

Sir John Hay, 6th Bart., M.P., b. 2 Aug. 1788; m. 6 Oct. 1821, Anne Preston, by whom (who *d.* 7 Sept. 1865) he left no issue. He *d.* 1 Nov. 1838, when the title devolved on his brother,

Sir Adam Hay, 7th Bart., b. 14 Dec. 1795; m. 23 March, 1823, Henrietta Callender, eldest dau. of William Grant, of Congalton, co. Haddington, by whom (who *d.* 6 June, 1863) he had issue,

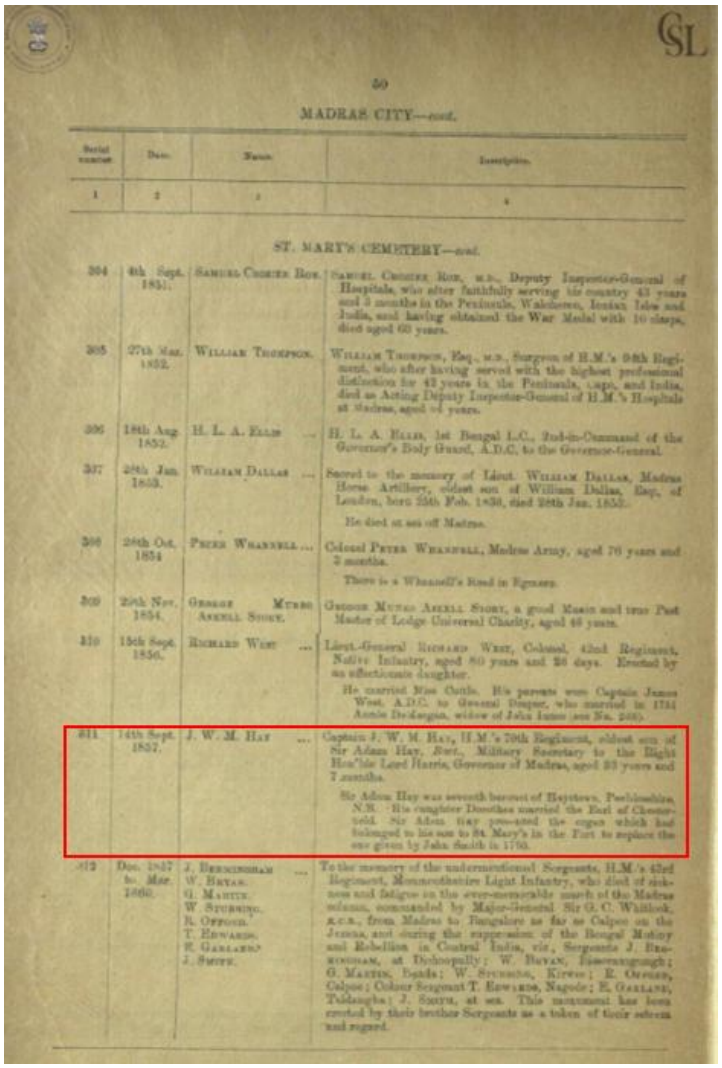
1. John William, b. 15 Feb. 1824; captain in Scots fusilier guards; *d.* 14 Sept. 1857.
2. Rosslyn (Sir), **8th bart.**
3. Athole James, b. 30 Sept. 1826; *d.* 1871.
4. Adam, b. 18 Feb. 1829; *d.* 1 May, 1871.
1. Dorothea, m. 6 Aug. 1851, 9th Earl of Chesterfield, who *d.* 12 Jan. 1887, leaving issue.

A390. The second submission below confirms his burial service was held at St Mary's Cemetery, Mardras on the 14th September, 1857. It further reveals Captain John William M Hay (1824-1857) was in the service of his Majesty's 70th Regiment, and was the Military Secretary to the Right Honourable Lord Harris, on the 14th September 1857 at St Mary's Cemetery, Madras.

A391. His burial record below, further confirms he is the first-born son of Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867) 7th Baron of Peebles (Cotton J.J., 1905, 1945, p69):

378 | 14th Sept. 1857. | JOHN WILLIAM HAY. | M. | Captain J. W. M. HAY, H.M.'s 70th Regiment, eldest son of Sir Adam Hay, *Bart.*, Military Secretary to the Right Hon'ble Lord Harris, Governor of Madras, aged 33 years and 7 months.

Sir Adam Hay was seventh baronet of Haystown, Peeblesshire, N. B. His daughter Dorothea married the Earl of Chesterfield. Sir Adam Hay presented the organ which had belonged to his son to St. Mary's in the Fort to replace the one given by John Smith in 1760. His coat-of-arms is on it.



50

MADRAS CITY—cont.

Serial number	Date.	Name.	Inscription.
1	2	3	4

ST. MARY'S CEMETERY—cont.

304 | 4th Sept. 1851. | SAMUEL CROKER ROE. | SAMUEL CROKER ROE, M.D., Deputy Inspector-General of Hospitals, who after faithfully serving the country 43 years and 3 months in the Peninsula, Walcheren, Ionian Isles and India, and having obtained the War Medal with 10 clasps, died aged 60 years.

305 | 27th Mar. 1852. | WILLIAM THOMPSON. | WILLIAM THOMPSON, Esq., M.D., Surgeon of H.M.'s 94th Regiment, who after having served with the highest professional distinction for 42 years in the Peninsula, Cape, and India, died as Acting Deputy Inspector-General of H.M.'s Hospitals at Madras, aged 64 years.

306 | 18th Aug. 1852. | H. L. A. ELLIS ... | H. L. A. ELLIS, 1st Bengal L.C., Sub-in-Command of the Governor's Body Guard, A.D.C. to the Governor-General.

307 | 26th Jan. 1853. | WILLIAM DALLAS ... | Sacred to the memory of Lieut. WILLIAM DALLAS, Madras Horse Artillery, eldest son of William Dallas, Esq., of London, born 25th Feb. 1830, died 26th Jan. 1853.

He died at sea off Madras.

308 | 26th Oct. 1854 | PETER WHANNELL ... | Colonel PETER WHANNELL, Madras Army, aged 76 years and 2 months.

There is a Whannell's Road in Egmore.

309 | 29th Nov. 1854. | GEORGE MUNRO ARNELL STORY. | GEORGE MUNRO ARNELL STORY, a good Mason and true Past Master of Lodge Universal Charity, aged 46 years.

310 | 15th Sept. 1856. | RICHARD WEST ... | Lieut.-General RICHARD WEST, Colonel, 42nd Regiment, Native Infantry, aged 80 years and 26 days. Erected by an affectionate daughter.

He married Miss Cuttle. His parents were Captain James West, A.D.C. to General Draper, who married in 1734 Annie Desforges, widow of John Jones (see No. 266).

311 | 14th Sept. 1857. | J. W. M. HAY ... | Captain J. W. M. HAY, H.M.'s 70th Regiment, eldest son of Sir Adam Hay, *Bart.*, Military Secretary to the Right Hon'ble Lord Harris, Governor of Madras, aged 33 years and 7 months.

Sir Adam Hay was seventh baronet of Haystown, Peeblesshire, N.B. His daughter Dorothea married the Earl of Chesterfield. Sir Adam Hay presented the organ which had belonged to his son to St. Mary's in the Fort to replace the one given by John Smith in 1760.

312 | Dec. 1857 to Mar. 1860. | J. BIRMINGHAM. W. BRYAN. G. MARTIN. W. STURMING. R. OFFORD. T. EDWARDS. E. GARLAND. J. SMITH. ... | To the memory of the undermentioned Sergeants, H.M.'s 42nd Regiment, Monmouthshire Light Infantry, who died of sickness and fatigue on the ever-memorable march of the Madras column, commanded by Major-General Sir G. C. Whitlock, K.C.B., from Madras to Bangalore as far as Calpee on the Jumna, and during the suppression of the Bengal Mutiny and Rebellion in Central India, viz., Sergeants J. BIRMINGHAM, at Dichopully; W. BRYAN, Bamerangrugh; G. MARTIN, Banda; W. STURMING, Kirwee; R. OFFORD, Calpee; Colour Sergeant T. EDWARDS, Napoli; E. GARLAND, Toldangha; J. SMITH, at sea. This monument has been erected by their brother Sergeants as a token of their esteem and regard.

A392. This concludes what is known about William Hay's (1850-1926) biological father John Hay as at 24th September 2024.

A393. The preliminary determination made from the fresh evidence is that William Hay's (1850-1926) biological father is most likely to Captain John William Hay (1824-1857) who served as a Military Officer in the British Army. This permitted the Victorian Military Naval Lodge Melbourne to grant William Hay membership of the lodge despite him, William not serving in the military or navy.

A394. Followed next is the ancient Hallifax bloodline enjoyed by the researchers inherited through William Hay's (1850-1926) daughter in law Violate Ethel Hallifax (1882-1955) who married William and Isballa Innes Hay (1856-1928), nee Sinclair's son, James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955), the researcher's great grandfather.

SECTION 3 - HALLIFAX BLOODLINE

Great grandmother Violet Hallifax's lineage

A395. Harris and Levi Guest of Melbourne's validated dynastic bloodline flows to them from the researcher's maternal great grandmother, Violet Ethel Hallifax (1882-1955).

A396. The researcher's great grandmother Violet died on 2nd May 1955, aged 72. The cause of her death was a coronary occlusion. Prior to passing, Violet was prior placed into aged care for some time.

A397. Violet was cremated at Fawkner Crematorium on the 4th May 1955 and her remains were also scattered amongst the gardens at the memorial park.

A398. Her death record below confirms further she is the wife of James Sinclair Hay and mother of their eight children (Australia Death Index, 1787-1985; Name: Violet Ethel Hay; Death Age: 72; Birth Date: 1883; Death Date: Abt 1955; Death Place: Chel, Victoria; Registration Date: 1955; Registration Place: Australia: Father: Augustus Hallifax; Mother: Annie Denham ; Registration Number: 4180):

THIRD SCHEDULE.

EI. 4180.

DEATHS in the District of MELBOURNE, in Victoria, Registered by ARTHUR FEGAN.

1 No.	Nº 4180
Description— 2 (1) When and where died	2nd May, 1955, Melbourne Home and Hospital for the Aged, Cheltenham, City of Moorabbin, County of Bourke.
(2) Usual Place of Residence	Melbourne Home and Hospital for the Aged, Cheltenham, City of Moorabbin.
3 Name and Surname	Violet Ethel HAY.
Occupation	Home Duties,
4 Sex and age	Female, 72 years.
5 (1) Cause of death	Coronary occlusion - 2 days,
(2) Duration of last illness	Bronchiectasis - 4 years,
(3) Legally qualified medical practitioner by whom certified and	Dr. H. I. Carlile.
(4) When he last saw deceased	1st May, 1955.
6 Name and surname of father and mother (maiden name, if known), with occupation	Agustus Hallifax, Annie Hallifax, formerly Denham, Clerk.
7 Signature, description, and residence of informant	Authorized Agent, Johnston Street, Fitzroy.
8 (1) Signature of Registrar (2) Date and (3) Where registered	4th May, 1955. Melbourne.
If burial registered— 9 When and where buried	4th May, 1955, Cremated at Fawkner Crematorium,
Undertaker by whom certified	H. K. Lewis.
10 Name and religion of Minister, or names of witnesses of burial	H. Lewis, M. Goldsworthy.
11 Where born, and how long in the Australian States, stating which	Dunedin, New Zealand, 69 years in Victoria.
If deceased was married— 12 (1) Where and	Melbourne, Victoria,
(2) At what age and	19 years,
(3) To whom	James Sinclair Hay.
(4) Conjugal Condition at Date of Death	Married.
13 Issue in order of birth, the names and ages	William, deceased, Florence, 50 years, Isabel, deceased, James, 47 years, Augustus, 45 years, Bonnie, 42 years, Violet, 38 years, David, deceased.

Nº 4180

A399. Violet and James Hay had eight children, including the researcher's grandfather Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985):

- William Hallifax Hay (1902-1902).
- Florence Wisteria Hay (1903-1974).
- Isabella Innes Sinclair Hay (1906-1907).
- James Sinclair Hay (1908-1982).
- **Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985).**
- Bonnie Annie Denham Hay (1912-1973).
- Violet Ethel Hay (1916-2014).
- David Justice Hay (1918-1918).

A400. From their four sons, two died in infancy, William Hallifax Hay (1902-1902) named after his paternal grandfather William Hay (1850-1926), and David Justice Hay (1917-1917), named after William Hay's (1850-1926), maternal uncle, David Justice (1837-1904).

A401. Augustus's elder surviving brother, James Sinclair Hay (II) (1908-1982) married Sophie Eva Rose Clarke (1909–1993), daughter of Rupert James Clarke (1882-1954) and Ellen Lydia Evans (1884-1948).

A402. James and Sophie had a daughter June Eva Rose Jarvis (1930-1980) (nee Hay) and married John Clifford Jarvis. There were no children born from this union.

A403. John Lindsay Robert Guest's (1960-) grandfather, Augustus Halifax Hay (1909-1976), was the only male to have issue. His younger sisters, Bonnie and Violet had issue and left their genealogical legacy which survives today (i.e., extant).

A404. Violet Ethel Hallifax (1882-1955) is the daughter of Augustus New Hallifax (1854-1886) and Annie Maria Denham (1848-1938).

A405. Great grandmother Violet was born in Dunedin New Zealand in 1882, and her father retuned his family with Annie to Melbourne, about 1882/3.

A406. Violet as a youngster migrated with her parents and only sibling, elder sister Florence Maria Hallifax (1877-1895) to Melbourne when she was very young and identified as Australian.

A407. Violet's birth record is submitted below (Violet Ethel Hallifax, in the New Zealand, Civil Registration Birth Index, 1840-1902; Name: Violet Ethel Hallifax; Birth Date: 1882; Birth Place: New Zealand; Father: Augustus New Hallifax; Mother: Annie Maria Hallifax; Birth Registration Number:1882/8533):

Name:	Violet Ethel Hallifax
Birth Date:	1882
Birth Place:	New Zealand
Father:	Augustus New Hallifax
Mother:	Annie Maria Hallifax
Birth Registration Number:	1882/8533

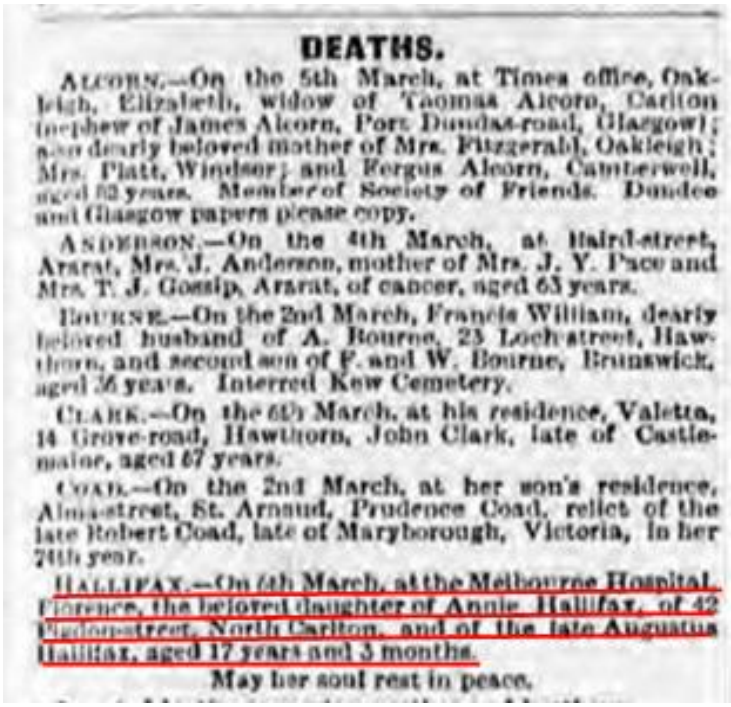
A408. Violet's Florence Maria Hallifax (1877-1895) death age 17 years is recorded below (New Zealand, Birth Index, 1840-1950; Record details – Name: Florence Maria Hallifax; Birth Date: 1877 Oct-Nov-Dec; Registration Place: Dunedin, New Zealand; Folio Number: 3821; Australian Death Record: Florence Hallifax; in the Australia and New Zealand, Find a Grave Index, 1800s-Current; Record details – Name: Florence Hallifax; Birth Date: 1878; Death Date: 5 March 1895; Cemetery: Melbourne General Cemetery; Plot: MGC-CEMM-807-466; Burial or Cremation Place: Carlton North, Melbourne City, Victoria, Australia):

Name	Florence Maria Hallifax
Birth Date	1877 Oct-Nov-Dec
Registration Place	Dunedin, New Zealand
Folio Number	3821

Name	Florence Hallifax
Birth Date	1878
Death Date	5 Mar 1895
Cemetery	Melbourne General Cemetery
Burial or Cremation Place	Carlton North, Melbourne City, Victoria, Australia
Has Bio?	N

A409. No life biography can be attributed to the young Florence Maria Hallifax (1877-1895). It is reasonably presumed however, that from 1882/3, aged 5 to 6 years old she attended school around Canning Street Carlton. This is where her mother lived and raised her.

A410. The Age Newspaper, p1, Melbourne, Death Notices, Thursday March 7th, 1895, records the family's bereavement caused by the loss of Florence Maria Hallifax (1877-1895):



DEATHS.

ALCORN.—On the 5th March, at Times office, Oakleigh, Elizabeth, widow of Thomas Alcorn, Carlton (nephew of James Alcorn, Port Dundas-road, Glasgow); also dearly beloved mother of Mrs. Fitzgerald, Oakleigh; Mrs. Platt, Windsor; and Fergus Alcorn, Camberwell, aged 52 years. Member of Society of Friends. Dundee and Glasgow papers please copy.

ANDERSON.—On the 4th March, at Baird-street, Ararat, Mrs. J. Anderson, mother of Mrs. J. Y. Pace and Mrs. T. J. Gossip, Ararat, of cancer, aged 63 years.

BOURNE.—On the 2nd March, Francis William, dearly beloved husband of A. Bourne, 23 Lochstreet, Hawthorn, and second son of F. and W. Bourne, Brunswick, aged 36 years. Interred Kew Cemetery.

CLARK.—On the 6th March, at his residence, Valetta, 14 Grove-road, Hawthorn, John Clark, late of Castlemaine, aged 67 years.

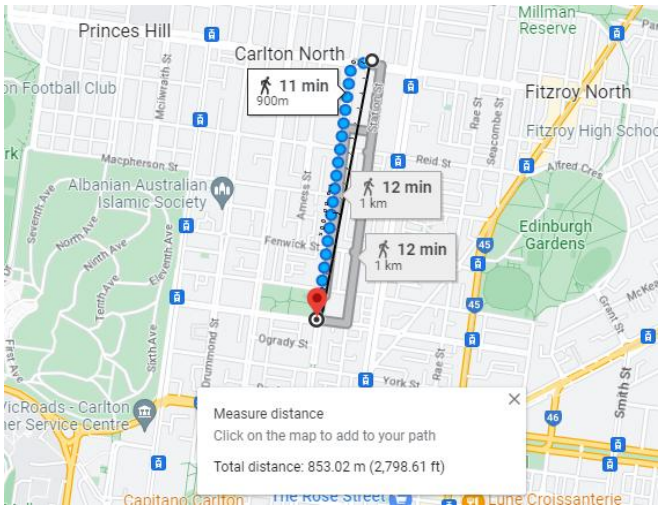
COAD.—On the 2nd March, at her son's residence, Alma-street, St. Arnaud, Prudence Coad, relict of the late Robert Coad, late of Maryborough, Victoria, in her 74th year.

HALLIFAX.—On 4th March, at the Melbourne Hospital, Florence, the beloved daughter of Annie Hallifax, of 42 Pigdon-street, North Carlton, and of the late Augustus Hallifax, aged 17 years and 5 months.

May her soul rest in peace.

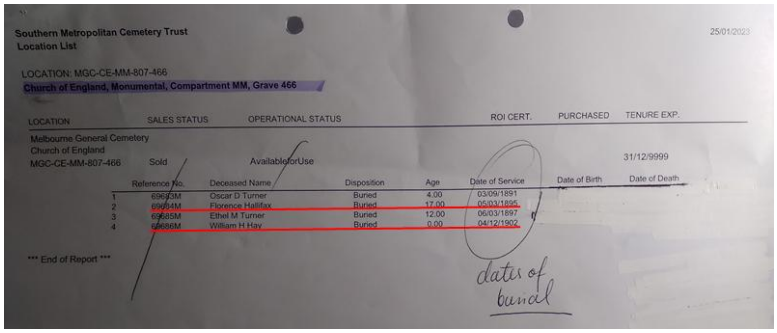
A411. The home Violet and Florence lived with their mother, Annie Maria Hallifax (1841-1938), a widow, and the researcher's 2nd great grandmother located at 42 Pigdon Street Carlton. The home is pictured below and still stands:

A412. The home at 42 Pigeon Street is about 900 meters from where she lived with her late husband Augustus New Hallifax's [II] (1855-1886) at Sawac Cottage, on Canning Street Carlton:



A413. William Hallifax Hay, born 1902, died 4th December 1902 who is Violet and husband James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955) first born, was laid to rest in the same plot as Violet's sister, Florence Maria Hallifax (1877-1895) at Melbourne General Cemetery.

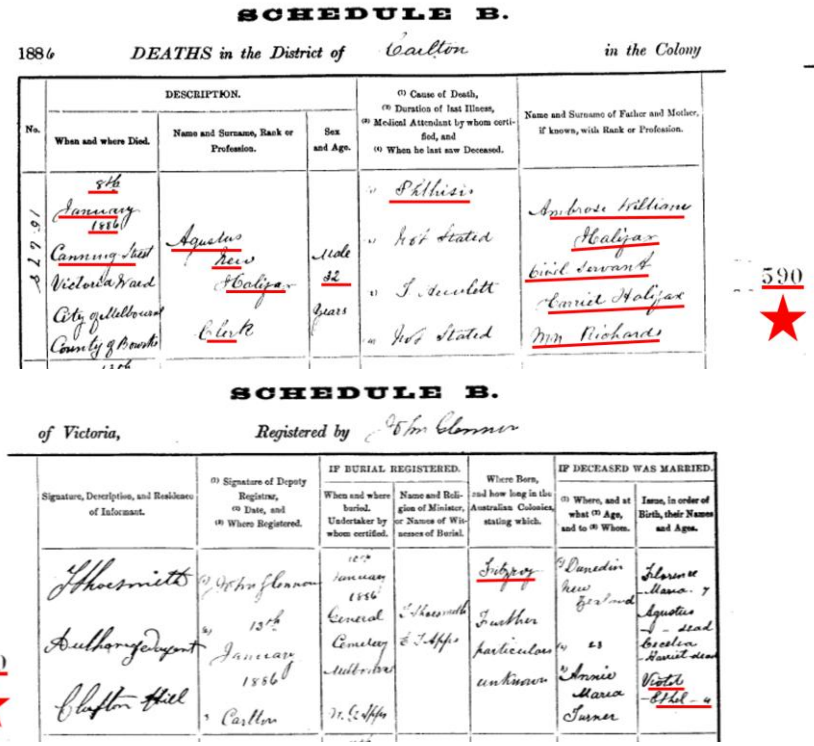
A414. It should be told other infant family members from other lines are also buried in the same plot (refer Melbourne General Cemetery, Carlton North, Melbourne, Victoria; Report: Plot MGC-CE-MM-807-466, Church of England, Monumental, Compartment MM, Grave 466, Date sourced: 25th January, 2023):



2nd great grandparents Augustus New Hallifax & Annie Maria Denham

A415. Violet Ethel Hay (1882-1955), nee Hallifax, the researcher's great-grandmother, is the daughter of Augustus New Hallifax's [II] (1855-1886) and Annie Maria Denham (1841-1938).

A416 Her father, died at his home "Sawac Cottage, Canning Street Carlton" on "8th January 1886" (Australia Death Index, 1787-1985; Name: Augustus New Halifax; Death Age: 32; Birth Date: 1855; Death Date: 8 January, 1886; Death Place: Canning Street, Carlton, Victoria; Registration Date: 15th January, 1886; Registration Place: Carlton, Australia; Father: Ambrose William Hallifax; Mother: Harriet Hallifax; Maiden name: Richards; Registration Number: 590):



SCHEDULE B.

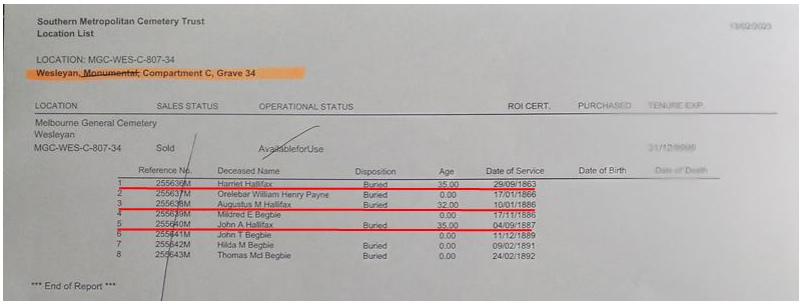
1886 DEATHS in the District of Carlton in the Colony

No.	DESCRIPTION. When and where Died.	Name and Surname, Rank or Profession.	Sex and Age.	(c) Cause of Death, (d) Duration of last Illness, (e) Medical Attendant by whom certified, and (f) When he last saw Deceased.	Name and Surname of Father and Mother, if known, with Rank or Profession.
590	8th January 1886 Canning Street Victoria Road City of Melbourne County of Bourke	Augustus New Halifax Clerk	Male 32 years	a Phthisis b Not Stated c J. Scarlett d Not Stated	Ambrose William Halifax Civil Servant Harriet Halifax Maiden Richards

SCHEDULE B.

of Victoria, Registered by John Glennon

Signature, Description, and Residence of Informant.	(a) Signature of Deputy Registrar, (c) Date, and (b) Where Registered.	IF BURIAL REGISTERED. When and where buried. Undertaker by whom certified.	IF BURIAL REGISTERED. Name and Religion of Minister, or Names of Witnesses of Burial.	Where Born, and how long in the Australian Colonies, stating which.	IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED. (c) Where, and at what (d) Age, and to (e) Whom.	IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED. Issue, in order of Birth, their Names and Ages.
590 A Shoesmith Draftsman Clayton Hill	a John Glennon 13th January 1886 a Carlton	10th January 1886 General Cemetery Melbourne W. C. Hoffe	A Shoesmith E. Hoffe	Sydney Further particulars unknown	a Dunedin New Zealand c 43 a Annie Maria Turner	Florence Maria 7 Augustus — dead Beresford — dead Violet Ethel 4



Southern Metropolitan Cemetery Trust
Location List

LOCATION: MGC-WES-C-807-34
Wesleyan, Monumental, Compartment C, Grave 34

LOCATION	SALES STATUS	OPERATIONAL STATUS	ROI CERT.	PURCHASED	TENURE EXP.
Melbourne General Cemetery Wesleyan MGC-WES-C-807-34	Sold	AvailableforUse			31/12/9999

	Reference No.	Deceased Name	Disposition	Age	Date of Service	Date of Birth	Date of Death
1	255636M	Harriet Hallifax	Buried	35.00	29/09/1863		
2	255637M	Orelebar William Henry Payne	Buried	0.00	17/01/1866		
3	255638M	Augustus M Hallifax	Buried	32.00	10/01/1886		
4	255639M	Mildred E Begbie		0.00	17/11/1886		
5	255640M	John A Hallifax	Buried	35.00	04/09/1887		
6	255641M	John T Begbie		0.00	11/12/1889		
7	255642M	Hilda M Begbie	Buried	0.00	09/02/1891		
8	255643M	Thomas Mid Begbie	Buried	0.00	24/02/1892		

*** End of Report ***

A419. The notice below confirms the Hallifax family lived at "Sawac" Cottage, Canning Street Carlton," when the researcher's 2nd great grandfather Augustus New Hallifax (1855-1886) II, died on the 8th January 1886. (Leader, Melbourne, Victoria, on Saturday 16th January 1886):

HALLIFAX.—On the 8th January, at his late residence, Sarwac Cottage, Canning-street, North Carlton, Augustas New, youngest son of the late Ambrose William Hallifax, post and telegraph master, Kyneton.

A420. The same notice above confirms his father, Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874), was the post and telegraph master at Kyneton.

A421. The name Sawac (Sarwac) given to his family cottage in Carlton, may bear a relationship to their time in New Zealand.

A422. Continuing to remain very close to the evidence, it is further supposed, the family may have had the means to build their home upon return to Melbourne, and in doing so giving the cottage a name to remember their time in New Zealand and those they left behind.

A423. The researcher's 2nd great grandparents Augustus New Hallifax (1855-1886) and Annie Maria Turner (1841-1938), born Denham, were married in New Zealand in 1877 (the researcher's 2nd great grandparents) (New Zealand, Marriage Index, 1840-1934; Name: Annie Maria Turner: Gender: Female; Marriage Year: 1877: Marriage Place: New Zealand; Spouse: Augustus Halifax; Relation: Bride (Wife); Folio Number: 2764):

Name	Augustus Halifax
Gender	Male
Marriage Year	1877
Marriage Place	New Zealand
Spouse	Annie Maria Turner
Relation	Bridegroom
Folio Number	2764

A424. After Augustus died, Annie Hallifax (1841-1938) nee Denham, never remarried. She lived a long life and died, aged 97 years. Annie is also buried at the Melbourne General Cemetery, along with other family members.

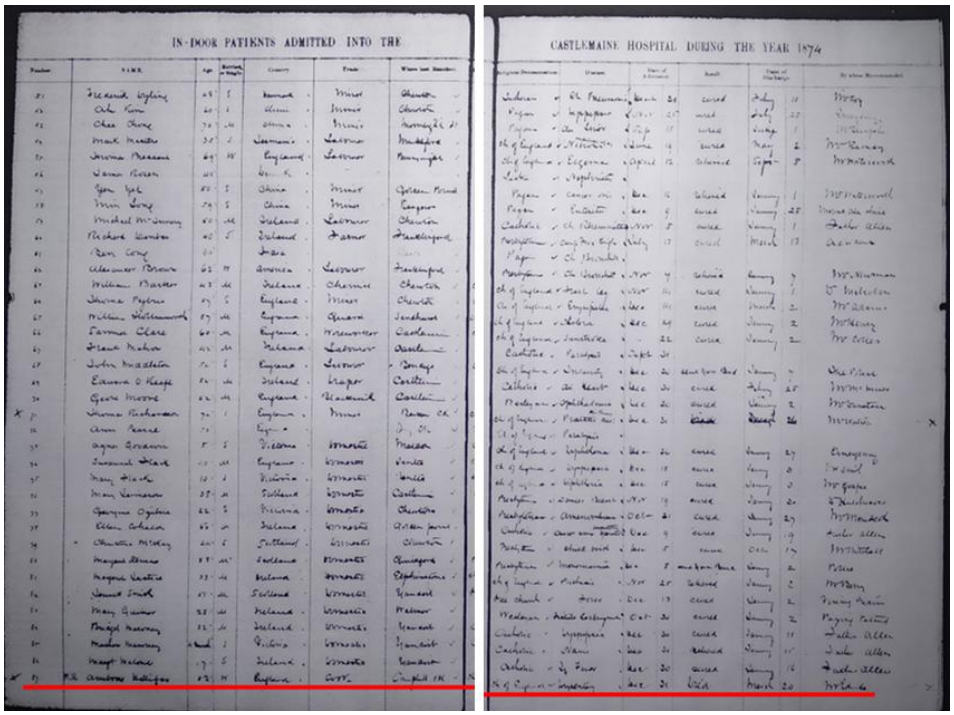
3rd great grandparents Ambrose William Hallifax & Harriet Richards

A425. Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) and Harriet Richards (1828-19863) settled in the Colony of South Australia in 1846 before settling in the Colony of Victoria late 1854, early 1855.

A426. Ambrose is the grandson of Reverend Robert Hallifax (1760-1838), M.A of Magdalen College, Oxford known to the College of Arms Hallifax registered pedigree, Ms 7D14/45, 16th December, 1788. He and Harriet Hallifax, nee Richards are the parents of the researcher's 2nd great grandfather Augustus New Hallifax (1855-1886) II.

A427. Ambrose's life biography is still being written, as more records of his life come to hand. The most recent record development after a twenty-year trace is the researcher's discovery of his burial place found on the `4th February 2023, at Castlemaine, Victoria.

A428. His final resting place was discovered by the present researcher at nearby Campbells Creet Cemetery after the researcher, Ambrose's 3rd great grandson first located his medical record at Castlemaine Hospital where he expired (Source: Castlemaine Hospital Records, In-Door Patients Admitted into the Castlemaine hospital during the year 1874, December 31st 1873 to 20th March 1874, Courtesy, Castlemaine Historical Society, Ian Hockley, Research Coordinator, 14th February, 2023):

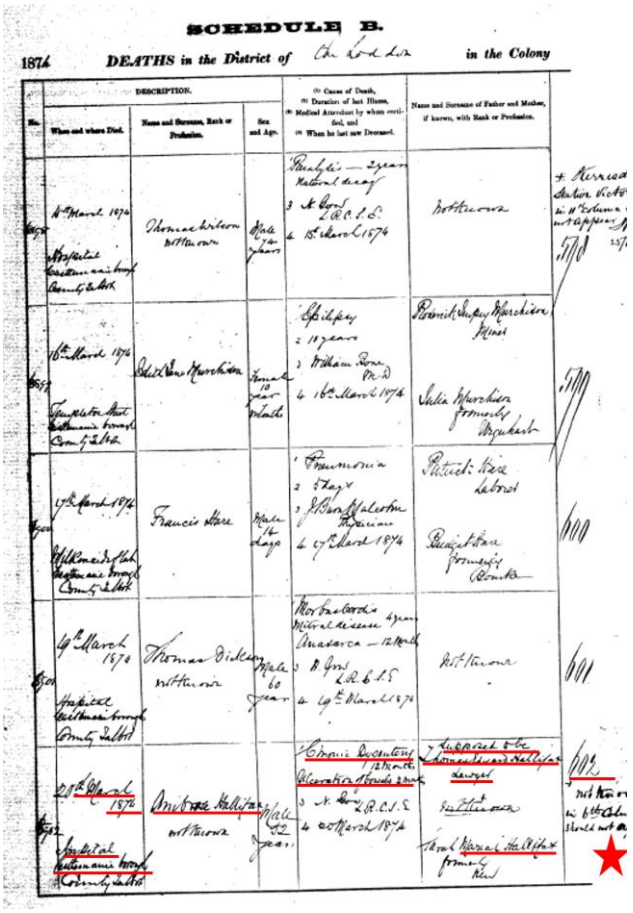

IN-DOOR PATIENTS ADMITTED INTO THE

CASTLEMAINE HOSPITAL DURING THE YEAR 1874

A429. Confirmed from the scant entry above, Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) died on the 20th March 1874, aged 52 years after being admitted about 3-months prior to his death. He declared he was a cook at the time when admitted on the 31st December 1873.

A430. His death certificate submitted on the following page confirms he was ill for 12 months; and that he was a widow. His deceased wife Harriet Hallifax, nee Richards is named along with his father, Lawyer, Thomas New Hallifax.

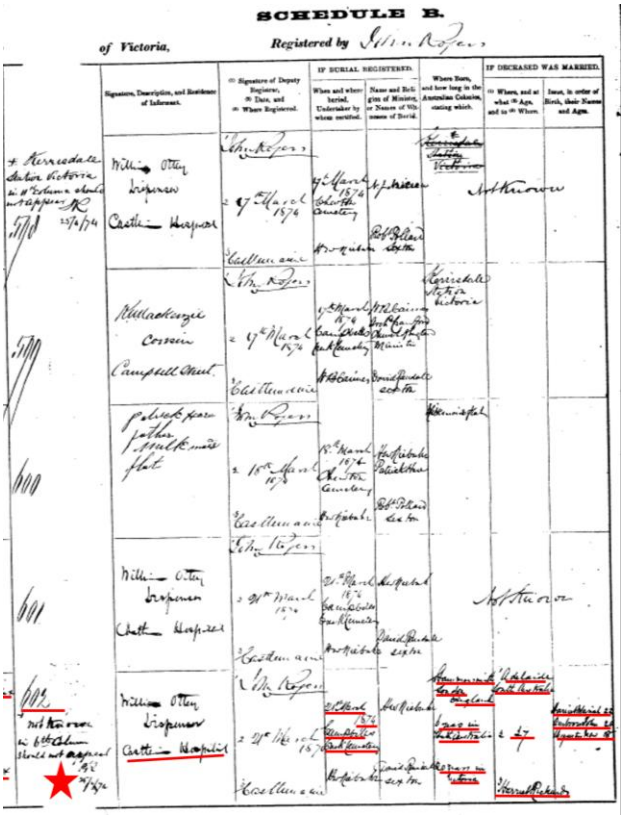
A431. Further recorded is his place of origin Hammersmith, London, England (Victoria, Australia, Death Index, 1836-1988; Name: Ambrose Hallifax; Death Registration Year: 1874; Death: Registration Place: Victoria, Australia; Father: Thomas Edward; Spouse: Harriet Richards: Reference Number: 602):



SCHEDULE B.

1874 DEATHS in the District of Ch Lord Lis in the Colony

No.	DESCRIPTION. When and where Died.	Name and Surname, Rank or Profession.	Sex and Age.	Cause of Death, Duration of last Illness, Medical Attendant by whom certified, and When he last saw Deceased.	Name and Surname of Father and Mother, if known, with Rank or Profession.	
	4th March 1874 Prahran Eastern main Road Boroughs & Melb	Thomas Wilson Watterson	Male 14 years	Phthisis — 2 years Natural decay 3 H. Byrne L.R.C.P.S. 4 15th March 1874	Not known	+ Kerrieda Station Victoria in N Column should not appear 25/7/74
	16th March 1874 Toorak Main Road Boroughs & Melb	Alick Mac Murchison	Female 10 years 9 months	Epilepsy 2 11 years 3 William Ross M.D 4 16th March 1874	Dennis Duggan Murchison Miner Julia Murchison formerly Mcpherson	
	17th March 1874 Hotham near Melbourne Boroughs & Melb	Francis Hare	Male 14 days	1 Pneumonia 2 5 days 3 J. Bowes Hotham Physician 4 17th March 1874	Patrick Hare Labourer Bridget Hare formerly Clarke	
	19th March 1874 Hotham near Melbourne Boroughs & Melb	Thomas Dickens	Male 60 years	Mortification of the Bowels 4 years Natural decease — 12 hours 3 R. Jones L.R.C.P.S. 4 19th March 1874	Not known	
	21st March 1874 Hotham near Melbourne Boroughs & Melb	Ambrose Hallifax	Male 52 years	Chronic Dysentery 12 months Ulceration of Bowels 3 mo 3 W. Ross L.R.C.P.S. 4 20th March 1874	+ Informant to be Thomas Edward Hallifax Married Not known Eldest Married Child of the Above formerly Rees	602 not known in 6th Column should not appear ★

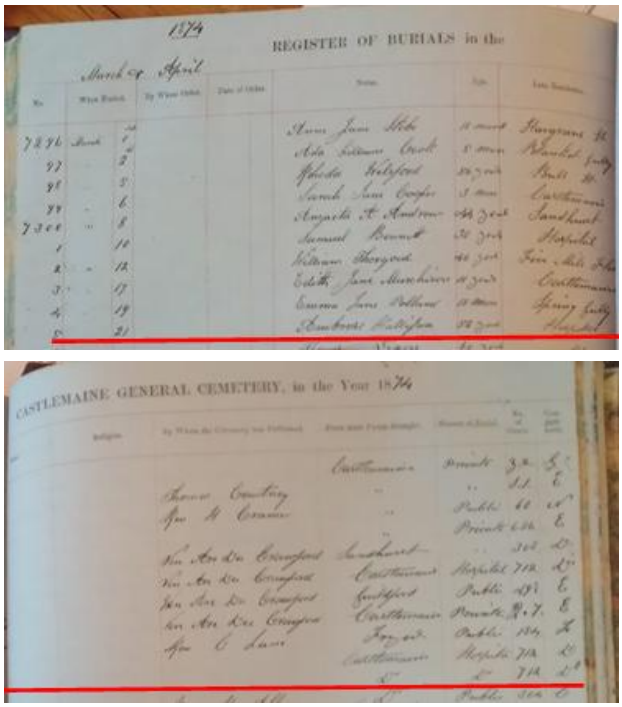


SCHEDULE B.

of Victoria, Registered by Wm Rogers

Signature, Description, and Residence of Informant.	Signature of Deputy Registrar, Date, and Where Registered.	IF BURIAL REGISTERED. When and where buried. Undertaker by whom certified.	Name and Religion or Names of Witnesses of Burial.	Where Born, and how long in the Australian Colonies, stating which.	IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED. When, and at what Age, and in Which.	Issue, in order of Birth, their Names and Ages.
+ Kerrieda Station Victoria in N Column should not appear 25/7/74	Wm Rogers 17th March 1874	19th March 1874 Melbourne Cemetery		Not known		
William Otley Dispenser Castlemaine Hospital						
Mackenzie Cossin Campbell Street	Wm Rogers 17th March 1874	19th March 1874 Melbourne Cemetery		Kerrieda Station Victoria		
Police Paddock father Melbourne Police	Wm Rogers 18th March 1874	20th March 1874 Melbourne Cemetery				
William Otley Dispenser Castlemaine Hospital	Wm Rogers 21st March 1874	21st March 1874 Melbourne Cemetery		Not known		
602 not known in 6th Column should not appear ★ 25/7/74 William Otley Dispenser Castlemaine Hospital	Wm Rogers 21st March 1874	21st March 1874 Melbourne Cemetery		Married Not known Eldest Married Child of the Above formerly Rees	17	Harriet Richards

A432. Ambrose and Harriet Hallifax, nee Richards three young adult children were listed also on Ambrose's death certificate, namely Harriet Mariah Begbie, nee Hallifax, aged 22 years; Ambrose John, Hallifax, aged 20 years; and Augustus New Hallifax [II], aged 18 years [Mine]. Below is his registered burial record on 21st March 1874 at Campbells Creek, at the Castlemaine Cemtery, Pioneer Compartment (Register of Burials March/April 1874; Location: Old Cemetery, now referred to as compartment X, Y, Z, Plot number 712):


1874

REGISTER OF BURIALS in the

March & April

CASTLEMAINE GENERAL CEMETERY, in the Year 1874

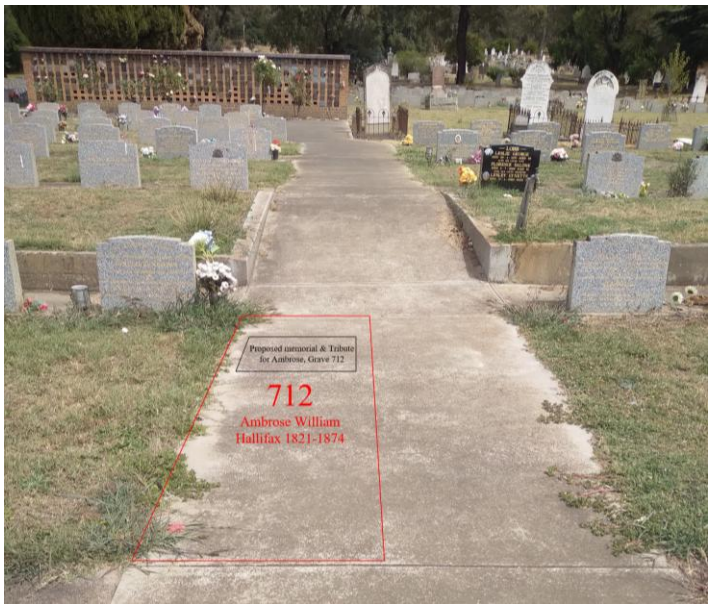
A433. Immense gratitude is given to Debra Tanter, Chair of the Castlemaine Cemtery Trust, Campbells Creek, for the following records making certain where Ambrose's remains are buried:

A434. The next image is a clear transparency overly skilfully constructed which records exactly where these early pioneers are buried under more recent occupants illegally buried on top of them:

A435. Highlighted above, with a red frame, marks Ambrose William Hallifax's (1821-1874) final resting place, plot 712. The researcher's 3rd great grandfather, was spared the indignity of his remains being desecrated, as many were.

A436. Whilst Ambrose suffers the indignity and anonymity of being buried under a foot path, willfully so by former management of the cemetery in the 1960s as determined by a 1980s inquiry, it was Debra who combed through old hand written cemetery records to find that Ambrose was laid to rest at the cemetery after the researcher suspected he moved there to live nearby to his younger brother, school headmaster, Augustus New Hallifax.

A437. A memorial plaque is now erected and Debra Tanter secured funds and project managed the construction of a memorial pioneer's garden when Ambrose's plaque is proudly displayed. The plaque helps family members and curious visitors to easily find Ambrose's resting place, Plot 712, which is under a footpath:



A438. Below is memorial garden, featuring Ambrose's plaque at the pioneer memorial garden recently constructed at Castlemaine Cemetery:

A439. It is fairly presumed that prior to Ambrose's death in 1874, he lived at Campbells Creek where his brother Augustus New Hallifax was for some time the Head of the local school at Campbells Creek. Supposing further Ambrose may have in his later years been occupied as cook for the school.

A440. Prior to living a more subdued existence in Campbells Creek, or nearby, he lived a far more hectic life style during the period 1864 to late 1868.

A441. During this period 1864-1868, he is known to have held parallel careers. One, was his retail partnership with Joseph Jenkins. Whereby, they jointly operated a mining equipment and general merchandise store on Errol Street Hotham), auction house and pawn broker business on Errol Street, Hotham, long now known as North Melbourne. The store was also a general auction house.

A442. The retail business Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) and his business partner Joseph Jenkins held from late 1863, was cash positive. It helped Ambrose fund from his proportion of the profits the establishment of his second and parallel career mining copper at Coopers Creek near Whyalla, in Gippsland Victoria. There at Coopers Creek and after his wife Harriet died earlier in 1863, he followed his dream to own and operate a commercial copper mine in Victoria.

A443. From 1864 he is further known from various accounts to frequent Port Albert to the south of Coopers Creek and the closest port to the location of his copper mine. He would travel the couple of hours by ship and then by coach to and from Coopers Creek to Port Albert to conduct his mining business and return to his store in Hotham.

A444. Ambrose in 1864 obtained a mining lease. He journeyed Coopers Creek and pegged out his mine. He took samples and attracted investors. He then went onto negotiate purchase and takeover of basic mining infrastructure to help operationalise the mine. He raised further fund to advanced infrastructure at the mine he had built, all prior to the end of the 1865/66 summer.

A445. One of the early 14 private investors was William Pearson MLA whose actions would later have a big impact of Ambrose's later life (O'Callaghan G, Clonmel to Federation: Guide to People on the Port Albert Area 1841-1901, Vol II, Gilchrist to Myors/Myars' Enver, 2008, pp152-153).

A446. This is what the Minerals Society published relatively recently about his mining career at Coopers Creek, Gippsland, reaching back to Kapunda where he lived from 1848-1853 (Haupt, J, 2011, Some Mines and Minerals of Eastern Victoria, Part 7, in The Mineral Society of Victoria, Newsletter, No. 10, June 2011):

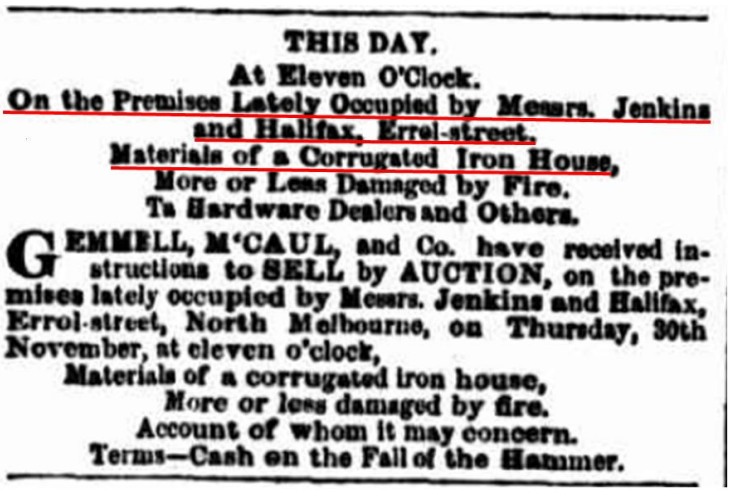
History

The mine has a checkered history of intermittent exploration and mining. An outcrop of rich copper ore was discovered in 1864 and a syndicate of local and Melbourne shareholders formed The Thomson River Copper Mining Co. They commenced mining of the deposit by an open cut in 1865, installing 2 reverberatory furnaces to treat the ore (see photo and newspaper article). By 1886 a tunnel was driven to intersect the lode with samples being sent to Adelaide for assay. The assay values ranged from 14 & 32 % and attracted the attention of an experienced copper miner, Ambrose Halifax from Kapunda. He formed the Gippsland Copper Mining Tributers Company to operate the mine on tribute. By 1867 this group had mined 270 ton of ore and produced 42 ton of crudely smelted concentrate (regulus), of which 32 ton was carted to Port Albert, then shipped to Melbourne and then onto Swansea in Wales for converting into pure copper. The operations were uneconomic due to difficulties were encountered in smelting the ore using green firewood and the high cost of transport. The Tributers eventually gave up. A Welsh syndicate then attempted to mine the deposit until 1870, with little result.

A447. Immediately prior to arriving at Coopers Creek in January 1866, a sudden end occurred to a successful retail business partnership Ambrose had established with friend Joseph Jenkins (Jenkins & Hallifax, Second-Hand Mining Equipment, Auctioneers & Pawn Brokers).

A448. The business Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) enjoyed with his friend and business partner for four years, Joseph Jenkins was situated on Errol Street Hotham (North Melbourne).

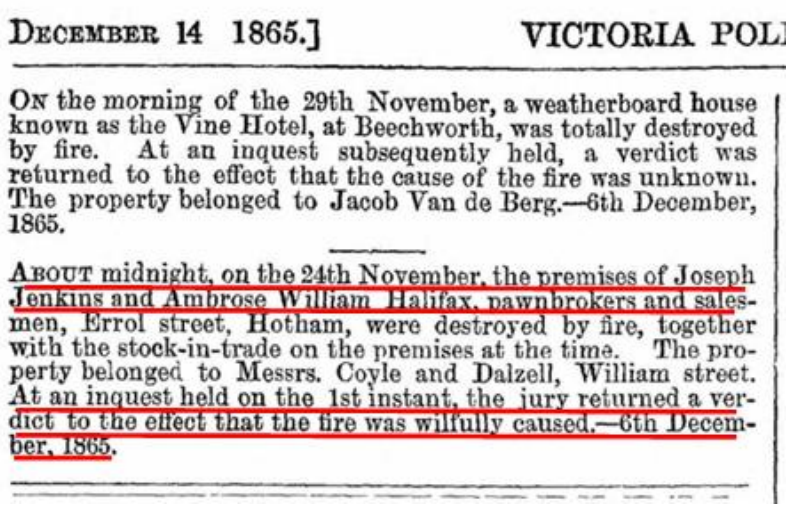
A449. The business they nurtured, helped Ambrose turn his mining dream to extract copper from Gippsland a reality, but his plans were placed on hold temporarily when fire gutted their store (The Argus, Melbourne, Victoria, Thursday 30th November, 1865, page 2):



THIS DAY.
At Eleven O'Clock.
On the Premises Lately Occupied by Messrs. Jenkins and Hallifax, Errol-street.
Materials of a Corrugated Iron House,
More or Less Damaged by Fire.
To Hardware Dealers and Others.

GEMMELL, M'CAUL, and Co. have received instructions to SELL by AUCTION, on the premises lately occupied by Messrs. Jenkins and Halifax, Errol-street, North Melbourne, on Thursday, 30th November, at eleven o'clock,
Materials of a corrugated iron house,
More or less damaged by fire.
Account of whom it may concern.
Terms—Cash on the Fall of the Hammer.

A450. An inquiry followed (Victoria, Australia, Police Gazettes, 1855, 1864-1924 for Joseph Jacobs and Ambrose William Halifax, 1865, p457):



DECEMBER 14 1865.] VICTORIA POL

ON the morning of the 29th November, a weatherboard house known as the Vine Hotel, at Beechworth, was totally destroyed by fire. At an inquest subsequently held, a verdict was returned to the effect that the cause of the fire was unknown. The property belonged to Jacob Van de Berg.—6th December, 1865.

ABOUT midnight, on the 24th November, the premises of Joseph Jenkins and Ambrose William Halifax, pawnbrokers and salesmen, Errol street, Hotham, were destroyed by fire, together with the stock-in-trade on the premises at the time. The property belonged to Messrs. Coyle and Dalzell, William street. At an inquest held on the 1st instant, the jury returned a verdict to the effect that the fire was wilfully caused.—6th December, 1865.

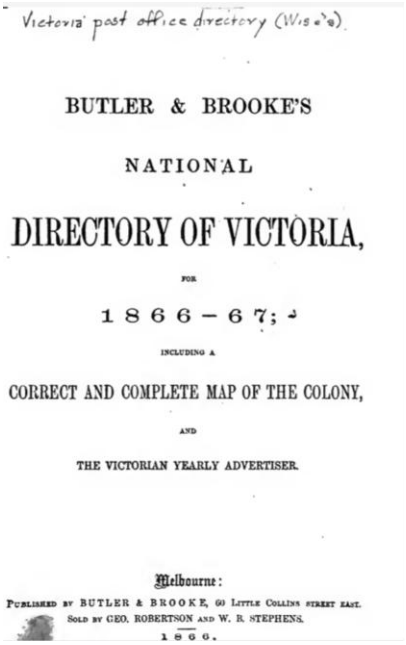
A451. Dr Youl (2nd December, 1865) determined that the fire which caused so much damage to the property held by Messrs Coyle and Dalzell of Williams Street Melbourne, and saw Ambrose and Joseph lose most of their stock was caused by a "person or persons" unknown (The Argus, Melbourne, Victoria, Saturday 2nd December 1865; page 5):

The adjourned inquest held by Dr. Youl on the circumstances attending the origin of the fire by which the premises of Messrs. Jenkins and Halifax, pawnbrokers, general dealers, and auctioneers, Errol-street, Hotham, were burned down at about a quarter-past twelve on last Saturday morning was completed yesterday. The evidence taken was very voluminous, and included the statements of the partners of the firm. Constable Wilkins, who was on duty in the street on the night of the fire, said that he had passed the place twice before midnight. He always heard a dog bark on former nights when he passed, but heard none on Friday night. He used always to see a light in the shop, and to see people about the premises at the early part of the night, but saw none on the night in question. Thomas Avis, a cabinetmaker, who had had some things at the pawnshop, said that on Friday evening, at five o'clock, Mr. Halifax told him that "it was all up the spout, and he had better take his things away." He "took the hint," and removed the greater portion of them. William Payne, a relative of Halifax, said that he had on one or two occasions hawked goods for the firm, and had occasionally slept at the premises that were destroyed. When at the place on Friday evening he proposed to sleep there, but Jenkins objected to his doing so. He had never objected to his sleeping there before. Detective Hartney, who had been engaged making inquiries into the case, said that he had been unable to learn anything about its origin. Upon the whole of the evidence, the jury arrived at the opinion that the fire had been wilfully caused, by some person or persons unknown.

A452. It attracted a lot of newspaper attention, not because the fire was suspicious, rather because it was the first time in the Colony of Victoria that a fire damages claim was made by the newly introduced Insurance Act of 1865. This meant for the first-time police would investigate matters where a fire was the cause of an insurance claim. It further means this event involving the researcher's family has its own small place in the history of Victoria.

A453. Without lament of the sudden, and significant economic loss, history shows Ambrose Hallifax and Joseph Jenkins dusted themselves off, and opened a new store at 63 Errol Street Hotham (North Melbourne).

A454. Second time around they skinned down their offerings to customers preferring to focus less on retail sales and more on pawnbroking and subsequent auctioning of personal items pawned. Dropping general merchandise was no doubt mandatory due to stock loss in the fire which occurred on the 24th November 24, 1865 (1866/1867 Victoria Post Office Directory, p85; Jenkins & Hallifax, pawnbrokers and auctioneers, 63 Errol Street Hotham):



Victoria post office directory (Wise's)

BUTLER & BROOKE'S

NATIONAL

DIRECTORY OF VICTORIA,

FOR

1866–67;

INCLUDING A

CORRECT AND COMPLETE MAP OF THE COLONY,

AND

THE VICTORIAN YEARLY ADVERTISER.

Melbourne:

PUBLISHED BY BUTLER & BROOKE, 60 LITTLE COLLINS STREET EAST.

SOLD BY GEO. ROBERTSON AND W. R. STEPHENS.

1866.

Jac AND SUBURBS. Jen 85

Jacobson, James, 31 Twyford st, Wmn
Jacobson, S. H., pawnbroker, 126 Russell street
James, Thos. Reynolds, manager electric telegraph, William st, corner of Little Bourke st
Jacomb, Robert E., official assignee, 11 and 12 Eldon chambers, Collins st west
Jaffray, W. K., 40 Bank st, Em H
Jagar, E., cabinetmaker, Victoria st, Rd
Jago, J., Crockford st, San
Jago, Mrs., Richmond terrace, Rd
James, —, mason, Pulham st, Carl
James, —, Sendigo st, Hot
James, B., Albert st, Fra
James, Benjamin, 42 Barkly st, Carl
James, Charles, tailor, 15 Greeves st, F
James, Charles, boarding-house keeper, 139 Little Collins st east
James, Charles, Peel st, Fra
James, David, 143 Collins st east
James, E., contractor, Hoddle st, E C
James, Edmund, Nth
James, Edw., upholsterer, 62 Victoria st, Rd
James, F., 1 Clarendon terrace, Clarendon st, E M
James, G. P., Royal George hotel, Greville st, Fra
James, George, fancy repository, 63 Peel st, E C
James, George, blacksmith, Preston
James, Henry, Albert st, Wind
James, Henry, plumber, Fra
James, J., 50 King William st, F
James, J. C., Nth st, San
James, Jane, Earl of Zetland hotel, 13 Stanley st, E C
James, John, Hoddle st, E C
James, John P., Royal George hotel, Chapel st, Fra
James, Mary, boarding-house keeper, 132 Lonsdale st east
James, Mrs. Mary, 31 Moor st, F
James, Mrs., 1 Dover place, Wmn
James, Mrs., school, Barry st, Carl
James, S. W., Boundary hotel, corner Hotham and Hoddle sts, E M
James, T. H., 65 Kerr st, F
James, Thomas C., Nott st, San
James, Wm., S Y
Jameson, E., boarding-house, 150 King st
Jameson, E., 192 Little Bourke st west
Jameson, George, pawnbroker, 154 Russell st, and 139 Lonsdale st east
Jameson, Graham, storekeeper, Esa
Jamieson, Alexander, grocer, 151 Moor st, F
Jamieson, Alexander, Punt road, S Y
Jamieson, Captain S. G., 103 Napier st, Em H
Jamieson, David, tailor, M'Killop st, off Bourke st west
Jamieson, Francis, baker, Kew
Jamieson, George, and Co., wholesale warehousemen, &c., 4 Swanston st
Jamieson, J. P., Neptune st, St K
Jamieson, James, Preston Arms hotel, Fra
Jamieson, Miss, Lennox st, Rd
Jamieson, Mrs., 98 Smith st, E C
Janes, H., 25 Dover place, Wmn
Japp, John, boarding-house, Bay st, San
Jarman, Henry, cabinetmaker, 209 Lonsdale st west
Jarratt, R., grocer, 64 Smith st, E C
Jarratt, Thomas, Peel st, Hot
Jarrett, F. C., commission agent, 104 Collins st east, and Bk
Jarrett, Rev. W., Brunswick road, Bk
Jarrett, Thomas, farrier, Elizabeth st north, and Bouverie st, Carl
Jarrett, W. Henry, 38 Fawkett st, E M
Jarvie, A., Brunswick road, Bk
Jarvie, W., Glenlyon road, Bk
Jarvie, Joseph, Princess hotel, 149 Smith st, F
Jayes, F., Gore st, F
Jeff. Davis Quartz Mining Company, 66 Little Collins st west
Jeffries, —, watchmaker, Swan st, Rd
Jeffries, George, Bowens parade, Rd
Jeffries, T. R., painter, 331 Fitzroy st, F
Jeffers, Mrs., 78 Kerr st, F
Jeffery, Alfred, Victoria parade, E M
Jeffery, Henry, grocer, 182 Clarendon st, Em H
Jeffery, Matthew, bootmaker, 61 Victoria parade, F
Jeffery, Robert, 53 Capel st, Hot
Jefferson, John, Lothian st, Hot
Jeffray, R. J., Grey st, St K
Jeffrey, —, grocer, 28 Otter st, E C
Jeffrey, D., 15 Drummond st, Carl
Jeffrey, J., Chapel st, Fra
Jeffrey, John, Park st, S Y
Jeffrey, R. J., secretary Eaglefield Pastoral Co., 115 Collins st west
Jeffrey, Samuel, farrier, Fra
Jeffreys, Charles, Railway place, San
Jeffreys, Joseph, Hodgn st, W M
Jeffreys, Joseph, french polisher, 3 Church st, Em H
Jeffries, Henry, Hoddle st, E C
Jeffries, J., Richmond Brewery, Church st, Rd
Jeffs, Samuel, Hoddle st, Rd
Jellett, Mrs., 102 Fitzroy st, F
Jellie, J., Carpenter st, Bto
Jenkins, Lewis, Peel st, Fra
Jenkins and Hallifax, pawnbrokers and auctioneers, 63 Errol st, Hot
Jenkins, Henry, carpenter, Peel st, Fra
Jenkins, James, 215 Gore st, F
Jenkins, John, saddler, &c., 49 Bourke st west
Jenkins, John, blacksmith, 60 George st, F
Jenkins, John, 55 Coventry st, Em H

A455. Restructuring their business, offering less services meant Joseph could primarily manage the store, whilst perhaps, Ambrose travelled more frequently to Coopers Creek to manage the mine. It appears that the store in Errol Street operated in partnership with Hallifax and Jenkins until about December 1868.

A456. A Joseph Jenkins, is known to call Castlemaine home from 1868, and it appears further Ambrose also called the area of Castlemaine home from about 1868 until his death in 1874.

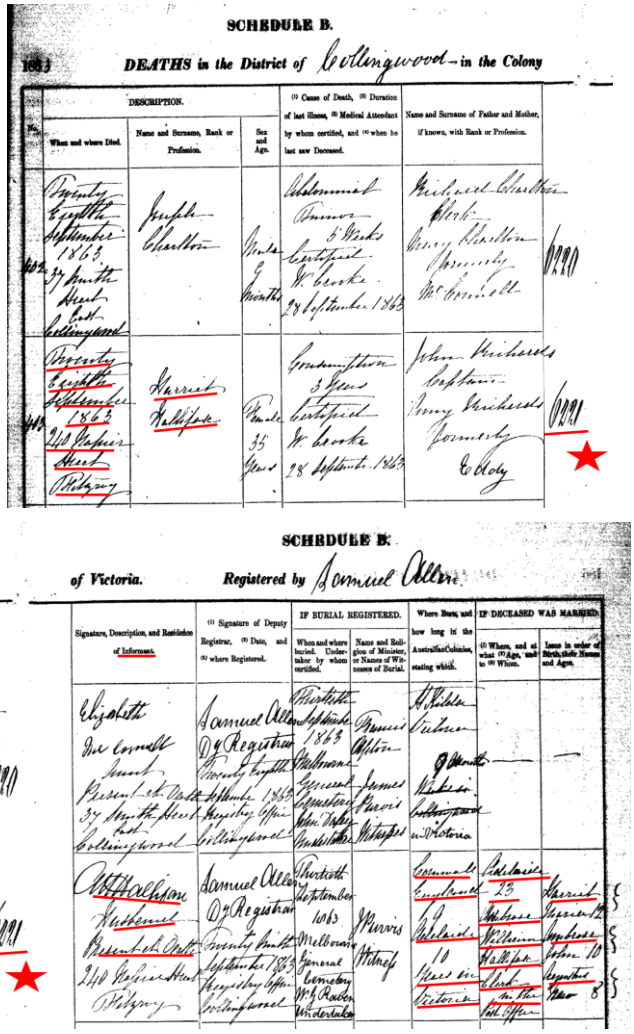
A457. Adding further the researcher cannot rule out Joseph Jenkins is the diarist, otherwise known as the Jolly Welsh Swagman, and is the same man because there are conflicting views on when he actually arrived from Wales to the Victorian Colony (Diary of a Welsh Swagman', 1869-1894 abridged and annotated by William Evans, 1975, Macmillan).

A458. Whilst it remains certain that he, Joseph Jenkins disembarked from the iron-hulled schooner Eurynome at the Melbourne port of Hobson's Bay, there is conflicted facts of which year he arrived. Attributed to him is his estimated arrival year with the date 12 March 1869. This is believed to be the year of his arrival in Melbourne because his diary started in 1870.

A459. However, fresh evidence is that this same ship Eurynome arrived at the same place, Hobsons Bay much earlier, in 1863. Given the devasting fire at Hallifax & Jenkins store on Errol Street on the 24th November, 1865, a case is made that Joseph Jenkins of Errol Street and Jospeh Jenkins later of Castlemaine and Maldon, otherwise known as the Jolly Welsh Swagman are one of the same, and he, Joseph Jenkins who would later be known as the swagman probably kept a diary destroyed in the fire.

A460. Mr Jospeh Jenkins aside, it is Ambrose who came to be in Melbourne operating his business in Errol Street, Hotham, with partner Jospeh Jenkins, after Harriet Hallifax (1828-1863), nee Richards, died on the 28th September, 1863.

A461. The researcher's 3rd great grandmother Harriet Hallifax, nee Richards is believed to have died at her brother's house at 240 Napier Street Fitzroy where she was living with her immediate family after moving from Kyneton (Australia Death Index, 1787-1985; Record details – Name: Harriet Hallifax**;** Death Age: 35; Birth Date: 1828; Death Date: 28th September; 1863; Death Place: 240 Napier Street, Fitzroy, Victoria; Registration Date: 29 September, 1863; Informant: Ambrose William Hallifax; Relationship: Husband, present; Children: Harriet Maria, age 12; Ambrose John, age 10; Augustus New, age 8 years; Registration Place: Australia; Father: Richards John, Captain; Mother: Amy Eddy; Registration Number: 6221):



SCHEDULE B.

DEATHS in the District of Collingwood – in the Colony of Victoria.

Registered by Samuel Allen

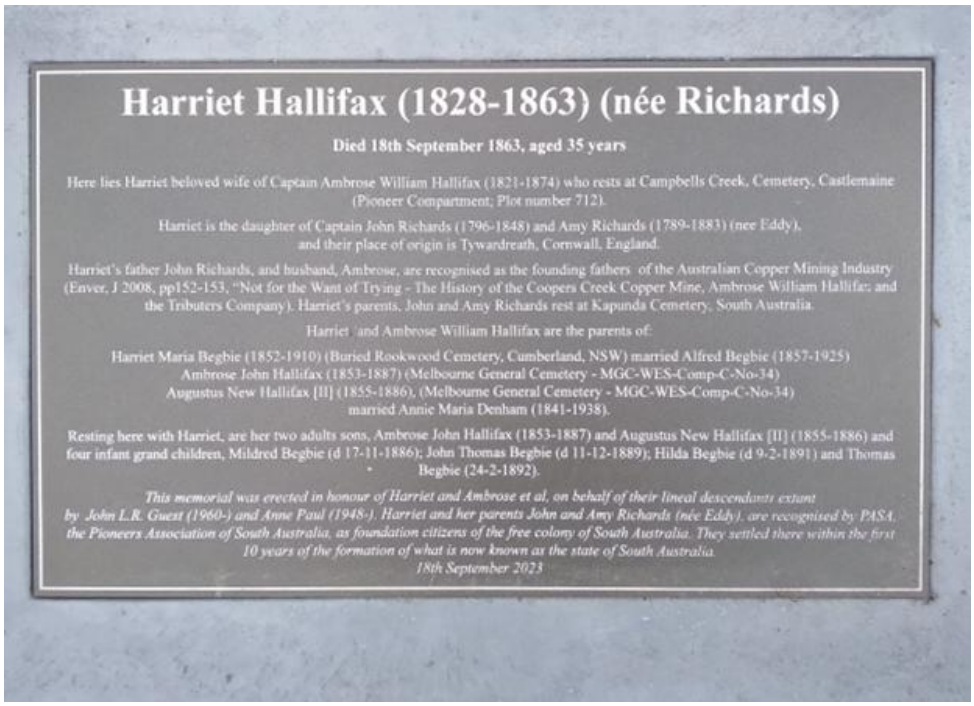
No.	When and where Died.	Name and Surname, Rank or Profession.	Sex and Age.	(1) Cause of Death, (2) Duration of last Illness, (3) Medical Attendant by whom certified, and (4) when he last saw Deceased.	Name and Surname of Father and Mother, if known, with Rank or Profession.
443	Twenty Eighth September 1863. 24 Napier Street East Collingwood	Joseph Charlton	Male 9 Months	Abdominal Tumour 5 Weeks Certified W. Cooke 28 September 1863	Richard Charlton Clerk Mary Charlton formerly Mc Connell
444	Twenty Eighth September 1863. 240 Napier Street Fitzroy	Harriet Hallifax	Female 35 Years	Consumption 3 Years Certified W. Cooke 28 September 1863	John Richards Captain Amy Richards formerly Eddy

SCHEDULE B.

of Victoria. Registered by Samuel Allen

Signature, Description, and Residence of Informant.	(1) Signature of Deputy Registrar, (2) Date, and (3) where Registered.	IF BURIAL REGISTERED. When and where buried. Undertaker by whom certified.	IF BURIAL REGISTERED. Name and Religion of Minister, or Names of Witnesses of Burial.	Where Born, and how long in the Australian Colonies, stating which.	IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED. (1) Where, and at what (2) Age, and to (3) Whom.	Issue in order of Birth, their Names and Ages.
Elizabeth Mc Connell Present at Death 24 Months 37 Smith Street Collingwood	Samuel Allen D.R. Registrar Twenty Eighth September 1863 Collingwood	Twenty Eighth September 1863 Melbourne General Cemetery W.R. Parker Undertaker	James Carroll Attendant	Victoria		
Ambrose Hallifax Husband Present at Death 240 Napier Street Fitzroy	Samuel Allen D.R. Registrar Twenty Eighth September 1863 Collingwood	Twenty Eighth September 1863 Melbourne General Cemetery W.R. Parker Undertaker	Morris Attendant	England 23 Years Adelaide 10 Years Victoria	Adelaide 23 Harriet Hallifax Melbourne William Hallifax Melbourne 10 Hallifax Clerk Victoria	Harriet Maria 12 Ambrose John 10 Augustus New 8

A462. Harriet rests at the Melbourne General Cemetery, North Carlton in Plot: MGC-WES-C-807-34. She was buried on the 29th September 1863 and died the day prior, 28th September, 1863:


Harriet Hallifax (1828-1863) (née Richards)
Died 18th September 1863, aged 35 years
Here lies Harriet beloved wife of Captain Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) who rests at Campbells Creek, Cemetery, Castlemaine (Pioneer Compartment; Plot number 712).
Harriet is the daughter of Captain John Richards (1796-1848) and Amy Richards (1789-1883) (nee Eddy), and their place of origin is Tywardreath, Cornwall, England.
Harriet's father John Richards, and husband, Ambrose, are recognised as the founding fathers of the Australian Copper Mining Industry (Enver, J 2008, pp152-153, "Not for the Want of Trying - The History of the Coopers Creek Copper Mine, Ambrose William Hallifax; and the Tributers Company). Harriet's parents, John and Amy Richards rest at Kapunda Cemetery, South Australia.
Harriet and Ambrose William Hallifax are the parents of:
Harriet Maria Begbie (1852-1910) (Buried Rookwood Cemetery, Cumberland, NSW) married Alfred Begbie (1857-1925)
Ambrose John Hallifax (1853-1887) (Melbourne General Cemetery - MGC-WES-Comp-C-No-34)
Augustus New Hallifax [II] (1855-1886), (Melbourne General Cemetery - MGC-WES-Comp-C-No-34) married Annie Maria Denham (1841-1938).
Resting here with Harriet, are her two adults sons, Ambrose John Hallifax (1853-1887) and Augustus New Hallifax [II] (1855-1886) and four infant grand children, Mildred Begbie (d 17-11-1886); John Thomas Begbie (d 11-12-1889); Hilda Begbie (d 9-2-1891) and Thomas Begbie (24-2-1892).
This memorial was erected in honour of Harriet and Ambrose et al, on behalf of their lineal descendants extant by John L.R. Guest (1960-) and Anne Paul (1948-). Harriet and her parents John and Amy Richards (née Eddy), are recognised by PASA, the Pioneers Association of South Australia, as foundation citizens of the free colony of South Australia. They settled there within the first 10 years of the formation of what is now known as the state of South Australia.
18th September 2023

A463. Pictured below are the before and after photos as part of the restoration of Harriet's resting place:

A464. Prior to Harriet's death in 1863, Ambrose brough Harriet and their family back to Melbourne so she could get the best care. They stayed with Harriet's brother in Napier Street Fitzroy.

A465. Prior to the move back to Melbourne Ambrose was able to secure a transfer to Collingwood from Kyneton hoping for Harriet to recover from treatments she received in Melbourne.

A466. Earlier in happier times in 1861, Ambrose was promoted to managing the dual functions of postal manager and telegraph manager at Kyneton Post Office in 1861 (Victorian Government Gazette, No. 113, Friday July 26, 1861, p1426), showing his appointment to the dual management roles on the 1st January 1861:

POSTMASTERS.

THE Governor, with the advice of the Executive Council, has been pleased to appoint the undermentioned officers, in charge of telegraph stations, to be also Postmasters:—

Name.	Office.	Where.	Date of Appointment.
			1861.
John Herbert Woodward	Manager	Avoca ...	1st Jan.
Jas. Alexr. Lynar ...	Do.	Belfast ...	1st Jan.
James Colles	Do.	Back Creek ...	1st Jan.
James Coverdale ...	Do.	Belvoir ...	1st Jan.
Alfred Lionel Krono ...	Do.	Benalla ...	1st Jan.
Edmund Banks ...	Do.	Carisbrook ...	1st June.
Andrew Pearce ...	Do.	Chiltern ...	1st June.
James Lyon Collier ...	Do.	Clunes ...	1st Mar.
Joshua Thwaites ...	Do.	Creswick ...	1st June.
John Nicol	Do.	Daylesford ...	1st Jan.
Edward Daniell ...	Do.	Dunolly ...	1st Jan.
Donald William Forbes	Do.	Echuca ...	1st Jan.
William Collier ...	Do.	Gisborne ...	1st Jan.
Lachlan McInnes ...	Do.	Heathcote ...	1st Jan.
George Harriott ...	Do.	Hexham ...	1st Jan.
Ambrose Wm. Hallifax	Do.	Kyneton ...	1st Jan.
Arthur Danvers Ellis	Do.	Maldon ...	1st Jan.
Joshua Walter Nunn	Do.	Longwood ...	1st June
George Allar, jun. ...	Do.	Raglan ...	1st Jan.
Frederick Doro ...	Officer in charge	Sandridge ...	1st June
Henry Salkeld ...	Manager	Snapper Point	1st June
William Jackson ...	Do.	Streatham ...	1st Jan.
Charles Marsh Maplestone	Do.	Tarnagulla ...	1st Jan.
Arthur Poyntz ...	Do.	Wangaratta ...	1st June
Roderick Kilborn ...	Do.	Wahgunyah ...	1st June
Thos. Richard Rackham	Do.	Warrnambool	1st Jan.
Jas. Lynn Creen ...	Do.	Yackandandah	1st June

By His Excellency's Command,
J. MACADAM.

General Post Office,
Melbourne, 23rd July, 1861.

A467. This would have meant the Hallifax family occupied the post master's residence on Mollison Street. Below is a picture of where the house once stood before being built over by 1871 with a grand new post office that still proudly occupies prominence on street today. Below is an early photograph of the new clock tower PO (Image source and attribution: Victorian Places, John Young Collection, Melbourne University and The University of Queensland):

A468. In 1860, Ambrose once more multitasked whereby he was co-currently appointed to be the collector of imposts for the postal service. The "Collector of Imposts" role recognised the appointee's financial nous, character and trustworthiness to handle public monies (Victorian Government Gazette, 1860, page 70), to which the petitioners take the audit term to mean, that the:

"Collector of imposts means person appointed under this Act is charged with the duty of collecting or receiving public any public moneys" No. 6203, The Audit Act 1958, p240):

Collector of customs, Port Albert, W. R. Belcher, 859.

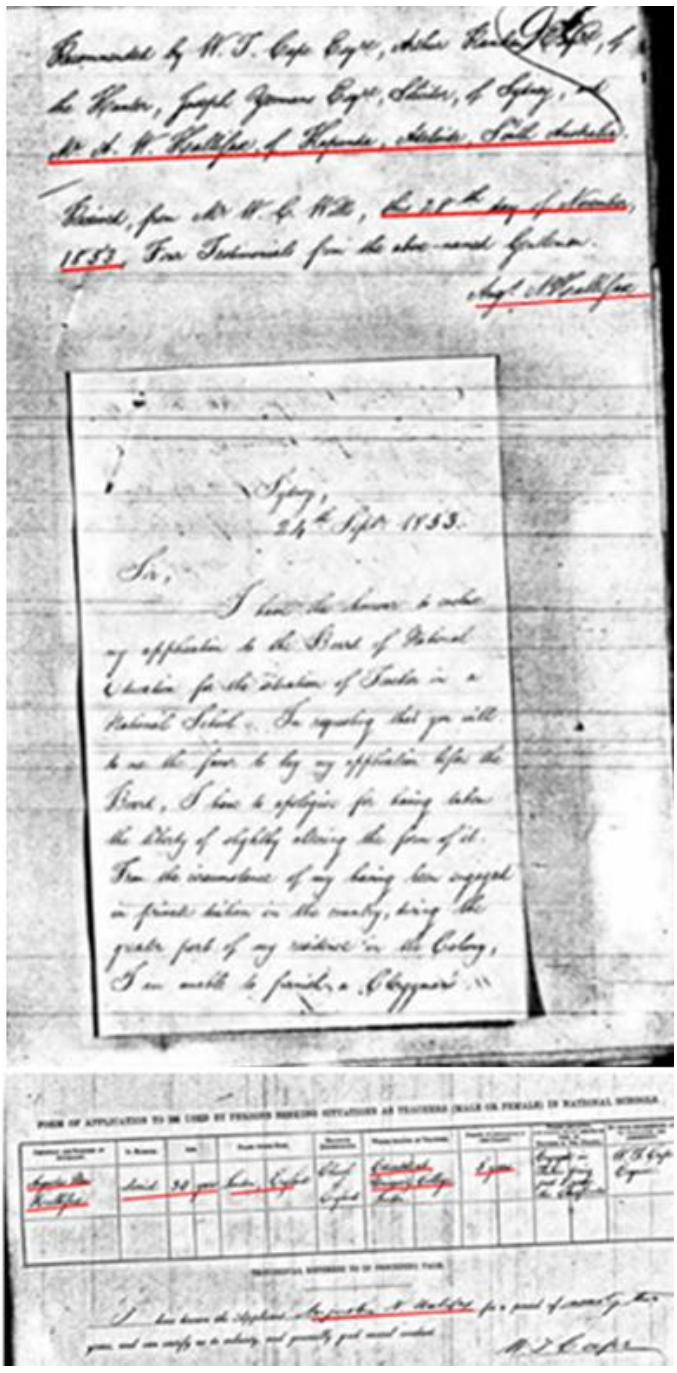
Collectors of imposts appointed: Thomas Adair, 2181; G. B. Austin, 1160; Richard Banks, 1627; W. R. Belcher, 933; Philip Chauncy, 2181; W. S. Christian, 240; Lindsay Clarke, 2181; James Colles, 1627; James Lyon Collier, 1627; C. H. Dawson (temporarily), 2435; W. T. Dawson, 2181; Richard Down (acting), 372; Arthur Graham, 1335; Ambrose William Hallifax, 1627; Thomas Ingram, 1897; R. E. Johns, 2435; Roderick Kilborn, 2302; George Langford, 2181; Henry Macarthur, 563, 588; Edmund Margetts, 1627; A. L. Martin, 2181; John Morgan, 1225; Thomas Nixon, 2181; Thomas R. Rackham, 2302; H. H. Roberts, 2215; R. D. Scott, 2181; Alfred Richard Cecil Selwyn, 253; A. J. Skene, 2181; Robert Brough Smyth, 1915; J. H. Taylor, 2181; W. S. Urquhart, 2181; J. G. W. Wilmot, 2181; Nehemiah Wimble, 1628.

A469. Below is a picture of him handing over the telegraph operations at the new office at Dunolly Post Office to the incoming postal service and telegrapher, Mr James Colles (Information source, including the photograph courtesy of the State of Victoria - Early postal cancels illustrated):

A470. Evidencing his mobility at the time, the telegraph office at Dunolly, where he is pictured, was located on Market Street. The town is situated about 60 kilometres, or 40 miles north east of Castlemaine, and about 100 kilometres, or 60 miles also north east from Kyneton. Goldsborough P.O., was renamed to Dunolly from Wednesday, 5th January 1859 (Source: State of Victoria - Early postal cancels illustrated).

A471. As previously introduced prior calling the Colony of Victoria home in 1854/5, the researcher's Hallifax family lived in Burra Burra, South Australia.

A472. The time stamp below (23rd November 1853) posthumously makes John Richards (1796-1848) and Amy Richards (1789-1883) son in law Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874), succeeding his father in law as Captain of the Great Kapunda Copper Mine, Burra, Burra, South Australia until at least 23rd November 1853 (NSW Teacher Applications and School Records, 1850-1960; Name: Augustus New Hallifax [I], 1825-1902; Age: 28; Birth Place: London, England; Admission Place; New South Wales, Australia; Record Type: Teacher or Training Applications):



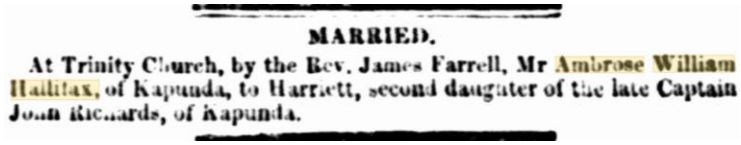
Sydney,
24th Sept. 1853.

Sir,

I beg the honour to make my application to the Board of National Education for the situation of Teacher in a National School. In requesting that you will be so kind as to lay my application before the Board, I beg to apologize for being taken the liberty of slightly altering the form of it. From the circumstance of my having been engaged in private duties in the country, during the greater part of my residence in the Colony, I am unable to furnish a Clergyman's

A473. The same record above makes Ambrose referee for his brother Augustus New Hallifax (1825-1902) [I] who was hired in a teaching role in the NSW teaching service.

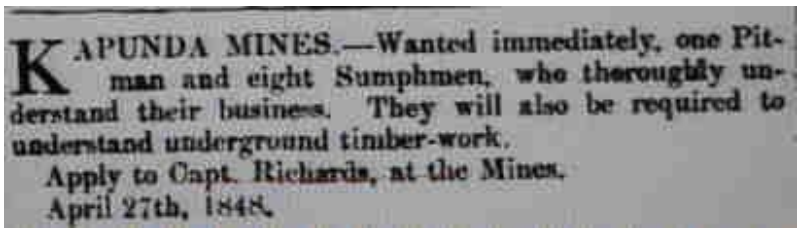
A474. Submitted below is the marriage notice for Harriet and Ambrose published at the time of their marriage in Adelaide on the 20th October, 1849, at the Holy Trinity Anglican Church (South Australian Register, Adelaide, S.A., Saturday, 20th Oct 1849) (Ambrose never remarried):



MARRIED.

At Trinity Church, by the Rev. James Farrell, Mr Ambrose William Hallifax, of Kapunda, to Harriett, second daughter of the late Captain John Richards, of Kapunda.

A475. Harriet's father, and Ambrose's father-in-law, John Richards (1796-1848), was for the successive years 1846-1848, Captain of Kapunda Copper Mine's Underground Operations in Burra Burra, South Australia (Source: Flinders Ranges Research Online, 2021). His son in law was in charge of the Above Ground operations during the same period:



KAPUNDA MINES.—Wanted immediately, one Pitman and eight Sumphmen, who thoroughly understand their business. They will also be required to understand underground timber-work.

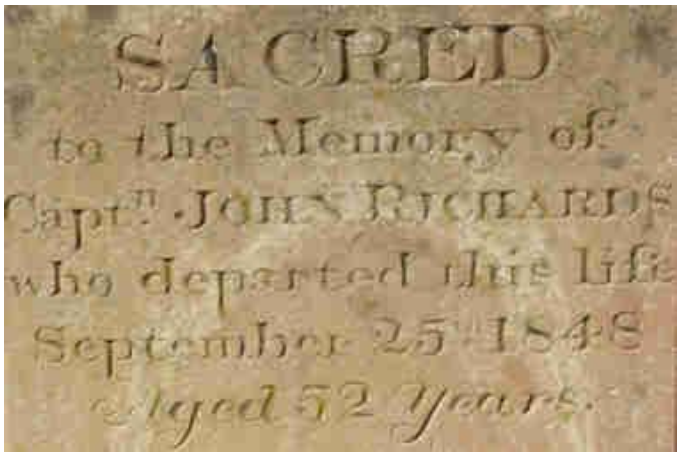
Apply to Capt. Richards, at the Mines.

April 27th, 1848.

Note: Ambrose left the mine in 1849 when he returned to the Postal Service before being rehired by the mine probably as early as 1850 (cf., Captain John Richards Underground Operations & Captain A. William Hallifax Aboveground Operation in Kalgoorlie Miner, Western Australia, Thursday 2nd August 1906, Page 3, KAPUNDA COPPER MINE):

herding, and Captain Bagot secured the ground by purchase. The mine was opened up in 1844, and the first shaft sunk was called the Koir shaft, the whim being worked by Captain Bagot's buggy horses. The mine was managed by the late Mr. E. M. Bagot, under his father's direction, Mr. William Hallifax being appointed surface manager and Captain John Richards underground manager. In 1849 Mr. E. M. Bagot and Mr. Halifax left the mine, and Mr. William Oldham was appointed purser.

A476. When the researcher's 4th great-grandfather John Richards died, he was laid to rest at Kapunda. Later his wife Amy and their daughter, Elizabeth joined him and are also buried at the Kapunda Cemetery (Image credit to Flinders Ranges Research 2021). The people of Kapunda shocked with his passing laid the following stone at the local COE chapel to commemorate him:



A477. Pictured below is their final resting place at the Clare Road Cemetery, Kapunda, South Australia (Kapunda Light Regional Council, South Australia, Australia):

A478. Captain John Richards (1796-1848) of the Great Kapunda Copper Mine, Burra Burra, South Australia was born in Gwinear, Cornwall, England (Cornwall, England parents: Nicolas Richards, Elizabeth, record title: England Births and Christenings, 1538-1975 name: John Richards gender: Male baptism/christening date: 18th September 1796, baptism/christening place: Gwinear, Cornwall, England; father's name: Nicolas Richards mother's name: Elizabeth [*Richards*] [*Italics mine*], indexing project (batch) number: C02571-1 system origin: England-ODM source film number: 254208).

A479. The researcher's 3rd maternal great grandmother, Harriet Hallifax (1828-1863), nee Richards arrived in the Colony of South Australia along with her parents and siblings in 1846. This makes all of them amongst the earliest pioneers of the Colony of South Australia established in 1835.

A480. The Richards, settled in Kapunda almost immediately after arriving in the colony at Port Adelaide on board the ship Barque Medway. The ship was Captained by John J Coombes docking on the 27th July, 1846 via Melbourne. (Butler, R, Overseas arrivals to South Australia, 1846, Barque, Captain John J Combes);

MEDWAY 1846

from London - Captain Coombes,
arrived Port Adelaide on 27-07-1846

Cabin Passengers:	MONTEFIORE, Miss Augusta
BASSETT, John S Mr	MONTEFIORE, Miss Josephina
McCULLAGH, Thomas Mr,	MONTEFIORE, Miss Marion
MONTEFIORE, Joseph Barrow Esq	MONTEFIORE, Miss Edith
MONTEFIORE, Mrs Rebecca nee Macatta	MONTEFIORE, Herbert (master)
MONTEFIORE, 2 servants	MONTEFIORE, Horace (master)
MONTEFIORE, Miss	RUSSELL, George Mr.
MONTEFIORE, Miss Esther	SCOTT, A Esq.
MONTEFIORE, Miss Evelina	TREWAN, Jane
MONTEFIORE, Miss Justina	SMITH, Ann
Second Cabin:	RICHARDS, Mr. S jnr
	RICHARDS, Miss Harriett
CHIBNELL, James	RICHARDS, Miss Amy
DEARLOVE, Henry	RICHARDS, Nicholas (master)
HARRIS, Robert and wife and 2 children	RICHARDS, Thomas (master)
RICHARDS, John	RICHARDS, William (master)
RICHARDS, Mrs	RICHARDS, Miss Mary Ann
RICHARDS, Miss	ROBINSON, W H Mr

A481. The Richards family's arrival also featured in the Adelaide Observer (Adelaide Observer, South Australia, on Saturday August 1846, page 8, Adelaide Shipping section):

ADELAIDE SHIPPING.

ARRIVED.

Sunday, July 26.—The schooner *Hawk*, 116 tons, Allen, master, from Singapore.

Monday, July 27.—The barque *Medway*, 653 tons, Coombes, master, from London. Passengers — J. B. Montefiore, Esq., Mrs Montefiore, Miss Montefiore, Miss Esther Montefiore, Miss Emily Montefiore, Miss Evelina Montefiore, Miss Justina Montefiore, Miss Augusta Montefiore, Miss Josephina Montefiore, Master Herbert Montefiore, Miss Marion Montefiore, Master Horace Montefiore, Miss Edith Montefiore, and two servants—Ann Smith and Jane Trewan; A. Scott, Esq., Mr George Russell, Mr Thomas McCullagh, and Mr John S. Bassett, in the cabin; Mr John Richards, Mrs Richards, Miss Richards, Mr S. Richards, jun., Miss Harriett Richards, Miss Amy Richards, Master Nicholas Richards, Master Thomas Richards, Master William Richards, Miss Mary Ann Richards, Mr and Mrs Robert Harris and two children, Mr Henry Dearlove, Mr James Chibnell, and Mr W. H. Robinson, in the second cabin; Mr Thomas Overton, Mrs Overton, Miss Overton, Master John Wm. Overton, Miss Mary Overton, Miss Maria Overton, Master Charles Overton, Miss Jemima Overton, Miss Sarah Ann Overton, Mr J. A. Waters, Mrs Waters, Master John Waters, Miss Georgiana Waters, Mr William Jarvis, Mr Charles Farrington, Mrs Farrington, Mr Farrington, jun., Miss Farrington, Master Joseph Moulden, Mr Robert Lucas, Mrs Lucas, Mr Thomas Deane, Mr Thomas Dean, jun., Mr William Smith, Mr George Hall, Mr Alfred Bowden, Mr William Ellis, and William Wailes, in the steerage.

A482. Suffice to say, John Richards (1796-1848) and Amy Richards (1789-1883) are John Lindsay Robert Guest's (1960-), 4th great grandparents.

A483. Membership of the Pioneers Association of South Australia (PASA), is proudly held by the Guest family qualifying as direct descendants of Harriert, Ambrose Hallifax, as well as John and Amy Richards, but also along the researcher's paternal bloodline, the researcher's 2nd great grandfather James Baldock (1816-1896). Who arrived first on the ship Orissa in 1840 (cf., PASA membership certificate, paragraph A485, p148, below; also, Volume I, Guest Family History, Paternal Trace, paragraph A455, p163).

A484. Whereby the researcher's 2nd great grandfather James Baldock (1816-1896) arrived in 1840 with genealogy enjoyed by the researcher to James as well as the Hallifax, Richards family.

A485. All of these lineal relationship and their earlier arrival were fact checked by PASA's genealogists prior to membership being granted (Refer: PASA, Trudy Delahanty, 2023, for and behalf of Her Excellency the Honourable Frances Adamson, AC, Governor of South Australia – Qualifying genealogy verified and membership granted, 9th February 2023 for John Lindsay Robert Guest's direct descent from Harriet Hallifax (1828-1863), (nee Richards); Captain John Richards, 1796-1848; Amy Richards, 1798-1883, nee Eddy; and along his Guest paternal line: James Baldock, 1816-1896; and Jane Maria Baldock, 1837-1919, nee Pratt; and James's mother, Sarah Baldock, 1786-1850, nee Walker):

2nd great grandaunt Harriet Maria Hallifax

A486. Harriet Maria (Mariah) Begbie (1851-1910), nee Hallifax, the researcher's 2nd great grand aunt, is pictured below along with a note on the rear of her photograph in memorial of her father, the researcher's 3rd great grandfather Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874):

Florence Smalls mother
who was Ann Hallifax —
Lord Hallifax's daughter
Stewart & Co
217 Bourke St East
A LARGE FRAMED COPY
OF THIS PORTRAIT MAY BE HAD PRICE 20

Harriet Maria Hallifax (1851–1910) daughter of Ambrose William Hallifax, Esq (1821-1874)
(a.k.a. Lord). Harriet is Ann Paul's 2nd great grand mother John Guest's 2nd great grand aunt
(Gratitude for images – Anne Paul).

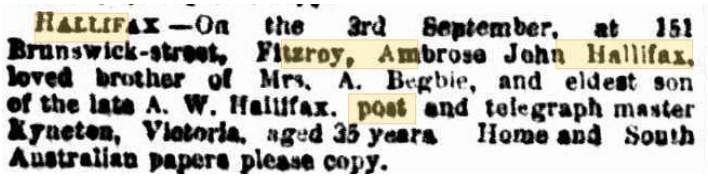
A487. Harriet Begbie, nee Hallifax, is buried at Rockwood Cemetery in Sydney along with her husband Alfred Begbie (1857-1925) who died on 12th August 1925, aged 68 years. Harriet was 57 years old when she died on the 4th September 1910 (Australia and New Zealand, Find A Grave Index, 1800s-Current; Name: Harriet M Begbie; Age: 5; Birth Date: 1851; Death Date: 4th September, 1910; Burial Place: Sydney, New South Wales, Australia; Cemetery: Rookwood; Plot: Zone F Section B Independent Grave 1016).

A488. Harriet Begbie (1851-1910), nee Hallifax is pictured below. Her photograph was submitted courtesy of her direct descendent, Anne Paul of Canberra (2016). Anne Paul is the researcher's 3rd cousin, once removed. Pictured below also is husband Alfred Begbie:

Harriet Maria Hallifax (1851–1910)

Alfred Begbie (1857–1925)

A489. Her brother, Ambrose John Hallifax's (1853-1887) death notice, which was published in The Age, Melbourne Victoria on the 5th September, 1887 is shown below. It was Harriet pictured above who wrote the notice she had published in the newspaper (Ambrose John Hallifax 1853-1887 – Death notice: The Age, Melbourne, Vic., Mon 5 Sep 1887):



HALLIFAX —On the 3rd September, at 151 Brunswick-street, Fitzroy, Ambrose John Hallifax, loved brother of Mrs. A. Begbie, and eldest son of the late A. W. Hallifax, post and telegraph master Kyneton, Victoria, aged 35 years. Home and South Australian papers please copy.

A490. Harriet Maria Hallifax (1851-1910), like her brother Ambrose John Hallifax (1853-1887), was born in Kapunda, South Australia. Harriet subsequently met then married Alfred Begbie (1857-1935) in 1880 in Melbourne (Australia Marriage Index, 1788-1949; Record details – Name: Alfred Begbie; Marriage Date: 1880; Marriage Place: Victoria; Registration Date: 1880; Registration Place; Victoria, Australia; Spouse: Harriet Maria Hallifax; Registration Number: 3735). Harriet and Alfred Begbie went on to have seven children named:

- Mildred Ellen Begbie (1886-1886) (Infant death, buried at MGC).
- Elsie Kathleen Begbie (1884-1974).
- Alfred Hallifax Begbie (1888-1947).
- John James Begbie (1889-1889) (Buried with older deceased infant sister at MGC).
- Hilda M Begbie (1891-1891), Ibid, buried at MGC with siblings).
- Thomas McLaughlin Begbie (1892-1892), Ibid, buried at MGC with siblings).
- **Florence Ethel Begbie (1893-1974).**

A491. After they married, they migrated to NSW after 1902 and Harriet Begbie, nee Hallifax is buried there. The images below are scholastic prize medals won by Harriet and Alfred's eldest daughter, Elsie Kathleen Begbie (1884-1974) and youngest child, Florence Ethel Small (1893-1974) nee Begbie. Anne Paul and brother, are her descended from Florence:

Elsie Kathleen Begbie's (1884-1974) ***Sir Isaac Pitman Award"*** Short Hand Awards, 1902.

Florence Ethel Small (1893-1974), nee Begbie
Physiology Junior Public Examination Prize Medal 1908

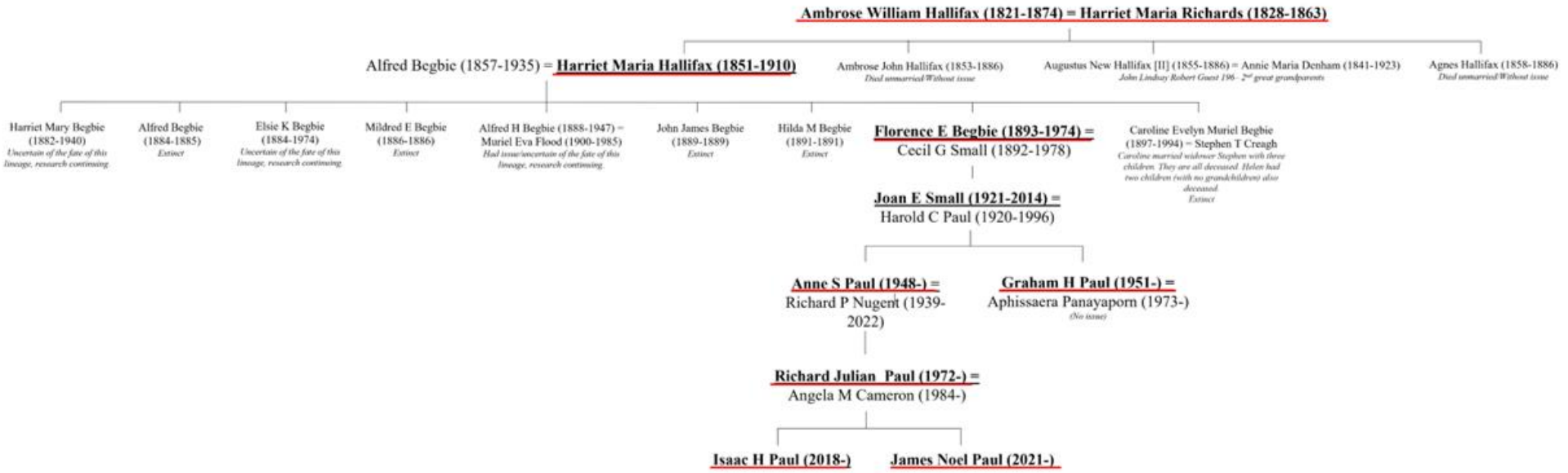
A492. Submitted below is Harriet's birth record confirming she was born on 21st June 1851 in Kapunda, South Australia and is the daughter of Ambrose Wiliam Hallifax (1821-1874) and Harriet Richards (1828-1863), late of the Colony of Victoria (Australia Birth Index, 1788-1922; Record details – Name: Harriet Maria Hallifax; Birth Date: 21st June 1851; Birth Place: Kapunda; Registration Place: Adelaide, South Australia, Australia; Father: Ambrose William Hallifax; Mother: Harriet Richards; Page number: 229; Volume Number):

Name	Harriet Maria Hallifax
Birth Date	21 Jun. 1851
Birth Place	Kapunda
Registration Place	Adelaide, South Australia, Australia
Father	Ambrose William Hallifax
Mother	Harriet Richards
Page number	229
Volume Number	3

A493. Harriet and Alfred Begbie (1857-1935), genealogical legacy is summarised in the chart presented on the following page.

Hallifax-Paul line of descent from Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) and Harriet Maria Richards (1828-1863)

(John L.R. Guest's 3rd great grandparents)


Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) = Harriet Maria Richards (1828-1863)
Alfred Begbie (1857-1935) = Harriet Maria Hallifax (1851-1910)
Ambrose John Hallifax (1853-1886)
Died unmarried/Without issue
Augustus New Hallifax [II] (1855-1886) = Annie Maria Denham (1841-1923)
John Lindsay Robert Guest 196 - 2nd great grandparents
Agnes Hallifax (1858-1886)
Died unmarried/Without issue
Harriet Mary Begbie (1882-1940)
Uncertain of the fate of this lineage, research continuing
Alfred Begbie (1884-1885)
Extinct
Elsie K Begbie (1884-1974)
Uncertain of the fate of this lineage, research continuing
Mildred E Begbie (1886-1886)
Extinct
Alfred H Begbie (1888-1947) = Muriel Eva Flood (1900-1985)
Had issue/uncertain of the fate of this lineage, research continuing
John James Begbie (1889-1889)
Extinct
Hilda M Begbie (1891-1891)
Extinct
Florence E Begbie (1893-1974) = Cecil G Small (1892-1978)
Caroline Evelyn Muriel Begbie (1897-1994) = Stephen T Creagh
Caroline married widower Stephen with three children. They are all deceased. Helen had two children (with no grandchildren) also deceased.
Extinct
Joan E Small (1921-2014) = Harold C Paul (1920-1996)
Anne S Paul (1948-) = Richard P Nugent (1939-2022)
Graham H Paul (1951-) = Aphissaera Panayaporn (1973-)
(No issue)
Richard Julian Paul (1972-) = Angela M Cameron (1984-)
Isaac H Paul (2018-)
James Noel Paul (2021-)

A494. Anne Paul who made an important contribution to this family heritage study, is the researcher's 3rd cousin, once removed. We both share direct descent from Ambrose and Harriet Hallifax nee Hay the researcher's 3rd great grandparents. Stepped out succinctly below is how Anne Paul (1948-) and John L.R. Guest (1960-) connect and shows each lineal ancestor, these cousins enjoy, all springing from the union of Ambrose Hallifax and Harriet Richards in 1849, in Adelaide, Colony of South Australia:

Anne Paul 1948-
Anne is the researcher, John L.R. Guest's 3rd cousin 1x removed. Anne being the great granddaughter of Harriet Maria Hallifax (1851-1910). Anne is the mother of Richard Julian Paul (1972-) and grandmother of Isaac H Paul (2018-) and James Noel Paul (2021-). Anne's mother is Joan Small

Joan Shirley Small 1921-2014
Is the mother of Anne Paul and her brother, Graham H Paul (1951-)

Florence Ethel Begbie 1893-1974
Is the mother of Joan Shirley Small

Harriet Maria Hallifax 1851-1910
is the mother of Florence Ethel Begbie

Ambrose William Hallifax 1821-1874 = Harriet Richards 1828-1863
Are the parents of Harriet Maria Hallifax and her brother, Augustus New Hallifax 1855-1886 (John L.R. Guest's 2nd great grandfather).

Augustus New Hallifax II 1855-1886 – Annie Denham
Son of Ambrose William Hallifax & Harriet Richards

Violet Ethel Hallifax 1882-1955
Daughter of Augustus New Hallifax II and Annie Denham

Augustus Halifax Hay 1910-1985
Son of Violet Ethel Hallifax and James Sinclair Hay

Norma Irene Hay 1932-2021
Daughter of Augustus Halifax Hay and Emily McArdle

John Lindsay Robert Guest 1960-
Son of Norma Irene Hay and Jack Guest. John is the 3rd great-grandson of Ambrose and Harriet Hallifax, nee Richards.

This page is intentionally left blank.

4th great grandparents Thomas New Hallifax & Sarah Maria Gaze

A495. Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) England birth is submitted below confirming he is the son of Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) and Sarah Maria Gaze (1791-1875) (England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975; Name: Ambrose William Hallifax; Gender: Male; Birth Date: 9 Apr 1821; Baptism Date: 23 Jun 1841; Baptism Place: Warfield, Berkshire, England; Father: Thomas New Hallifax; Mother: Sarah Maria; FHL Film Number: 1041155):

Name:	Ambrose William Hallifax
Gender:	Male
Birth Date:	9 Apr 1821
Baptism Date:	23 Jun 1841
Baptism Place:	Warfield,Berkshire,England
Father:	Thomas New Hallifax
Mother:	Sarah Maria
FHL Film Number:	1041155

A496. Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) and Sarah Maria Gaze (1791-1875) are John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) 4th great grandparents, and lineal ancestors also for Ann Paul and her offspring, as well as lineal ancestors of her brother Graham Harold Paul, and the contemporary cousins Hay and Hanley.

A497. Submitted below is a photograph of the researcher's 4th great grandmother, Sarah Halifax (1791—1875), nee Gaze, and 4th great grandparents also of the researcher's relatives Anne Paul, Dennis Keith Lillee (1949-), MBE., AM; and Darren John Halifax (our Hallifax clan chief), et al their siblings and offspring and ditto for our contemporary cousins Hay and Hanely.

A498. The image was taken not long prior to Sarah's passing in 1875. It was sent by her to her granddaughter in Melbourne, Harriet Begbie (1851-1910), nee Hallifax, daughter of Ambrose. Adding further that photograph was kept in the family's collection and shared after being discovered by the researcher's cousin by degree, Anne Paul, to be enjoyed in this publication.

Sarah Maria Hallifax (1791-1875), nee Gaze
(aged 82 years circa, 1873)

The Guest-Hallifax and Paul-Hallifax bloodline trace is paused temporarily to enable the researcher to present the Lillee-Hallifax, and Hallifax family lines, also sharing direct descent from Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) and Sarah Maria Hallifax (1791-1875), nee Gaze.

Once the Lillee-Hallifax and Halifax family branches are presented, the remainder of this book will take a regular ascending lineal direction beyond shared 4th great grandparents, Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) and Sarah Maria Hallifax (1791-1875), nee Gaze for these family branches taken back in time to the end of records validated by the Crown's authority, College of Arms under the auspices of the King's office (Refer to paragraph A567, p213; below to skip to the parents of Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835), Reverend Robert Hallifax (1760-1838), M.A. Magdalen College Oxford known to the Hallifax registered pedigree, Ms 7D 14/45, 16th December 1788, and Sarah Hallifax, nee Sentence (1760-1832).

Dennis Lillee's ascent to Thomas Hallifax & Sarah Gaze

A499. The researcher's cousin by degree, Dennis Keith Lillee (1949-), was born on July 18, 1949, at Subiaco, Western Australia to Shirley Doris Lillee (1929-2014), (nee Halifax) (Hallifax) and Keith Lillee (1926-2012).

A500. Dennis married Helen Munsie, and they have two sons. Adam Lillee, and Dean Lillee

A501. First born of Dennis and Helen's sons, Adam married Alyssa Frances Lillee (nee Lee) (1973-). Adam and Alyssa Lillee have two daughters, Ajahna Grace Lillee and India Jade Lillee

A502. Dean Lillee's wife is Laura Lillee (nee Ruddle), and they are the parents of Stella Jayne Lillee

A503. Dennis has two siblings, Trevor John Lillee 1950-2011 (deceased) and Carmen Shirley Matheson (1953-) (nee Lillee).

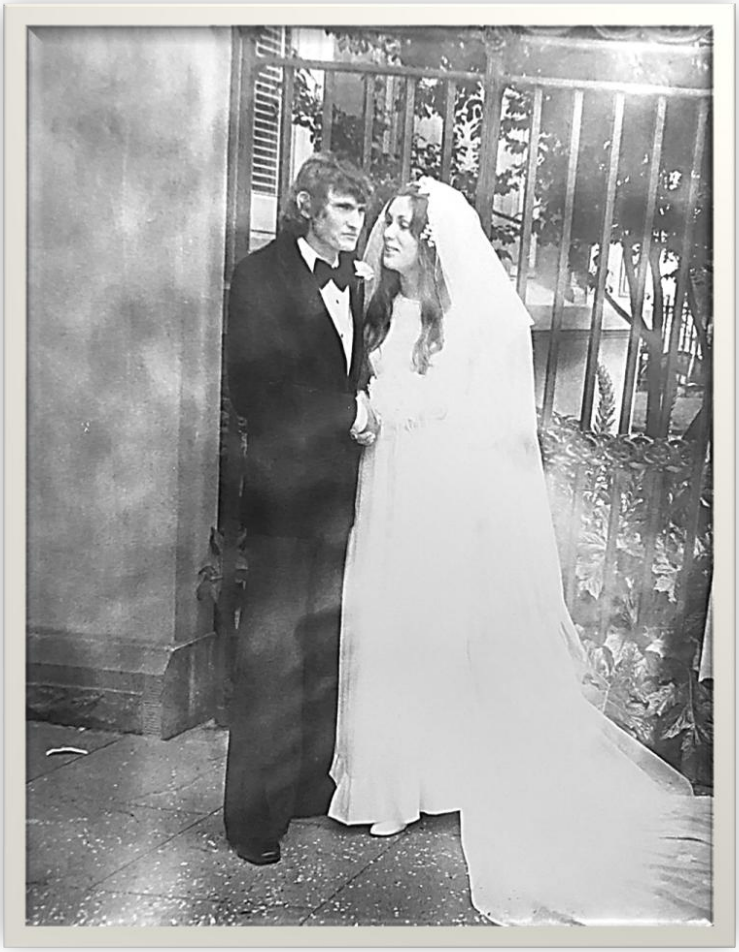
A504. Trevor married Linda and they had five children, Nathan, Damien, Rachael, Breeanna and Ebony. Their son Damien married Claire and presently have two daughters, Evelyn and April.

A505. Submitted below is a recent photograph of Dennis's, nephew Nathan Lillee, eldest son of Trevor, enjoying a light hearted moment with relative, John Guest, pictured with the busk of Dennis located near the home of the "ashes," at Rupertswood, Sunbury, Victoria, and significant for the Hallifax families from an historical family perspective (Hallifax/Lillee/Guest/Hay branches). Their friendship and that of Dennis wife Helen Lillee and John's wife Liz Guest struck up from a love of our families shared history:

A506. Sunbury is nearby to Kyneton and Castlemaine, and where John once lived. The Hallifax's along the maternal Lillee and Guest lines maintain therefore a very strong affinity with the area that Ambrose William Hallifax and his immediate family preferred to live.

A507. Trevor John Lillee (1950-2013) was an outstanding junior cricketer amongst his peers at the time as a top batsman, but decided not pursue a first-class cricketing career. Born in Subiaco, Perth Western Australia, he settled in Melbourne, raising his family with wife Linda.

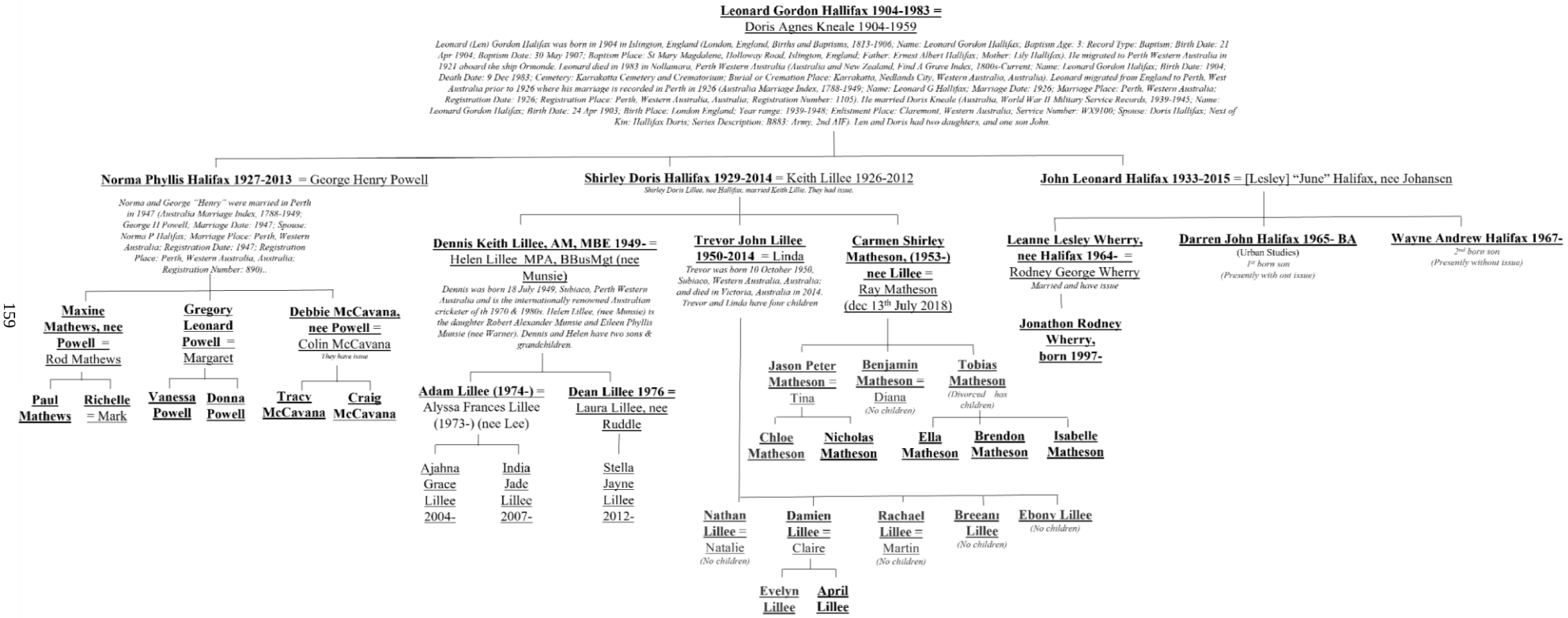
A508. Below is a wedding photograph taken of Nathan's parents, Trevor Lillee and Linda Lillee, parents also of Damien Lillee, Rachael Lillee, Breeanna Lillee and Ebony Lillee:



A509. Dennis and Trevor's sister, Carmen Lillee, married Raymond Matheson. Carmen and Raymond have three sons. First born, Jason Peter Matheson, married Tina.

A510. Jason and Tina have two children - Chloe and Nicholas Matheson. Second born son Benjamin Matheson, married Diana, and they are currently without issue. Youngest son, Tobias Matheson, recently deceased, left his legacy, three children Ella, Brendon and Isabelle Matheson.

A511. The chart presented on the next page illustrates Dennis and Helen Lillee's immediate descending family, as well as Dennis's extended family including his brother Trevor and sister Carmen's immediate family's as well as that of his cousin and co-researcher, Darren John Halifax's (1965-) immediate family.


Leonard Gordon Hallifax 1904-1983 =
Doris Agnes Kneale 1904-1959
Leonard (Len) Gordon Hallifax was born in 1904 in Islington, England (London, England, Births and Baptisms, 1813-1906, Name: Leonard Gordon Hallifax; Baptism Age: 3; Record Type: Baptism; Birth Date: 21 Apr 1904; Baptism Date: 30 May 1907; Baptism Place: St Mary Magdalene, Holloway Road, Islington, England; Father: Ernest Albert Hallifax; Mother: Lily Hallifax). He migrated to Perth Western Australia in 1921 aboard the ship Ormonde. Leonard died in 1983 in Nollamara, Perth Western Australia (Australia and New Zealand, Find A Grave Index, 1800s-Current; Name: Leonard Gordon Halifax; Birth Date: 1904; Death Date: 9 Dec 1983; Cemetery: Karrakatta Cemetery and Crematorium; Burial or Cremation Place: Karrakatta, Nedlands City, Western Australia, Australia). Leonard migrated from England to Perth, West Australia prior to 1926 where his marriage is recorded in Perth in 1926 (Australia Marriage Index, 1788-1949; Name: Leonard G Hallifax; Marriage Date: 1926; Marriage Place: Perth, Western Australia; Registration Date: 1926; Registration Place: Perth, Western Australia, Australia; Registration Number: 1105). He married Doris Kneale (Australia, World War II Military Service Records, 1939-1945; Name: Leonard Gordon Halifax; Birth Date: 24 Apr 1903; Birth Place: London England; Year range: 1939-1948; Enlistment Place: Claremont, Western Australia; Service Number: WX9100; Spouse: Doris Hallifax; Next of Kin: Hallifax Doris; Series Description: B883: Army, 2nd AIF). Len and Doris had two daughters, and one son John.
Norma Phyllis Halifax 1927-2013 = George Henry Powell
Norma and George "Henry" were married in Perth in 1947 (Australia Marriage Index, 1788-1949; George H Powell; Marriage Date: 1947; Spouse: Norma P Halifax; Marriage Place: Perth, Western Australia; Registration Date: 1947; Registration Place: Perth, Western Australia, Australia; Registration Number: 890)..
Maxine Mathews, nee Powell = Rod Mathews
Paul Mathews
Richelle = Mark
Gregory Leonard Powell = Margaret
Vanessa Powell
Donna Powell
Debbie McCavana, nee Powell = Colin McCavana
They have issue
Tracy McCavana
Craig McCavana
Shirley Doris Hallifax 1929-2014 = Keith Lillee 1926-2012
Shirley Doris Lillee, nee Hallifax, married Keith Lillie. They had issue.
Dennis Keith Lillee, AM, MBE 1949- = Helen Lillee MPA, BBusMgt (nee Munsie)
Dennis was born 18 July 1949, Subiaco, Perth Western Australia and is the internationally renowned Australian cricketer of th 1970 & 1980s. Helen Lillee, (nee Munsie) is the daughter Robert Alexander Munsie and Eileen Phyllis Munsie (nee Warner). Dennis and Helen have two sons & grandchildren.
Adam Lillee (1974-) = Alyssa Frances Lillee (1973-) (nee Lee)
Ajahna Grace Lillee 2004-
India Jade Lillee 2007-
Dean Lillee 1976 = Laura Lillee, nee Ruddle
Stella Jayne Lillee 2012-
Trevor John Lillee 1950-2014 = Linda
Trevor was born 10 October 1950, Subiaco, Western Australia, Australia; and died in Victoria, Australia in 2014. Trevor and Linda have four children
Nathan Lillee = Natalie
(No children)
Damien Lillee = Claire
Evelyn Lillee
April Lillee
Rachael Lillee = Martin
(No children)
Breeani Lillee
(No children)
Ebony Lillee
(No children)
Carmen Shirley Matheson, (1953-) nee Lillee = Ray Matheson (dec 13th July 2018)
Jason Peter Matheson = Tina
Chloe Matheson
Nicholas Matheson
Benjamin Matheson = Diana
(No children)
Tobias Matheson
(Divorced has children)
Ella Matheson
Brendon Matheson
Isabelle Matheson
John Leonard Halifax 1933-2015 = [Lesley] "June" Halifax, nee Johansen
Leanne Lesley Wherry, nee Halifax 1964- = Rodney George Wherry
Married and have issue
Jonathon Rodney Wherry, born 1997-
Darren John Halifax 1965- BA
(Urban Studies)
1st born son
(Presently with out issue)
Wayne Andrew Halifax 1967-
2nd born son
(Presently without issue)

This page is intentionally left blank.

Dennis Lillee's international sporting biography

A512 Dennis Keith Lillee (1949-), MBE, AM is the former Australian fast bowler who is regarded as one of best fast bowlers of his generation and one of the world's greatest ever cricketers.

A513. Dennis first made his debut for Australia in the 1970-71 Ashes series and there was no looking back for him ever since. His biography that follows is supported further by materials available from Sports Australia and the International Cricket Council (III) and many other cricket authorities.

DENNIS
LILLEE AM MBE
Cricket
L
LEGEND
ELEVATED 2021
OA
MEMBER OF
THE ORDER OF
AUSTRALIA (AM)
BI
MEMBER OF THE
ORDER OF THE
BRITISH EMPIRE (MBE)
INDUCTED
1985
LIFE
18/07/1949 -
Dennis Keith Lillee AM MBE was inducted into the Sport Australia Hall of Fame in 1985 as an Athlete Member, and elevated to Legend of Australian Sport in 2021 for his contribution to the sport of cricket.
Lillee was widely regarded as the most accomplished and consistently hostile fast bowler of his time. Equipped with athletic prowess, a fierce temperament and an untamed primal force, the magnificent opening bowler was a beacon of inspiration amid triumph and controversy within the sport-crazed nation of Australia during the 1970's and 80's.
The Western Australian native burst onto the cricketing scene during the 1969/1970 season, making his domestic cricket debut as a 20-year-old with a raw and erratic bowling action that generated alarming pace; impressing the likes of Australian cricket champions Rod Marsh and Bill Lawry.
PROUDLY SUPPORTED BY
Australian Government
Australian Sports Commission

Dennis Keith Lillee AM MBE was inducted into the Sport Australia Hall of Fame in 1985 as an Athlete Member, and elevated to Legend of Australian Sport in 2021 for his contribution to the sport of cricket.

Lillee was widely regarded as the most accomplished and consistently hostile fast bowler of his time. Equipped with athletic prowess, a fierce temperament and an untamed primal force, the magnificent opening bowler was a beacon of inspiration amid triumph and controversy within the sport-crazed nation of Australia during the 1970's and 80's.

The Western Australian native burst onto the cricketing scene during the 1969/1970 season, making his domestic cricket debut as a 20-year-old with a raw and erratic bowling action that generated alarming pace; impressing the likes of Australian cricket champions Rod Marsh and Bill Lawry.

Lillee would go on to terrorise batsmen around the world during an illustrious 13-year career with his own variation of leg cutters, hooping outswingers, deceiving bounce, and lethal pace. However, his career was not without its setbacks. He suffered a debilitating back injury in 1973 against the West Indies, resulting in a prolonged absence from his beloved sport. Despite a gloomy prognosis, Lillee embarked on a comeback, putting himself through a gruelling strength and conditioning regime. He also remodelled aspects of his bowling run-up and action which were causing

immense stress on his body. The new and improved Lillee returned in 1974, spearheading the nation's bowling attack with counterparts Jeff Thomson and Max Walker. He immediately picked up where he had left off, continuing to exploit and outwit batsmen all around the world.

Dennis Lillee's volume of accomplishments was so considerable that it is difficult to easily summarise his career. He was a key player in Kerry Packer's World Series Cricket and his impact on the game – and on society – made him a true legend of Australian sport.

Lillee was the trump card Australian cricket had yearned for. He led WA's attack in his 1969/70 debut season, with 32 wickets in eight matches at an average of 22.03 – with the best figures of 7/36. He finished fourth in the domestic competition, trailing to proven quicks Alan Thomson and David Renneberg and deceptive spinner Terry Jenner. Lillee continued his stellar first-class form, taking 18 wickets at an average of 16.44 during his first international tour of New Zealand in 1970 with Australia's B Team. His performances were so impressive that a national call-up seemed inevitable.

During the 1970/1971 Ashes Series, Lillee was selected for the Sixth Test and he grasped the opportunity with both hands. The tearaway quick took a remarkable 5/84 off 28 eight-ball overs against a proud England team which included the likes of Geoff Boycott and John Edrich. This exceptional debut against a high-calibre opponent sent a warning for batsmen around the world.

The power Lillee possessed over his rivals – and in his broad shoulders – is best represented in his performance against the Rest of the World XI team in Perth during 1971/1972. Lillee claimed an extraordinary 8/29 against a team containing cricketing greats Garry Sobers, Clive Lloyd, Rohan Kanhai and Sunil Gavaskar.

But just when he looked to be at the peak of his powers, a sharp pain in his back in the 1972/73 series against Pakistan caused him some trouble. In true Australian fashion, he continued to bowl, but on a tour of the West Indies he was diagnosed with a debilitating stress fracture in his lumbar vertebrae. His back was in plaster for more than a month with Lillee requiring extended leave from cricket as well as a gruelling physiotherapy regime.
The newly refined Lillee returned to cricket in 1974/1975 determined to dispel the view that his career was over. He did so with devastating impact in tandem with up-and-coming fellow speedster, Jeff Thomson. The fearsome pair took Australian cricket to places not seen since the days of the 'Invincibles' of 1948, with Lillee claiming 25 wickets and Thomson 33. Lillee claimed eight wickets in five matches during the inaugural 1975 World Cup, including 5/34 against Pakistan at Leeds; becoming the first player to take a five-wicket haul in One Day International cricket.

Returning to the Test arena against England following the conclusion of the World Cup, Lillee found little challenge in the transition from One-Day cricket to Test cricket. He claimed 21 wickets in the victorious 4-Test series. The summer of 1975/1976 produced similar results with Lillee again showing the world the range of his capabilities, taking 27 wickets at an average of 26.37 against the West Indies in Australia.

If Lillee wasn't already feared enough, the unshackled version of him struck fear in any opponent he came up against. This reinvigorated version stepped up a gear when injury struck his fast-bowling partner, Thomson, in

Continued …

the 1976/1977 season, forcing an increased workload which he took in his stride. He responded with 47 wickets over the next six Test matches, which included match figures of 10/135 against Pakistan at the MCG and 11/123 in Auckland against New Zealand.

His most decisive performance came in the Centenary Test of 1977 against England when his match figures of 11/165 ultimately lead Australia to victory with a historic 45-run win.

Lillee became Australia's most marketable player. Enter World Series Cricket – a revolutionary idea that ultimately transformed cricket to what it is today. Created by media tycoon, Kerry Packer labelled Lillee as one of the faces of the competition, and his fast-bowling superstar did not disappoint. He went on to play 14 World Series Cricket matches, taking 67 wickets at an average of 26.87. That included four five-wicket hauls; none of which are included in his overall Test record. He was dominant throughout World Series Cricket and claimed astonishing match figures of 9/56 off 29 overs – including 7/23 off 14 overs in the second innings – of a Super Test against a powerful West Indies team comprising Gordon Greenidge, Viv Richards, Laurence Rowe, and Clive Lloyd. Once again, he secured a truly memorable victory for Australia.

Lillee's best Test figures were achieved in a remarkable match against the West Indies in 1981. To the delight of the MCG crowd, he sent opener Desmond Haynes and night-watchman Colin Croft back to the pavilion late on day one, and then bowled Vivian Richards to leave the tourists reeling at 4/10 at stumps. Lillee passed Lance Gibbs' Test wicket-taking record with Larry Gomes' dismissal the following day, and he ended up with 7/ 83 in the first innings and 10 wickets for the match. Australia recorded a famous upset win against the star-studded Windies.

A knee injury forced a premature end to Lillee's career in 1984. He left international cricket on top of the world as the leading Test wicket taker (355), topping the bowler/fielding combination record with wicketkeeper Rod Marsh (95 dismissals) and recognised by many as Australia's greatest fast bowler.

Beloved by fans around the world, he found solace in retirement by coaching and mentoring upcoming fast bowlers of Australia.

Dennis Keith Lillee redefined the art of fast-bowling; setting new standards for fitness, competitiveness, and hard work in the process. He personified the Australian spirit and is undeniably a Legend of Australian sport.

"His big side-on action with the sweatband, the way he used to wipe his finger across his forehead to flick off the sweat… he epitomized the fast bowler, aggressive, in your face, never back down, bowl all day attitude… he was my hero and still is". SAHOF Member, Glenn McGrath.

Honours and Achievements:

1973: Wisden Cricketer of the Year.
1981: Appointed Member of the Order of the British Empire (MBE).
1985: Inducted into the Sport Australia Hall of Fame.
1996: Inducted into the Australian Cricket Hall of Fame.
1996: Inducted into the International Cricket Council Hall of Fame.
2000: Selected in the official Australian Test Team of the Century.
2000: Awarded the Australian Sports Medal.
2010: Awarded the Member of the Order of Australia (AM).
2021: Elevated to Legend of Sport Australia Hall of Fame.

A514. Below is the MRF Pace Foundation logo (Author or copyright owner is the MRF Foundation, retrieved 2nd April, 2022):

A515. Below is a portrait of Dennis Lillee in full flight as an international cricketer (National Gallery of Australia):

A516. Below is the monument which stands at the Melbourne Cricket Ground (MCG) attributed to his outstanding career:

A517. Less well known about Dennis's career is that he remained until relatively recently, a long-term president of the Western Australian Cricket Association (WACA).

A518. In his time at the WACA, Dennis helped make the competition and administration financially more stable by bringing back the crowds, and making the atmosphere at the cricket more relaxed and casual.

A519. When Dennis retired from playing cricket his wife, Helen Lillee (MPA; BBusMgt), returned to university full time graduating first with a Bachelor of Business degree majoring in Management; and then continuing with higher education, graduating later with a Masters of Professional Accounting.

A520. Dennis Lillee enjoyed his role as house-husband for the years Helen Lillee forged an accomplished academic and now business career.

A521. Dennis maintains a healthy lifestyle and is a keen wine collector. He is also like his first cousin Darren Hallifax and cousin by degree the present researcher, a staunch monarchist and all three have a shared love for Australian, British and early European history.

A522. Pictured below is Dennis and Helen Lillee. They are considered by John Lindsay Robert Guest to be major collaborators enabling the completion of research into shared Hallifax family history:

Source: Getty images, credit Paul McConnell, 8th October, 2005

A523. Dennis is pictured below left, with son Adam Lillee and on the right, is Dean Lillee, Dennis and Helen's younger son:

A524. At the time Dennis made his international cricket debut, hew was employed in Perth, Western Australia as a bank clerk:

<u>Dennis Lillee's parents -Keith Lillee and Shirley Halifax</u>

A525. On 18th September, 2008, Mr [*Steve*] Irons, MP, Federal Minister for Swan (WA) *[Italics mine]*, gave a speech in the Australian House of Representatives acknowledging Shirley and Keith's 60th wedding anniversary (House of Representatives Adjournment, Keith and Shirley Lillee, Speech, Thursday, 18 September 2008, by Authority of the House of Representatives):

Thursday, 18 September 2008 HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES 7979

SPEECH

Date Thursday, 18 September 2008 **Source** House
Page 7979 **Proof** No
Questioner **Responder**
Speaker Irons, Steve, MP **Question No.**

Mr IRONS (Swan) (4.49 pm)—I would first like to acknowledge the 60th wedding anniversary of Dennis Lillee's parents, who live in my electorate of Swan. Keith and Shirley were married on this date 60 years ago and are the proud parents of Dennis Keith Lillee, who became an Australian sporting legend and arguably the greatest ever fast bowler. Congratulations to Keith and Shirley, and I wish them many more wedding anniversaries and a return to full health for Keith.

I would now like to raise the important issue of employment opportunities for the disabled in my electorate of Swan. I commend the excellent work being done in my community by local organisations to promote employment for the disabled. Last week I had the pleasure of launching the Microbusiness Forum for People with Disabilities in Canning Vale, Western Australia. The event was organised by the dedicated people of the Canning Coalition to raise the profile of employment opportunities for local community members with disabilities.

It was a privilege to be there and meet such an inspirational group of people. Many of the speakers on that day talked about how rewarding starting their own businesses had been. For example, Sally Richards from Canberra spoke about the great satisfaction her son Jackson, who has Phelan-McDermid syndrome, gains from the business they run, called JACKmail. Similarly, it was wonderful to hear about the success of Richard Hill as Director of Riccom, a website design and disability awareness training company. Equally, Norma and Nathan Hatchett should be commended for their innovative Hooked on Hessian textile company.

A526. Dennis Keith Lillee (1949-) is the first-born of Keith Lillee (1926-2012) and Shirley Doris Halifax (Hallifax) (1929-2014). His siblings are Trevor John Lillee (1950–2013) and Carmen Shirley Matheson (1952–) (nee Lillee).

A527. Their parents Shirley and Keith married in Perth in 1948 (Australia Marriage Index, 1788-1949; Name: Shirley D Halifax; Marriage Date: 1948; Marriage Place: Perth, Western Australia; Registration Date: 1948; Registration Place: Perth, Western Australia, Australia; Registration Number: 2140):

Name:	Shirley D Halifax
Marriage Date:	1948
Marriage Place:	Perth, Western Australia
Registration Date:	1948
Registration Place:	Perth, Western Australia, Australia
Registration Number:	2140

A528. Below is Shirley and Keith's engagement announcement made by Shirley's parents, Dennis and his siblings' maternal grandparents Leonard and Doris Hallifax (i.e., Mr & Mrs Halifax of 134 Lake Street Perth (The West Australian, Perth, WA, Saturday 13th September, 1947, Page 16, Engagements):

ENGAGEMENTS

1/2 per line, minimum charge 5/10. Notices must be signed by both parties.

Mr. and Mrs. Syd Smith, of Hester, have much pleasure in announcing the engagement of their only child, Margaret (Peggy) to Keith, eldest son of Mr. and Mrs. W. T. Walton, of Yornup.

The engagement is announced of Gladys May, only daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Walter, of Scotsdale, Denmark, to Allan Colin, youngest son of Mrs. O'Mara and the late Mr. Hansen, of 78 Howick-street, Victoria Park.

Mr. and Mrs. Halifax, of 134 Lake-street, Perth, have pleasure in announcing the engagement of their youngest daughter, Shirley, to Keith, fourth son of Mr. and Mrs. Lillee, of Jarrahdale.

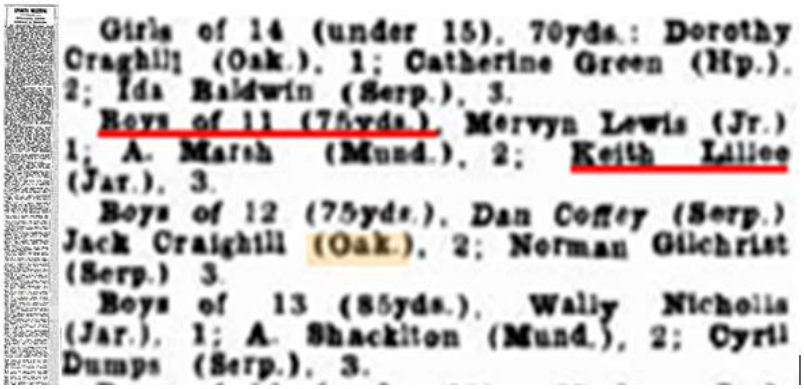
Mr. and Mrs. F. C. Smith, Box 32, Denmark, have pleasure in announcing the engagement of their only daughter, Violet Grace, to Ernest Robert, of Post

A529. Keith Lillee is the son of the late Henry (a.k.a Harry) and Maud Lillee (nee Barnett) (Western Australia Announcements, Obituary., Lillee, Keith, archived, original published 22nd March, 2012).

A530. Keith, beloved husband of Shirley, both late of South Perth was laid to rest at Karrakatta Cemetery, Nedlands, Perth (Australia and New Zealand, Find A Grave Index, 1800s-Current, Name: Keith Lillee; Birth Date: 1927; Death Date: 20 Mar 2012; Cemetery: Karrakatta Cemetery and Crematorium; Burial or Cremation Place: Karrakatta, Nedlands City, Western Australia, Australia):

Name:	Keith Lillee
Birth Date:	1927
Death Date:	20 Mar 2012
Cemetery:	Karrakatta Cemetery and Crematorium
Burial or Cremation Place:	Karrakatta, Nedlands City, Western Australia, Australia

A531. Aged about 10 years, Keith was third in the Inter-Schools, U11s 75-yard sprint. The article provides some evidence that Dennis's speed and athleticism may have been passed down by his father (Source: Harvey Murray Times, Western Australia, Friday 22nd October, 1937, Page 5, Sports Meeting):



Girls of 14 (under 15), 70yds.: Dorothy Craghill (Oak.), 1; Catherine Green (Hp.), 2; Ida Baldwin (Serp.), 3.
Boys of 11 (75yds.), Mervyn Lewis (Jr.) 1; A. Marsh (Mund.), 2; Keith Lillee (Jar.), 3.
Boys of 12 (75yds.), Dan Coffey (Serp.) Jack Craighill (Oak.), 2; Norman Gilchrist (Serp.) 3.
Boys of 13 (85yds.), Wally Nicholls (Jar.), 1; A. Shackiton (Mund.), 2; Cyril Dumps (Serp.), 3.

A532. Below is a school photograph taken of Dennis's father, the young Keith Lillee attending school Jarrahdale, near Rockingham, south of Perth Western Australia (Keith's identity is uncertain below. Certain however, is that he was present):

Keith Lillee 1926-2012 present in photograph taken 1932 aged 6 years, pupil of Jarrahdale Primary School (not yet identified from photograph)

A533. The photograph was taken in the year 1932, whereby it is known Keith Lillee (1926-2012) attended from 1932 to 1940.

A534. Made further certain by Keith's school records is that prior to living in Jarrahdale he was born on the 8th September 1926 at Maylands, a Perth suburb located on the Swan River.

A535. An extended trace of Dennis's patrilineal bloodline is also available upon request.

A536. The trace of Dennis's maternal bloodline will now take examiners directly to his 4th great parents Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) and Sarah Maria Hallifax (1791-1875), nee Gaze.

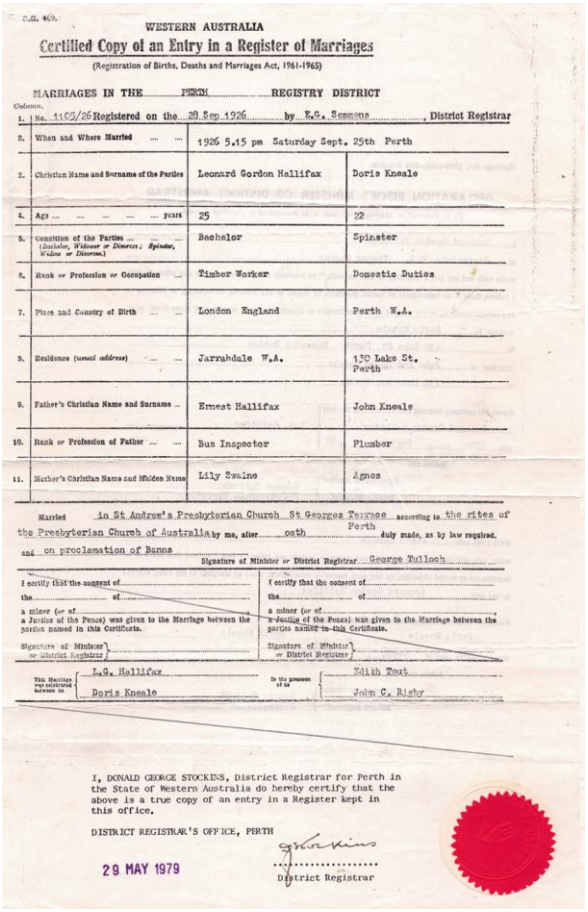
Dennis Lillee's grandparents, Leonard & Doris Hallifax

A537. Dennis's grandfather, Leonard Gordon Hallifax (1904-1983) married grandmother, Doris Agnes Kneale (1904-1959) in Perth, in 1926. They went on to have three children, two daughters, Norma and Shirley and son John (Australia Marriage Index, 1788-1949; Name: Leonard G Hallifax; Marriage Date: 1926; Marriage Place: Perth, Western Australia; Registration Date: 1926; Registration Place: Perth, Western Australia, Australia; Registration Number: 1105):

Name:	Leonard G Hallifax
Marriage Date:	1926
Marriage Place:	Perth, Western Australia
Registration Date:	1926
Registration Place:	Perth, Western Australia, Australia
Registration Number:	1105

Name:	Doris Kneale
Marriage Date:	1926
Marriage Place:	Perth, Western Australia
Registration Date:	1926
Registration Place:	Perth, Western Australia, Australia
Registration Number:	1105

A538. A facsimile of Leonard Gordon Hallifax and Doris Agnes Kneale's, marriage certificate is submitted below:



WESTERN AUSTRALIA

Certified Copy of an Entry in a Register of Marriages

(Registration of Births, Deaths and Marriages Act, 1961-1965)

MARRIAGES IN THE PERTH REGISTRY DISTRICT

1.	No. 1105/26 Registered on the 28 Sep 1926 by E.C. Semmens, District Registrar		
2.	When and Where Married	1926 5.15 pm Saturday Sept. 25th Perth	
3.	Christian Name and Surname of the Parties	Leonard Gordon Hallifax	Doris Kneale
4.	Age	25	22
5.	Condition of the Parties (Bachelor, Widower or Divorcee; Spinster, Widow or Divorcee)	Bachelor	Spinster
6.	Rank or Profession or Occupation	Timber Worker	Domestic Duties
7.	Place and Country of Birth	London England	Perth W.A.
8.	Residence (usual address)	Jarrahdale W.A.	130 Lake St. Perth
9.	Father's Christian Name and Surname	Ernest Hallifax	John Kneale
10.	Rank or Profession of Father	Bus Inspector	Plumber
11.	Mother's Christian Name and Maiden Name	Lily Swaine	Agnes

Married in St Andrew's Presbyterian Church St Georges Terrace according to the rites of the Presbyterian Church of Australia by me, after oath duly made, as by law required, and on proclamation of Banns

Signature of Minister or District Registrar George Tulloch

I certify that the consent of ... the ... of ... a minor (or of ... a Justice of the Peace) was given to the Marriage between the parties named in this Certificate.

Signature of Minister or District Registrar

I certify that the consent of ... the ... of ... a minor (or of ... a Justice of the Peace) was given to the Marriage between the parties named in this Certificate.

Signature of Minister or District Registrar

This Marriage was celebrated between Leo. Hallifax and Doris Kneale In the presence of Edith Tout and John C. Richy

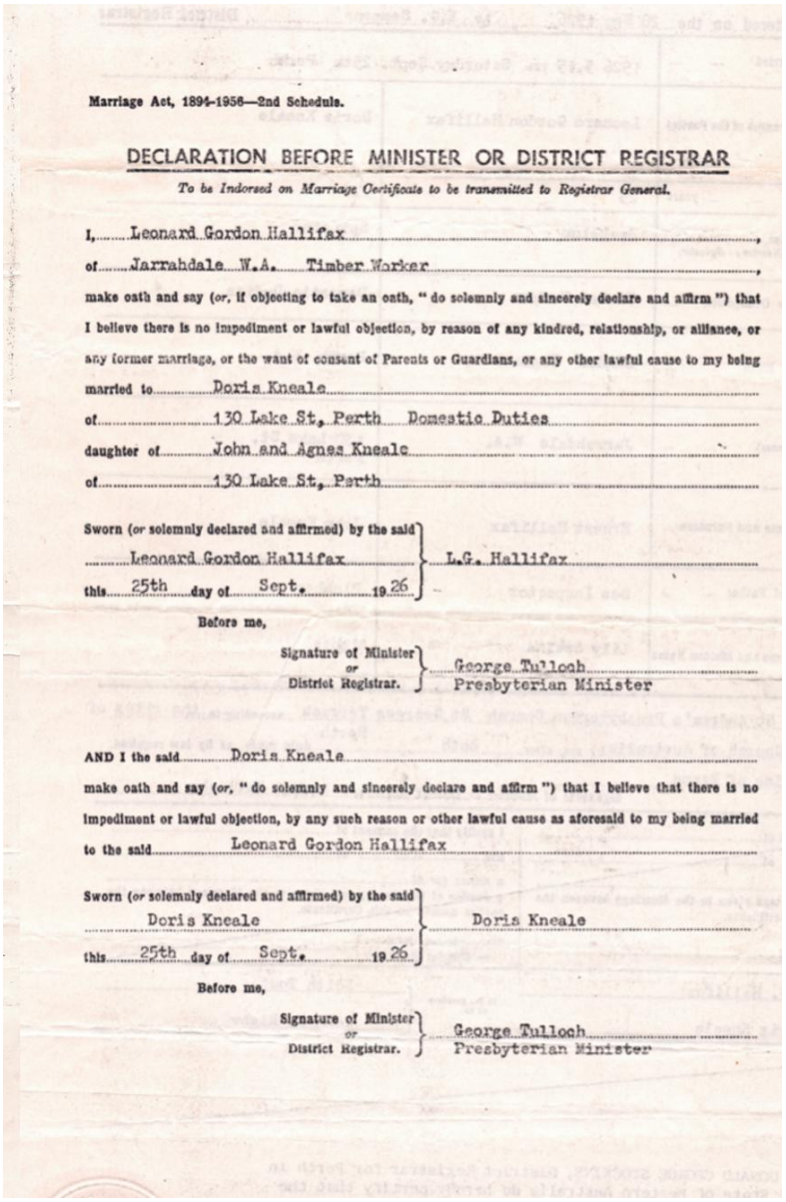
I, DONALD GEORGE STOCKENS, District Registrar for Perth in the State of Western Australia do hereby certify that the above is a true copy of an entry in a Register kept in this office.

DISTRICT REGISTRAR'S OFFICE, PERTH

29 MAY 1979

District Registrar

Continued …



Marriage Act, 1894-1956—2nd Schedule.

DECLARATION BEFORE MINISTER OR DISTRICT REGISTRAR

To be Indorsed on Marriage Certificate to be transmitted to Registrar General.

I, Leonard Gordon Hallifax,
of Jarrahdale W.A. Timber Worker,
make oath and say (*or*, if objecting to take an oath, "do solemnly and sincerely declare and affirm") that I believe there is no impediment or lawful objection, by reason of any kindred, relationship, or alliance, or any former marriage, or the want of consent of Parents or Guardians, or any other lawful cause to my being married to Doris Kneale
of 130 Lake St, Perth Domestic Duties
daughter of John and Agnes Kneale
of 130 Lake St, Perth

Sworn (*or* solemnly declared and affirmed) by the said Leonard Gordon Hallifax — L.G. Hallifax
this 25th day of Sept. 1926

Before me,

Signature of Minister or District Registrar — George Tulloch, Presbyterian Minister

AND I the said Doris Kneale
make oath and say (*or*, "do solemnly and sincerely declare and affirm") that I believe that there is no impediment or lawful objection, by any such reason or other lawful cause as aforesaid to my being married to the said Leonard Gordon Hallifax

Sworn (*or* solemnly declared and affirmed) by the said Doris Kneale — Doris Kneale
this 25th day of Sept. 1926

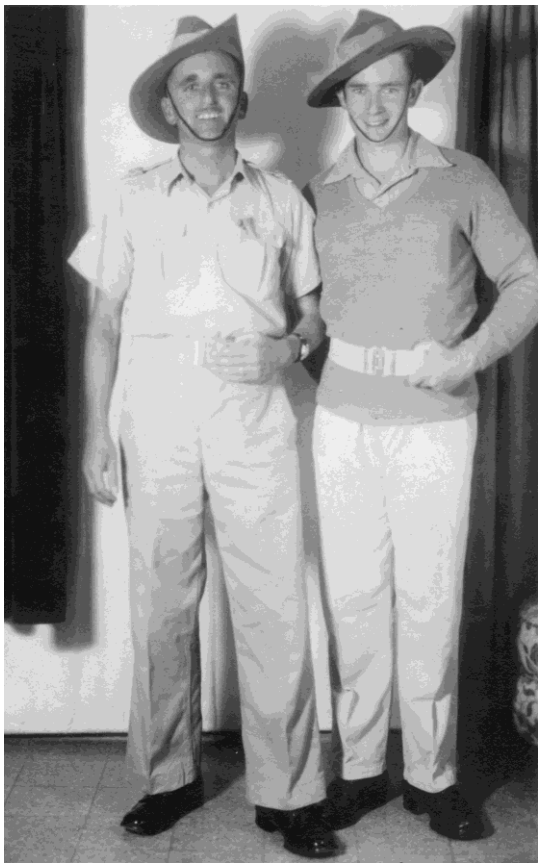
Before me,

Signature of Minister or District Registrar — George Tulloch, Presbyterian Minister

A539. A record of Leonard's enlistment in the Australian Imperial Force (AIF) World War II, making his birth date 24th April, 1903, London, England is further submitted (Australia, World War II Military Service Records, 1939-1945; Name: Leonard Gordon Halifax; Birth Date: 24 Apr 1903; Birth Place: London, England; Year range: 1939-1948; Enlistment Place: Claremont, Western Australia; Service Number: WX9100; Spouse: Doris Halifax; Next of Kin: Halifax Doris; Series Description; B883: Army, 2nd AlF):

Name:	Leonard Gordon Halifax
Birth Date:	24 Apr 1903
Birth Place:	London England
Year Range:	1939-1948
Enlistment Place:	Claremont, Western Australia
Service Number:	WX9100
Spouse:	Doris Halifax
Series Description:	B883: Army, 2nd Al F

A540. Pictured below is Leonard Gordon Halifax (left) of the Australian Army 2nd/48th Battalion with one of his army peers:



A541. The Rats of Tobruk Association of Western Australia (Upper Swan Sub Branch), paid Leonard and his family honour by recognising him as one of the "Rats of Tobruk":

R.S.L. War Veterans' Home - Memorial Chapel

THE RATS OF TOBRUK ASSOCIATION WEST AUSTRALIAN BRANCH

THE UPPER SWAN SUB BRANCH

and

THE EX-SERVICEWOMEN'S GROUP, DARLING RANGE SUB BRANCH

presentation of

M E M O R I A L B O O K S

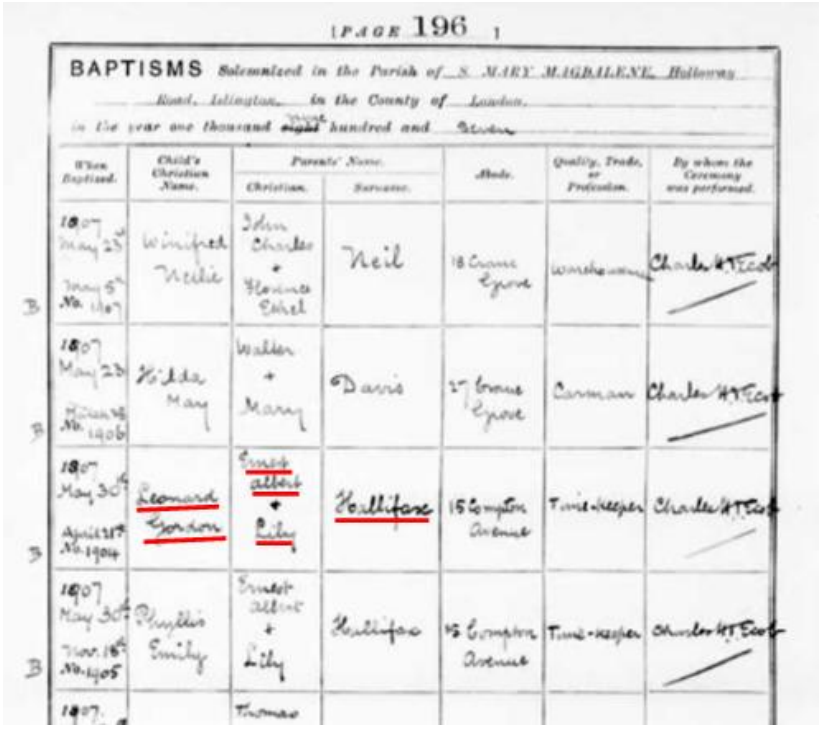
in Honoured Memory of.

RATS OF TOBRUK ASSOCIATION			
WX2159	BOWMAN James S	2/32nd Battalion	25th June 1983
WX3408	BRENNAN Gerald	2/28th Battalion	27th Sept 1983
WX7033	KELLY Jack H	2/28th Battalion	9th Nov 1983
WX7549	RUDKIN Edwin C	9th Div. Salvage	27th Nov 1983
WX1900	HALIFAX Len G	2/48th Battalion	9th Dec 1983
	BRANSON Jim	2/28th Battalion	24th Dec 1983
	de-LACY Norman		29th Dec 1983
	JONES Charles	2/28th Battalion	30th Dec 1983
	LACE John C	R.A.N.	30th Jan 1984
WX4500	TAYLOR Dick	9th Div. Salvage	24th March1984
	TAYLOR MC A.L.F. (Frank)	2/28th Battalion	28th April1984
WX6949	LEE Percy	2/28th Battalion	8th June 1984
WX3552	MILLER Max	2/28th Battalion	9th June 1984
UPPER SWAN SUB BRANCH			
	HARRISON MM Eric		18th Sept. 1983
	BATES Henry George		31st Dec 1983
EX-SERVICEWOMEN'S GROUP, DARLING RANGE SUB BRANCH			
	TAIT Sister Agnes	1st World War	20th June 1955
	BARBER Dr. G.W.	Major-General 1st World War	25th July 1951
	MURGATROYD Thomas	Boer War Worl War I & II	4th April 1960

26th August 1984 — 2.30 p.m.

Organist — Mrs. E.N. Wilson

A542. Leonard's baptism record shows he is the son of Ernest Albert Hallifax and wife Lily Hallifax (London, England, Births and Baptisms, 1813-1906; Name: Leonard Gordon Hallifox; Baptism Age: 3; Record Type: Baptism; Birth Date: 21 Apr 1904; Baptism Date: 30 May 1907; Baptism Place: St Mary Magdalene, Holloway Road, Islington, England; Father: Ernest Albert Hallifox; Mother: Lily Hallifox (Hallifox is a typographical error, attributed to interpreting the original script prior to database entry):



PAGE 196

BAPTISMS Solemnized in the Parish of S. MARY MAGDALENE, Holloway Road, Islington, in the County of London.

In the year one thousand ~~eight~~ nine hundred and seven

When Baptized.	Child's Christian Name.	Parents' Name. Christian.	Parents' Name. Surname.	Abode.	Quality, Trade, or Profession.	By whom the Ceremony was performed.
1907 May 23rd	Winifred Nellie	John Charles + Florence Ethel	Neil	18 Crane Grove	Warehouseman	Charles H. Eccles
1907 May 23rd	Hilda Mary	Walter + Mary	Davis	27 Crane Grove	Carman	Charles H. Eccles
1907 May 30th	Leonard Gordon	Ernest albert + Lily	Hallifax	15 Compton Avenue	Time-keeper	Charles H. Eccles
1907 May 30th	Phyllis Emily	Ernest albert + Lily	Hallifax	15 Compton Avenue	Time-keeper	Charles H. Eccles
1907		Thomas				

A543. A self published book by two brothers of North Perth Western Australia surnamed Christ, recall their youth playing cricket and football in Lake Street North Perth, growing up there between 1941-1967. They fondly recall Leonard Halifax at number 134 Lake Street watching out for stray cricket balls and footballs. It was not until the 1970s they realised Len was the grandfather of Dennis Lillee (Christ, 2020, p19):

> Number 134 was a Mr Len Halifax, to us an old man who later was revealed as the grandfather of Dennis Lillee who played cricket for WA and Australia in the 1970s and 1980s and who proved to be one of Australia's greatest ever fast bowlers. Mr Halifax spent a lot of time watching us youngsters play cricket and football to make sure his property especially the large front window was not damaged. As a tribute to our skill with the bat or ball the Halifax windows were never damaged or broken. Behind the Halifax house, down a laneway was number 134 the site of Cowans Plaster works. They had trucks, large and small, coming and going constantly during the working day. About 2014AD the houses numbered 132 and 134 (Halifax/Robinson) were demolished probably for redevelopment. A high fence now surrounds the property. To date (2018) no development has occurred.

A544. Leonard was also the second born son of three boys and was one of six children born to Ernest Albert Hallifax (1871–1947) and Lilian "Lily" Hallifax (1874-1916). His siblings are: Stanley Ernest Hallifax (1895–1972); Gladys Lilian Hallifax (1901–Unknown); Phyllis Emily Hallifax (1905–1970); Leslie Frank Hallifax (1908-Unknown); Arnold Alfred Hallifax (1909–1988).

A545. Leonard's elder brother Stanley married and had issue; a son named Stanley Edward Hallifax (1916-1995).

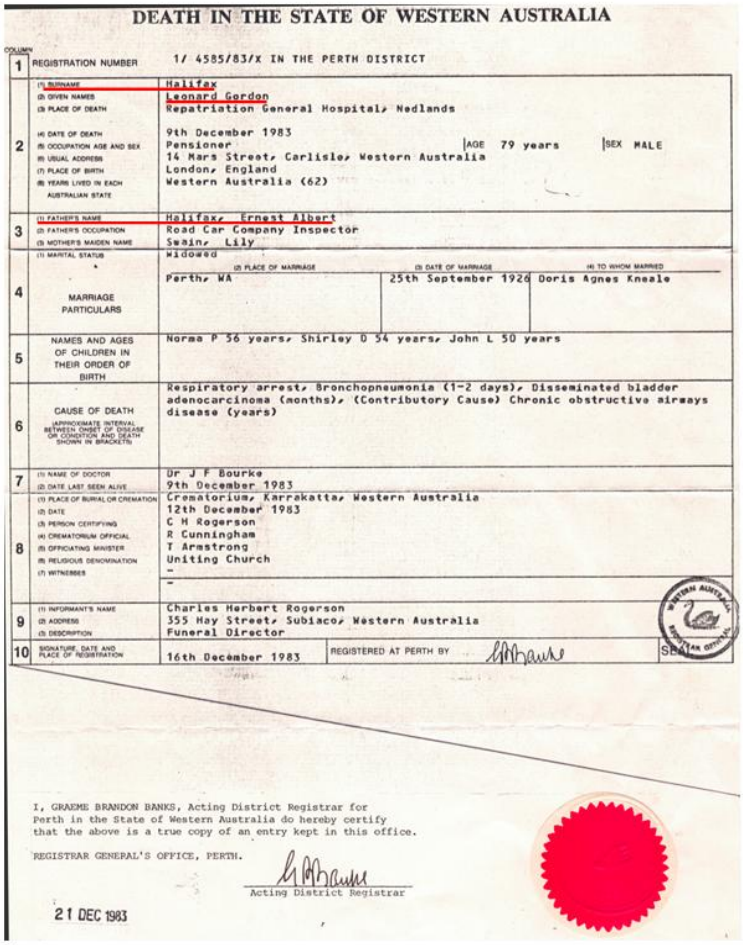
A546. This Stanley Edward Hallifax (1916-1995) also married, but died without general issue. This meant posthumously Leonard - *the second born son* - is made by the trace submitted in Attachment 1, the next successive head of the original senior Hallifax family (Ms 7D14/45, extant 16th December 1788).

A547. Dennis is the eldest and surviving son of Leonard's second born, daughter Shirley Doris Lillee (1929-2014) (nee Hallifax).

A548. Dennis's grandfather, also grandfather of Darren, Leonard Gordon Halifax (1904-1983) rests at Karrakatta Cemetery, Nedlands, Perth, Western Australia (Australia and New Zealand, Find A Grave Index, 1800s-Current; Name: Leonard Gordon Halifax; Birth Date: 1904; Death Date; 9 Dec 1983; Cemetery: Karrakatta Cemetery and Crematorium; Burial or Cremation Place: Karrakatta, Nedlands City, Western Australia, Australia):

Name:	Leonard Gordon Halifax
Birth Date:	1904
Death Date:	9 Dec 1983
Cemetery:	Karrakatta Cemetery and Crematorium
Burial or Cremation Place:	Karrakatta, Nedlands City, Western Australia, Australia

A549. Leonard Gordon Halifax's (1904-1983), detailed death certificate is submitted below confirming, also that his father, Ernest Albert Halifax, is of London, England:



DEATH IN THE STATE OF WESTERN AUSTRALIA

1	REGISTRATION NUMBER	1/ 4585/83/X IN THE PERTH DISTRICT
2	(1) SURNAME (2) GIVEN NAMES (3) PLACE OF DEATH (4) DATE OF DEATH (5) OCCUPATION AGE AND SEX (6) USUAL ADDRESS (7) PLACE OF BIRTH (8) YEARS LIVED IN EACH AUSTRALIAN STATE	Halifax Leonard Gordon Repatriation General Hospital, Nedlands 9th December 1983 Pensioner AGE 79 years SEX MALE 14 Mars Street, Carlisle, Western Australia London, England Western Australia (62)
3	(1) FATHER'S NAME (2) FATHER'S OCCUPATION (3) MOTHER'S MAIDEN NAME	Halifax, Ernest Albert Road Car Company Inspector Swain, Lily
4	(1) MARITAL STATUS MARRIAGE PARTICULARS	Widowed (2) PLACE OF MARRIAGE: Perth, WA; (3) DATE OF MARRIAGE: 25th September 1926; (4) TO WHOM MARRIED: Doris Agnes Kneale
5	NAMES AND AGES OF CHILDREN IN THEIR ORDER OF BIRTH	Norma P 56 years, Shirley D 54 years, John L 50 years
6	CAUSE OF DEATH (APPROXIMATE INTERVAL BETWEEN ONSET OF DISEASE OR CONDITION AND DEATH SHOWN IN BRACKETS)	Respiratory arrest, Bronchopneumonia (1-2 days), Disseminated bladder adenocarcinoma (months), (Contributory Cause) Chronic obstructive airways disease (years)
7	(1) NAME OF DOCTOR (2) DATE LAST SEEN ALIVE	Dr J F Bourke 9th December 1983
8	(1) PLACE OF BURIAL OR CREMATION (2) DATE (3) PERSON CERTIFYING (4) CREMATORIUM OFFICIAL (5) OFFICIATING MINISTER (6) RELIGIOUS DENOMINATION (7) WITNESSES	Crematorium, Karrakatta, Western Australia 12th December 1983 C H Rogerson R Cunningham T Armstrong Uniting Church – –
9	(1) INFORMANT'S NAME (2) ADDRESS (3) DESCRIPTION	Charles Herbert Rogerson 355 Hay Street, Subiaco, Western Australia Funeral Director
10	SIGNATURE, DATE AND PLACE OF REGISTRATION	16th December 1983 REGISTERED AT PERTH BY G A Banks

I, GRAEME BRANDON BANKS, Acting District Registrar for Perth in the State of Western Australia do hereby certify that the above is a true copy of an entry kept in this office.

REGISTRAR GENERAL'S OFFICE, PERTH.

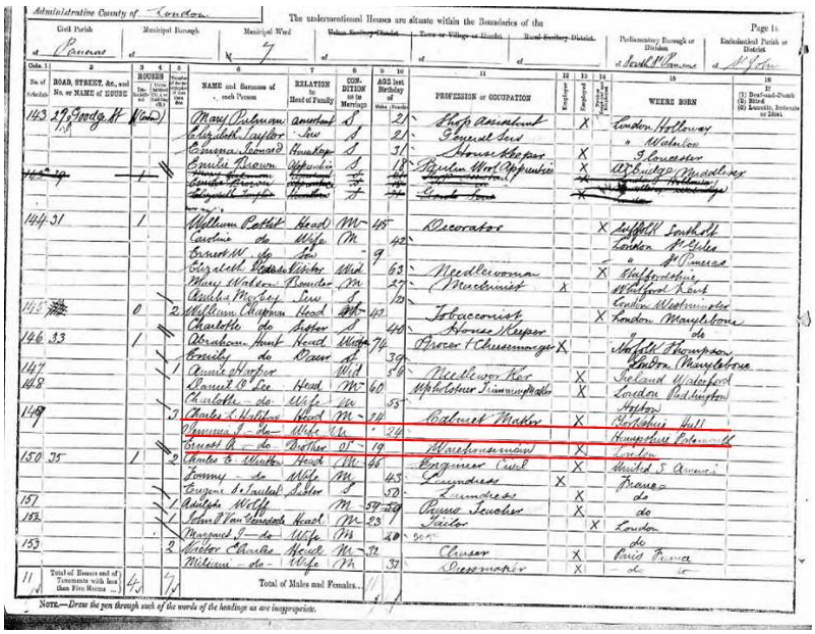
G A Banks
Acting District Registrar

21 DEC 1983

Dennis Lillee's great grandfather, Ernest Albert Hallifax (1871–1947)

A550. Leonard's father, Ernest Albert Hallifax (1871–1947) (England & Wales, BMD Birth Index, 1837-1915; Record details: Name: Ernest Albert Hallifax; Registration Date: 1871; Quarter of the Year: Oct-Nov-Dec; Registration Place: West Ham, Essex, England; Volume 4a; Page: 20), is found in the 1891 England Census as a 19-year-old, living with his 2nd eldest brother Charles Halifax and his wife Jemma Jane Halifax, nee Warmington. Brother Charles and sister-in-law Jemma are then aged 24 years (Note the second 'L" in Hallifax is frequently dropped in family records after Ernest's birth and that of his siblings).

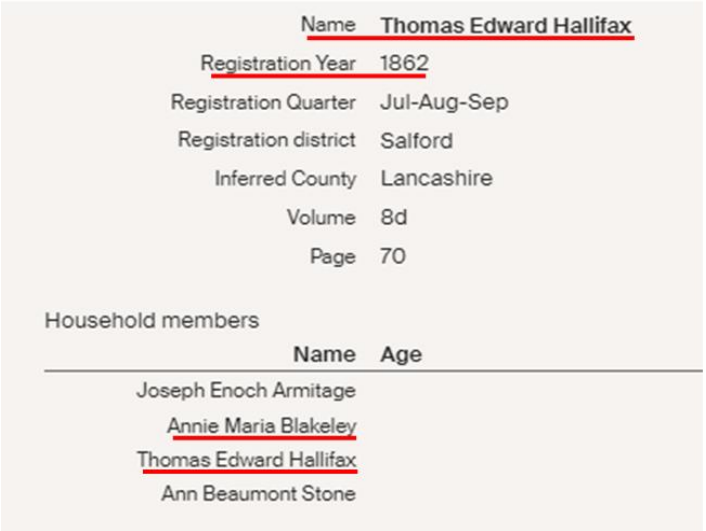
A551. Charles was recorded with the occupation, cabinet maker in the 1891 England Census (Name: Charles L Halifax; Gender: Male: Age: 24; Relationship: Head; Birth Year: 1867; Spouse: Jemma J Halifax; Child: Ernest A Halifax: Birth Place: Hull, Yorkshire, England; Civil parish: St Pancras; Ecclesiastical parish: St John; Residence Place: St Pancras, London, England; Registration district: Pancras; Sub registration district: Tottenham Court; ED, Institution or Vessel; 10: Neighbours; View others on page: Piece; 121: Folio; 9; Household members: Name: Charles L Halifax; Age: 24; Name: Jemma J Halifax; Age: 24; Name: Ernest A Halifax; Age: 19):



A552. Ernest and Charles are two of five sons and a daughter born to Thomas Edward New Hallifax (1842-1908) and Annie Maria Blakeley (1843-1911).

Dennis Lillee's 2nd great grandparents, Thomas & Annie Hallifax

A553. Thomas Edward New Hallifax (1843-1908) and Annie Maria Blakeley (1843-1911) were married in 1862 (England & Wales, Marriage Index, 1837-1915; Record details – Name: Thomas Edward Hallifax; Registration Year: 1862; Registration Quarter: Jul-Aug-Sep; Registration district: Salford; Inferred County: Lancashire: Volume: 8d; Page: 70):



Name	Thomas Edward Hallifax
Registration Year	1862
Registration Quarter	Jul-Aug-Sep
Registration district	Salford
Inferred County	Lancashire
Volume	8d
Page	70

Household members

Name	Age
Joseph Enoch Armitage	
Annie Maria Blakeley	
Thomas Edward Hallifax	
Ann Beaumont Stone	

A554. Dennis's 2nd great grandparents, Thomas Edward New Hallifax "Edward" and Annie Maria Blakeley had five children: Harry Mansell Hallifax (1863–1941); Charles Llewellyn Hallifax (1867-1901); Alfred Gordon Hallifax (1869-Unkown); Ernest Albert Hallifax (1871-1947) (Dennis's great grandfather); Annie Hallifax (1876-Unknown); and Herbert Hallifax (1879-Unknown).

A555. Thomas ("Edward") hereafter referred to by his full name and wife Annie, are Dennis's 2nd great grandparents. They were separated and divorced shortly after Herbert was born.

A556. Both 2nd great grandparents Thomas and Ann remarried and Thomas had a subsequent daughter to his 2nd wife, who was a Japanese national.

A557. Thomas found his way to Japan and then Korea and was head of the first English language school in Korea. He married a Japanese woman, who subsequently died not long after giving birth to their daughter Agnes Florence Hallifax.

A558. Agnes died aged 17 years in South Korea when Thomas and his daughter were living there, and whilst Thomas was operating the school.

A559. His first wife Annie, married Edward Marsh and whilst they did not have issue, Edward Marsh provided a paternal role to the children.

A560. Two accounts of Thomas Edward New Hallifax's (1843-1908) life in Japan and Korea are submitted below. The first makes him for a short while, a sailor, then telegraph operator (high tech for its day); and then he worked in the same career as his father, teaching.

A561. Thomas Edward New Hallifax's (1843-1908) succeeded as the King of Korea's preferred westerner to establish the first English school in Korea. He is now recognised internationally as the founding father of English schools in Korea.

A562. Robert Neff (2022) (Asia Society: Learning English in the 1880s, provides a glimpse into Thomas's efforts https://asiasociety.org/korea/learning-english-1880s), writes this about Thomas:

The first English language school established in Korea was in September 1883. The instructor was Thomas E. Hallifax, a 41-year-old Englishman who was somewhat a jack-of-all-trades. Prior to coming to Korea he had served as a sailor, telegraph operator and, for a period of four years, as a teacher in Tokyo. While many of his contemporaries—and for that matter, modern historians—viewed his efforts as lackluster at best, he did manage to instill enough interest in his students to inspire them to use their limited English.

In January 1884, Percival Lowell, an American residing in Korea, recalled that a small group of boys used to tap on his window in order to practice their English.

A563. Another publication about Thomas by American Robert Neff (16th May, 2022) appeared in the Korean Times (online), making known the name of the school Thomas helped to establish, Dongmunhak, an interpreter school, in Seoul (Extract: https://m.koreatimes.co.kr/pages/article.asp?newsIdx=66731):

> **Korea's modernization through English in the 1880s**
>
> The Korean Times
> May 16, 2022
>
> In September 1883, the Korean government, under the advice of Paul G. von Mollendorff, a German advisor to the Korean court, established Dongmunhak, an interpreter school, in Soul.
>
> English was initially taught by two Chinese instructors who had studied in the United States and came to Korea with Mollendorff.
>
> They were soon joined by Thomas E. Hallifax, a 41-year-old Englishman who had come to Korea to establish a telegraph system but became a teacher by default.

Continued …

The Korean government stipulated that students would be chosen by their academic aptitude only, irrespective of class, and would be provided with textbooks and Western-style paper. Those who excelled in their studies would be given free room and board.

According to Prof. Kim Euin-gyong, through this manner the government showed a progressive approach to English language education.
Apparently, at least in the beginning, the school had no problems filling its classes. Students graduated after only a couple of months of study and were given good positions as interpreters.

But the success of the school is somewhat debatable. It has been disparaged as a tool of the Chinese government (Mollendorff was appointed by the Chinese) and staffed by unqualified teachers.

Hallifax's qualifications as a teacher was questioned notably by his students but also by the small foreign community as well.

Some described him as agreeable, clever and thoroughly conversant with the "Far East" but others derided his checkered past noting that his attainments were self-acquired, and he was nothing more than a "common sailor".

To be fair, Hallifax, prior to coming to Korea, had served as a sailor but only for two years but had taught English part time in Tokyo for four years.

Later in 1895, he became the assistant headmaster of the Government School for Foreign Language in Soul – a position held until his death in 1908.

Obviously he had some teaching ability but some Korean students felt betrayed.

In September 1886, the Korean government closed down Dongmunhak and established a new school at Yugeong Gongwon, commonly referred to as the Royal English School.

The students all sons of noble families, were taught by three well-educated Americans, Homer B. Hulbert, Delzell A. Bunker and George W. Gilmore.

The students, were instructed in English and taught twelve subjects including medicine, mathematics, geography, and natural science.

At first the students were enthusiastic to learn. They had been promised government positions if they did well and threatened with punishment, both for them and their parents, if they did poorly.

A564. A much earlier account of Thomas's presence in Korea, was also published in the Korean Times in 2009. The researcher and author, Bae Ji-sook, examined from records Thomas's experience in much greater detail. Bae Ji-sook reveals Thomas's role and place in the history of English education in Korea is far more substantial than American Robert Null let on. According to Bae Ji-sook, Thomas was very well connected and influential giving loyal and dutiful service to the reigning monarchs of Korea, King Goejong, 1863-1907 in the 1890s (Staff reporter, Bae Ji-sook, 9th November, 2009:

Through Western Eyes, Joseon Looked Peculiar

By Bae Ji-sook
Staff reporter
9th November, 2009

What was Korea Like in the 19th century in the eyes of a perfect stranger?
According to Thomas Edward Hallifax (1842-1908) from Britain, the first government-hired English teacher in Korean history, Joseon (1392-1910) was, expected, rather than unfamiliar – but its people were kind.

Hallifax who was hand-picked by King Gojong (1863-1907) for the role, wrote in a Japanese magazine in 1890 that Korean customs were strange: people wearing rag-like stockings and hats made of bamboo, and smoking a foot-long pipe.

The article, unearthed by Kim Sung-soo, said the writing is significant because he observed Joseon in the middle of change.

Despite the peculiar observations, Hallifax went on to note that Korean people were very polite.

"During the six years I have spent in Joseon, people were never hostile or vulgar. They have never forced me to do anything I wouldn't want to," he wrote under the titles of "Story of Joseon'.

Though he found the streets filled with litter at times, he praised Koreans for their unique beauty. "

"They are frank but mild. They are very good at guest service – they do it from the bottom of their heart," he wrote.

Hallifax, who had met many top-ranking officials in Joseon, mentioned King Going too.

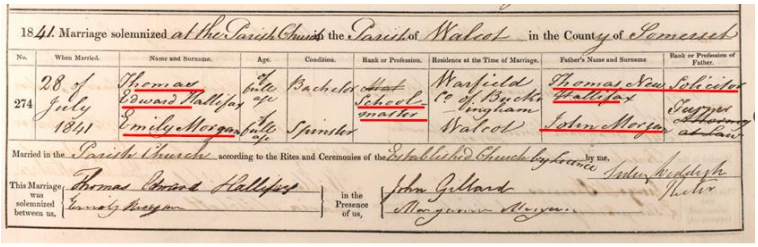
"He is a handsome and bright person. Still, he shares his power with the queen," citing that Queen Myeongseong (1851-1895) had a firm position inside the palace.

Referring to the work, Kim said, "the article shows how foreigners became accustomed to life in Korea. They were intimidated at first, but came to love it. "

Hallifax, from Westbury, Britain, arrived in Seoul in 1883 to work at Dongmunhak – the first English education institute in Korea. While working there, he taught several high-profile figures such as later independence fighter Namgung Eok.

When the school closed in 1886, he worked as an engineer. He went to Japan briefly, but returned in 1895 and passed away 13 years later. His body is buried in Yangwaiin, Seoul.

A565. Family records confirm before he left England, and prior to serving as a sailor for two years Thomas's was at the time of his first marriage to Emily Morgan "school master in or around Manfield co, Buckinghamshire" (Source: Somerset, England, Marriage Registers, Bonds and Allegations, 1754-1914 for Thomas New Hallifax; Marriage Registers: Walcot St Swithin, 1839-1843):



1841 Marriage solemnized at the Parish Church in the Parish of Walcot in the County of Somerset

No.	When Married	Name and Surname	Age	Condition	Rank or Profession	Residence at the Time of Marriage	Father's Name and Surname	Rank or Profession of Father
274	28 July 1841	Thomas Edward Hallifax	Full age	Bachelor	[illegible] School master	Warfield [illegible] Bucks	Thomas New Hallifax	Solicitor
		Emily Morgan	Full age	Spinster		Walcot	John Morgan	Surgeon [illegible] deceased

Married in the Parish Church according to the Rites and Ceremonies of the Established Church by Licence by me, Tarlton Bridgeh Rector

This Marriage was solemnized between us, Thomas Edward Hallifax, Emily Morgan

in the Presence of us, John Gillard, Margaret Morgan

A566. Submitted below is a portrait of Thomas Edward New Hallifax (1842-1908), born Westbury, England on the 6th August 1843 and died on Tuesday 24th November 1908 Korea (Image of Thomas Edward New Hallifax (1842-1908), shared by Nic Brokenshaw, 8th May 2016, Maidstone, England) and adjacent to the photograph is a facsimile of Thomas's obituary, Seoul Press, 26th November, 1908):

SEOUL PRESS.

November 26th, 1908.

OBITUARY.

We regret to announce the death of Mr. T. E. Hallifax which took place on Tuesday afternoon at 5.45. The funeral service will be held at the English Church of the Advent, Chong Tong, on Friday morning at 9.30. Friends are asked to accept this intimation.

Hallifax

A567. Thomas's headstone with cross missing is shown on the following page. The memorial statement that follows was published by the Yanghwajin Foreign Missionary Cemetery, in Seoul, South Korea.

A568. The memorial leaves no doubt Thomas left a most positive mark in his adopted homeland of South Korea, to which the Korea Customs Service showed their gratitude by funding a bilingual memorial for him for establishing Korea's first English Language School.

A569. Thomas Edward New Hallifax (1843-1908), was a favoured foreigner of King Goejong (1863-1907) and Queen Myeongseong (1851-1895).

A570. Thomas rests in Soul, South Korea at Yanghwajin Foreign Missionary Cemetery, Seoul, Seoul Special City, South Korea, (Plot: B-40), adjacent to his 17 year old daughter, Agnes Florence Hallifax (1879-1897), born from the union with his Japanese wife (name unknown) (Agnes is Darren and Dennis's 3rd great aunt (Name: Thomas Edward Hallifax; Gender: Male; Birth Date: 1842; Death Date: 1908; Cemetery: Yanghwajin Foreign Missionary Cemetery; Burial or Cremation Place: Seoul, Seoul Special City, South Korea; Children: Agnes Florence Hallifax).

Thomas Edward Hallifax (1842-1908)

Hallifax was a British teacher at Dongmunhak, and English teaching school established with the suggestion of the Inspector General of Customs, Mollendorff. His students include Namgung Eok and Hong Woogwan, the first Joseon officers to be hired by the Customs. He taught English in the Korean Empire for over 20 years, contributing to developing Joseon's Maritime Customs officers.

Meanwhile, as a telegraphic engineers, he was actively in the installation of a communication line (the South Line). After his death, he was buried next to his only daughter)of his Japanese wife), Agnes Florence.

Thomas Edward Hallifax

BIRTH	1842
DEATH	1908 (aged 65–66)
BURIAL	Yanghwajin Foreign Missionary Cemetery Seoul, Seoul Special City, South Korea Show Map
PLOT	B-40
MEMORIAL ID	77526368 · View Source

SHARE | SAVE TO | SUGGEST EDITS

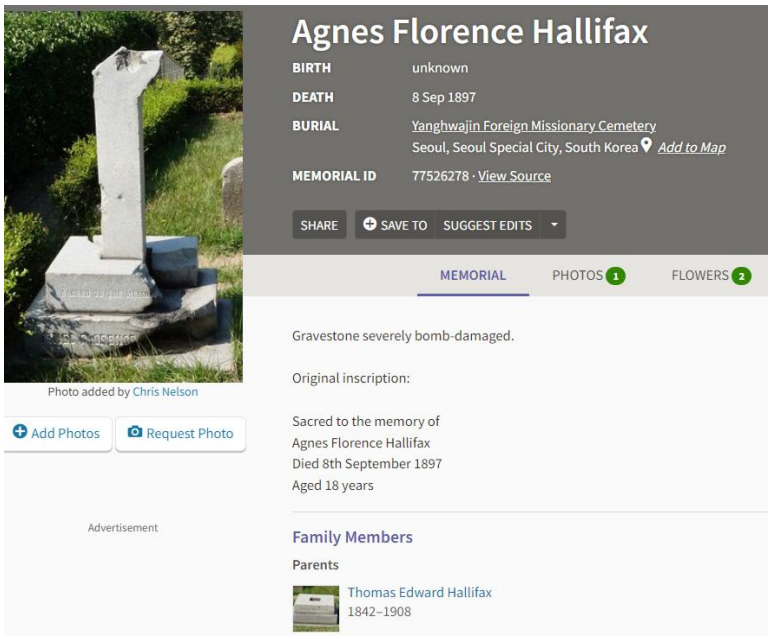
MEMORIAL | PHOTOS 3 | FLOWERS 1

Thomas's first wife was Annie Maria Blakeley (1843-1911). They had six issue from their union in 1862 in England. Their children were: Harry Mansell Hallifax (1863–1941); Charles Llewellyn Hallifax (1867–1901); Alfred Gordon Hallifax (1869–); Ernest Albert Hallifax (1871–1947); Annie Hallifax 1876–); Herbert Hallifax (1877–1973). About the time Herbert was born they divorced.

Thomas temporarily became a sailor to enable his travels to Japan. There in Tokyo, he met his Japanese wife (name unkown). They had a daughter later that year, 1879, Agnes Florence Hallifax (1879-1897).

Thomas was the son of Thomas Edward Hallifax (1819–1893) and Emily Morgan (1818–1861), and the grandson of Thomas New Hallifax (1789–1835) Sarah Maria Gaze (1791–1875).

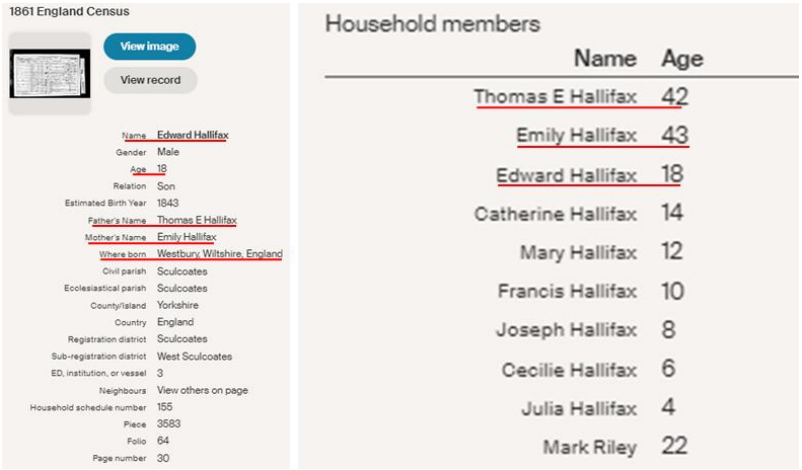
A571. Submitted below the headstone of his youngest daughter Agnes Florence Hallifax (1879-1897). Her headstone that has fallen into disrepair, is located next to her father's resting place and headstone at Yanghwajin Foreign Missionary Cemetery, Soul, South Korea:



A572. The researcher's family is most grateful for the online memorial creation by Chris Nelson, of the final resting place of Thomas Edward New Hallifax (1843-1908) and his youngest daughter, 18-year-old Agnes Florence Hallifax (1879-1897).

A573. The 1861 England Census confirms 18-year-old Thomas Edward New Hallifax, Telegraph Clerk, was both born in Westbury, Wiltshire. Confirming further that son "Edward" was the eldest of Thomas and Emily's children.

A574. The children's parents were not present when the census was taken and minded no doubt on the day by assistant teacher, Mark Riley, who bordered with the Hallifax family at the time the census was taken:

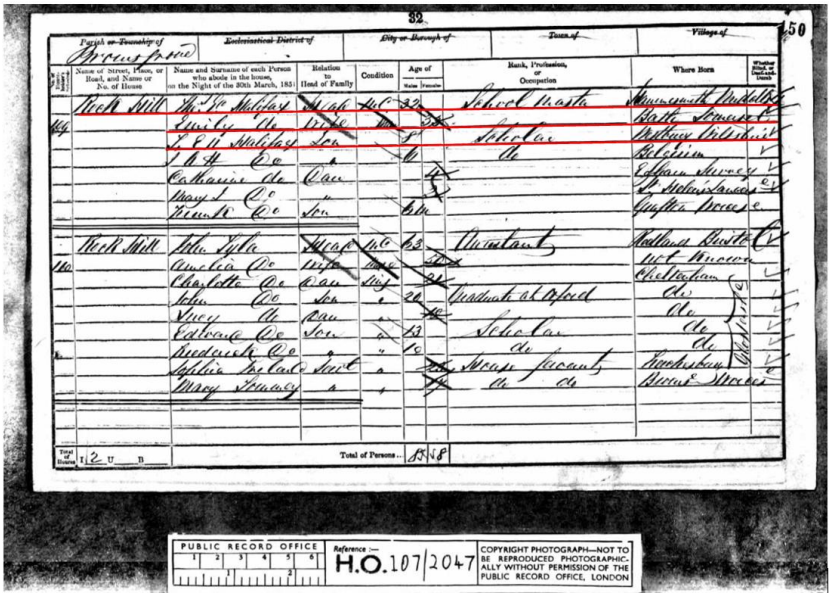


A575. Whereby the known life spans of Thomas "Edward" New Hallifax (1843-1908) siblings listed below are presently unknown except for John "Ambrose" Henry Hallifax (1844-1926) and Francis Hallifax (1850-1926):

- John Ambrose Henry Hallifax (1844-1926).
- Catherine Hallifax (1847-Unkown).
- Mary Hallifax (1849-Unkown).
- Francis Hallifax (1850-1926).
- Joseph Hallifax (1853-Unkown).
- Cecilie Hallifax (1855-Unkown).
- Julia Hallifax (1857-Unkown).

A576. The 1851 England Census shows Thomas "Edward" New Hallifax (1843-1908) was aged 8 years in 1851 and lived at home with parents Thomas Edward Hallifax (1819-1893) and Emily Hallifax (1818-1861) (nee Morgan) (born Bath, Somerset).

A577. The same record confirms his brother John "Ambrose" Henry Hallifax was aged 6 years in 1851 (1851 England Census; Name: Thomas Edward New Hallifax; Age: 8; Estimated Birth Year: about 1842; Relation: Son; Father's Name: Thomas E Hallifax; Mother's Name: Emily Hallifax; Gender: Male; Address: Rock Hill, Bromsgrove, Worcestershire; Where born: Westbury, Wiltshire, England; Civil parish: Sculcoates; Ecclesiastical parish: Sculcoates; County/Island, Yorkshire Country, England; Registration district: Sculcoates; Sub-registration district: West Sculcoates: ED, institution, or vessel, 3; Household schedule number: 155; Piece: 3583; Folio: 64; Page number: 30):

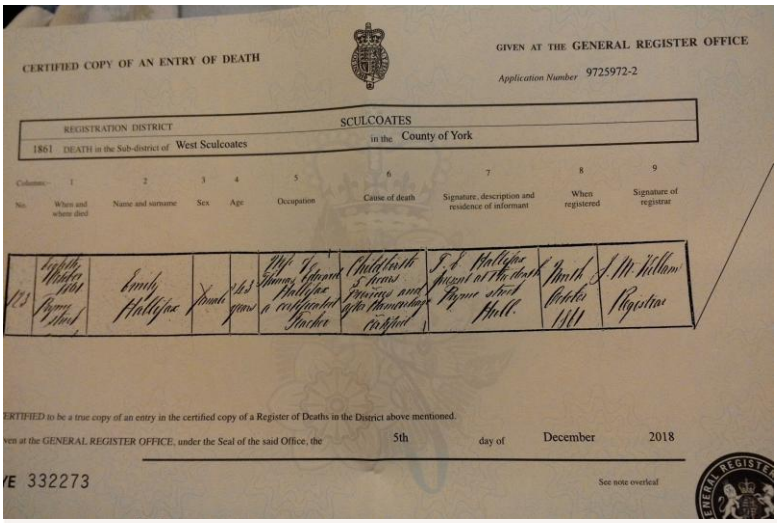

PUBLIC RECORD OFFICE
Reference —
H.O.107/2047
COPYRIGHT PHOTOGRAPH—NOT TO BE REPRODUCED PHOTOGRAPHICALLY WITHOUT PERMISSION OF THE PUBLIC RECORD OFFICE, LONDON

A578. John "Ambrose" Henry Hallifax (1844-1926) was not at home in 1861 when the 1861 England census was taken. It is believed that he was given his name Ambrose in honour of his paternal uncle Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) who is the researcher's 3rd great grandfather and who migrated to the colony of South Australia before 1847 (later the Colony of Victoria - 1854).

Dennis Lillee's 3rd great grandparents, Thomas & Emily Hallifax

A579. Thomas "Edward" [New] Hallifax's (1842-1908) mother, Emily Hallifax (1818-1861), nee Morgan, was aged only 43 years old when she died on the 9th October 1861. This was after the 1861 England census was taken.

A580. Her death on 9th October 1861 was registered December, 1861 (England & Wales, BMD Death Index, 1837-1915; Name: Emily Hallifax; Registration Quarter: Oct-Nov-Dec; Death Registration Place: Sculcoates, Yorkshire East Riding, United Kingdom; Death Date: December 1861; Inferred Death Place: Yorkshire East Riding, United Kingdom; Volume: 9d; Page: 116):



CERTIFIED COPY OF AN ENTRY OF DEATH

GIVEN AT THE GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE

Application Number 9725972-2

REGISTRATION DISTRICT SCULCOATES

1861 DEATH in the Sub-district of West Sculcoates in the County of York

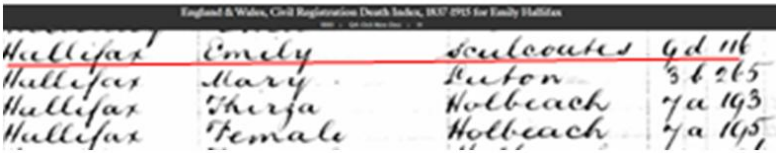
No.	When and where died	Name and surname	Sex	Age	Occupation	Cause of death	Signature, description and residence of informant	When registered	Signature of registrar
173	Eighth October 1861 Penny Street	Emily Hallifax	Female	43 years	Wife of Thomas Edward Hallifax a certificated Teacher	Child-birth 5 days Coma and after Convulsions 12 hours	E. T. Hallifax present at the death Penny street Hull.	Tenth October 1861	J. M. Hillam Registrar

CERTIFIED to be a true copy of an entry in the certified copy of a Register of Deaths in the District above mentioned.

Given at the GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE, under the Seal of the said Office, the 5th day of December 2018

VE 332273 See note overleaf

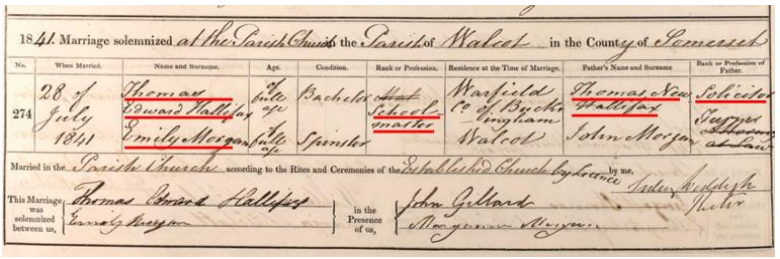
Name	Emily Hallifax
Registration Quarter	Oct-Nov-Dec
Death Registration Place	Sculcoates, Yorkshire East Riding, United Kingdom
Death Date	Dec. 1861
Inferred Death Place	Yorkshire East Riding, United Kingdom
Volume	9d
Page	116



England & Wales, Civil Registration Death Index, 1837-1915 for Emily Hallifax

Hallifax	Emily	Sculcoates	9d 116
Hallifax	Mary	Beeston	3b 265
Hallifax	Theresa	Holbeach	7a 193
Hallifax	Female	Holbeach	7a 195

A581. Emily and Thomas's marriage is submitted below (England Marriage Registers, Bonds and Allegations, 1754-1914; Name: Thomas Edward Hallifax: Gender: Male; Age: Full Age; Marriage or Bann Date: 28 Jul 1841; Marriage Place: Walcot St Swithin, Somerset, England; Parish as it Appears: Walcot; Father: Thomas New Hallifax: Spouse: Emily Morgan):



1841. Marriage solemnized at the Parish Church in the Parish of Walcot in the County of Somerset

No.	When Married.	Name and Surname.	Age.	Condition.	Rank or Profession.	Residence at the Time of Marriage.	Father's Name and Surname	Rank or Profession of Father.
274	28th July 1841	Thomas Edward Hallifax	Full age	Bachelor	Assistant School master	Warfield Co. of Berks	Thomas New Hallifax	Solicitor
		Emily Morgan	Full age	Spinster		Walcot	John Morgan	Surgeon deceased

Married in the Parish Church according to the Rites and Ceremonies of the Established Church by Licence by me, Sydney Godolphin Faber

This Marriage was solemnized between us, Thomas Edward Hallifax, Emily Morgan

In the Presence of us, John Gillard, Morgan Morgan

A582. The certificate confirms the father of the groom, Thomas Edward Hallifax (1819-1893) was a Solicitor. Thomas the elder is the elder brother of the researcher's 3rd great grandfather Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874).

A583. The marriage record further confirms that Dennis Keith Lillee's (1949-), M.B.E, A.M, 3rd great grandparents, Thomas and Emily Hallifax, nee Morgan married on 28th July, 1841 in Somerset, England. Subsequent evidence submitted for Darren John Halifax (1965-), B.A., will prove the same.

A584. Submitted below is Thomas Edward Hallifax's (1819-1893) birth record (England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975; Name: Thomas Edward Hallifax; Gender: Male; Birth Date: 8 Mar 1819; Baptism Date: 23 Jun 1841; Baptism Place: Warfield, Berkshire, England; Father: Thomas New Hallifax; Mother: Sarah Maria [*nee Gaze*], [*Italics mine*]: FHL Film Number: 1041155):

Name:	Thomas Edward Hallifax
Gender:	Male
Birth Date:	8 Mar 1819
Baptism Date:	23 Jun 1841
Baptism Place:	Warfield,Berkshire,England
Father:	Thomas New Hallifax
Mother:	Sarah Maria
FHL Film Number:	1041155

A585. Next submission is wife Emily's birth record showing she was baptised Emily Morgan, in Bath, Somerset, England on the 13th May 1818 (Emily Morgan in the England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975; Name: Emily Morgan; Gender: Female; Baptism Date: 13th May 1818; Baptism Place: Bath Abbey; Bath, Somerset, England; Father: Morgan; FHL Film Number: 865132):

Name	Emily Morgan
Gender	Female
Baptism Date	13 May 1818
Baptism Place	Bath Abbey,Bath,Somerset,England
Father	Morgan
FHL Film Number	865132

A586. As previously submitted, this Thomas Edward Hallifax (1819-1893) is the elder brother of Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874), John Lindsay Robert Guest's (1960-) 3rd great grandfather, and therefore the 3rd great uncle of the researchers siblings, Wendy, Ricky, Anita, Terry and Mitchell Guest and their 1st cousins Hay and Hanley. This is true also for the lineal ancestors of Anne Paul, and her Graham Paul.

A587. Further checking confirms Ambrose is second born son of Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) and Sarah Maria Gaze (1791- 1875) (England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975; Name: Ambrose William Hallifax; Gender: Male; Birth Date: 9 Apr 1821; Baptism Date: 23 Jun 1841; Baptism Place: Warfield, Berkshire, England; Father: Thomas New Hallifax; Mother Sarah Maria; FHL Film Number: 1041155):

Name:	Ambrose William Hallifax
Gender:	Male
Birth Date:	9 Apr 1821
Baptism Date:	23 Jun 1841
Baptism Place:	Warfield,Berkshire,England
Father:	Thomas New Hallifax
Mother:	Sarah Maria
FHL Film Number:	1041155

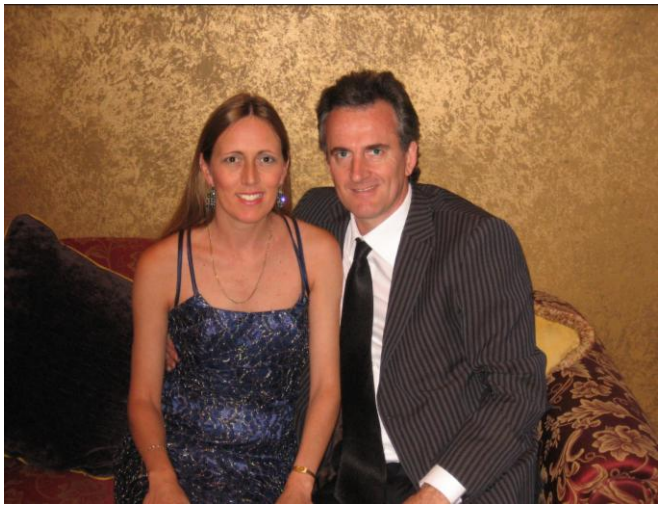
A588. Youngest of the three children born to Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) and Sarah Maria Gaze (1791-1875) is the previously submitted, Augustus New Hallifax [I] (1825-1902), Teacher and Magistrate of Melbourne, Victoria, who is the youngest brother of Thomas Edward Hallifax (1819-1`893, and Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874). Ambrose being confirmed earlier as the researcher John Lindsay Robert Guest's 3rd great grandfather.

A589. At this juncture the trace for Dennis, along with the trace for John, is paused to account for the patrilineal lineage of cousin Darren Halifax (1965-), and to substantiate his descent from Dennis and John's shared 4th great grandparents, Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1846) and Sarah Maria Hallifax (1793-1875) (nee Gaze).

This page is intentionally left blank.

Darren John Halifax's ascent to Thomas Hallifax & Sarah Gaze

A590. Darren John Halifax (1965-), B.A., of Perth Western Australia and his life partner of 26 years, Monica Cathrine Vandermeer are pictured below. Darren is without issue:



Parents – John Leonard Halifax and Lesley "June" Halifax (nee Johansen)

A591. Darren was born 1965 in Nowra, New South Wales (NSW) and he is the first-born son of the late John Leonard Halifax (1933-2015) born in Subiaco, Western Australia, and his wife Lesley June Halifax (1937-), (nee Johansen), born 10th February 1937 also in Subiaco, Western Australia. Lesley prefers the name June:

NEW SOUTH WALES

REGISTER OF BIRTHS

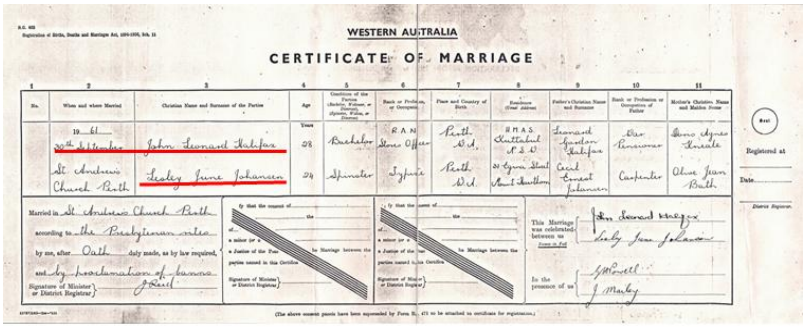
Child	
Surname	HALIFAX
Other names	Darren John
Sex	Male
Date of birth	
Place of birth	Nowra (Shoalhaven District Memorial Hospital)
Parents of Child	
Father – Surname	HALIFAX
Other names	John Leonard
Occupation	Naval Officer
Age	31 years
Place of birth	Perth, Western Australia
Mother – Surname	HALIFAX
Maiden surname	JOHANSEN
Other names	Lesley June
Age	27 years
Place of birth	Perth, Western Australia
Date of marriage	
Place of marriage	Perth, Western Australia
Previous children of marriage	Leanna 1 year
Informant	J.L. HALIFAX, father, Swanview Motel, 1 Preston Street, Como, Western Australia
Particulars of registration	By authority J.B. Holliday, Principal Registrar; Date; Number 17915

I, John Brettell Holliday, hereby certify that the above is a true copy of particulars recorded in a register kept by me. Dated: 22nd April, 1981.

J.B. Holliday

Sydney, N.S.W., Australia. Principal Registrar.

A592. Darren's parents, John and Joan Halifax's (1965-) were married on the 30th September 1961:



WESTERN AUSTRALIA

CERTIFICATE OF MARRIAGE

No.	When and where Married	Christian Name and Surname of the Parties	Age	Condition of the Parties (Bachelor, Widower, or Spinster)	Rank or Profession or Occupation	Place and Country of Birth	Residence (Usual Address)	Father's Christian Name and Surname	Rank or Profession or Occupation of Father	Mother's Christian Name and Maiden Name
	1961 30th September St Andrews Church Perth	John Leonard Halifax	28	Bachelor	R.A.N. Stores Officer	Perth W.A.	H.M.A.S. Kuttabul N.S.W.	Leonard Gordon Halifax	Shop Proprietor	Norma Agnes Emerald
		Lesley June Johansen	24	Spinster	Typist	Perth W.A.	20 Lyons Street Mount Hawthorn	Cecil Ernest Johansen	Carpenter	Olive Jean Bath

Married in St Andrews Church Perth according to the Presbyterian rites by me, after Oath duly made, as by law required, and by proclamation of banns

Signature of Minister or District Registrar: J Reid

This Marriage was celebrated between us: John Leonard Halifax, Lesley June Johansen

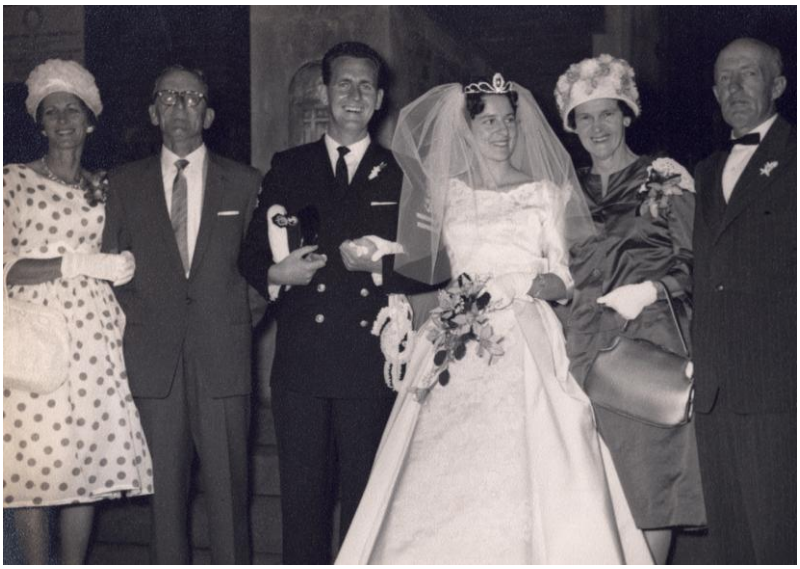
In the presence of us: G M Powell, J Marley

Registered at

Date

District Registrar

A593. They are pictured below moments after they were married:



A594. They are joined in the above photograph by John's elder sister, Norma Phyllis Powell (nee Halifax) to the left with Norma and John's father, Leonard Gordon Halifax. The couple pictured far right are June's parents, Olive Jean Johansen (nee Bath) and Cecil Ernest Johansen.

A595. June Halifax (nee Johansen) is the eldest of four children born to Olive and Cecil Johansen. Her younger siblings, are Ernest James Johansen (1942-), Elizabeth Joy White (nee Johansen) (1943-1980), and Hellen Jean Selkirk (nee Johansen) (1945-). All four children were born and raised in Perth, Western Australia. Sadly, Elizabeth passed away in 1980 aged 37.

A596. Darren's younger brother Wayne Andrew Halifax (1967-) was born on the 12th June 1967 in Eastwood NSW, whilst first born issue of John Leonard Halifax (1933-2015) and his wife June Halifax (1937-) (nee Johansen) is Leanne Lesley Wherry (1964-) (nee Halifax).

A597. Leanne was born in Camperdown, NSW on the 3rd January 1964. Leanne married Rodney George Wherry (1958-) and had issue, Jonathon Rodney Wherry, born 1997, presently 25 years old.

A598. Darren and his immediate family are pictured below enjoying his sister's wedding day, on the 10th October 1993. Left to right is Darren John Halifax, Rodney George Wherry, Leanne Lesley Wherry (nee Halifax), Lesley "June" Halifax (nee Johansen), John Leonard Halifax and Darren and Leanne's brother Wayne Andrew Halifax:

A599. Darren and Wayne are presently without issue. They are further made last of the senior Hallifax males bearing that name, springing from the original senior branch traced back to the Hallifax family registered pedigree Ms 7D 14/45, to whom Dennis Keith Lillee (1949-), and John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) also descend.

A600. Darren, Wayne and Leanne's father, John Leonard Halifax's (Hallifax) (1933-2015) was a career naval officer in the Royal Australian Navy.

A601. Submitted below is his enlistment record which confirms he was born on the 27th February 1933, and records also his marriage to June Johansen *[Lesley June Johansen, born 10th February 1937], [Italics mine]* (Australia, World War II Military Service Records, 1939-1945; Record details: Name: John Leonard Halifax (Hallifax); Birth Date: 27th Feb 1933; Birth Place: Perth, Western Australia; Year range: 1939-1948; Enlistment Place: Sydney; Service Number: R45796; Spouse: June Halifax; Next of Kin: Halifax June; Series Description: A6769: RAN, Navy Officers):

Name	John Leonard Halifax
Birth Date	27 Feb 1933
Birth Place	Perth, Western Australia
Year range	1939-1948
Enlistment Place	Sydney
Service Number	R45796
Spouse	June Halifax
Next of Kin	Halifax June
Series Description	A6769: RAN, Navy Officers

A602. John Leonard Halifax (1933-2015) rose to the rank of Lieutenant in the Royal Australian Navy.

A603. His service records show he served three terms between the 21st August 1951, aged 18, until he retired (for the first time) on May 10th 1973. In 1974 he was asked by Naval command to come out of retirement to work at the newly established Harold E. Holt USA Naval Base in Exmouth, Western Australia. He did so, and lived and worked there until his official retirement in 1976, aged 43.

A604. During his navy service years, Lieutenant John Halifax (1933-2015) worked on His Majesty's Royal Australian Navy ships HMAS Warrego, HMAS Leeuwin, HMAS Melville, HMAS Parkes, HMAS Swan and HMAS Melbourne, as well at the RAN bases HMAS Watson, HMAS Cerberus, HMAS Albatross, HMAS Kuttabul, and the submarine base HMAS Platypus in Sydney. Below is a photograph of John Leonard Halifax (1933-2015), third from the left, on board the HMAS Swan, with some of his Royal Navy peers:

A605. The next photograph of him was taken at the Harold E. Holt Naval Base, Exmouth, Western Australia, circa 1975/6. John is leading the march and pictured saluting:

OFFICIAL U.S. NAVY PHOTOGRAPH
— RELEASED —
CREDIT PHOTOGRAPH BY JO2 L. W. Luther

A606. John took leave on the 20th April 1959, whilst serving on HMAS Swan south of New Zealand, to return to Perth to visit his ailing mother Doris Agnes Halifax (nee Kneale) who suddenly became very unwell. She passed away 10 days later aged 54.

A607. On the 30th of September 1961, whilst residing at HMAS Kuttabul (Sydney, NSW), John briefly returned to Perth to marry his sweetheart Lesley June Johansen (1937-). A week later they travelled back to Sydney and set up their home near HMAS Kuttabul.

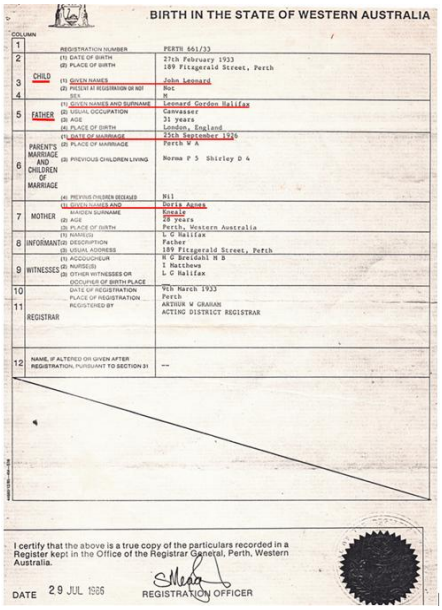
A608. Whilst working on HMAS Melbourne in November 1963, John was recommended for special duties, and soon after promoted to Acting Sub Lieutenant. Then, on the 24th February 1964, seven weeks after the birth of his first-born Leanne Lesley (3rd January 1964), he was promoted to Lieutenant.

A609. After the birth of sons Darren John (29th April 1965) and Wayne Andrew (12th June 1967), he and wife June and the 3 children moved to Perth, Western Australia, where he worked at HMAS Leeuwin Naval Base until May 10th 1973.

A610. John was so highly regarded by the sailors under his command at Collins - Walton Barracks, HMAS Leeuwin, that both he and Sidney Harold Turner, were honoured at a special dedication dinner in 2012. He served a total of 22.5 years in the Royal Australian Navy. John passed away on the 2nd December, 2015. His obituary reads:

> *"Lt John Leonard Halifax. Fair Winds and Following Seas. Stand proud Sir. We salute you".*

A611. John Leonard Halifax's (1933-2015) Certificate of Service records are available for examination. Submitted below is an extract of John's birth record (Western Australia, Birth record; Name: John Leonard Halifax; Birth registration number: 86981; Date of birth: 27th February, 1933, Registrar General: R.J. Little, 7th April, 1949; Registrar General's Department, Perth, Western Australia; produced 5th December, 1950):



BIRTH IN THE STATE OF WESTERN AUSTRALIA

COLUMN		
1	REGISTRATION NUMBER	PERTH 661/33
2	CHILD (1) DATE OF BIRTH (2) PLACE OF BIRTH	27th February 1933 189 Fitzgerald Street, Perth
3	CHILD (1) GIVEN NAMES	John Leonard
4	CHILD (2) PRESENT AT REGISTRATION OR NOT / SEX	Not M
5	FATHER (1) GIVEN NAMES AND SURNAME	Leonard Gordon Halifax
	FATHER (2) USUAL OCCUPATION	Canvasser
	FATHER (3) AGE	31 years
	FATHER (4) PLACE OF BIRTH	London, England
6	PARENTS' MARRIAGE AND CHILDREN OF MARRIAGE (1) DATE OF MARRIAGE	25th September 1926
	PARENTS' MARRIAGE AND CHILDREN OF MARRIAGE (2) PLACE OF MARRIAGE	Perth W A
	PARENTS' MARRIAGE AND CHILDREN OF MARRIAGE (3) PREVIOUS CHILDREN LIVING	Norma P 5 Shirley D 4
	PARENTS' MARRIAGE AND CHILDREN OF MARRIAGE (4) PREVIOUS CHILDREN DECEASED	Nil
7	MOTHER (1) GIVEN NAMES AND MAIDEN SURNAME	Doris Agnes Kneale
	MOTHER (2) AGE	28 years
	MOTHER (3) PLACE OF BIRTH	Perth, Western Australia
8	INFORMANT (1) NAME(S) (2) DESCRIPTION (3) USUAL ADDRESS	L G Halifax Father 189 Fitzgerald Street, Perth
9	WITNESSES (1) ACCOUCHEUR (2) NURSE(S) (3) OTHER WITNESSES OR OCCUPIER OF BIRTH PLACE	R C Breidahl M B I Matthews L G Halifax
10	DATE OF REGISTRATION	9th March 1933
11	REGISTRAR PLACE OF REGISTRATION REGISTERED BY	Perth ARTHUR W GRAHAM ACTING DISTRICT REGISTRAR
12	NAME, IF ALTERED OR GIVEN AFTER REGISTRATION, PURSUANT TO SECTION 31	---

I certify that the above is a true copy of the particulars recorded in a Register kept in the Office of the Registrar General, Perth, Western Australia.

DATE 29 JUL 1966 REGISTRATION OFFICER

A612. John Leonard Halifax's (1933-2015) burial record below shows he passed away on 2nd December 2015 (Australia and New Zealand, Find A Grave Index, 1800s-Current; Record details; Name: John Leonard Halifax (Hallifax); Birth Date: 1933; Death Date: 2 Dec 2015; Cemetery: Karrakatta Cemetery and Crematorium; Burial or Cremation Place, Karrakatta, Nedlands City, Western Australia, Australia):

Name	John Leonard Halifax
Birth Date	1933
Death Date	2 Dec 2015
Cemetery	Karrakatta Cemetery and Crematorium
Burial or Cremation Place	Karrakatta, Nedlands City, Western Australia, Australia

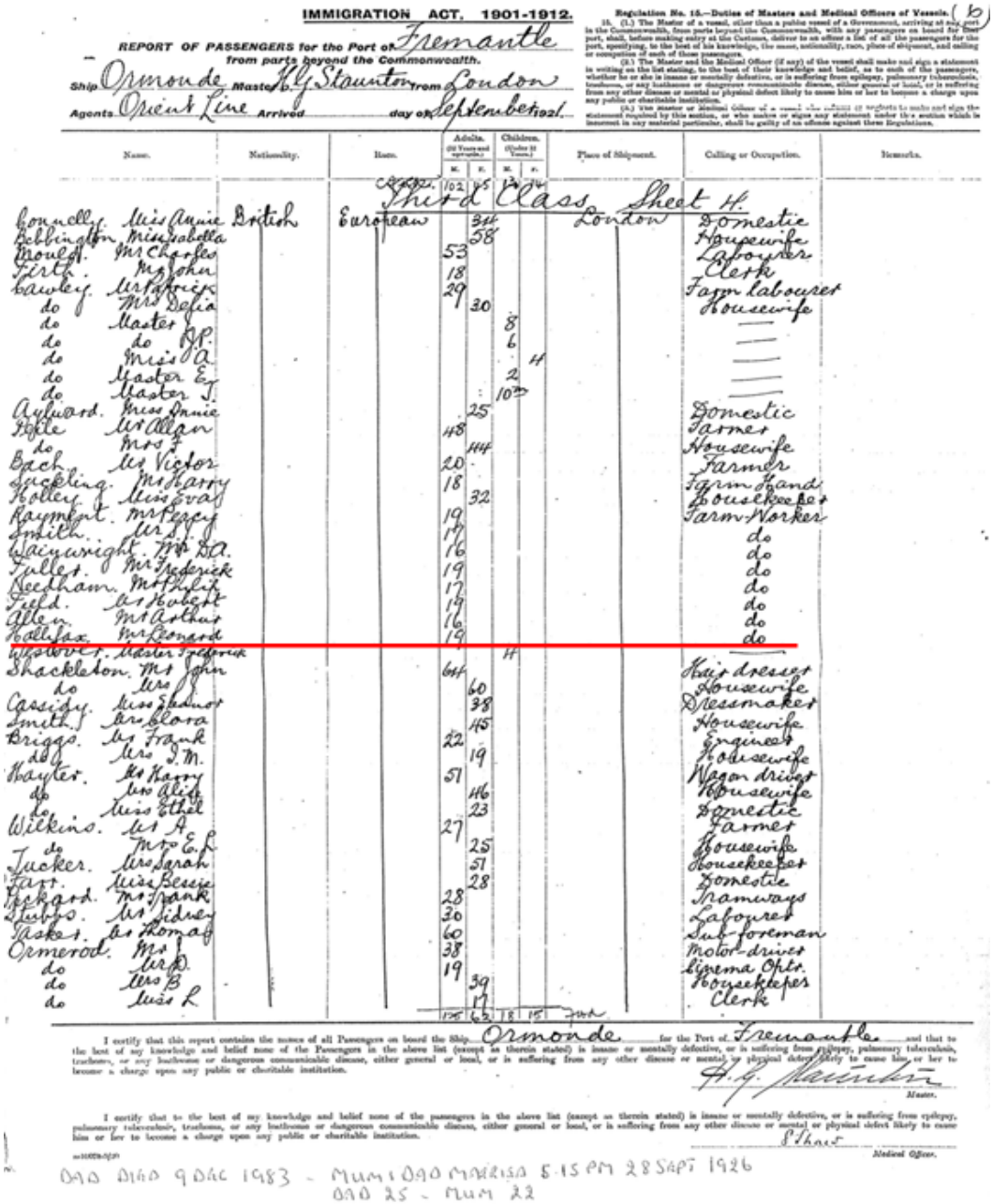
A613. John is the only son of Leonard and Doris and the younger brother of eldest Norma Phyllis Halifax (Hallifax), nee Powell (1927-2013) and Shirley Doris Lillee (1929-2014) nee Hallifax, and is Dennis Keith Lillee's maternal uncle.

A614. Darren and Dennis's cousins, born from Norma and George Henry Powell's ("Harry") union, include daughter and eldest issue Maxine Matthews (nee Powell), son Gregory Leonard Powell, and youngest, daughter Debbie McCavana (nee Powell).

A615. Maxine married Rodney Matthews and had issue, son Paul and daughter Richelle. Greg and his wife Margaret produced two daughters, Vanessa and Donna. Whilst Debbie and her husband Colin McCavana, also produced two offspring, daughter Tracy and son Craig.

A616. Darren and Dennis's grandfather, Leonard Gordon Hallifax (1904-1983) arrived in Fremantle, Western Australia on board the ship Ormonde in September, 1921.

A617. The hand written note visible at the foot of the record submitted on this page, was made by his only son, John Leonard Halifax (Hallifax) (1933-2015), confirming his parents' marriage and the date of his father, Leonard's passing.



IMMIGRATION ACT, 1901-1912.

REPORT OF PASSENGERS for the Port of Fremantle from parts beyond the Commonwealth.

Ship Ormonde Master H.G. Staunton from London

Agents Orient Line Arrived day of September 1921.

Regulation No. 15.—Duties of Masters and Medical Officers of Vessels. (b)

15. (1.) The Master of a vessel, other than a public vessel of a Government, arriving at any port in the Commonwealth, from ports beyond the Commonwealth, with any passengers on board for that port, shall, before making entry at the Customs, deliver to an officer a list of all the passengers for the port, specifying, to the best of his knowledge, the name, nationality, race, place of shipment, and calling or occupation of each of those passengers.

(2.) The Master and the Medical Officer (if any) of the vessel shall make and sign a statement in writing on the list stating, to the best of their knowledge and belief, as to each of the passengers, whether he or she is insane or mentally defective, or is suffering from epilepsy, pulmonary tuberculosis, trachoma, or any loathsome or dangerous communicable disease, either general or local, or is suffering from any other disease or mental or physical defect likely to cause him or her to become a charge upon any public or charitable institution.

(3.) The master or Medical Officer of a vessel who refuses or neglects to make and sign the statement required by this section, or who makes or signs any statement under this section which is incorrect in any material particular, shall be guilty of an offence against these Regulations.

Name.	Nationality.	Rate.	Adults. (16 Years and upwards) M.	Adults. (16 Years and upwards) F.	Children. (Under 16 Years.) M.	Children. (Under 16 Years.) F.	Place of Shipment.	Calling or Occupation.	Remarks.
		Cargo.	102	45	12	14			
			First & Second Class Sheet H.						
Connelly. Miss Annie	British	European		34			London	Domestic	
Bellington. Miss Isabella				58				Housewife	
Mowatt. Mrs Charles			53					Labourer	
Firth. Mr John			18					Clerk	
Bawley. Mr Patrick			29					Farm Labourer	
do Mrs Delia				30				Housewife	
do Master P.					8			—	
do do P.					6		14	—	
do Miss A.						4		—	
do Master E.					2			—	
do Master J.					10m			—	
Aylward. Miss Annie				25				Domestic	
Hoole Mr Allan			48					Farmer	
do Mrs J.				44				Housewife	
Bach. Mr Victor			20					Farmer	
Suckling. Mr Harry			18					Farm Hand	
Rollett. Miss Eva				32				Housekeeper	
Raymont. Mr Percy			19					Farm Worker	
Smith. Mr J.			17					do	
Wainwright. Mr D.A.			16					do	
Fullet. Mr Frederick			19					do	
Needham. Mr Philip			17					do	
Field. Mr Robert			19					do	
Allen. Mr Arthur			16					do	
Hallifax. Mr Leonard			19					do	
Woodover. Master Frederick					11			—	
Shackleton. Mr John			64					Hair dresser	
do Mrs				60				Housewife	
Cassidy. Miss Eleanor				38				Dressmaker	
Smith. Mrs Flora				45				Housewife	
Briggs. Mr Frank			22					Engineer	
do Mrs J.M.				19				Housewife	
Hayter. Mr Harry			51					Wagon driver	
do Mrs Alice				46				Housewife	
do Miss Ethel				23				Domestic	
Wilkins. Mr A.			27					Farmer	
do Mrs E.F.				25				Housewife	
Tucker. Mrs Sarah				51				Housekeeper	
Farr. Miss Bessie				28				Domestic	
Pickard. Mr Frank			28					Tramways	
Stubbs. Mr Sidney			30					Labourer	
Tasker. Mr Thomas			60					Sub-foreman	
Ormerod. Mrs			38					Motor-driver	
do Mr D.			19					Cinema Optr.	
do Mrs B.				39				Housekeeper	
do Miss L.				17				Clerk	
			105	63	18	15	Total		

I certify that this report contains the names of all Passengers on board the Ship Ormonde for the Port of Fremantle and that to the best of my knowledge and belief none of the Passengers in the above list (except as therein stated) is insane or mentally defective, or is suffering from epilepsy, pulmonary tuberculosis, trachoma, or any loathsome or dangerous communicable disease, either general or local, or is suffering from any other disease or mental or physical defect likely to cause him or her to become a charge upon any public or charitable institution.

H.G. Staunton
Master.

I certify that to the best of my knowledge and belief none of the passengers in the above list (except as therein stated) is insane or mentally defective, or is suffering from epilepsy, pulmonary tuberculosis, trachoma, or any loathsome or dangerous communicable disease, either general or local, or is suffering from any other disease or mental or physical defect likely to cause him or her to become a charge upon any public or charitable institution.

P Shaw
Medical Officer.

DAD DAD 9 DAC 1983 - MUM DAD MARRIED 5.15 PM 28 SEPT 1926
DAD 25 - MUM 22

A618. Suffice to say, it is the trace beyond John, Shirley and Norma's father Leonard Gordon Hallifax (1904-1983), which makes for the same lineage enjoyed by Darren, Dennis, their siblings and offspring, with their shared descent from Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) and Sarah Maria Gaze (1791-1885), the researcher, John L.R. Guest's (1960-) 4th great grandparents.

This page is intentionally left blank.

SHARED ANCIENT LINEAL BLOODLINES

4th great grandparents Thomas New Hallifax & Sarah Maria Gaze

A619. The 3rd maternal great grandfather of the researcher, John L.R. Guest (1960-), and his forementioned siblings, offspring and cousins, and who all enjoy descent from Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) and Harriet Hallifax (1828-1863) nee Richards, is the middle brother of three, born to Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) and Sarah Maria Hallifax (1791-1875), nee Gaze, as shown below:

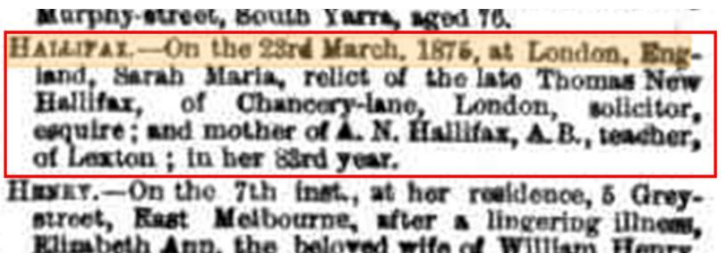
- **Thomas Edward Hallifax (1819-1893)** (England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975; Record details – Name: Thomas Edward Hallifax; Gender: Male; Birth Date: 8th March 1819; Baptism Date: 23 June 1841; Baptism Place: Warfield, Berkshire, England; Father: Thomas New Hallifax; Mother: Sarah Maria; FHL Film Number: 1041155) **(Dennis Keith Lillee, 1949- and Darren John Halifax, 1965- 3rd great grandfather).**

- **Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874)** (England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975; Record details – Name: Ambrose William Hallifax; Gender: Male; Birth Date: 9th April 1821; Baptism Date: 23 June 1841; Baptism Place: Warfield, Berkshire, England; Father: Thomas New Hallifax; Mother: Sarah Maria; FHL Film Number: 1041155) **(John Lindsay Robert Guest 1960-) 3rd great grandfather).**

- **Augustus New Hallifax [I] (1825-1902)** (Source: The Australasian, Melbourne, Victoria, Saturday 12th June 1875, Page 27, Family Notices; Ibid, NSW Teacher Applications and School Records, 1850-1960; Name: Augustus New Hallifax [I], 1825-1902) [mine].

A620. The year after Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) died, his younger brother, Augustus New Hallifax (1825-1902) , then of Lexton, Victoria (near Ballarat), and still engaged in teaching (refer previous articles: A177-A178, pp 55-56), announced the families bereavement of the passing of mother, Sarah Maria Hallifax (1791-1875), relic of their father, Thomas New Hallifax, Solicitor, Esquire (The Australasian, Melbourne, Victoria, Saturday 12th June 1875, Page 27, Family Notices):

> HALLIFAX. - On the 28th March, 1875, at London, England, Sarah Maria, relict of the late Thomas New Hallifax, of Chancery-Lane, London, solicitor, esquire; and mother of A. N. Hallifax, A.B., teacher, Lexton [Victoria, Australia]; passed away in her 83rd year [Mine]:


Murphy-street, South Yarra, aged 76.

HALLIFAX.—On the 28rd March, 1875, at London, England, Sarah Maria, relict of the late Thomas New Hallifax, of Chancery-lane, London, solicitor, esquire; and mother of A. N. Hallifax, A.B., teacher, of Lexton; in her 83rd year.

HENRY.—On the 7th inst., at her residence, 5 Grey-street, East Melbourne, after a lingering illness, Elizabeth Ann, the beloved wife of William Henry

A621. Re-submitted below is a photograph of the researcher's 4th great grandmother, Sarah, and also the 4th great grandparents of Ann Paul, Dennis Lillee and Darren Halifax (Present Hallifax Clan Chief).

A622. The original was taken in Islington, photographic studio circa 1874 and sent to her granddaughter Harriet Maria Hallifax (1851-1910), the researcher's 2nd great aunt, the daughter of Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874), the researcher's 3rd great grandfather and 3rd great uncle of Ann, Dennis and Darren. The original photograph is held in safe keeping by Anne Paul, and is shared as a facsimile in this publication:

Sarah Maria Hallifax (1791-1875), nee Gaze
(aged 82 years circa, 1873)

A623. The father of Ambrose and his two brothers, elder brother Thomas and youngest brother Augustus Hallifax, namely Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835), was a qualified solicitor:

WILLIAM T. T. HALL. 1715—1886. BEABAZON HALLOWES.

Wharf, and curate of St. George the Martyr, Queen Square, London. [10]

Hallett, James, s. James, of St. Andrew's, Holborn, arm. PEMBROKE COLL., matric. 16 May, 1748, aged 18; of Dunmow Priory, Essex, died 1767.

Hallett, James, s. John, of London, arm. QUEEN'S COLL., matric. 24 Jan., 1766, aged 17; created M.A. 1 Dec., 1769, and also D.C.L. 8 July, 1773. Clerk of Higham, near Canterbury, died May, 1823.

Hallett, James Hughes, ex. Charles, of Bridge, Kent, cler. ORIEL COLL., matric. 25 May, 1809, aged 18; B.A. 1813, M.A. 1832, rector of Birchott, Kent, 1836, vicar of Waltham with Petham, Kent, 1837.

Hallett, John, s. James, of Shillingston, Dorset, pleb. EXETER COLL., matric. 15 June, 1715, aged 17; B.A. 1719.

Hallett, John Hothersall, s. Richard Hothersall, of Exmouth, Devon, cler. WORCESTER COLL., matric. 13 Feb., 1795, aged 18; B.A. 1798 (as

Hallifax, John Savile, ex. Thomas, of Finsbury Square, London, arm. TRINITY COLL., matric. 15 Oct., 1823, aged 19; B.A. 1827, M.A. 1830, rector (and patron) of Groton, Suffolk, 1837, until his death 6 March, 1874.

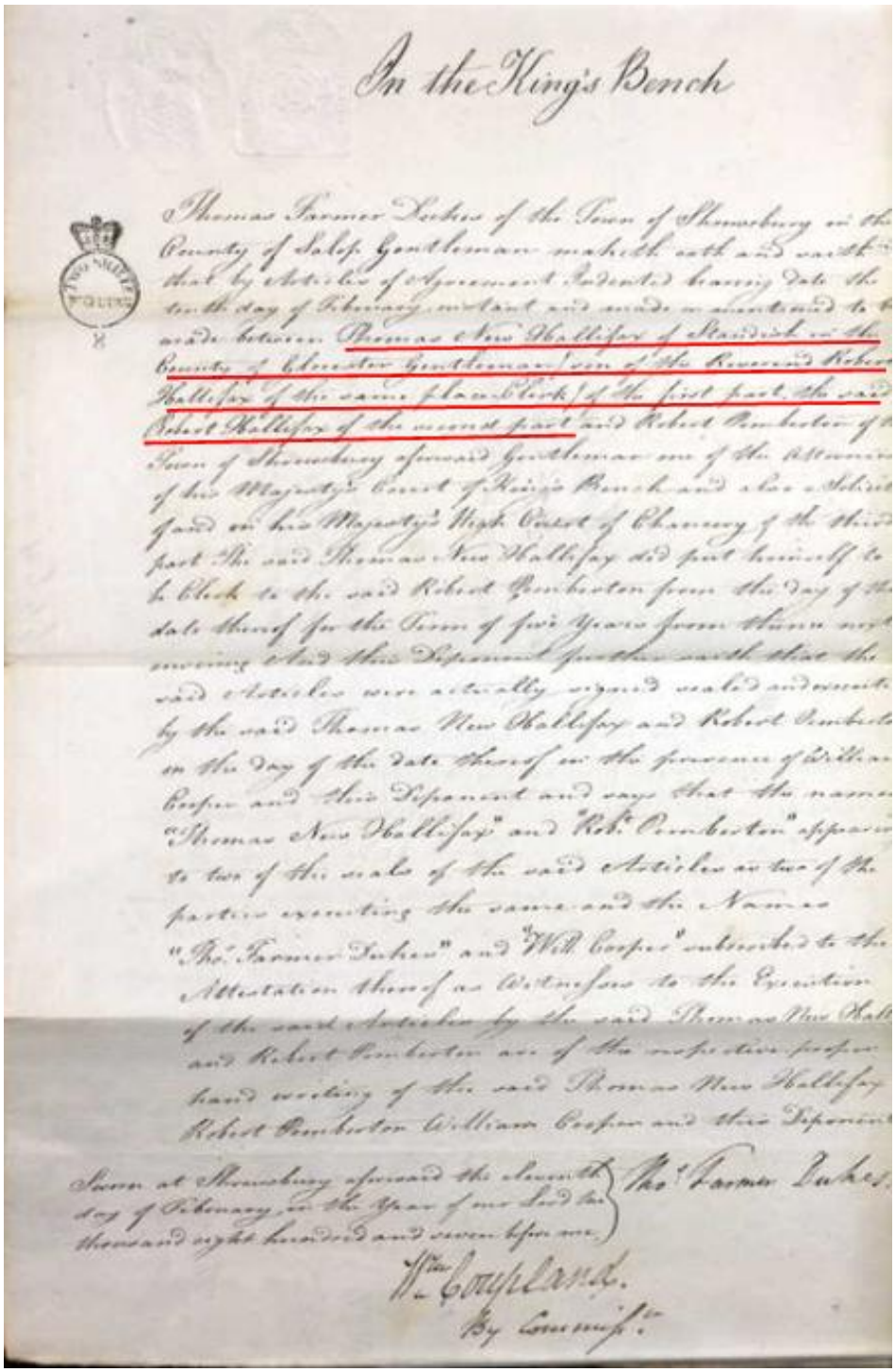
Hallifax, Joseph, ex. John, of Stourbridge, co. Stafford, cler. QUEEN'S COLL., matric. 10 June, 1747, aged 18; B.A. 1751, M.A. 1754, rector of [illegible], Cumberland, 1755-9, and of Ireton, near Ashbourne, 1859, until his death 8 Nov., 1882.

Hallifax, Robert, s. Thomas, of Reading, Berks, gent. LINCOLN COLL., matric. 4 Dec., 1730, aged 20; demy MAGDALEN COLL. 1730-9, B.A. 1734, M.A. 1763, vicar of Standish with Hardwicke, co. Gloucester (J.P.), 1765, until his death 13 Sep., 1838, [illegible] 92.

Hallifax, Savile, ex. Thomas, of London, gent. TRINITY COLL., matric. 28 Jan., 1[illegible], aged 18; his father was Lord Mayor of London 1777.

Hallinge, Francis, s. William, of Monmouth, pleb. BALLIOL COLL., matric. 7 May, 1741, aged 18.

A624. A companion document shows Thomas senior was a solicitor by profession UK, Articles of Clerkship, 1756-1874; and that his father is Reverend Robert Hallifax (Clerk's Name: Thomas New Hallifax; Clerk's Father: Reverend Robert Hallifax; Attorney: Robert Pemberton; Filing Date: 20 Mar 1807; Parish or Town: Standish; County: Gloucestershire):



In the King's Bench

Thomas Farmer Parkes of the Town of Shrewsbury in the County of Salop Gentleman maketh oath and saith that by Articles of Agreement Indented bearing date the ... day of February instant and made or mentioned to be made between Thomas New Hallifax of Standish in the County of Gloucester Gentleman son of the Reverend Robert Hallifax of the same place Clerk of the first part the said Robert Hallifax of the second part and Robert Pemberton of the Town of Shrewsbury aforesaid Gentleman one of the Attorneys of his Majesty's Court of King's Bench and also Solicitor and in his Majesty's High Court of Chancery of the third part The said Thomas New Hallifax did put himself to be Clerk to the said Robert Pemberton from the Day of the date thereof for the Term of five Years from thence next ensuing and this Deponent further saith that the said Articles were actually signed sealed and executed by the said Thomas New Hallifax and Robert Pemberton on the Day of the date thereof in the presence of William Cooper and this Deponent and says that the names "Thomas New Hallifax" and "Robt Pemberton" appearing to two of the seals of the said Articles as two of the parties executing the same and the Names "Tho.s Farmer Parkes" and "Will Cooper" subscribed to the Attestation thereof as Witnesses to the Execution of the said Articles by the said Thomas New Hallifax and Robert Pemberton are of the respective proper hand writing of the said Thomas New Hallifax Robert Pemberton William Cooper and this Deponent

Sworn at Shrewsbury aforesaid the eleventh day of February in the Year of our Lord One thousand eight hundred and seven before me

Tho.s Farmer Parkes.

Wm Coupland.
By Comm.s.r

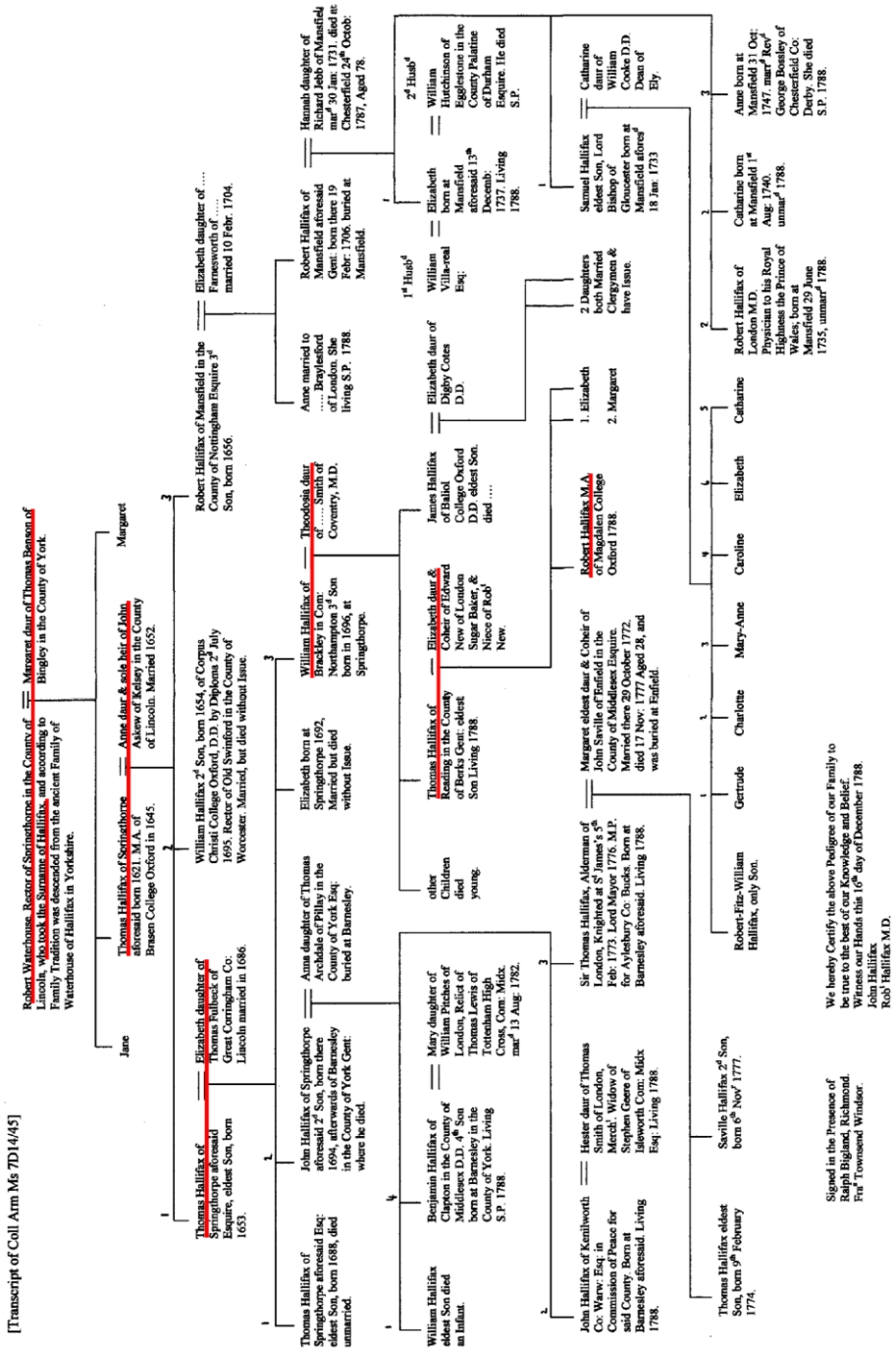
A625. Thomas New Hallifax's (1789-1835) birth record below confirms he is the son of Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838) of Standish Gloucestershire, England, and Sarah Hallifax [*nee Sentence*] (England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975; Name: Thomas Hallifax; Gender: Male; Birth Date: 14 Jun 1789; Baptism Date: 30 Aug 1789; Baptism Place: Standish, Gloucester, England; Father: Robert Hallifax; Mother: Sarah; FHL Film Number: 423303, 477776) [Italics mine]:

Name:	Thomas Hallifax
Gender:	Male
Birth Date:	14 Jun 1789
Baptism Date:	30 Aug 1789
Baptism Place:	Standish,Gloucester,England
Father:	Robert Hallifax
Mother:	Sarah
FHL Film Number:	423303, 477776

A626. His parents, Robert Hallifax (1760-1838) and Sarah Sentence(1760-1832) married on May 1st, 1782 are the researcher, John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) of Melbourne, Victoria, Australia and Dennis Keith Lillee (1949-) and Darren John Halifax (1965-), shared 5th great grandparents, (England, Select Marriages, 1538-1973; Record details – Name: Sarah Sentence; Gender: Female; Marriage Date: 1 May 1782; Marriage Place: Saint Martin In The Fields, Westminster, London, England; Spouse: Robert Hallifax; FHL Film Number: 561156, 561157, 561158, 942 B4HA V. 25, 942 B4HA V. 66).

5th to 10th great grandparents

A627. Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) is the son of **Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838), M.A of Magdalen College, Oxford who is known to the College of Arms Hallifax family pedigree Ms 7D14/45, 16th December 1788.** He is easily identified below by the researcher markings of his lineage through the family chart and taken to his namesake lineal ancestor, Reverend Robert Hallifax (1586-1638), who was the last of the line to be born with the surname Waterhouse. This earlier Robert Hallifax (Waterhouse) (1586-1638) married the researcher's 10th great grandmother, Margert Benson, also listed below. They are the researcher's 10th great grandparents, and ditto for Anne Paul, Dennis Lillee and Darren Halifax, also all of Australia - is well as the lineal ancestors of their siblings and offspring. Branches Hay and Hanely are validated as enjoying the same descent):

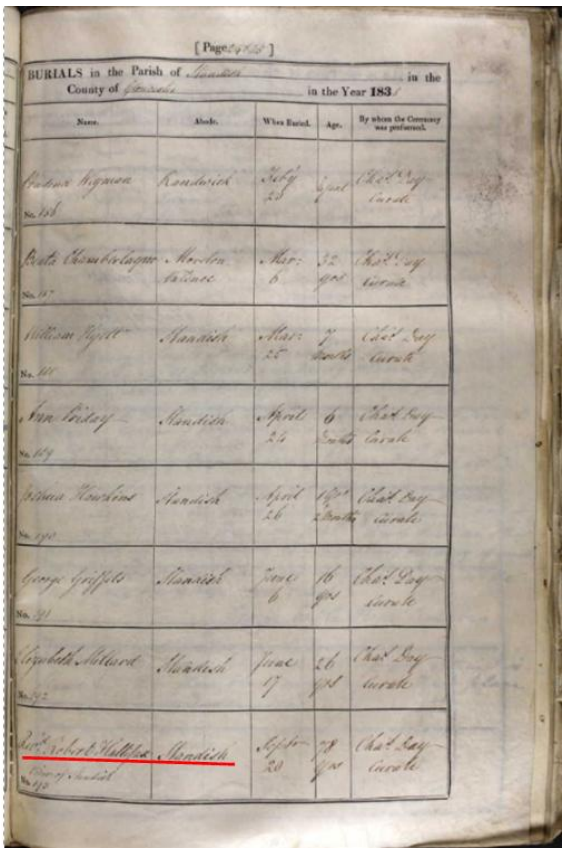

[Transcript of Coll Arm Ms 7D14/45]
Robert Waterhouse, Rector of Springthorne in the County of Lincoln, who took the Surname of Hallifax, and according to Family Tradition was descended from the ancient Family of Waterhouse of Hallifax in Yorkshire.
Margaret daur of Thomas Benson of Bingley in the County of York.
Jane
Margaret
Thomas Hallifax of Springthorpe aforesaid Esquire, eldest Son, born 1653.
Elizabeth daughter of Thomas Fulbeck of Great Corringham Co: Lincoln married in 1686.
Thomas Hallifax of Springthorpe aforesaid Esq: eldest Son, born 1688, died unmarried.
John Hallifax of Springthorpe aforesaid 2d Son, born there 1694, afterwards of Barnesley in the County of York Gent: where he died.
Anna daughter of Thomas Archdale of Pilley in the County of York Esq: buried at Barnesley.
William Hallifax eldest Son died an Infant.
Benjamin Hallifax of Clapton in the County of Middlesex D.D. 4th Son born at Barnesley in the County of York. Living S.P. 1788.
Mary daughter of William Pitches of London, Relict of Thomas Lewis of Tottenham High Cross, Com: Midx. marr.d 13 Aug: 1782.
John Hallifax of Kenilworth Co: Warw: Esq: in Commission of Peace for said County. Born at Barnesley aforesaid. Living 1788.
Hester daur of Thomas Smith of London, Merch.t: Widow of Stephen Geere of Isleworth Com: Midx. Esq: Living 1788.
Thomas Hallifax eldest Son, born 9th February 1774.
Saville Hallifax 2d Son, born 6th Nov.r 1777.
Anne daur & sole heir of John Askew of Kelsey in the County of Lincoln. Married 1652.
Thomas Hallifax of Sedgethorne aforesaid born 1621. M.A. of Brasen College Oxford in 1645.
William Hallifax 2d Son, born 1654, of Corpus Christi College Oxford, D.D. by Diploma 2d July 1695. Rector of Old Swinford in the County of Worcester. Married, but died without Issue.
Elizabeth born at Springthorpe 1692, Married but died without Issue.
other Children died young.
Robert Hallifax of Mansfield in the County of Nottingham Esquire 3d Son, born 1656.
William Hallifax of Bradley in Com: Northampton 3d Son born in 1696, at Springthorpe.
Thomas Hallifax of Reading in the County of Berks Gent: eldest Son Living 1788.
Sir Thomas Hallifax, Alderman of London, Knighted at St James's 5th Feb: 1773. Lord Mayor 1776. M.P. for Aylesbury Co: Bucks. Born at Barnesley aforesaid. Living 1788.
Robert-Fitz-William Hallifax, only Son.
Gertrude
Charlotte
Mary-Anne
Caroline
Elizabeth
Catharine
Elizabeth daur of Digby Cotes D.D.
James Hallifax of Ballol College Oxford D.D. eldest Son. died ....
Elizabeth daur & Coheir of Edward New of London Sugar Baker, & Niece of Rob.t New.
Margaret eldest daur & Coheir of John Saville of Enfield in the County of Middlesex Esquire. Married there 29 October 1772. died 17 Nov: 1777 Aged 28, and was buried at Enfield.
Theodosia daur of ..... Smith of Coventry, M.D.
Anne married to ..... Brayfield of London. She living S.P. 1788.
Elizabeth daughter of .... Farnesworth of .... married 10 Febr. 1704.
Robert Hallifax of Mansfield aforesaid Gent: born there 19 Febr: 1706. buried at Mansfield.
1st Husb.d William Villa-real Esq:
Elizabeth born at Mansfield aforesaid 13th Decemb: 1737. Living 1788.
Hannah daughter of Richard Jebb of Mansfield mar.d 30 Jan: 1731. died at Chesterfield 24th Octob: 1787, Aged 78.
2d Husb.d William Hutchinson of Egglestone in the County Palatine of Durham Esquire. He died S.P.
1. Elizabeth
2. Margaret
2 Daughters both Married Clergymen & have Issue.
Robert Hallifax of London M.D. Physician to his Royal Highness the Prince of Wales; born at Mansfield 29 June 1735, unmard.d 1788.
Samuel Hallifax eldest Son, Lord Bishop of Gloucester born at Mansfield aforesd 18 Jan. 1733
Catharine daur of William Cooke D.D. Dean of Ely.
Catharine born at Mansfield 1st Aug: 1740. unmard.d 1788.
Anne born at Mansfield 31 Oct: 1747. marr.d Rev.d George Bosley of Chesterfield Co: Derby. She died S.P. 1788.
We hereby Certify the above Pedigree of our Family to be true to the best of our Knowledge and Belief. Witness our Hands this 16th day of December 1788.
John Hallifax.
Rob.t Hallifax M.D.
Signed in the Presence of
Ralph Bigland, Richmond.
Fra.s Townsend Windsor.

A628. The researcher's 5th great grandfather Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838), M.A of Magdalen College, Oxford the most recent entry on the chart above and marked, is the cousin of the former Mayor of London, Sir Thomas Hallifax (1722-1789), MP.

A629. Robert's cousin Thomas Hallifax, former Mayor of London, was the senior partner in the bank, which became known as Glyn, Mills & Co founded in London, was a past constituent of the Royal Bank of Scotland (Bank of England Archive: Governor's files re bank amalgamations, including Glyn, Mills & Co with Child & Co 1923-4, possible mergers Glyn, Mills & Co with Messrs Drummond 1923 and Glyn, Mills & Co with one or more Manchester banks 1927-35, acquisition of Glyn, Mills & Co by The Royal Bank of Scotland 1938-39 and purchase of Glyn, Mills & Co's Oxford branch by Martins Bank 1942, Ref: G1/9-11; discount office file re: Glyn, Mills & Co 1935-70, Ref: C48/63).

A630. The researcher's lineal ancestor Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838) is known by the Crown to be the cousin of namesake, Robert Hallifax, M.D. (1735-1810), who was physician to the future George IV, Prince of Wales, and a younger brother of Bishop Samuel Hallifax (1733-1790).

A631. When the Hallifax family pedigree was registered, the researcher John Guest (1960-), and his cousins by degree, namely Dennis Lillee (1949-) and Darren Halifax (1965-) (et al), 4th great grandfather Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835) had not been born. He arrived the following year. The next record shows the researcher's 5th great-grandfather, Reverend Robert Hallifax (1760-1838) was buried on the 20th September 1838 Gloucestershire, England, Church of England Burials, 1813-1988 for Reverend Robert Hallifax (1760-1838), Vicar of Standish:

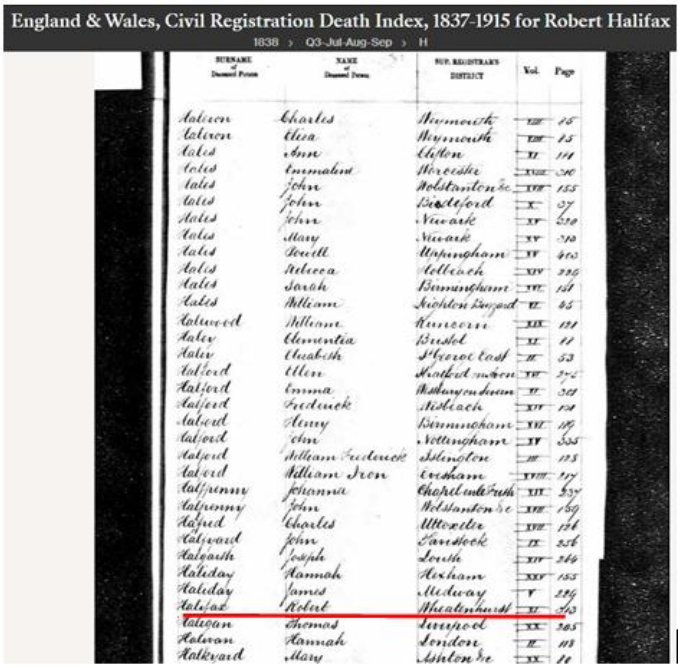


[Page]

BURIALS in the Parish of Standish in the County of Gloucester in the Year 183

Name.	Abode.	When Buried.	Age.	By whom the Ceremony was performed.
Richard Haynes No. 138	Randwick	July 23	1 year	Rob[t] Hallifax Curate
Betty Chamberlayne No. 139	Moreton Valance	Mar: 6	32 years	Rob[t] Hallifax Curate
William Pyott No. 140	Standish	Mar: 25	7 months	Rob[t] Hallifax Curate
Wm Lindsey No. 141	Standish	April 23	6 months	Rob[t] Hallifax Curate
William Hawkins No. 142	Standish	April 26	10[m] 2 days	Rob[t] Hallifax Curate
George Griffiths No. 143	Standish	June 6	16 years	Rob[t] Hallifax Curate
Elizabeth Millard No. 144	Standish	June 17	26 years	Rob[t] Hallifax Curate
Rob[t] Robert Hallifax Vicar of Standish No. 145	Standish	Sept[r] 20	78 years	Rob[t] Hallifax Curate

A632. Robert's death record is further submitted below (England and Wales, BMD Death Index, 1837-1915 (Name: Robert Halifax; Registration Quarter: Jul-Aug-Sep; Death Registration Place: Wheatenhurst, Gloucestershire, United Kingdom; Death Date: Sept 1838; Inferred Death Place; Gloucestershire, United Kingdom; Volume: 11; Page: 313):



England & Wales, Civil Registration Death Index, 1837-1915 for Robert Halifax

1838 › Q3-Jul-Aug-Sep › H

Surname of Deceased Person	Name of Deceased Person	Sup. Registrar's District	Vol.	Page
Halcrow	Charles	Weymouth	VIII	15
Halcrow	Eliza	Weymouth	VIII	15
Hales	Ann	Clifton	XI	111
Hales	Emmaline	Worcester	XVIII	310
Hales	John	Nobletanton &c	XVIII	155
Hales	John	Bedford	X	27
Hales	John	Newark	XV	320
Hales	Mary	Newark	XV	318
Hales	Powell	Uppingham	XV	403
Hales	Rebecca	Tetbury	XIV	229
Hales	Sarah	Birmingham	VII	181
Hales	William	Richmond Surrey	II	95
Halewood	William	Runcorn	XIX	121
Haley	Clementia	Bristol	XI	11
Haley	Elizabeth	St George East	II	53
Halford	Ellen	Stratford upon Avon	VII	375
Halford	Emma	Wellingborough	V	301
Halford	Frederick	Tetbury	XIV	231
Halford	Henry	Birmingham	VII	179
Halford	John	Nottingham	IX	505
Halford	William Frederick	Islington	III	173
Halford	William Iron	Evesham	VIII	117
Halfpenny	Johanna	Chapel en le Frith	XII	537
Halfpenny	John	Nobletanton &c	XVIII	169
Halford	Charles	Ulverston	XVII	121
Halgarth	John	Sandbach	IX	351
Halgarth	Joseph	Louth	XIV	269
Haliday	Hannah	Hexham	XIV	155
Haliday	James	Medway	V	229
Halidad	Robert	Wheatenhurst	XI	313
Halligan	Thomas	Liverpool	XX	305
Halman	Hannah	London	II	113
Halkyard	Mary	Ashton &c	XX	10

A633. Upon his death in 1838, it became much clearer Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838), was of outstanding character, most highly regarded as an intellect and humanitarian:

> "*Gifted with the powers of an esteem genius,"* and "*father to the esteem poor" (Obituary for Rev. Robert Hallifax, Gentleman's Magazine, Nicholls, J 1838, p665):*

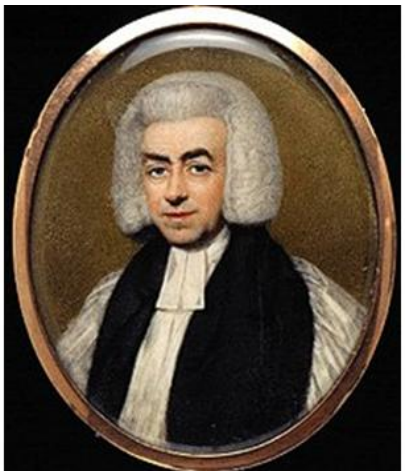
CLERGY DECEASED.

Sept. 13. Aged 78, the Rev. ***Robert Hallifax***, for fifty-three years Vicar of Standish with Hardwicke, Gloucestershire. He was formerly a Demy of Magdalen college, Oxford, and took the degree of M.A. in 1783, but did not proceed to a Fellowship, having married before there was a vacancy for his native county, Berkshire. He was collated to his living in 1785 by his relative Bishop Halifax. He was for many years Rural Dean of the Gloucester Deanery, and a magistrate for the county. Highly gifted with the powers of genius, he was fond of literary pursuits and literary men, and was a member of the Geological Society. The agreeable and instructive companion, the sincere and steady friend, ever open-hearted and generous to all, he was peculiarly a "father to the poor." As a mark of respect his remains were attended to the grave by more than twenty clergymen of the neighbourhood.

A634. The same article refers to him as a younger man, residing along with his young family, with Robert's relative, Bishop Samuel Hallifax. Robert and his family stayed with Samuel when Robert first took up his post as Vicar of Standish in 1785. A position he held for 53 years.

A635. Bishop Samuel Hallifax (1733-1793) is Reverend Robert Hallifax's (1761-1838) 1st cousin x 1 removed, and the grandson of the progenitor of the original junior branch, Robert Hallifax of Mansfield, born 1656, and known to the Hallifax registered pedigree Ms 7D14/45. The original junior branch to which Bishop Hallifax belongs survives today in England.

A636. A portrait of Samuel Hallifax, Bishop (1733-1793) was created by artist Henry Edridge (refer also: Stephen and Lee, 1890 eds, 1890, "Hallifax, Samuel" in the Dictionary of National Biography, Vol. 24. London: Smith, Elder and Co). Visually, there appears to be some physical features shared between him, Samual, and the author of this book John Guest when John's image circa 1988, is placed against his. John is Bishop Samuel Hallifax (1733-1793), 2nd cousins, eight times removed:



A637. Robert Hallifax's career is well documented celebrating his 53-year incumbency in 1775 lasting until his death in 1838 (Hockaday, Abs. cccxlvi; mon. in church; Kathleen Morgan and Brian S Smith, 192, pp 239-241, Standish: Churches', in A History of the County of Gloucester: Volume 10, Westbury and Whitstone Hundreds, ed. C R Elrington, N M Herbert and R B Pugh, London, 1972, pp. 239-241. British History Online [accessed 29 June 2022]).

A638. Newton (1816, p467), recognises further Robert as one of its remarkable persons that year but does not elaborate why he received such recognition (Newton, R.,1816, p467, The Gentleman's Magazine, Volume 120):

1816.] *Obituary; with Anecdotes of remarkable Persons.* 467

Oct. 4. In Charlotte-street, Fitzroy-square, aged 35, Francis Boynton, esq. formerly of Hutton-lodge, near Malton, co. York.

Oct. 5. Mr. Patrick Keating, Roman Catholic priest, Duke-street, Grosvenor-square.

At Margate, Frances, daughter of John Thompson, esq. of Frognall Priory, Hamp-stead.

At Newport, Salop, at an advanced age, John Jones, esq. of Chilton-grove.

Oct. 6. At Newington, Surrey, aged 64, John Allen, esq. formerly of Kingston, Jamaica.

At his apartments near Chelsea Hospital, Rev. T. Norris, late chaplain to the Forces in the Leeward Islands.

John Goodere, esq. of South Okendon, Essex.

At Bath, aged 83, Robert Harvey, esq. M. D.

At Auteuil, near Paris, at an advanced age, H. B. Sharp, esq.

Oct. 7. In Tenterden-street, Hanover-square, John Theodore Wratislaw, esq.

At Brighton, in her 23d year, Charlotte, eldest daughter of Joseph Marryat, esq. M. P.

At Bath, Mrs. Ellis, relict of Thomas Ellis, esq.

Oct. 8 In Grafton-street, in his 94th year, Thomas Scott, esq. of Shepperton, Middlesex.

In Red Lion-square, the wife of John Hodgson, esq. of Lincoln's-inn.

At Greenwich, in his 78th year, James Hurdis, M. D. last surviving son of the late Thomas Hurdis, D.D. canon of Windsor, and canon residentiary of Windsor.

At Bristol, the widow of the late worthy rector of St. Michael's, Rev. Geo. Wilkins; having survived her husband one month.

Oct. 9. At Haseley House, Oxon, in his 65th year, F. Wastie, esq. late one of the deputy lieutenants of the county, and lieutenant-colonel of the third division of the Oxford-shire local militia. His remains were interred at Church Cowley, attended by many neighbouring gentlemen. The sincere regret testified for his loss, affords the strongest proof of the estimation in which he was held by all classes who had witnessed a life dedicated not only to the correct discharge of all social obligations, but to the most zealous and assiduous attention to those duties which either resulted from his situation as an officer, or as a country gentleman, during the arduous struggle in which this country has been for so many years engaged.

At Preston, in his 60th year, Henry Fielding, esq. deputy lieutenant of Lancashire, senior partner in the house of Fieldings and Co. calico printers, Catterall, Lancashire, distinguished by his engaging manners, talent, integrity, and virtue.

Oct. 10. John Hall, esq. of Halkin-street, Grosvenor-place, and Notting-hill, Kensington.

At her brother's, Charterhouse-square, in her 75th year, Mrs. Sarah-Maria Shackleford, sister of Rev. Dr. Shackleford, vicar of St. Sepulchre's.

At Bitton, Rev. John Batcheller, vicar of that parish, with the chapelries of Oldnds and Hanham annexed, co. Gloucester; and vicar of Chitterne St. Mary, Wilts. He was in the commission of the peace for Somerset, and one of the sons of the late Rev. —— Batcheller, of Frankford, near Bath.

At Matlock, in his 24th year, John, eldest son of John Hague, esq. of Crow-nest, near Dewsbury, co. York.

At her son-in-law's, Leeds, the wife of John Gee, esq. of Haldenby Park, York.

Oct. 11. At Fleming Villa, Old Brompton, Rt. Hon. Joseph-Henry Blake, Baron Wallscourt, Baron of Ardfery, co. Galway, 1800. He was born July 23, 1795, succeeded his uncle Joseph-Henry, the late Lord, in 1803; and is succeeded in his title and estates by his first cousin Lieut. Joseph Blake, 85th regt.

Oct. 12. In the Clapham-road, Catherine, wife of J. P. Crowder, esq. She possessed a truly benevolent heart and comprehensive mind.

Ambrose Rigg, esq. formerly of Hampshire and Sussex.

In Dublin, aged 45, Thomas Richard Babington, esq. barrister-at-law, and one of the magistrates of the head police-office, Dublin; whose valuable services to the publick, whose piety and domestic qualities, whose gentleness and benevolence, endeared him to all who knew him.

At Paris, Mrs. Caroline Amherst, relict of the late Wm. Kerril Amherst, esq. of the Bengal Civil Establishment.

Oct. 13. In Bridge-street, Blackfriars, Richard Smaler, esq.

At Homerton, aged 67, Wm. Hood, esq.

In his 76th year, Rev. Samuel Strong, rector of Marchwiel, and a canon of the Cathedral Church of St. Asaph.

Near Mold, co. Flint, Thomas Bury, esq. late major of the Royal Welsh Fusiliers, and paymaster in the Royal Flintshire militia (Rifle corps).

Oct. 14. In Hanover-street, Hanover-square, aged 64, Dr. S. H. Jackson.

At Isleworth, Mrs. Elizabeth Bland, widow of the late Lieut.-general Humphrey Bland.

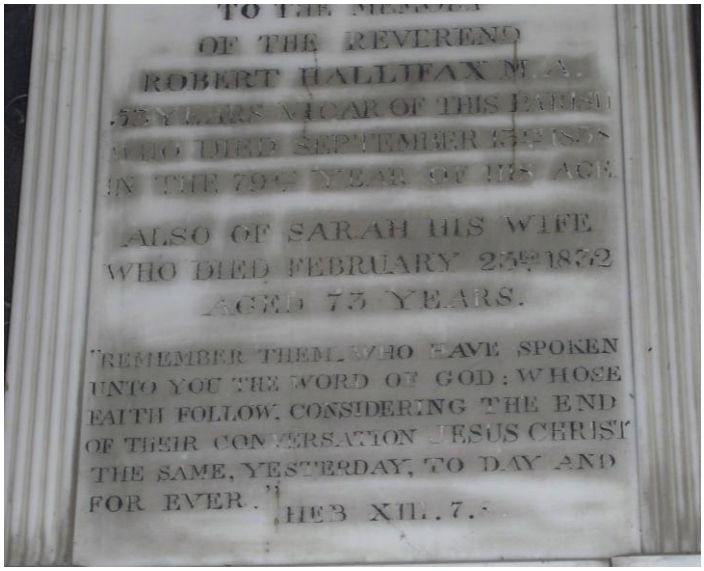
General Thomas Bland, general of His Majesty's forces, and colonel of the 5th dragoon guards.

At Rev. Robert Halifax's, Standish, co. Gloucester, Robert Crafton, esq. of Dulwich Common.

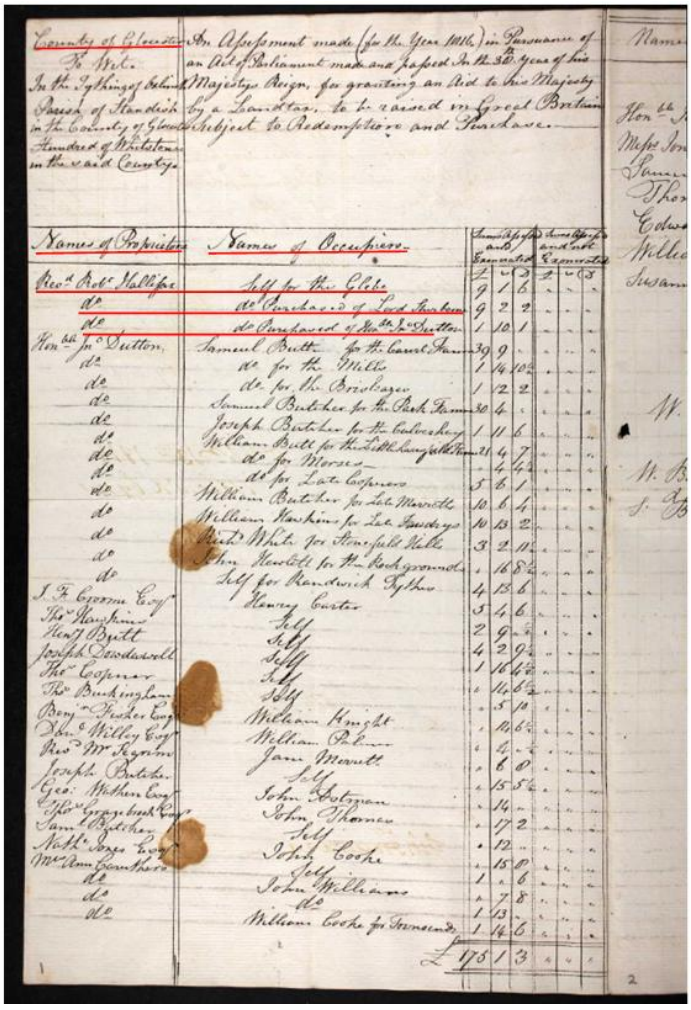
In

LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF

A639. The respect held for the family's 5th great grandfather, Reverend Robert Hallifax (1760-1838) of Standish, Gloucester and wife Sarah Hallifax, (1760-1832) (nee Sentence), is carved into stone in a memorial plaque erected for them at the Standish Parish, County Gloucester:


OF THE REVEREND
ROBERT HALLIFAX M.A.
WHO DIED SEPTEMBER
IN THE 79
ALSO OF SARAH HIS WIFE
WHO DIED FEBRUARY 25
AGED 73 YEARS.
"REMEMBER THEM, WHO HAVE SPOKEN
UNTO YOU THE WORD OF GOD: WHOSE
FAITH FOLLOW, CONSIDERING THE END
OF THEIR CONVERSATION JESUS CHRIST
THE SAME, YESTERDAY, TO DAY AND
FOR EVER."
HEB XII. 7.

A640. In 1819 Robert held Glebe property in Standish and leased some of it to Lord Standish and the Honourable John Dutton as so defined below (Gloucestershire, England, Land Tax Records, 1713-1833 for Reverend Robert Hallifax):



A641. Glebe is essentially church land, which was used to pay for the parish priest. It was historically given to the Rector, as was the case with the researcher's 5th great-grandfather Reverend Robert Hallifax (1760-1838). In which the land would have enhanced the Rector's income probably by the land being leased out.

A642. The amount of such land varied from parish to parish, occasionally forming a complete glebe farm. A holder of a benefice could retain the glebe for his own use, usually for agricultural exploitation, or he could "farm" it (i.e. lease it) to others and retain the rent as the income (i.e., leased it to Lord Sherborne and Hon John Dutton. Information about the glebe would be recorded at ecclesiastical visitations in a glebe "terrier" and here in the Gloucestershire Tax Record) (Source: Diocese of Gloucester, Gele Land).

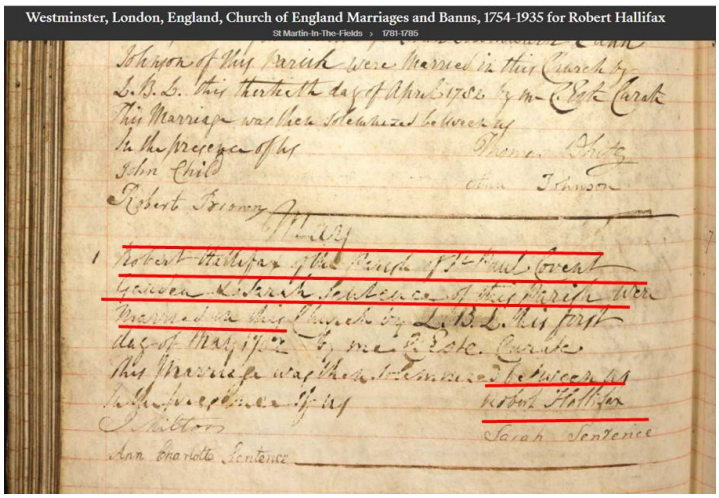
A643. Noting further that Glebe associated with the Church of England ceased to belong to individual incumbents as from 1 April 1978, by virtue of the Endowments and Glebe Measure 1976. It became vested on that date, "without any conveyance or other assurance," in the Diocesan (Ibid, Diocese of Gloucester).

A644 It is reasonable to believe the said Honourable John Dutton is the same who became John Dutton, 2nd Baron Sherborne (1779–1862) in May 1820 after the death of his father.

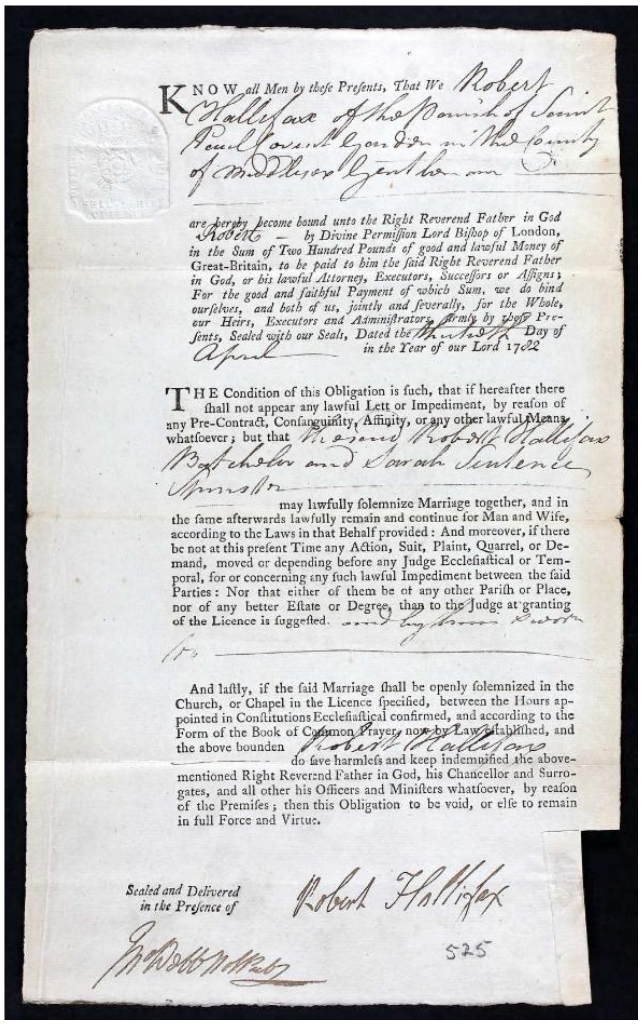
A645. Also in the year 1819, on 31st January 1819, Reverend Elliott was licensed as Incumbent of Randwick on the presentation of Mr (Reverend Robert) Halifax, Vicar of Standish (Randwick Historical Association, Randwick, Gloucestershire, UK, [E.F. p.32]). Submitted below is Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838) and Sarah Sentence's (1762-1832) marriage records (England, Select Marriages, 1538–1973; Name: Robert Hallifax: Gender; Male: Marriage Date; 1 May 1782; Marriage Place; Saint Martin in The Fields, Westminster, London, England; Spouse Sarah Sentence; FHL Film Number: 561156, 561157, 561158, 942 B4HA V. 25, 942 B4HA V. 66; refer also England, Marriage Bonds and Allegations, 1597-1921 record, Reference Number MS10091/147):

Name	Robert Hallifax
Age	21
Birth Year	1761
Event Date	30 Apr 1782
Parish	St Paul, Covent Garden
County	Middlesex
Spouse's Name	Sarah Sentence
Spouse's Age	21
Spouse's Parish	St Martin In The Fields
Spouse's County	Middlesex
Event Type	Allegation
Reference Number	MS10091/147

A646. A facsimile of the original record showing Robert and Sarah's hand writing is offered below (City of Westminster Archives Centre, London, England; Westminster Church of England Parish Registers; Reference: STM/PR/6/14):


Westminster, London, England, Church of England Marriages and Banns, 1754-1935 for Robert Hallifax
St Martin-In-The-Fields › 1781-1785

A647. Much treasured by the family, is a facsimile of the London and Surrey, England, Marriage Bonds and Allegations, 1597-1921 for Robert Hallifax dated the 13th April 1782. The bond record submitted below was secured by Robert 17 days prior to his marriage to the researcher's 5th great grandmother Sarah Hallifax, nee Sentence:



KNOW all Men by these Presents, That We Robert Hallifax of the Parish of Saint Paul Covent Garden in the County of Middlesex Gentleman

are held and firmly bound unto the Right Reverend Father in God Robert — by Divine Permission Lord Bishop of London, in the Sum of Two Hundred Pounds of good and lawful Money of Great-Britain, to be paid to him the said Right Reverend Father in God, or his lawful Attorney, Executors, Successors or Assigns; For the good and faithful Payment of which Sum, we do bind ourselves, and both of us, jointly and severally, for the Whole, our Heirs, Executors and Administrators, firmly by these Presents, Sealed with our Seals, Dated the Thirteenth Day of April in the Year of our Lord 1782

THE Condition of this Obligation is such, that if hereafter there shall not appear any lawful Lett or Impediment, by reason of any Pre-Contract, Consanguinity, Affinity, or any other lawful Means whatsoever; but that Marriage between Robert Hallifax Batchelor and Sarah Sentence Spinster

may lawfully solemnize Marriage together, and in the same afterwards lawfully remain and continue for Man and Wife, according to the Laws in that Behalf provided: And moreover, if there be not at this present Time any Action, Suit, Plaint, Quarrel, or Demand, moved or depending before any Judge Ecclesiastical or Temporal, for or concerning any such lawful Impediment between the said Parties: Nor that either of them be of any other Parish or Place, nor of any better Estate or Degree, than to the Judge at granting of the Licence is suggested.

And lastly, if the said Marriage shall be openly solemnized in the Church, or Chapel in the Licence specified, between the Hours appointed in Constitutions Ecclesiastical confirmed, and according to the Form of the Book of Common Prayer, now by Law established, and the above bounden Robert Hallifax do save harmless and keep indemnified the above-mentioned Right Reverend Father in God, his Chancellor and Surrogates, and all other his Officers and Ministers whatsoever, by reason of the Premises; then this Obligation to be void, or else to remain in full Force and Virtue.

Sealed and Delivered in the Presence of

Robert Hallifax

525

A648. Robert served as Vicar of Standish Perish in County Gloucester for 53 years (refer also Bernard Burke - A Genealogical History of the Dormant, Abeyant, Forfeited, and Extinct Peerages of the British Empire, 1866, p580).

A649. Reverend Robert Hallifax's (1761-1838) father Thomas Hallifax of Reading is recorded also in Robert's alumni record below (*Alumni Oxonienses: The Members of the University of Oxford, 1887, p590):*

Hallifax, Joseph, 1s. John, of Stourbridge, co. Stafford, cler. QUEEN'S COLL., matric. 10 June, 1847, aged 18; B.A. 1851, M.A. 1854, rector of Kirkbride, Cumberland, 1855-9, and of Breane, near Axbridge, 1860, until his death 8 Nov., 1883.

Hallifax, Robert, s. Thomas, of Reading, Berks, gent. LINCOLN COLL., matric. 4 Dec., 1776, aged 16; demy MAGDALEN COLL. 1780-2, B.A. 1781, M.A. 1783, vicar of Standish with Hardwicke, co. Gloucester (J.P.), 1785, until his death 13 Sep., 1838. See *Bloxam*, vii.

Hallifax, Saville, 1s. Thomas, of London, equitis. TRINITY COLL., matric. 28 Jan., 1796, aged 18; his father was Lord Mayor of London 1777.

Hallings, Francis, s. William, of Monmouth, pleb. BALLIOL COLL., matric. 7 May, 1741, aged 18.

Hallings, Michael, s. Samuel, of Hereford (city), gent. BRASENOSE COLL., matric. 30 May, 1754, aged 17; B.A. 1758, M.A. 1780. [36]

Halliwell, Henry, s. William, of Burnley, Lancashire, cler. BRASENOSE COLL., matric. 18 June, 1783, aged 17; B.A. 1786, M.A. 1789, B.D. 1803, fellow and tutor, rector of Clayton, Sussex, 1803, until his death 15 Feb., 1835. See *Manchester School Reg.*, ii.

Halliwell, James, s. James, of Manchester, gent. BRASENOSE COLL., matric. 11 May, 1810, aged 19; of Lincoln's Inn, 1817.

Halliwell, Rev. John Elton, 2s. Thomas, of Redhill, Somerset, cler. MAGDALEN HALL, matric. 9 Dec., 1864, aged 19; B.A. 1869, M.A. 1872.

Halliwell, Rev. Thomas, 2s. Thomas, of Chelsea, Middlesex, arm. NEW INN HALL, matric. 23 Jan., 1834, aged 18; B.A. 1837, M.A. 1840. [40]

Hallowes, Brabazon, 1s. Francis, of Talyllyn, co. Merioneth, gent. LINCOLN COLL., matric. 2 Nov., 1837, aged 18; B.A. 1841, M.A. 1844, of Glapwell Hall, co. Derby, P.C. St. David's, Denbigh, 1843-51, vicar of Cilcain, Flints, 1851, and of Dyserth, co. Denbigh, 1867-70.

[590]

A650. The record above along with the companion record, Hallifax family pedigree, Ms 7D 14/45, 16th December 1788, a record of the Crown's authority, College of Arms, confirms the researcher's 5th great grandfather Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838) is the son of Thomas's wife, Elizabeth New, daughter of Edward New Sugar Baker and niece of Robert New.

A651. The petitioners' 10th great grandfather, Robert Waterhouse (1586-1629), and first listed in the Hallifax pedigree chart Ms7D1445 married to Margaet Benson, was the first of the line to take the surname "Hallifax" and drop the patrionymic, Waterhouse.

A652. Dr Ille (2016, p19) recognises the family name change from Waterhouse to Hallifax also recorded by the College of Arms record, Ms 7D14/45 (16th December, 1788):

> *"The earliest record of a clergyman other than a Rector is that of Rev. Robert Waterhouse Hallifax, who was cited in a document at Sussex Archives as Vicar of Springthorpe in 1633. This would have been during the incumbency of Rector Thomas Wye (1624-47). The name is very similar to that of Robert Waterhouse of Halifax, Rector of Springthorpe 1621-24. The family is recorded as having changed its surname name to 'Hallifax'. This Robert was probably the son of the former Rector. He is also thought to be related to the subsequent Rector, John Hallifax (1647-77)".*

A653. A document found in the Sussex Archives describes Arms granted to his father Robert Waterhouse Hallifax, Esquire., of Yorkshire, on the 9th October 1572, makes for further distinction that his son Rector, Robert Hallifax (1586-1629) and the Vicar of Springthorpe, was known with the middle name Waterhouse:

> *"Allowed, with difference, to Rev. Robt. Waterhouse Hallifax, Vicar of Springthrorp, Lincs, 24 June 1633".*

A654. The simple evidence based lineal chart below shows all of the lineal ancestors standing between the researcher John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) and Robert Hallifax (1586-1629) and Margaret Benson. It is they who are listed at the apex of the Halifax registered pedigree Ms 7D 14/45:

Robert Hallifax 1586-1629 = Margaret Benson
10th great-grandparents

Thomas Hallifax 1621-1676
9th great-grandfather
Son of Robert Hallifax

Thomas Hallifax 1653-1711
8th great-grandfather
Son of Thomas Hallifax

William Hallifax 1696-
7th great grandfather
Son of Thomas Hallifax

Thomas Hallifax 1717-1789
6th great-grandfather
Son of William Hallifax

Robert Hallifax 1761-1838
5th great-grandfather
Son of Thomas Hallifax

Thomas New Hallifax 1789-1835
4th great-grandfather
Son of Robert Hallifax

Ambrose William Hallifax 1821-1874
3rd great-grandfather
Son of Thomas New Hallifax

Augustus New Hallifax II 1855-1886
2nd great-grandfather
Son of Ambrose William Hallifax

Violet Ethel Hallifax 1882-1955
Great-grandmother
Daughter of Augustus New Hallifax II

Augustus Halifax Hay 1910-1985
Grandfather
Son of Violet Ethel Hallifax

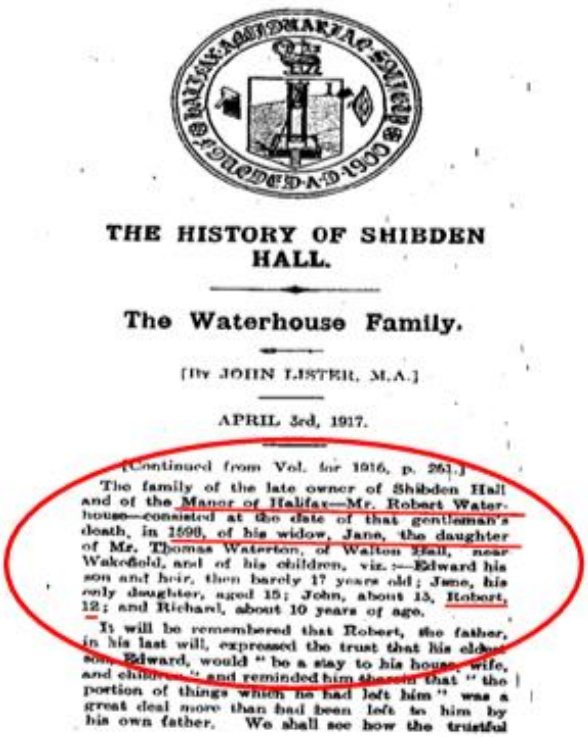
Norma Irene Hay 1932-2021
Mother
Daughter of Augustus Halifax Hay

John Lindsay Robert Guest 1960-
The researcher and author
Son of Norma Irene Hay

11th great grandparents Robert Waterhouse & Jane Waterton

A655. Robert Hallifax (1586-1629) (Ms 7D14/45), born Waterhouse, and also known later as Reverend Robert Waterhouse Hallifax (Dr Ille, 2016, p19), was born on the 25th September 1586 at York and baptised at St Michael le-Belfrey's in York.

A656. Robert Hallifax (1586-1629) (Ms 7D14/45), born Waterhouse is the fourth born and third surviving son of Sir Robert Waterhouse (1544-1598) of Shibden Hall, West Yorkshire, MP and Jane Waterton (1557-aft 1607) (Lister John, M. A. 1917, p53, The History of Shibden Hall, The Waterhouse Family, Halifax Antiquarian Society):



THE HISTORY OF SHIBDEN HALL.

The Waterhouse Family.

[By JOHN LISTER, M.A.]

APRIL 3rd, 1917.

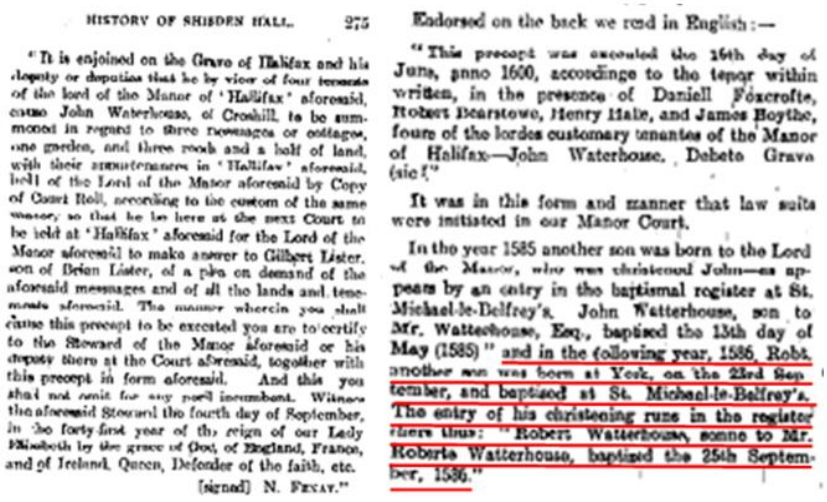
[Continued from Vol. for 1916, p. 261.]

The family of the late owner of Shibden Hall and of the Manor of Halifax—Mr. Robert Waterhouse—consisted at the date of that gentleman's death, in 1598, of his widow, Jane, the daughter of Mr. Thomas Waterton, of Walton Hall, near Wakefield, and of his children, viz.:—Edward his son and heir, then barely 17 years old; Jane, his only daughter, aged 15; John, about 13, Robert, 12; and Richard, about 10 years of age.

It will be remembered that Robert, the father, in his last will, expressed the trust that his eldest son, Edward, would "be a stay to his house, wife, and children," and reminded him therein that "the portion of things which he had left him" was a great deal more than had been left to him by his own father. We shall see how the trustful

A657. The entry of Robert's baptism at St Michael le-Belfrey's submitted below says (Lister, J, 1917, p 275):

> *"Robert Waterhouse, sonne to Mr Robert Watterhouse, baptised on the 25th September, 1586*:"



HISTORY OF SHIBDEN HALL. 275

"It is enjoined on the Grave of Halifax and his deputy or deputies that he by vicar of four tenants of the lord of the Manor of 'Hallifax' aforesaid, cause John Waterhouse, of Crosshill, to be summoned in regard to three messuages or cottages, one garden, and three roods and a half of land, with their appurtenances in 'Hallifax' aforesaid, held of the Lord of the Manor aforesaid by Copy of Court Roll, according to the custom of the same manor, so that he be here at the next Court to be held at 'Hallifax' aforesaid for the Lord of the Manor aforesaid to make answer to Gilbert Lister, son of Brian Lister, of a plea on demand of the aforesaid messuages and of all the lands and tenements aforesaid. The manner wherein you shall cause this precept to be executed you are to certify to the Steward of the Manor aforesaid or his deputy there at the Court aforesaid, together with this precept in form aforesaid. And this you shall not omit for any peril incumbent. Witness the aforesaid Steward the fourth day of September, in the forty-first year of the reign of our Lady Elizabeth by the grace of God, of England, France, and of Ireland, Queen, Defender of the faith, etc.

[signed] N. FENAY."

Endorsed on the back we read in English:—

"This precept was executed the 16th day of June, anno 1600, according to the tenor within written, in the presence of Daniell Foxcrofte, Robert Bearstowe, Henry Hale, and James Boythe, foure of the lordes customary tenantes of the Manor of Halifax—John Waterhouse. Debeto Grave (sic!)"

It was in this form and manner that law suits were initiated in our Manor Court.

In the year 1585 another son was born to the Lord of the Manor, who was christened John—as appears by an entry in the baptismal register at St. Michael-le-Belfrey's. John Watterhouse, son to Mr. Watterhouse, Esq., baptised the 13th day of May (1585)" and in the following year, 1586, Robt. another son was born at York, on the 23rd September, and baptised at St. Michael-le-Belfrey's. The entry of his christening runs in the register there thus: "Robert Watterhouse, sonne to Mr. Roberte Watterhouse, baptised the 25th September, 1586."

A658. Lister (1917, p53) records Robert the younger's father, is Sir Robert Waterhouse (1544-1598) an MP, Barrister, JP, and Reader of Inner Temple of Shibden Hall, Yorkshire , and husband of Jane Waterhouse (1557-aft 1607) (nee Waterton), Robert the younger's mother.

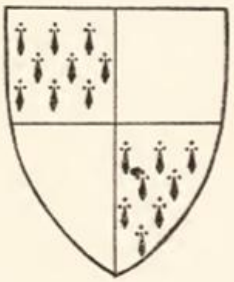
A659. Dr J.W. Walker , OBE, FSA (1931, p403, The Burghs of Cambridgeshire and Yorkshire and the Watertons' of Lincolnshire and Yorkshire, Yorkshire Archaeological Journal Vol. 30, pp. 311-419), in his extensive and thorough genealogical study of the united Burgh-Waterton family, further makes Robert Hallifax (1586-1629), son of Sir Robert Waterhouse (MP), born in 1544, married to Jane Waterton on April 11, 1580 at St Michael-le-Belfrey, Our Lady's Church, Wragby, Yorkshire, England. This is the same Church their fourth son, Robert Hallifax (1586-1629) (Waterhouse) was christened:

BURGH AND WATERTON FAMILIES 403

Thomas and Beatrix Waterton had the following children: Thomas, the eldest son, Edward,[1] Richard, who married Anne, daughter and heiress of William Grimsby of Dracklow, and widow of Sir Richard Massingham of co. Lanc. Richard Waterton had a grant by Thomas Waterton of Walton the elder, and Thomas Waterton the younger, gent., son and heir apparent of the said Thomas, of an annuity of £6 13*s.* 4*d.* with power of revocation out of Menstrippe in 1575.[2]

RESTWOLD.

Gyronny of four erm. and gu.



The fourth and youngest son of Thomas and Beatrix Waterton was George, who married Jane, daughter of Henry Grice, esquire, of Sandal. George Waterton was one of the jury to take the *inq. p.m.* of Sir Thomas Gargrave on 1 May, 1579.[3]

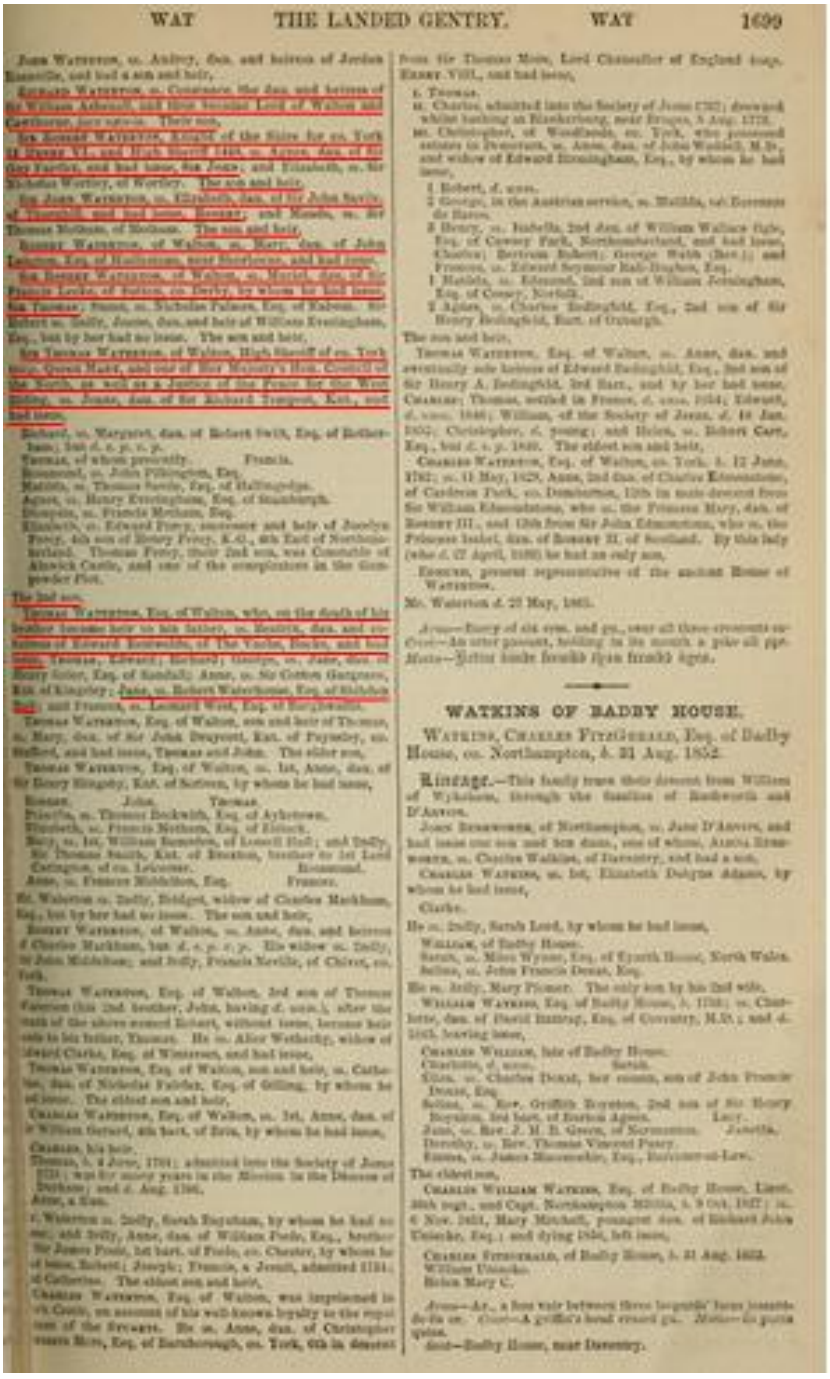
Anne Waterton, the eldest of their daughters, was married, as his second wife, to Sir Cotton Gargrave of Nostell, his first wife having been Bridget, daughter of Sir William Fairfax of Steeton, by his wife, Isabel, daughter and sole heiress of Thomas Thwaites of Denton. Anne Gargrave died and was buried at Wragby, 15 March, 1637.[4]

Jane Waterton married Robert Waterhouse, barrister at law, of Shibden Hall, Halifax, at Wragby church, 11 April, 1580. In one of the windows of Shibden Hall is a shield of Waterhouse impaling Waterton.

Frances Waterton married 1st Morris Vane. There was a suit in Chancery, temp. Eliz., between Morris Vane, plaintiff, and Cotton Gargrave, Beatrix and Thomas Waterton, defendants, regarding a claim under a marriage settlement for a parcel of the rectory or tithe in the parish of Sandal given by Thomas Waterton upon the marriage of the plaintiff with his daughter Frances, to be paid by the defendant Gargrave, who married another daughter, Anne Waterton.

[1] *Yorks. Fines* (Yorks. Arch. Rec. S.), iii, 111.
[2] Hopkinson MS., i, 475.
[3] Cartwright, *op. cit.*, 84.
[4] Wragby Reg.

A660. Burke (1858, pp1619-1620, The Landed Gentry) records Jane Waterton's (1557-aft 1607) marriage to Sir Robert Waterhouse (MP) (1544-1598), as well as most meritoriously, her patrilineal descent from Norman d'Adreci of Domesday Book, 1086. Making clear also that d'Adreci, was of William the Conqueror's companions at the Battle of Hastings in 1066 (refer also Volume III – Matrilineal Bloodlines flowing into the Hallifax-Wessex Main Stem):



WAT THE LANDED GENTRY. WAT 1699

WATKINS OF BADBY HOUSE.

WATKINS, CHARLES FITZGERALD, Esq. of Badby House, co. Northampton, b. 31 Aug. 1852.

Lineage.—This family traces their descent from William of Wykeham, through the families of Rodworth and D'Arcon.

JOHN ERSKWORTH, of Northampton, m. *Jane D'Arcon*, and had issue one son and six daus., one of whom, ALICIA ERSKWORTH, m. Charles Watkins, of Daventry, and had a son,

CHARLES WATKINS, m. 1st, Elizabeth Dalgrin Adams, by whom he had issue,

Clarke.

He m. 2ndly, Sarah Lord, by whom he had issue,

WILLIAM, of Badby House.
Sarah, m. Miles Wynne, Esq. of Tynth House, North Wales.
Selina, m. John Francis Dorat, Esq.

He m. 3rdly, Mary Plomer. The only son by his 2nd wife,

WILLIAM WATKINS, Esq. of Badby House, b. 1758; m. Charlotte, dau. of David Ramsay, Esq. of Coventry, M.D.; and d. 1815, leaving issue,

CHARLES WILLIAM, late of Badby House.
Charlotte, d. unm. Sarah.
Eliza, m. Charles Dorat, her cousin, son of John Francis Dorat, Esq.
Selina, m. Rev. Griffith Boynton, 2nd son of Sir Henry Boynton, 3rd bart. of Barton Agnes. Lucy.
Jane, m. Rev. J. H. B. Green, of Normanton. Juvetta.
Dorothy, m. Rev. Thomas Vincent Percy.
Emma, m. James Mascoskie, Esq., Barrister-at-Law.

The eldest son,

CHARLES WILLIAM WATKINS, Esq. of Badby House, Lieut. 30th regt., and Capt. Northampton Militia, b. 9 Oct. 1827; m. 6 Nov. 1851, Mary Mitchell, youngest dau. of Richard John Uniacke, Esq.; and dying 1856, left issue,

CHARLES FITZGERALD, of Badby House, b. 31 Aug. 1852.
William Uniacke.
Helen Mary C.

Arms—Ar., a fess vair between three heraldic lions passant-guardant gu. *Crest*—A griffin's head erased gu. *Motto*—In pura quiete.

Seat—Badby House, near Daventry.

A661. Submitted below is Sir Robert Waterhouse (1544-1598) of Shibden Hall, Halifax, York's, Parliamentary biography record recognising his marriage to Jane Waterton (1557-aft 1607), daughter of Thomas Waterton of Walton and Sandal also known as Sir Thomas Waterton II, Esq (1526-1575) (The History of Parliament: The House of Commons 1558-1603, ed. Hasler, P.W., 1981):

Member Biographies

WATERHOUSE, Robert (1544-98), of Shibden Hall, Halifax, Yorks.

Published in *The History of Parliament: the House of Commons 1558-1603*, ed. P.W. Hasler, 1981
Available from Boydell and Brewer

PREVIOUS BIOGRAPHY | NEXT BIOGRAPHY

Constituency: ALDBOROUGH

Dates: 1584

Family and Education

b. 1544, 1st s. of John Waterhouse, and bro. of David[1]. educ. I. Temple 1562, called 1570. m. Jane, da. of Thomas Waterton of Walton and Sandal, 4s. 10d. suc. fa. 1584.

Offices Held

J.p.q. Yorks. (W. Riding) from c.1583; bencher, I. Temple 1587; farmer of alnage, Hull and Yorks.[2]

Biography

Waterhouse, whose family owned the manor of Halifax, was not content to remain a country gentleman, but was called to the bar and practised as a lawyer at York, maintaining, however, his connexion with the Inner Temple. There are a number of entries in the Inner Temple records relating to his attempts to secure a chamber in which to live whilst in London, the inn objecting on the ground that his visits were infrequent. On two occasions, in 1585 and 1590, the order admitting him to a chamber was revoked, and in 1591 Dr. Cosser was allowed to use the chamber previously granted to Waterhouse, provided the latter was allowed to reside there when in London.[3]

Both Robert and his younger brother David, who represented Aldborough in the Parliament of 1589, owed their election to the influence of the council in the north. Robert had powerful friends in Yorkshire: Cotton Gargrave[4], for example was married to his wife's sister and appointed him one of the supervisors of his will. In the 1584-5 Parliament Robert Waterhouse was one of those 'learned in the law' appointed to a committee to compile a list of bills that ought to be renewed.[5]

Perhaps it was through acting as his lawyer that Waterhouse became the 'loving friend' of the great northern magnate, George, 6th Earl of Shrewsbury, of whose will he was both witness and supervisor. At his death Waterhouse left an estate worth about £500 a year. From his cousin, Nicholas Waterhouse, he had purchased a number of properties close to the family estates, including two fulling mills in Southowram, and the old Hall in Halifax, for which he still owed his cousin £400 when he made his will on 10 Feb. 1598. This will, which was proved on 1 Apr. in the same year, stipulated that his lands in Ackworth and a capital messuage in the parish of St. Helen's in York were to be sold to pay his debts. To his eldest son Edward, his heir, he bequeathed all his books, and a chain of gold which the Countess of Shrewsbury had bequeathed to Edward but which was then in the testator's custody. As her marriage portion his daughter Jane was to receive what was left from the sale of lands mentioned above, after his debts had been paid. Among the supervisors was Richard Gargrave[6], Sir Cotton Gargrave's son. Waterhouse died on 3 Mar. 1598, and was buried two days later in the church of St. Michael-le-Belfrey, York.[7]

Ref Volumes: 1558-1603

Author: A. M. Mimardière

Notes

1. Halifax Antiq. Soc. Pprs. 1915, pp. 149-51; 1916, pp. 201, 261; York prob. reg. 27, f. 329; Vis. Yorks. 1584-5, ed. Foster, 353; Cal. I. T. Recs. i. 344; Royal 18 D 111; SP12/Case F/11, ff. 12-13; C66/1549; Lansd. 114, f. 124.
2. Halifax Antiq. Soc. Pprs. 1913, p. 174; 1943, p. 11; Watson, Hist. and Antiquities Halifax, 212; Cal. I. T. Recs. i. 320, 336, 354, 366, 369, 373.
3. Vis. Yorks. 353; York prob. reg. 26, f. 163; Yorks. Arch. Soc. rec. ser. xxvi. 48; D'Ewes, 334.

Biography Detail

Constituency
Family & Education
Offices Held
Biography
End Notes

Related Resources

1558-1603 Members
1558-1603 Constituencies
1558-1603 Parliaments
1558-1603 Surveys

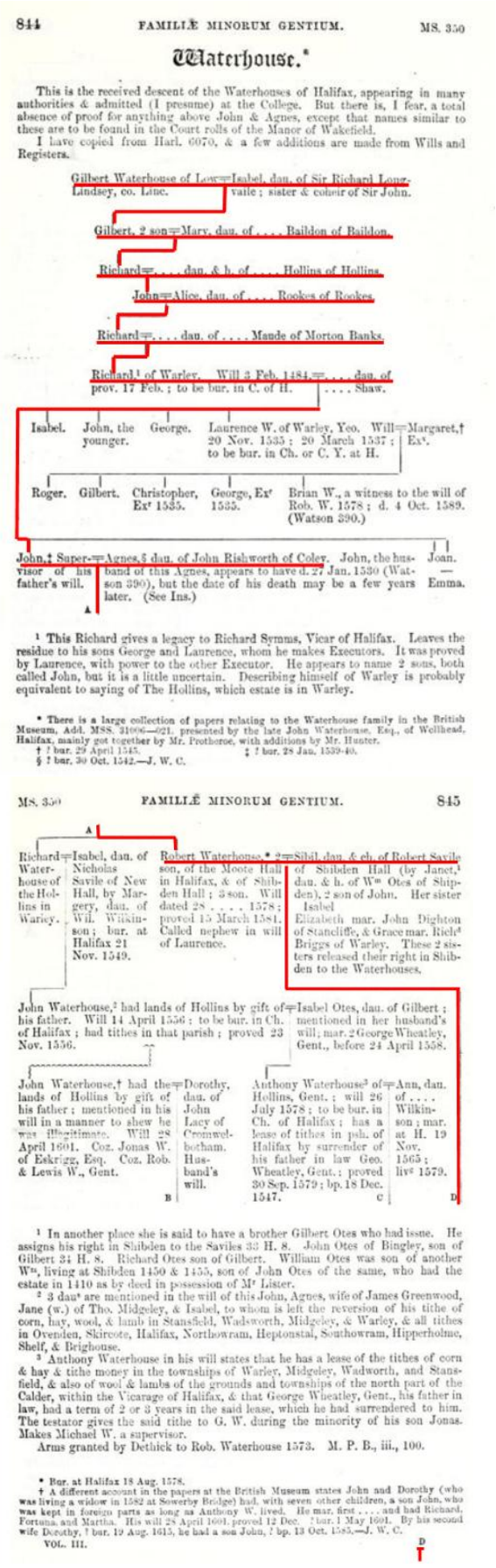
A662. Lister, 1916 (p291) makes the death of Sir Robert Waterhouse (1544-1598), Lawyer, at York City on the 3rd March 1598, further recording he was buried on the 5th March 1598 (refer also, Burial register of St Michael-le-Belfrey):

owram are held of John Lacie, Esquire, as of his Manor of Southowram, by fealty and rent of 11/10 per annum, and are of the yearly value of £4. The said Robert Waterhouse, they said, died on the 3rd March instant.

This Inquisition was taken on the 31st March, 1598, at York Castle, and so seems to show that Mr. Robert Waterhouse had died in that city. In the Burial Register of St. Michael-le-Belfrey's occurs the entry:—"Mr. Waterhouse, the Lawer, was buryed in the Hye Quear, vth of March, 1597-8.

Robert Waterhouse, Esquire, son of the Robert of Harthill, I suppose, and John Milner, gentleman, were two of the jurors who made this inquisition.

A663. The pedigree produced by Hunter & Clay (Hunter, J & Clay, J.W 1895, pp. 845-847, Familiae Minorum Gentium, Vol. III, Harleian Society Publication, Y39) makes Robert Waterhouse, MP (1544-1598) directly descended from Sir Gilbert Waterhouse:



844 FAMILIÆ MINORUM GENTIUM. MS. 350

Waterhouse.*

This is the received descent of the Waterhouses of Halifax, appearing in many authorities & admitted (I presume) at the College. But there is, I fear, a total absence of proof for anything above John & Agnes, except that names similar to these are to be found in the Court rolls of the Manor of Wakefield.

I have copied from Harl. 6070, & a few additions are made from Wills and Registers.

Gilbert Waterhouse of Lee, Lindsey, co. Linc. = Isabel, dau. of Sir Richard Long, vaile; sister & coheir of Sir John.

Gilbert, 2 son = Mary, dau. of . . . . Baildon of Baildon.

Richard = ... dau. & h. of . . . . Hollins of Hollins.

John = Alice, dau. of . . . . Rookes of Rookes.

Richard = ... dau. of . . . . Maude of Morton Banks.

Richard,[1] of Warley. Will 3 Feb. 1484, prov. 17 Feb.; to be bur. in C. of H. = ... dau. of . . . . Shaw.

Isabel. | John, the younger. | George. | Laurence W. of Warley, Yeo. 20 Nov. 1535; 20 March 1537; to be bur. in Ch. or C. Y. at H. | Will = Margaret,† Ex^x.

Roger. | Gilbert. | Christopher, Ex^r 1535. | George, Ex^r 1535. | Brian W., a witness to the will of Rob. W. 1578; d. 4 Oct. 1589. (Watson 390.)

John,‡ Supervisor of his father's will. = Agnes,§ dau. of John Rishworth of Coley. John, the husband of this Agnes, appears to have d. 27 Jan. 1530 (Watson 390), but the date of his death may be a few years later. (See Ins.) | Joan. — Emma.

A

[1] This Richard gives a legacy to Richard Symms, Vicar of Halifax. Leaves the residue to his sons George and Laurence, whom he makes Executors. It was proved by Laurence, with power to the other Executor. He appears to name 2 sons, both called John, but it is a little uncertain. Describing himself of Warley is probably equivalent to saying of The Hollins, which estate is in Warley.

* There is a large collection of papers relating to the Waterhouse family in the British Museum, Add. MSS. 31006—021. presented by the late John Waterhouse, Esq., of Wellhead, Halifax, mainly got together by Mr. Protheroe, with additions by Mr. Hunter.

† ? bur. 29 April 1545. ‡ ? bur. 28 Jan. 1539-40.

§ ? bur. 30 Oct. 1542.—J. W. C.

MS. 350 FAMILIÆ MINORUM GENTIUM. 845

A

Richard = Isabel, dau. of Nicholas Savile of New Hall, by Margery, dau. of Wil. Wilkinson; bur. at Halifax 21 Nov. 1549. | Robert Waterhouse,* 2 son, of the Moote Hall in Halifax, & of Shibden Hall; 3 son. Will dated 28 . . . . 1578; proved 15 March 1581. Called nephew in will of Laurence. = Sibil, dau. & ch. of Robert Savile of Shibden Hall (by Janet,[1] dau. & h. of W^m Otes of Shipden), 2 son of John. Her sister Isabel Elizabeth mar. John Dighton of Stancliffe, & Grace mar. Rich^d Briggs of Warley. These 2 sisters released their right in Shibden to the Waterhouses.

John Waterhouse,[2] had lands of Hollins by gift of his father. Will 14 April 1556; to be bur. in Ch. of Halifax; had tithes in that parish; proved 23 Nov. 1556. = Isabel Otes, dau. of Gilbert; mentioned in her husband's will; mar. 2 George Wheatley, Gent., before 24 April 1558.

John Waterhouse,† had the lands of Hollins by gift of his father; mentioned in his will in a manner to shew he was illegitimate. Will 28 April 1601. Coz. Jonas W. of Eskrigg, Esq. Coz. Rob. & Lewis W., Gent. = Dorothy, dau. of John Lacy of Cromwelbotham. Husband's will. | B

Anthony Waterhouse[3] of Hollins, Gent.; will 26 July 1578; to be bur. in Ch. of Halifax; has a lease of tithes in psh. of Halifax by surrender of his father in law Geo. Wheatley, Gent.; proved 30 Sep. 1579; bp. 18 Dec. 1547. = Ann, dau. of . . . . Wilkinson; mar. at H. 19 Nov. 1565; liv^e 1579. | C | D

[1] In another place she is said to have a brother Gilbert Otes who had issue. He assigns his right in Shibden to the Saviles 33 H. 8. John Otes of Bingley, son of Gilbert 34 H. 8. Richard Otes son of Gilbert. William Otes was son of another W^m, living at Shibden 1450 & 1455, son of John Otes of the same, who had the estate in 1410 as by deed in possession of M^r Lister.

[2] 3 dau^s are mentioned in the will of this John, Agnes, wife of James Greenwood, Jane (w.) of Tho. Midgeley, & Isabel, to whom is left the reversion of his tithe of corn, hay, wool, & lamb in Stansfield, Wadsworth, Midgeley, & Warley, & all tithes in Ovenden, Skircote, Halifax, Northowram, Heptonstal, Southowram, Hipperholme, Shelf, & Brighouse.

[3] Anthony Waterhouse in his will states that he has a lease of the tithes of corn & hay & tithe money in the townships of Warley, Midgeley, Wadworth, and Stansfield, & also of wool & lambs of the grounds and townships of the north part of the Calder, within the Vicarage of Halifax, & that George Wheatley, Gent., his father in law, had a term of 2 or 3 years in the said lease, which he had surrendered to him. The testator gives the said tithe to G. W. during the minority of his son Jonas. Makes Michael W. a supervisor.

Arms granted by Dethick to Rob. Waterhouse 1573. M. P. B., iii., 100.

* Bur. at Halifax 18 Aug. 1578.

† A different account in the papers at the British Museum states John and Dorothy (who was living a widow in 1582 at Sowerby Bridge) had, with seven other children, a son John, who was kept in foreign parts as long as Anthony W. lived. He mar. first . . . . and had Richard, Fortuna, and Martha. His will 28 April 1601, proved 12 Dec. ? bur. 1 May 1604. By his second wife Dorothy, ? bur. 19 Aug. 1615, he had a son John, ? bp. 13 Oct. 1585.—J. W. C.

VOL. III. D

B | C | D

John W., Esq.

Richard W., 1 son. In a deed, 22 Nov. 1608, John Lacy of C., son & heir of John, grants an annuity to R. W., some time of the Hollins, & then of Inshihowlecan Castle in Kilkenny. Perhaps this was the Waterhouse who mar. Sarah, dau. of John Lacy by Alice, dau. of Martin Burkhead; aged 5, 1585, & who mar. 2 .... Gravenor.

Fortuna. — Martha.

Jonas W., son & heir app. & Ex^{r} to his father's will, & under age 1578; bp. at H. 23 May 1568; Att^{y} in the Council of the North.

= .... dau. of .... Widenpp of Tooting; Sence Wheatley al's Waterhouse Administratrix of her son Henry 1642; d. at Tooting 1652.

Ann. — Susan.

Henry W. of Tooting in Surrey, Esq., some time of Eton.

Jonas W., Vicar of Bradford.

Ann, mar. John Milner of Pudsey, by whom John M. of Whitwell, co. Derb., Gent., Trustee in the will of Rob. W. 40 Eliz.; mar. at H. 28 May 1543.

John Waterhouse,* eldest son, of Halifax & Shibden, Esq.; d. 23 Jan. 1584.

= Jane, dau. & h. of Thomas Bosvile of Coningsborough; d. 1 May 1592; bur. in St. Michael's Belfrey, York.

Grace, mar. .... Lowther. — Susan, mar. .... Gunston & had Jane.

Mary, mar. Henry Everingham, nat. son of Sir Henry E.; mar. at Braithwell 1598.

Samuel, d. at Cambridge (Vinc.); bp. 1 Jan. 1553. — Sarah, bp. 30 Nov. 1563.

Philip,[1] M.A., Fel. of Univ. Col., Oxf., d. 16 Jan. 1614, aged 56; bur. at Thornhill; of Overthorpe, where he made his will 31 Dec. 1614; bp. 2 Jan. 1555-6 (*sic*). E

= Helen, dau. of Richard Lacy of Cromwelbotham; liv^{e} 1614.

Stephen, M.A., 40 Eliz. & 1614; bp. 19 March 1558-9.

David, of Oquel Hall, psh. of Birstal, Esq., Barr. of the Inner Temple; M.P. for Berwick 1601; Aldborough; bp. 3 March 1564. F

= Eliz., dau. & c. of Thomas Craine. G

[1] Will of Philip W. of Overthorpe, Gent., 31 Dec. 1614; to be bur. in Quire at Thornhill. Wife Ellen, nephew Theodore, son of my brother David, 2 silver bowls with 3 fleurs de lis on each & a seal ring having the eagle's paw & this ins., "Veritas liberabit," also my Turkish scymeter & my enamelled sword; my cousin Robert W. of Wakefield, mercer; nephew Philip, brother of s^{d} Theodore, a seal ring of gold with the eagle's paw & P. W. on either side; cousin Robert W. of Harthill;

* Bur. there 25 Jan. 1583-4.—J. W. C.

E | F | G

John, son & heir. — Robert, d. y.

David. — Joseph.

Cath^{e}.

Theodore, 2 son, entered of Univ. Coll., Oxf., 6 May 1624, æt. 17.

Philip, of London, stationer. Will 1 Jan. 1631, prov. 9 Jan.

Elizab. — Mary.

Robert Waterhouse* of York,[1] Esq.; will 10 Feb. 40 Eliz.; had a mess. at York in psh. of St. Ellen & St. Wilfrid, & mess. & lands at Ackworth; had bought the Old Hall in Halifax of his cos. Nicholas W.; aged 38 at his father's death; d. 3 March 1598; will proved 1 April 1598. He was M.P. for Aldborough 31 Eliz.

= Jane,† dau. of Tho^{s} Waterton of Walton.

John, bur. at Braithwell 31 Aug. 1583; bp. 28 May 1561. — Thomas,‡ ancestor of W. of Braithwell. (See S. Y.)

12th great grandparents Thomas Waterton & Beatrice Restwold

A664. Having already proven Jane Waterhouse (1557-aft 1607), nee Waterton is the daughter of Thomas Waterton [II], Esq (1526-1575), (Dr Walker, 1931, p403; Lister 1917, p53; Hasler, P. W., 1981), it is the research conducted by genealogist Burke (1836, p1532) in 1816 who confirmed that Jane Waterhouse's (nee Waterton) father, Thomas Waterton, Esq [II] of Walton Hall, married "a daughter of Edward Restwold" [mine]:

SIR ROBERT WATERTON, Knt. of Walton Hall, *temp.* HENRY VII. and VIII. He *m.* Muriel, dau. of Sir John Leke, Knt., and sister of Sir Francis Leke, Knt. of Sutton, co. Derby, and had a son,

SIR THOMAS WATERTON, of Walton Hall, co. York, sheriff of Yorkshire 1 Queen MARY, and one of the privy council for the north of England. He *m.* Joan, dau. of Sir Richard Tempest, Knt. of Bracewell, co. York, and was *s.* by his son,

THOMAS WATERTON, Esq. of Walton Hall, heir to his elder brother, Richard Waterton, Esq. He *m.* a dau. and co-heir of Edward Restwold, Esq. of the Vache, co. Buckingham, and left a son and successor,

THOMAS WATERTON, Esq. of Walton Hall, who *m.* Mary, dau. of Sir John Draycot, Knt. of Paynesley, co. Stafford, and had issue a son,

THOMAS WATERTON, Esq. of Walton Hall, who *m.* Anne, dau. of Henry Slingsby, Esq. of Scriven, co. York, and had issue several children, one of whom, a dau. Mary, *m.* 1st, William Ramsden, Esq., and 2ndly, Thomas Smith, Esq. of Broxhall, co. Nottingham, brother to Lord Carington. The third son,

THOMAS WATERTON, Esq. of Walton, who *s.* his brother, Robert, *m.* Alice, dau. of — Wetherby, Esq., and widow of Edward Clarke, Esq. of Wintersett, near Walton, and by her had issue (with two daus.,) two sons,

I. THOMAS, his heir. II. John.

The eldest son,

THOMAS WATERTON, Esq. of Walton, *m.* Catherine, Gloucester, *b.* 17 May, 1783; *m.* 7 Oct. 1806, Margaret, dau. of James Bateman, Esq. of Islington House, Manchester, and Tollson Hall, co. Westmoreland, and has issue,

JAMES-BATEMAN. John-Bateman.
Herbert-Lloyd-Bassett.
Margaret-Peach, *m.* to T.-P. Dann, Esq.
Elizabeth, *m.* to William Montague, Esq.
Agnes-Paul.
Augusta-Maria, *m.* to the Rev. W. Gilbard.

Mr. Wathen, a magistrate for co. Gloucester, is son of Sir Samuel Wathen, by Margaret, his wife, dau. of Benjamin Peach, Esq. of Westbury, Wilts.

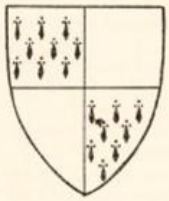
Seat—Woodchester, near Stroud.

WATKINS OF PENNOYRE.

WATKINS, JOHN-LLOYD VAUGHAN, Esq. of Pennoyre, and Rhosferig, co. Brecknock, and Broadway, co. Carmarthen, *b.* 22 Feb. 1802; *m.* 22 June, 1833, Sophia-Louisa-Henrietta, third dau. of Sir George Pococke, Bart. This gentleman, who *s.* his father in Oct. 1829, is a magis-

A665. The full identity of Jane Waterhouse's (1557-aft 1607) (nee Waterton), mother is confirmed by Dr Walker (1931, p403) who leaves no doubt it is Beatrice Restwold:

Thomas and Beatrix Waterton had the following children: Thomas, the eldest son, Edward,[1] Richard, who married Anne, daughter and heiress of William Grimsby of Dracklow, and widow of Sir Richard Massingham of co. Lanc. Richard Waterton had a grant by Thomas Waterton of Walton the elder, and Thomas Waterton the younger, gent., son and heir apparent of the said Thomas, of an annuity of £6 13s. 4d. with power of revocation out of Menstrippe in 1575.[2]



RESTWOLD.
Gyronny of four erm. and gu.

The fourth and youngest son of Thomas and Beatrix Waterton was George, who married Jane, daughter of Henry Grice, esquire, of Sandal. George Waterton was one of the jury to take the *inq. p.m.* of Sir Thomas Gargrave on 1 May, 1579.[3]

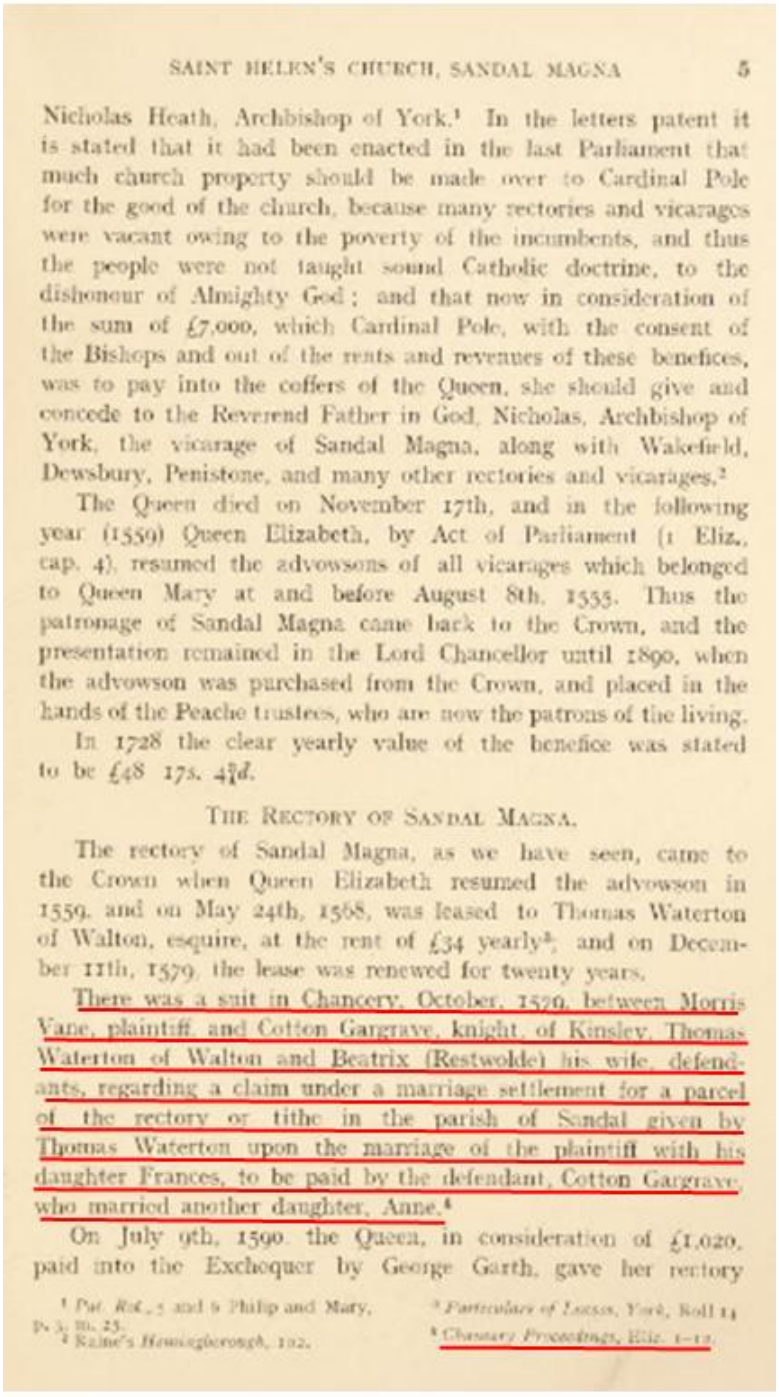
Anne Waterton, the eldest of their daughters, was married, as his second wife, to Sir Cotton Gargrave of Nostell, his first wife having been Bridget, daughter of Sir William Fairfax of Steeton, by his wife, Isabel, daughter and sole heiress of Thomas Thwaites of Denton. Anne Gargrave died and was buried at Wragby, 15 March, 1637.[4]

Jane Waterton married Robert Waterhouse, barrister at law, of Shibden Hall, Halifax, at Wragby church, 11 April, 1580. In one of the windows of Shibden Hall is a shield of Waterhouse impaling Waterton.

Frances Waterton married 1st Morris Vane. There was a suit in Chancery, temp. Eliz., between Morris Vane, plaintiff, and Cotton Gargrave, Beatrix and Thomas Waterton, defendants, regarding a claim under a marriage settlement for a parcel of the rectory or tithe in the parish of Sandal given by Thomas Waterton upon the marriage of the plaintiff with his daughter Frances, to be paid by the defendant Gargrave, who married another daughter, Anne Waterton.

[1] *Yorks. Fines* (Yorks. Arch. Rec. S.), iii, 111.
[2] Hopkinson MS., i, 475.
[3] Cartwright, *op. cit.*, 84.
[4] Wragby Reg.

A666. Found in the Yorkshire Archaeological Journal Vol. 24, p5, is a similar account providing evidence of the marriage of Jane's parents. Whereby it is recorded in a suit in Chancery taken out by Morris Vane, Plaintiff and Thomas and Beatrice Waterton (nee Restwold), who were defendants in a civil case, were a married couple. The legal matter is most useful therefore to further acknowledge their marriage in a legal context:



SAINT HELEN'S CHURCH, SANDAL MAGNA 5

Nicholas Heath, Archbishop of York.[1] In the letters patent it is stated that it had been enacted in the last Parliament that much church property should be made over to Cardinal Pole for the good of the church, because many rectories and vicarages were vacant owing to the poverty of the incumbents, and thus the people were not taught sound Catholic doctrine, to the dishonour of Almighty God; and that now in consideration of the sum of £7,000, which Cardinal Pole, with the consent of the Bishops and out of the rents and revenues of these benefices, was to pay into the coffers of the Queen, she should give and concede to the Reverend Father in God, Nicholas, Archbishop of York, the vicarage of Sandal Magna, along with Wakefield, Dewsbury, Penistone, and many other rectories and vicarages.[2]

The Queen died on November 17th, and in the following year (1559) Queen Elizabeth, by Act of Parliament (1 Eliz., cap. 4), resumed the advowsons of all vicarages which belonged to Queen Mary at and before August 8th, 1535. Thus the patronage of Sandal Magna came back to the Crown, and the presentation remained in the Lord Chancellor until 1890, when the advowson was purchased from the Crown, and placed in the hands of the Peache trustees, who are now the patrons of the living.

In 1728 the clear yearly value of the benefice was stated to be £48 17s. 4¾d.

THE RECTORY OF SANDAL MAGNA.

The rectory of Sandal Magna, as we have seen, came to the Crown when Queen Elizabeth resumed the advowson in 1559, and on May 24th, 1568, was leased to Thomas Waterton of Walton, esquire, at the rent of £34 yearly[3]; and on December 11th, 1579, the lease was renewed for twenty years.

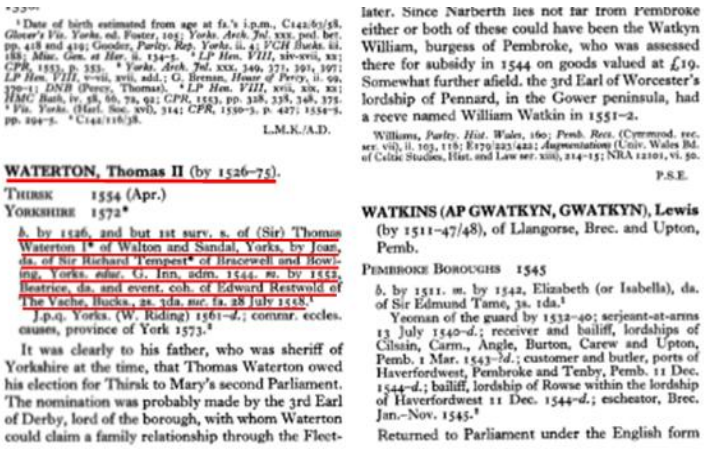
There was a suit in Chancery, October, 1570, between Morris Vane, plaintiff, and Cotton Gargrave, knight, of Kinsley, Thomas Waterton of Walton and Beatrix (Restwolde) his wife, defendants, regarding a claim under a marriage settlement for a parcel of the rectory or tithe in the parish of Sandal given by Thomas Waterton upon the marriage of the plaintiff with his daughter Frances, to be paid by the defendant, Cotton Gargrave, who married another daughter, Anne.[4]

On July 9th, 1590, the Queen, in consideration of £1,020, paid into the Exchequer by George Garth, gave her rectory

[1] *Pat. Rol.*, 5 and 6 Philip and Mary, pt. 3, m. 23.
[2] Raine's *Hemingborough*, 102.
[3] *Particulars of Leases, York*, Roll 14
[4] *Chancery Proceedings*, Eliz. 1–12.

A667. Bindoff, S. T (1982, pp556-557), in his late 20th century publication, *The House of Commons, 1509-1558, Volume 1*, makes from parliamentary records, certain that Sir Thomas Waterton [II], Esq (1526-1575), MP and Lawyer, married "Beatrice Restwold".

A668. As shown below, Bindoff (1982, p557), also refers to him as Sir Thomas Waterton II, married to Beatrice, daughter and eventual co-heir of Edward Restwold, with Thomas and Beatrice married by the year 1552:



[1] Date of birth estimated from age at fa.'s i.p.m., C142/61/58. *Glover's Vis. Yorks.* ed. Foster, 105; *Yorks. Arch. Jnl.* xxx. ped. bet. pp. 418 and 419; Goodet, *Parlty. Rep. Yorks.* ii. 4; *VCH Bucks.* iii. 188; *Misc. Gen. et Her.* ii. 134–5. [2] *LP Hen. VIII*, xiv–xvii, xx; *CPR*, 1553, p. 353. [3] *Yorks. Arch. Jnl.* xxx. 349, 371, 391, 397; *LP Hen. VIII*, v–viii, xvii, add.; G. Brenan, *House of Percy*, ii. 99, 329–31; *DNB* (Percy, Thomas). [4] *LP Hen. VIII*, xvii, xix, xx; *HMC Bath*, iv. 58, 66, 72, 92; *CPR*, 1553, pp. 328, 338, 348, 375. [5] *Vis. Yorks.* (Harl. Soc. xvii), 314; *CPR*, 1550–3, p. 427; 1554–5, pp. 294–5. [6] C142/116/38.

L.M.K./A.D.

WATERTON, Thomas II (by 1526–75).

THIRSK 1554 (Apr.)
YORKSHIRE 1572[6]

b. by 1526, and but 1st surv. s. of (Sir) Thomas Waterton I[4] of Walton and Sandal, Yorks. by Joan, da. of Sir Richard Tempest[5] of Bracewell and Bowling, Yorks. *educ.* G. Inn, adm. 1544. *m.* by 1552, Beatrice, da. and event. coh. of Edward Restwold of The Vache, Bucks., 2s. 3da. *suc. fa.* 28 July 1548.[1]

J.p.q. Yorks. (W. Riding) 1561–*d.*; commr. eccles. causes, province of York 1573.[2]

It was clearly to his father, who was sheriff of Yorkshire at the time, that Thomas Waterton owed his election for Thirsk to Mary's second Parliament. The nomination was probably made by the 3rd Earl of Derby, lord of the borough, with whom Waterton could claim a family relationship through the Fleet-

later. Since Narberth lies not far from Pembroke either or both of these could have been the Watkyn William, burgess of Pembroke, who was assessed there for subsidy in 1544 on goods valued at £19. Somewhat further afield, the 3rd Earl of Worcester's lordship of Pennard, in the Gower peninsula, had a reeve named William Watkin in 1551–2.

Williams, *Parlty. Hist. Wales*, 160; *Pemb. Recs.* (Cymmrod. rec. ser. vii), ii. 103, 119; E179/223/422; *Augmentations* (Univ. Wales Bd. of Celtic Studies, Hist. and Law ser. xiii), 214–15; NRA 12101, vi. 50.

P.S.E.

WATKINS (AP GWATKYN, GWATKYN), Lewis (by 1511–47/48), of Llangorse, Brec. and Upton, Pemb.

PEMBROKE BOROUGHS 1545

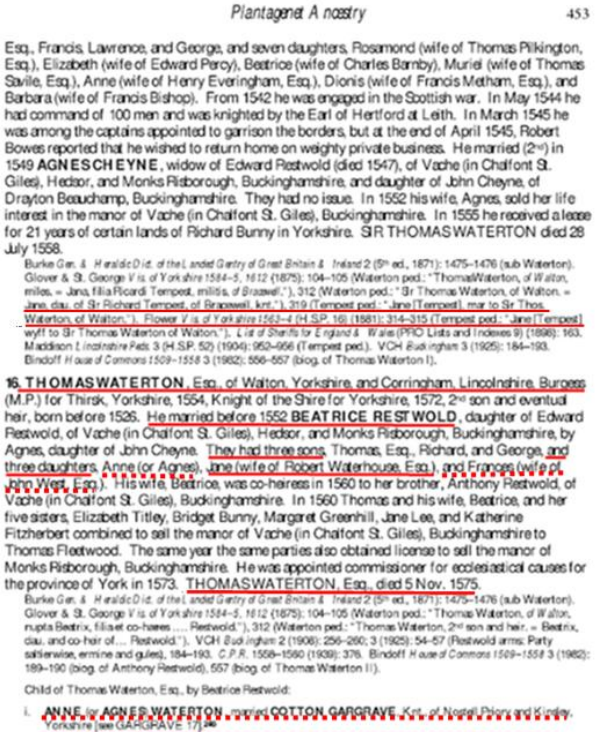
b. by 1511. *m.* by 1542, Elizabeth (or Isabella), da. of Sir Edmund Tame, 3s. 1da.[1]

Yeoman of the guard by 1532–40; serjeant-at-arms 13 July 1540–*d.*; receiver and bailiff, lordships of Cilsain, Carm., Angle, Burton, Carew and Upton, Pemb. 1 Mar. 1543–*d.*; customer and butler, ports of Haverfordwest, Pembroke and Tenby, Pemb. 11 Dec. 1544–*d.*; bailiff, lordship of Rowse within the lordship of Haverfordwest 11 Dec. 1544–*d.*; escheator, Brec. Jan.–Nov. 1545.[2]

Returned to Parliament under the English form

A669. For the sake of brevity, other evidence confirming the same is voluminous, and includes but is not limited to Halifax Antiq. Soc. Pprs. (1915, pp. 149-51; 1916, pp. 201, 261); York prob. reg. 27, f. 229; Vis. Yorks. 1584-5, ed. Foster, 353; Cal. I. T. Recs. i. 344; Royal 18 D 111; SP13/Case F/11, ff. 12-13; C66/1549; Lansd. 114, f. 124; Halifax Antiq. Soc. Pprs (1913, p. 174; 1942, p. 11); Watson, Hist. and Antiquities Halifax, 212; Cal. I. T. Recs.i. 320, 336, 354, 366, 369, 372; Vis. Yorks.353; York prob. reg. 24, f. 183; Yorks. Arch. Soc. rec. ser. xxii. 48; D'Ewes, 334; and North Country Wills (Surtees Soc. cxxi), 150; HMC Hatfield, vi. 252; vii. 506; Halifax Antiq. Soc. Pprs (1916, pp. 278-9; York prob. reg. 27, f. 229; C142/254/11).

A670. It is Richardson D (2011, p453) who revealed Thomas Waterton II and Beatrice Restwold had many children, including Jane Waterton, "wife of Robert Waterhouse, Esq:"



Plantagenet Ancestry 453

Esq., Francis, Lawrence, and George, and seven daughters, Rosamond (wife of Thomas Pilkington, Esq.), Elizabeth (wife of Edward Percy), Beatrice (wife of Charles Barnby), Muriel (wife of Thomas Saville, Esq.), Anne (wife of Henry Everingham, Esq.), Dionis (wife of Francis Metham, Esq.), and Barbara (wife of Francis Bishop). From 1542 he was engaged in the Scottish war. In May 1544 he had command of 100 men and was knighted by the Earl of Hertford at Leith. In March 1545 he was among the captains appointed to garrison the borders, but at the end of April 1545, Robert Bowes reported that he wished to return home on weighty private business. He married (2nd) in 1549 **AGNES CHEYNE**, widow of Edward Restwold (died 1547), of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Hedsor, and Monks Risborough, Buckinghamshire, and daughter of John Cheyne, of Drayton Beauchamp, Buckinghamshire. They had no issue. In 1552 his wife, Agnes, sold her life interest in the manor of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Buckinghamshire. In 1555 he received a lease for 21 years of certain lands of Richard Bunny in Yorkshire. SIR THOMAS WATERTON died 28 July 1558.

Burke *Gen. & Heraldic Dict. of the Landed Gentry of Great Britain & Ireland* 2 (5th ed., 1871): 1475–1476 (sub Waterton). Glover & St. George *Vis. of Yorkshire 1584–5, 1612* (1875): 104–105 (Waterton ped.: "Thomas Waterton, *of Walton*, miles. = Jana, filia Ricardi Tempest, militis, *of Braswell*."), 312 (Waterton ped.: "Sir Thomas Waterton, of Walton. = Jane, dau. of Sir Richard Tempest, of Bragswell, knt."), 319 (Tempest ped.: "Jane [Tempest], mar to Sir Thos. Waterton, of Walton."). *Flower Vis. of Yorkshire 1563–4* (H.S.P. 16) (1881): 314–315 (Tempest ped.: "Jane [Tempest] wyf to Sir Thomas Waterton of Walton."). *List of Sheriffs for England & Wales* (PRO Lists and Indexes 9) (1898): 163. Maddison *Lincolnshire Peds.* 3 (H.S.P. 52) (1904): 952–956 (Tempest ped.). VCH *Buckingham* 3 (1925): 184–193. Bindoff *House of Commons 1509–1558* 3 (1982): 556–557 (biog. of Thomas Waterton I).

16. THOMAS WATERTON, Esq., of Walton, Yorkshire, and Corringham, Lincolnshire, Burgess (M.P.) for Thirsk, Yorkshire, 1554, Knight of the Shire for Yorkshire, 1572, 2nd son and eventual heir, born before 1526. He married before 1552 **BEATRICE RESTWOLD**, daughter of Edward Restwold, of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Hedsor, and Monks Risborough, Buckinghamshire, by Agnes, daughter of John Cheyne. They had three sons, Thomas, Esq., Richard, and George, and three daughters, Anne (or Agnes), Jane (wife of Robert Waterhouse, Esq.), and Frances (wife of John West, Esq.). His wife, Beatrice, was co-heiress in 1560 to her brother, Anthony Restwold, of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Buckinghamshire. In 1560 Thomas and his wife, Beatrice, and her five sisters, Elizabeth Titley, Bridget Bunny, Margaret Greenhill, Jane Lee, and Katherine Fitzherbert combined to sell the manor of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Buckinghamshire to Thomas Fleetwood. The same year the same parties also obtained license to sell the manor of Monks Risborough, Buckinghamshire. He was appointed commissioner for ecclesiastical causes for the province of York in 1573. THOMAS WATERTON, Esq., died 5 Nov. 1575.

Burke *Gen. & Heraldic Dict. of the Landed Gentry of Great Britain & Ireland* 2 (5th ed., 1871): 1475–1476 (sub Waterton). Glover & St. George *Vis. of Yorkshire 1584–5, 1612* (1875): 104–105 (Waterton ped.: "Thomas Waterton, *of Walton*, nupta Beatrix, filiaet co-hæres .... Restwold."), 312 (Waterton ped.: "Thomas Waterton, 2nd son and heir. = Beatrix, dau. and co-heir of.... Restwold."). VCH *Buckingham* 2 (1908): 256–260; 3 (1925): 54–57 (Restwold arms: Party salterwise, ermine and gules), 184–193. *C.P.R.* 1558–1560 (1939): 376. Bindoff *House of Commons 1509–1558* 3 (1982): 189–190 (biog. of Anthony Restwold), 557 (biog. of Thomas Waterton II).

Child of Thomas Waterton, Esq., by Beatrice Restwold:

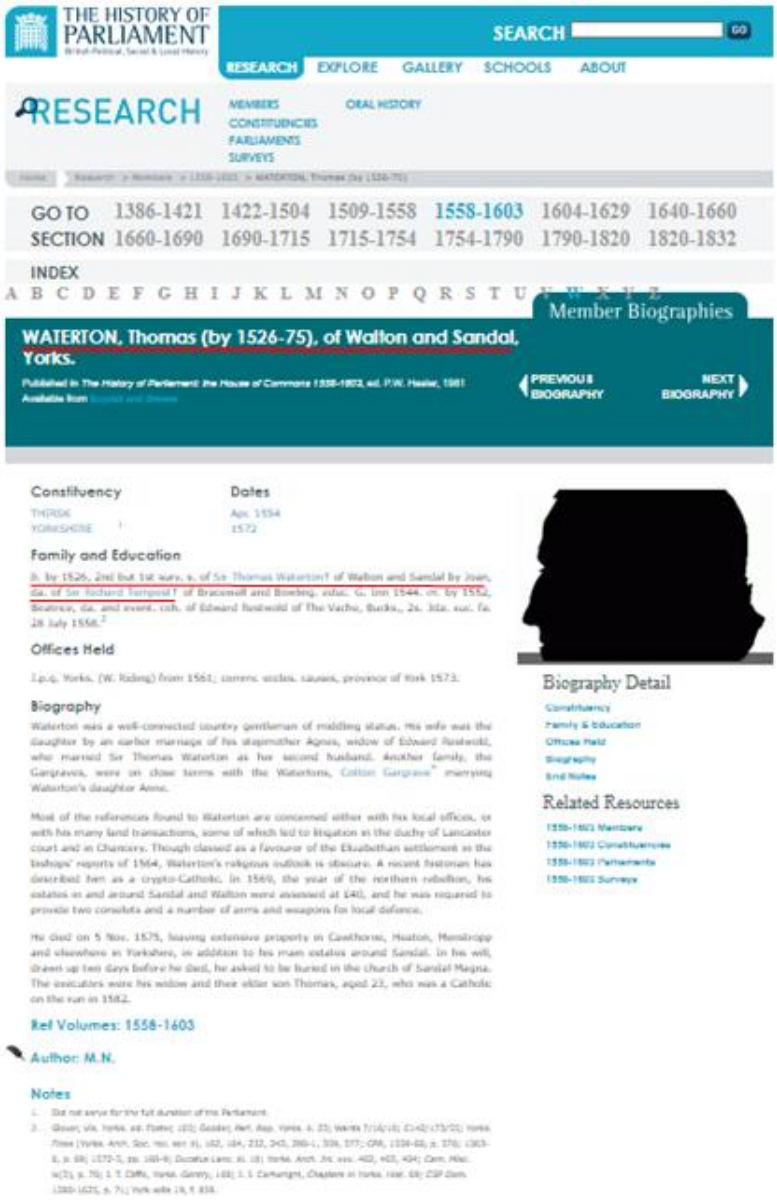
i. **ANNE** (or **AGNES**) **WATERTON**, married **COTTON GARGRAVE**, Knt., of Nostell Priory and Wakefield, Yorkshire [see GARGRAVE 17].[26]

A671 At the foot of Richardson (2011, p453) accounts for not only Jane married to Robert Waterhouse, being a daughter of Thomas Waterton II, Esquire, but also Anne or Agnes, married to Sir Cotton Gargrave, and a third daughter, Frances.

A672.	The examiners attention will be returned to this trace by Richardson, and in particular his circumspect decision to make explicit that Thomas Waterton II, Esquire, Jane Waterton's father, is a descendent of King Edward I.

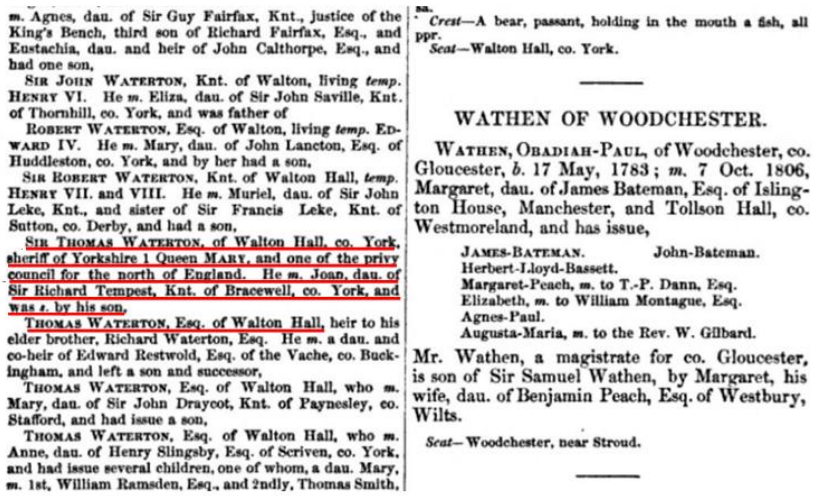
A673. Underscored above, and found at the top of the narrative made by Richardson (2011, p4453), for this immediate Waterton of Walton family, is yet another important fact that Thomas Waterton II, Esq's parents are Sir Thomas Waterton [I] (1501-1558) and Jane (Joan) Tempest, daughter of Sir Richard Tempest.

A674. The History of British Parliament Online, in a biography of the petitioners' 12th great grandfather, acknowledges Sir Thomas Waterton II Esq, was the son of Sir Thomas Waterton I and Joan (Jane) Tempest; and that he married Beatrice Restwold:



13th great grandparents Thomas Waterton & Joan Tempest

A675. Burke (1836, p1532) records the marriage between Sir Thomas Waterton I (1501-1558) and Joan (Jane) Tempest (1504-1545), making further account that they are parents of Thomas Walton, Esq of Walton Hall (i.e., Sir Thomas Waterton II who married [Beatrice] the daughter of Edward Restwold [mine]:



m. Agnes, dau. of Sir Guy Fairfax, Knt., justice of the King's Bench, third son of Richard Fairfax, Esq., and Eustachia, dau. and heir of John Calthorpe, Esq., and had one son,

SIR JOHN WATERTON, Knt. of Walton, living *temp.* HENRY VI. He *m.* Eliza, dau. of Sir John Saville, Knt. of Thornhill, co. York, and was father of

ROBERT WATERTON, Esq. of Walton, living *temp.* EDWARD IV. He *m.* Mary, dau. of John Lancton, Esq. of Huddleston, co. York, and by her had a son,

SIR ROBERT WATERTON, Knt. of Walton Hall, *temp.* HENRY VII. and VIII. He *m.* Muriel, dau. of Sir John Leke, Knt., and sister of Sir Francis Leke, Knt. of Sutton, co. Derby, and had a son,

SIR THOMAS WATERTON, of Walton Hall, co. York, sheriff of Yorkshire 1 Queen MARY, and one of the privy council for the north of England. He *m.* Joan, dau. of Sir Richard Tempest, Knt. of Bracewell, co. York, and was *s.* by his son,

THOMAS WATERTON, Esq. of Walton Hall, heir to his elder brother, Richard Waterton, Esq. He *m.* a dau. and co-heir of Edward Restwold, Esq. of the Vache, co. Buckingham, and left a son and successor,

THOMAS WATERTON, Esq. of Walton Hall, who *m.* Mary, dau. of Sir John Draycot, Knt. of Paynesley, co. Stafford, and had issue a son,

THOMAS WATERTON, Esq. of Walton Hall, who *m.* Anne, dau. of Henry Slingsby, Esq. of Scriven, co. York, and had issue several children, one of whom, a dau. Mary, *m.* 1st, William Ramsden, Esq., and 2ndly, Thomas Smith,

Crest—A bear, passant, holding in the mouth a fish, all ppr.

Seat—Walton Hall, co. York.

WATHEN OF WOODCHESTER.

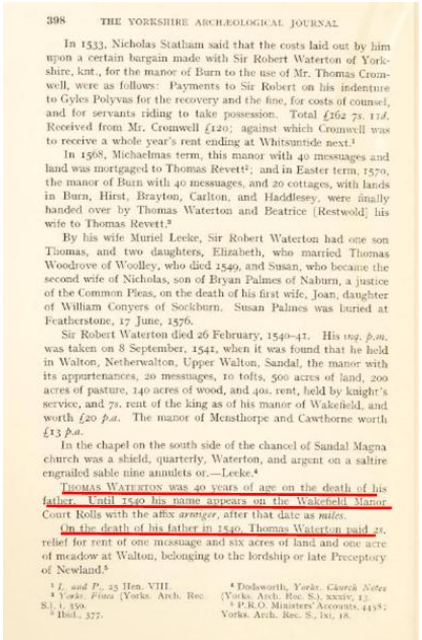
WATHEN, OBADIAH-PAUL, of Woodchester, co. Gloucester, *b.* 17 May, 1783; *m.* 7 Oct. 1806, Margaret, dau. of James Bateman, Esq. of Islington House, Manchester, and Tollson Hall, co. Westmoreland, and has issue,

JAMES-BATEMAN. John-Bateman.
Herbert-Lloyd-Bassett.
Margaret-Peach, *m.* to T.-P. Dann, Esq.
Elizabeth, *m.* to William Montague, Esq.
Agnes-Paul.
Augusta-Maria, *m.* to the Rev. W. Gilbard.

Mr. Wathen, a magistrate for co. Gloucester, is son of Sir Samuel Wathen, by Margaret, his wife, dau. of Benjamin Peach, Esq. of Westbury, Wilts.

Seat—Woodchester, near Stroud.

A676. Dr J.W. Walker (1931, pp398-399); confirms not only did Sir Thomas Waterton [I] (1501-1558) and Joan Tempest (1504-1545), daughter of Richard Tempest marry, that they went on to have many children. Dr Walker also names them: Richard [*died*], Thomas *[Hallifax II, who later married Beatrice Restwold*], George, Francis, Laurence, and several daughters, naming Muriel Waterton [II] [*italics mine*], Agnes, Dyonisia, and Elizabeth. Walker further names who the daughter married.



398 THE YORKSHIRE ARCHÆOLOGICAL JOURNAL.

In 1533, Nicholas Statham said that the costs laid out by him upon a certain bargain made with Sir Robert Waterton of Yorkshire, knt., for the manor of Burn to the use of Mr. Thomas Cromwell, were as follows: Payments to Sir Robert on his indenture to Gyles Polyvas for the recovery and the fine, for costs of counsel, and for servants riding to take possession. Total £162 7s. 11d. Received from Mr. Cromwell £120; against which Cromwell was to receive a whole year's rent ending at Whitsuntide next.[1]

In 1568, Michaelmas term, this manor with 40 messuages and land was mortgaged to Thomas Revett[2]; and in Easter term, 1570, the manor of Burn with 40 messuages, and 20 cottages, with lands in Burn, Hirst, Brayton, Carlton, and Haddlesey, were finally handed over by Thomas Waterton and Beatrice [Restwold] his wife to Thomas Revett.[3]

By his wife Muriel Leeke, Sir Robert Waterton had one son Thomas, and two daughters, Elizabeth, who married Thomas Woodrove of Woolley, who died 1549, and Susan, who became the second wife of Nicholas, son of Bryan Palmes of Naburn, a justice of the Common Pleas, on the death of his first wife, Joan, daughter of William Conyers of Sockburn. Susan Palmes was buried at Featherstone, 17 June, 1576.

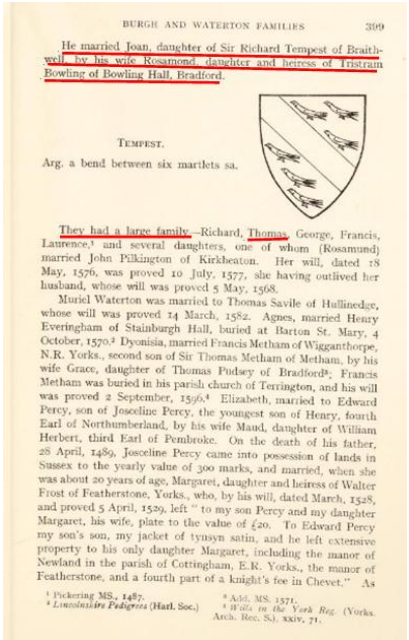
Sir Robert Waterton died 26 February, 1540-41. His *inq. p.m.* was taken on 8 September, 1541, when it was found that he held in Walton, Netherwalton, Upper Walton, Sandal, the manor with its appurtenances, 20 messuages, 10 tofts, 500 acres of land, 200 acres of pasture, 140 acres of wood, and 40s. rent, held by knight's service, and 7s. rent of the king as of his manor of Wakefield, and worth £20 *p.a.* The manor of Mensthorpe and Cawthorne worth £13 *p.a.*

In the chapel on the south side of the chancel of Sandal Magna church was a shield, quarterly, Waterton, and argent on a saltire engrailed sable nine annulets or.—Lecke.[4]

THOMAS WATERTON was 40 years of age on the death of his father. Until 1540 his name appears on the Wakefield Manor Court Rolls with the affix *armiger*, after that date as *miles*.

On the death of his father in 1540, Thomas Waterton paid 7s. relief for rent of one messuage and six acres of land and one acre of meadow at Walton, belonging to the lordship or late Preceptory of Newland.[5]

[1] *L. and P.*, 25 Hen. VIII.
[2] *Yorks. Fines* (Yorks. Arch. Rec. S.), i, 159.
[3] Ibid., 377.
[4] Dodsworth, *Yorks. Church Notes* (Yorks. Arch. Rec. S.), xxxiv, 13.
[5] P.R.O. Ministers' Accounts, 4458; Yorks. Arch. Rec. S., lxi, 18.



BURGH AND WATERTON FAMILIES 399

He married Joan, daughter of Sir Richard Tempest of Braithwell, by his wife Rosamond, daughter and heiress of Tristram Bowling of Bowling Hall, Bradford.

TEMPEST.
Arg. a bend between six martlets sa.

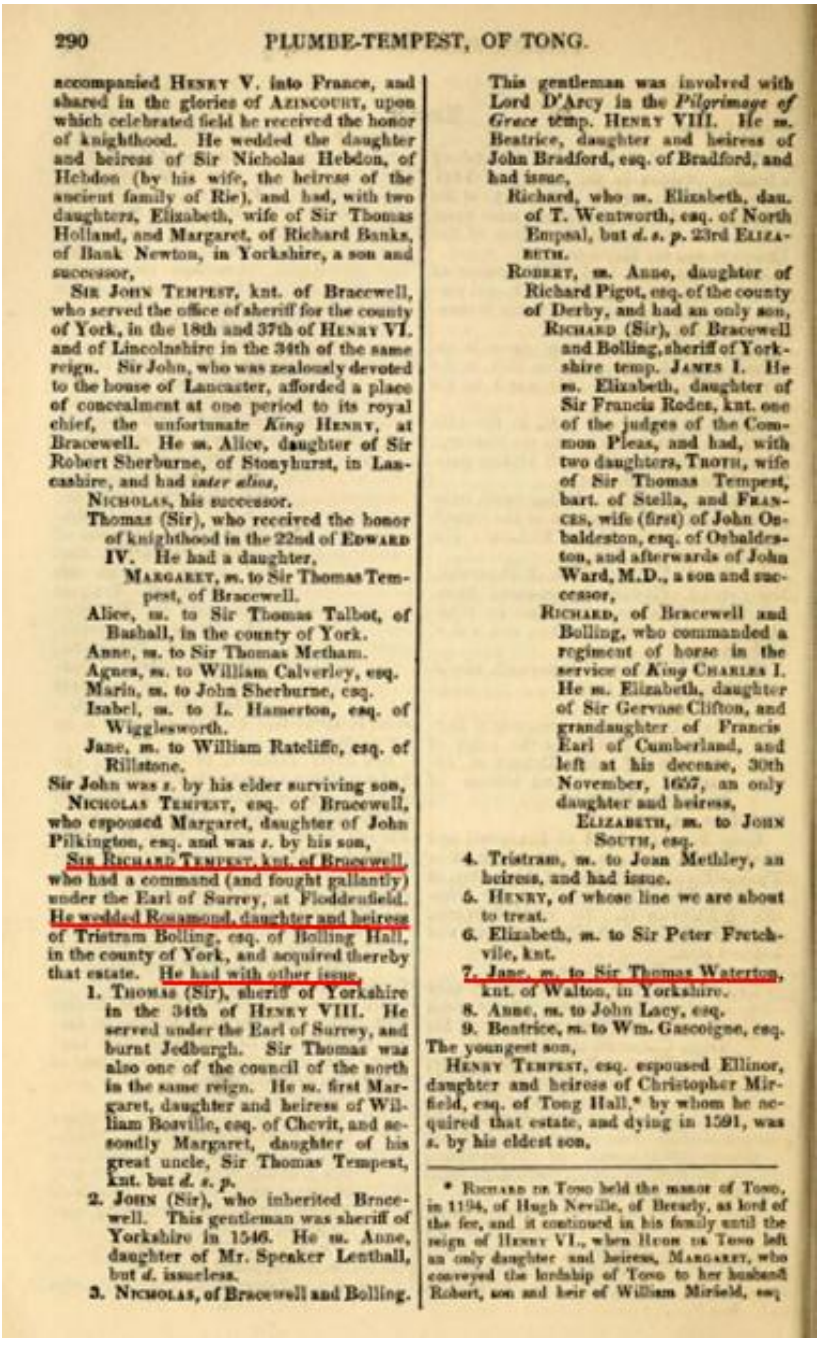
They had a large family.—Richard, Thomas, George, Francis, Laurence,[1] and several daughters, one of whom (Rosamund) married John Pilkington of Kirkheaton. Her will, dated 18 May, 1576, was proved 10 July, 1577, she having outlived her husband, whose will was proved 5 May, 1568.

Muriel Waterton was married to Thomas Savile of Hullinedge, whose will was proved 14 March, 1582. Agnes, married Henry Everingham of Stainburgh Hall, buried at Barton St. Mary, 4 October, 1570.[2] Dyonisia, married Francis Metham of Wigganthorpe, N.R. Yorks., second son of Sir Thomas Metham of Metham, by his wife Grace, daughter of Thomas Pudsey of Bradford[3]; Francis Metham was buried in his parish church of Terrington, and his will was proved 2 September, 1596.[4] Elizabeth, married to Edward Percy, son of Joseline Percy, the youngest son of Henry, fourth Earl of Northumberland, by his wife Maud, daughter of William Herbert, third Earl of Pembroke. On the death of his father, 28 April, 1489, Joseline Percy came into possession of lands in Sussex to the yearly value of 300 marks, and married, when she was about 20 years of age, Margaret, daughter and heiress of Walter Frost of Featherstone, Yorks., who, by his will, dated March, 1528, and proved 5 April, 1529, left "to my son Percy and my daughter Margaret, his wife, plate to the value of £20. To Edward Percy my son's son, my jacket of tynsyn satin, and he left extensive property to his only daughter Margaret, including the manor of Newland in the parish of Cottingham, E.R. Yorks., the manor of Featherstone, and a fourth part of a knight's fee in Chevet." As

[1] Pickering MS., 1487.
[2] *Lincolnshire Pedigrees* (Harl. Soc.)
[3] Add. MS. 1571.
[4] *Wills in the York Reg.* (Yorks. Arch. Rec. S.), xxiv, 71.

A677. Dr Walker (1931, p399) records daughter Elizabeth Waterton's marriage to Edward Percy, son of Jocelyn Percy, the youngest son of Henry Percy, 4th Earl of Northumberland and Maud Herbert, daughter of William Herbert, 3rd Earl of Pembroke. This William Herbert served as Chancellor of the University of Oxford and together with King James I, founded Pembroke College, Oxford.

A678. The marriage of Sir Thomas Waterton I (1501-1558) and Joan (Jane) Tempest is further recorded by Burke (1837, p290). In his publication, Genealogical and Heraldic History of Landed Gentry, Burke further accounts for the lineage Joan Waterton (nee Tempest), enjoyed:



290 PLUMBE-TEMPEST, OF TONG.

accompanied HENRY V. into France, and shared in the glories of AZINCOURT, upon which celebrated field he received the honor of knighthood. He wedded the daughter and heiress of Sir Nicholas Hebdon, of Hebdon (by his wife, the heiress of the ancient family of Rie), and had, with two daughters, Elizabeth, wife of Sir Thomas Holland, and Margaret, of Richard Banks, of Bank Newton, in Yorkshire, a son and successor,

SIR JOHN TEMPEST, knt. of Bracewell, who served the office of sheriff for the county of York, in the 18th and 37th of HENRY VI. and of Lincolnshire in the 34th of the same reign. Sir John, who was zealously devoted to the house of Lancaster, afforded a place of concealment at one period to its royal chief, the unfortunate *King* HENRY, at Bracewell. He *m.* Alice, daughter of Sir Robert Sherburne, of Stonyhurst, in Lancashire, and had *inter alios*,

NICHOLAS, his successor.

Thomas (Sir), who received the honor of knighthood in the 22nd of EDWARD IV. He had a daughter,

MARGARET, *m.* to Sir Thomas Tempest, of Bracewell.

Alice, *m.* to Sir Thomas Talbot, of Bashall, in the county of York.

Anne, *m.* to Sir Thomas Metham.

Agnes, *m.* to William Calverley, esq.

Marin, *m.* to John Sherburne, esq.

Isabel, *m.* to L. Hamerton, esq. of Wigglesworth.

Jane, *m.* to William Ratcliffe, esq. of Rillstone.

Sir John was *s.* by his elder surviving son,

NICHOLAS TEMPEST, esq. of Bracewell, who espoused Margaret, daughter of John Pilkington, esq. and was *s.* by his son,

SIR RICHARD TEMPEST, knt. of Bracewell, who had a command (and fought gallantly) under the Earl of Surrey, at Flodden-field. He wedded Rosamond, daughter and heiress of Tristram Bolling, esq. of Bolling Hall, in the county of York, and acquired thereby that estate. He had with other issue,

1. THOMAS (Sir), sheriff of Yorkshire in the 34th of HENRY VIII. He served under the Earl of Surrey, and burnt Jedburgh. Sir Thomas was also one of the council of the north in the same reign. He *m.* first Margaret, daughter and heiress of William Bosville, esq. of Chevit, and secondly Margaret, daughter of his great uncle, Sir Thomas Tempest, knt. but *d. s. p.*
2. JOHN (Sir), who inherited Bracewell. This gentleman was sheriff of Yorkshire in 1546. He *m.* Anne, daughter of Mr. Speaker Lenthall, but *d.* issueless.
3. NICHOLAS, of Bracewell and Bolling. This gentleman was involved with Lord D'Arcy in the *Pilgrimage of Grace* temp. HENRY VIII. He *m.* Beatrice, daughter and heiress of John Bradford, esq. of Bradford, and had issue,

Richard, who *m.* Elizabeth, dau. of T. Wentworth, esq. of North Empsal, but *d. s. p.* 23rd ELIZABETH.

ROBERT, *m.* Anne, daughter of Richard Pigot, esq. of the county of Derby, and had an only son,

RICHARD (Sir), of Bracewell and Bolling, sheriff of Yorkshire temp. JAMES I. He *m.* Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Francis Rodes, knt. one of the judges of the Common Pleas, and had, with two daughters, TROTH, wife of Sir Thomas Tempest, bart. of Stella, and FRANCES, wife (first) of John Osbaldeston, esq. of Osbaldeston, and afterwards of John Ward, M.D., a son and successor,

RICHARD, of Bracewell and Bolling, who commanded a regiment of horse in the service of *King* CHARLES I. He *m.* Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Gervase Clifton, and grandaughter of Francis Earl of Cumberland, and left at his decease, 30th November, 1657, an only daughter and heiress,

ELIZABETH, *m.* to JOHN SOUTH, esq.

4. Tristram, *m.* to Joan Methley, an heiress, and had issue.
5. HENRY, of whose line we are about to treat.
6. Elizabeth, *m.* to Sir Peter Fretchville, knt.
7. Jane, *m.* to Sir Thomas Waterton, knt. of Walton, in Yorkshire.
8. Anne, *m.* to John Lacy, esq.
9. Beatrice, *m.* to Wm. Gascoigne, esq.

The youngest son,

HENRY TEMPEST, esq. espoused Ellinor, daughter and heiress of Christopher Mirfield, esq. of Tong Hall,* by whom he acquired that estate, and dying in 1591, was *s.* by his eldest son,

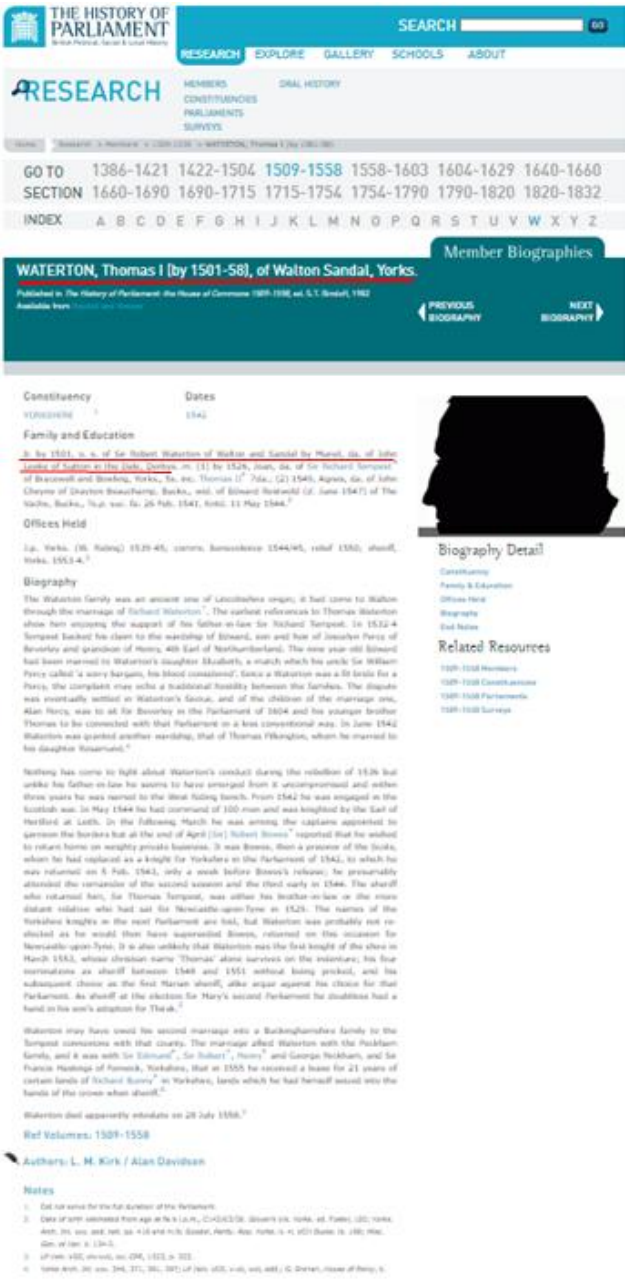
* RICHARD DE TONG held the manor of Tong, in 1194, of Hugh Neville, of Beauly, as lord of the fee, and it continued in his family until the reign of HENRY VI., when HUGH DE TONG left an only daughter and heiress, MARGARET, who conveyed the lordship of Tong to her husband Robert, son and heir of William Mirfield, esq

14th great grandparents Robert Waterton & Muriel Leeke

A679. The lineage of both of Sir Thomas Waterton II's (1526-1575) parents, Sir Robert Waterton (1478-1540) & Muriel Leeke is dynastic.

A680. A series of records comes together throughout the remainder of this petition making for a coherent lineage for both parents proving their descent from Margaret of Wessex (1045-1093) and Malcolm III of Scotland (1031-1093); and also, William I (1028-1087) and Matilda of Flanders (1031-1083), through Edward I (1239-1307) and Eleanor de Castile (1241-1290).

A681. To begin, the examiners attention is directed to the British parliamentary record which attests to Sir Thomas Waterton (1501-1558) of Walton Sandal, Yorkshire, being the son of Sir Robert Waterton and Muriel Leeke (nee Waterton) (The History of Parliament: The House of Commons 1509-1558, ed. S.T. Bindoff, 1982):



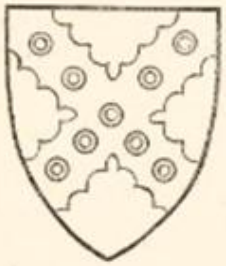
A682. Whilst not providing a year for the marriage of Robert Waterton and Muriel Leeke, the record does make clear however, they were married; and Muriel is the daughter of John Leeke of Sutton, in the dale of County Derby. Below Dr J.W. Walker (1931, p396) further provides a most interesting explanation of the circumstances which led to their marriage:

of York, as of the manor of Sherburn in Elmet, by fealty and suit of Court. He directed that his debts to the amount of £340 be paid out of the issues and profits of the manors of Cawthorne, Walton, and Burn.[1]

ROBERT WATERTON, the son and heir of Sir John Waterton, was a minor at the time of his father's death.

At the Manor Court of Kirton in Lindsey held at Corringham, 10 October, 1405, the lordship is held of the heir of John Waterton, knt., and so on until after 1501. In 1502, in the Wakefield Manor Court Sir Robert Waterton paid a fine.

On 20 February, 1495–6, John Leeke of Sutton in the dale, co. Derby, paid 300 marks to have the keeping of the lands of Sir John Waterton, deceased, and the wardship and marriage of Robert his son and heir.[2]



LEEKE.

Arg. on a saltire engrailed gu. nine annulets or.

He then arranged a marriage between his ward and his daughter Muriel,[3] and in his will, proved 1 July, 1505, mentions his daughter, Muriel Waterton.[4]

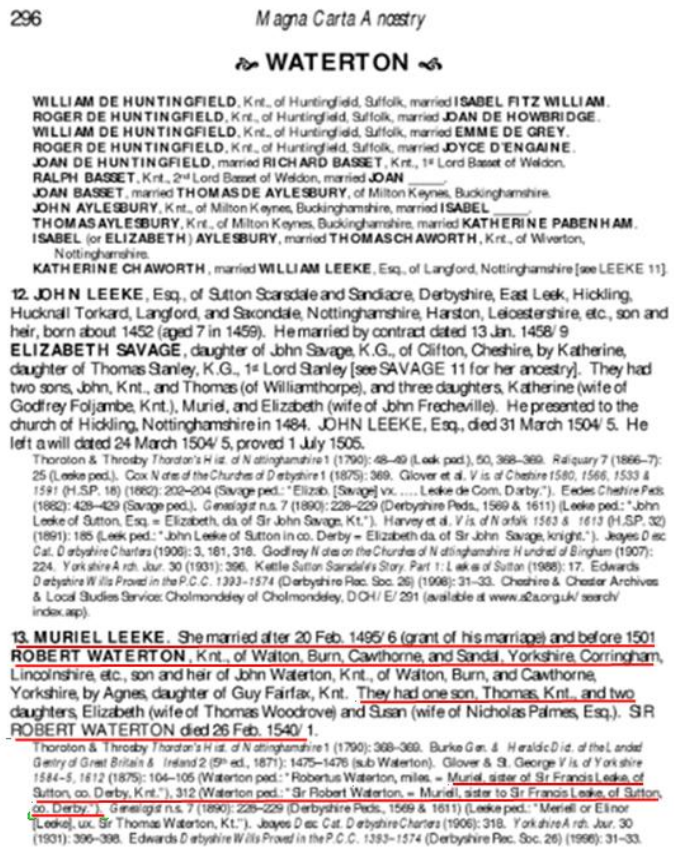
On 16 July, 1509, Robert Waterton of Walton, Dorne (? Burne) and Cawthorne, Yorks., and Corringham, co. Linc., knight, and Muriel his wife were included in a list of persons who received the king's general pardon immediately after the accession of Henry VIII.[5]

In the next year he was made a Justice of the Peace for the Lindsey division of Lincolnshire, and for the W.R. of Yorkshire, and on 17 July he had licence by royal charter to impark 800 acres of land in his manor of Burn in the parish of Brayton near Selby, co. Yorks., and to have free warren in all the demesne lands of the manor. In this charter he is styled "Knight of the Body."[6]

[1] Inq. p.m. 12 Jan., 10 Hen. VII.
[2] Pat. R. 11 Hen. VII, p. 1, m. 9.
[3] Add. MS. 1571.
[4] Dodsworth MS., xxii, f. 98d.
[5] *L. and P., Hen. VIII*, 1509.
[6] Ibid.

A683. It is known from Dr Walker's (1931, p396) evidence-based account that on 20th February 1495/6 Robert and Muriel were granted a marriage license so, it is fair to presume they were married either on the 20th February 1495/6 or shortly thereafter (Richardson, 2011, p296, ref 13).

A684. Richardson's (2011, p296, ref 13) genealogical record for them touches on Muriel Leeke, being the sister of Francis Leeke, but does not name her parents:



296 *Magna Carta Ancestry*

WATERTON

WILLIAM DE HUNTINGFIELD, Knt., of Huntingfield, Suffolk, married **ISABEL FITZ WILLIAM**.
ROGER DE HUNTINGFIELD, Knt., of Huntingfield, Suffolk, married **JOAN DE HOWBRIDGE**.
WILLIAM DE HUNTINGFIELD, Knt., of Huntingfield, Suffolk, married **EMME DE GREY**.
ROGER DE HUNTINGFIELD, Knt., of Huntingfield, Suffolk, married **JOYCE D'ENGAINE**.
JOAN DE HUNTINGFIELD, married **RICHARD BASSET**, Knt., 1st Lord Basset of Weldon.
RALPH BASSET, Knt., 2nd Lord Basset of Weldon, married **JOAN** ____.
JOAN BASSET, married **THOMAS DE AYLESBURY**, of Milton Keynes, Buckinghamshire.
JOHN AYLESBURY, Knt., of Milton Keynes, Buckinghamshire, married **ISABEL** ____.
THOMAS AYLESBURY, Knt., of Milton Keynes, Buckinghamshire, married **KATHERINE PABENHAM**.
ISABEL (or **ELIZABETH**) **AYLESBURY**, married **THOMAS CHAWORTH**, Knt., of Wiverton, Nottinghamshire.
KATHERINE CHAWORTH, married **WILLIAM LEEKE**, Esq., of Langford, Nottinghamshire [see LEEKE 11].

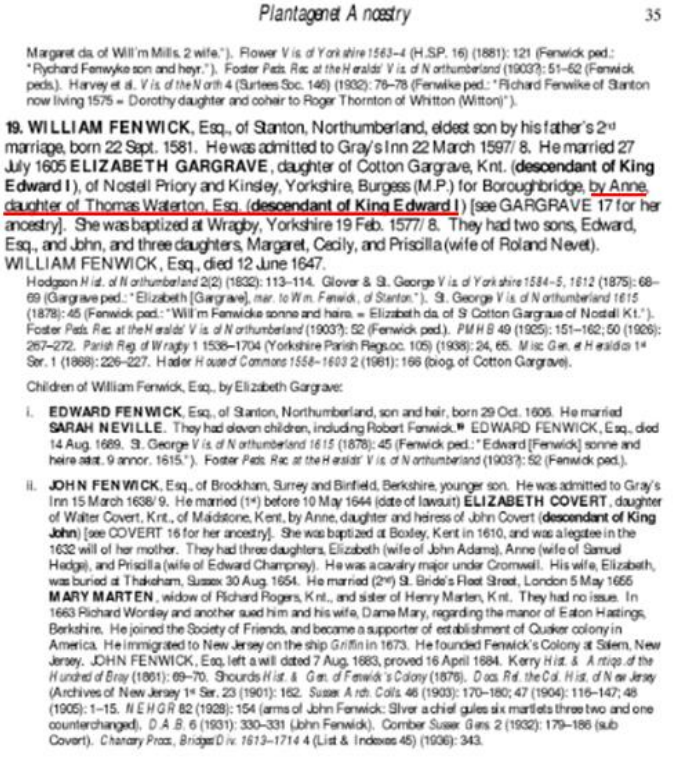
12. JOHN LEEKE, Esq., of Sutton Scarsdale and Sandiacre, Derbyshire, East Leek, Hickling, Hucknall Torkard, Langford, and Saxondale, Nottinghamshire, Harston, Leicestershire, etc., son and heir, born about 1452 (aged 7 in 1459). He married by contract dated 13 Jan. 1458/ 9 **ELIZABETH SAVAGE**, daughter of John Savage, K.G., of Clifton, Cheshire, by Katherine, daughter of Thomas Stanley, K.G., 1st Lord Stanley [see SAVAGE 11 for her ancestry]. They had two sons, John, Knt., and Thomas (of Williamthorpe), and three daughters, Katherine (wife of Godfrey Foljambe, Knt.), Muriel, and Elizabeth (wife of John Frecheville). He presented to the church of Hickling, Nottinghamshire in 1484. JOHN LEEKE, Esq., died 31 March 1504/ 5. He left a will dated 24 March 1504/ 5, proved 1 July 1505.

Thoroton & Throsby *Thoroton's Hist. of Nottinghamshire* 1 (1790): 48–49 (Leek ped.), 50, 368–369. *Reliquary* 7 (1866–7): 25 (Leeke ped.). Cox *Notes of the Churches of Derbyshire* 1 (1875): 369. Glover et al. *Vis. of Cheshire 1580, 1566, 1533 & 1591* (H.S.P. 18) (1882): 202–204 (Savage ped.: "Elizab. [Savage] vx. ..... Leeke de Com. Derby."). Eedes *Cheshire Peds.* (1882): 428–429 (Savage ped.). *Genealogist* n.s. 7 (1890): 228–229 (Derbyshire Peds., 1569 & 1611) (Leeke ped.: "John Leeke of Sutton, Esq. = Elizabeth, da. of Sir John Savage, Kt."). Harvey et al. *Vis. of Norfolk 1563 & 1613* (H.S.P. 32) (1891): 185 (Leek ped.: "John Leeke of Sutton in co. Derby = Elizabeth da. of Sir John Savage, knight."). Jeayes *Desc. Cat. Derbyshire Charters* (1906): 3, 161, 318. Godfrey *Notes on the Churches of Nottinghamshire: Hundred of Bingham* (1907): 224. *Yorkshire Arch. Jour.* 30 (1931): 396. Kettle *Sutton Scarsdale's Story. Part 1: Lekes of Sutton* (1988): 17. Edwards *Derbyshire Wills Proved in the P.C.C. 1393–1574* (Derbyshire Rec. Soc. 26) (1998): 31–33. Cheshire & Chester Archives & Local Studies Service: Cholmondeley of Cholmondeley, DCH/ E/ 291 (available at www.a2a.org.uk/ search/ index.asp).

13. MURIEL LEEKE. She married after 20 Feb. 1495/ 6 (grant of his marriage) and before 1501 **ROBERT WATERTON**, Knt., of Walton, Burn, Cawthorne, and Sandal, Yorkshire, Corringham, Lincolnshire, etc., son and heir of John Waterton, Knt., of Walton, Burn, and Cawthorne, Yorkshire, by Agnes, daughter of Guy Fairfax, Knt. They had one son, Thomas, Knt., and two daughters, Elizabeth (wife of Thomas Woodrove) and Susan (wife of Nicholas Palmes, Esq.). SIR ROBERT WATERTON died 26 Feb. 1540/ 1.

Thoroton & Throsby *Thoroton's Hist. of Nottinghamshire* 1 (1790): 368–369. Burke *Gen. & Heraldic Dict. of the Landed Gentry of Great Britain & Ireland* 2 (5th ed., 1871): 1475–1476 (sub Waterton). Glover & St. George *Vis. of Yorkshire 1584–5, 1612* (1875): 104–105 (Waterton ped.: "Robertus Waterton, miles. = Muriel, sister of Sir Francis Leake, of Sutton, co. Derby, Knt."), 312 (Waterton ped.: "Sir Robert Waterton. = Muriell, sister to Sir Francis Leake, of Sutton, co. Derby."). *Genealogist* n.s. 7 (1890): 228–229 (Derbyshire Peds., 1569 & 1611) (Leeke ped.: "Meriell or Elinor [Leeke], ux. Sir Thomas Waterton, Kt."). Jeayes *Desc. Cat. Derbyshire Charters* (1906): 318. *Yorkshire Arch. Jour.* 30 (1931): 396–398. Edwards *Derbyshire Wills Proved in the P.C.C. 1393–1574* (Derbyshire Rec. Soc. 26) (1998): 31–33.

A685. Richardson (2011, p35) recognised in another pedigree, that Muriel's grandson Thomas Waterton II, Esq (1526-1575), is a descendent of King Edward I:



Plantagenet Ancestry 35

Margaret da. of Will'm Mills, 2 wife."). Flower *Vis. of Yorkshire 1563–4* (H.S.P. 16) (1881): 121 (Fenwick ped.: "Rychard Fenwyke son and heyr."). Foster *Peds. Rec. at the Heralds' Vis. of Northumberland* (1903?): 51–52 (Fenwick peds.). Harvey et al. *Vis. of the North* 4 (Surtees Soc. 146) (1932): 76–78 (Fenwike ped.: "Richard Fenwike of Stanton now living 1575 = Dorothy daughter and coheir to Roger Thornton of Whitton (Witton)").

19. WILLIAM FENWICK, Esq., of Stanton, Northumberland, eldest son by his father's 2nd marriage, born 22 Sept. 1581. He was admitted to Gray's Inn 22 March 1597/ 8. He married 27 July 1605 **ELIZABETH GARGRAVE**, daughter of Cotton Gargrave, Knt. (**descendant of King Edward I**), of Nostell Priory and Kinsley, Yorkshire, Burgess (M.P.) for Boroughbridge, by Anne, daughter of Thomas Waterton, Esq. (**descendant of King Edward I**) [see GARGRAVE 17 for her ancestry]. She was baptized at Wragby, Yorkshire 19 Feb. 1577/ 8. They had two sons, Edward, Esq., and John, and three daughters, Margaret, Cecily, and Priscilla (wife of Roland Nevet). WILLIAM FENWICK, Esq., died 12 June 1647.

Hodgson *Hist. of Northumberland* 2(2) (1832): 113–114. Glover & St. George *Vis. of Yorkshire 1584–5, 1612* (1875): 68–69 (Gargrave ped.: "Elizabeth [Gargrave], *mar. to Wm. Fenwick, of Stanton.*"). St. George *Vis. of Northumberland 1615* (1878): 45 (Fenwick ped.: "Will'm Fenwicke sonne and haire. = Elizabeth da. of S' Cotton Gargraue of Nostell Kt."). Foster *Peds. Rec. at the Heralds' Vis. of Northumberland* (1903?): 52 (Fenwick ped.). *PMHB* 49 (1925): 151–162; 50 (1926): 267–272. *Parish Reg. of Wragby* 1 1538–1704 (Yorkshire Parish Regs.oc. 105) (1938): 24, 65. *Misc. Gen. et Heraldica* 1st Ser. 1 (1868): 226–227. Hasler *House of Commons 1558–1603* 2 (1981): 166 (biog. of Cotton Gargrave).

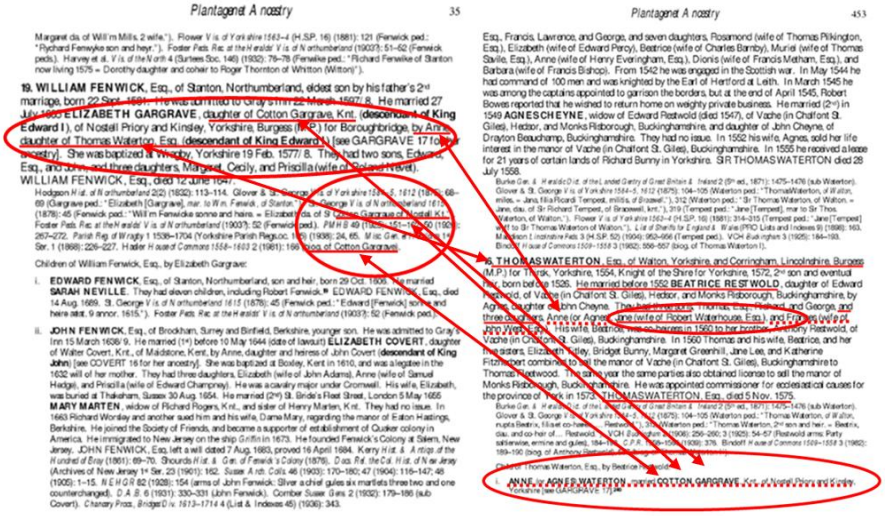
Children of William Fenwick, Esq., by Elizabeth Gargrave:

i. **EDWARD FENWICK**, Esq., of Stanton, Northumberland, son and heir, born 29 Oct. 1606. He married **SARAH NEVILLE**. They had eleven children, including Robert Fenwick.[9] EDWARD FENWICK, Esq., died 14 Aug. 1689. St. George *Vis. of Northumberland 1615* (1878): 45 (Fenwick ped.: "Edward [Fenwick] sonne and heire aetat. 9 annor. 1615."). Foster *Peds. Rec. at the Heralds' Vis. of Northumberland* (1903?): 52 (Fenwick ped.).

ii. **JOHN FENWICK**, Esq., of Brockham, Surrey and Binfield, Berkshire, younger son. He was admitted to Gray's Inn 15 March 1638/ 9. He married (1st) before 10 May 1644 (date of lawsuit) **ELIZABETH COVERT**, daughter of Walter Covert, Knt., of Maidstone, Kent, by Anne, daughter and heiress of John Covert (**descendant of King John**) [see COVERT 16 for her ancestry]. She was baptized at Boxley, Kent in 1610, and was a legatee in the 1632 will of her mother. They had three daughters, Elizabeth (wife of John Adams), Anne (wife of Samuel Hedge), and Priscilla (wife of Edward Champney). He was a cavalry major under Cromwell. His wife, Elizabeth, was buried at Thakeham, Sussex 30 Aug. 1654. He married (2nd) St. Bride's Fleet Street, London 5 May 1655 **MARY MARTEN**, widow of Richard Rogers, Knt., and sister of Henry Marten, Knt. They had no issue. In 1663 Richard Worsley and another sued him and his wife, Dame Mary, regarding the manor of Eaton Hastings, Berkshire. He joined the Society of Friends, and became a supporter of establishment of Quaker colony in America. He immigrated to New Jersey on the ship *Griffin* in 1673. He founded Fenwick's Colony at Salem, New Jersey. JOHN FENWICK, Esq. left a will dated 7 Aug. 1683, proved 16 April 1684. Kerry *Hist. & Antiqs. of the Hundred of Bray* (1861): 69–70. Shourds *Hist. & Gen. of Fenwick's Colony* (1876). *Docs. Rel. the Col. Hist. of New Jersey* (Archives of New Jersey 1st Ser. 23 (1901): 162. *Sussex Arch. Colls.* 46 (1903): 170–180; 47 (1904): 116–147; 48 (1905): 1–15. *NEHGR* 82 (1928): 154 (arms of John Fenwick: Silver a chief gules six martlets three two and one counterchanged). *DAB* 6 (1931): 330–331 (John Fenwick). Comber *Sussex Gens.* 2 (1932): 179–186 (sub Covert). *Chancery Proc., Bridges Div. 1613–1714* 4 (List & Indexes 45) (1936): 343.

A686. The evidence that now follows makes certain Thomas Waterton II, Esq (1526-1575) inherited his dynastic bloodline from King Edward I through his mother, Muriel Waterton (nee Leeke).

A687. To be absolutely certain however, that this reference to "Thomas Waterton, Esq, being descendent of Edward I," is not a case of mistaken identity, a set of constants, or unique identifiers, were to exists across two companion records and when they are compared identification is certain the reference is for Muriel's grandson Thomas Waterton II (1525-1575) (Pedigrees found on pages 35 and 453, Richardson's 2011):



Plantagenet Ancestry 35

Margaret da. of Will'm Mills, 2 wife."). *Flower Vis. of Yorkshire 1563–4* (H.S.P. 16) (1881): 121 (Fenwick ped.: "Richard Fenwyke son and heyr".). *Foster Pets. Rec. at the Heralds' Vis. of N. Northumberland* (1903): 51–52 (Fenwick peds.). *Harvey et al. Vis. of the North* 4 (Surtees Soc. 146) (1932): 76–78 (Fenwike ped.: "Richard Fenwike of Stanton now living 1575 = Dorothy daughter and coheir to Roger Thornton of Whitton (Witton)").

19. WILLIAM FENWICK, Esq., of Stanton, Northumberland, eldest son by his father's 2nd marriage, born 22 Sept. 1591. He was admitted to Gray's Inn 22 March 1597/ 8. He married 27 July 1665 **ELIZABETH GARGRAVE**, daughter of Cotton Gargrave, Knt. (**descendant of King Edward I**), of Nostell Priory and Kinsley, Yorkshire, Burgess (M.P.) for Boroughbridge, by Anne daughter of Thomas Waterton, Esq. (**descendant of King Edward I**) [see GARGRAVE 17 for full ancestry]. She was baptized at Wragby, Yorkshire 19 Feb. 1577/ 8. They had two sons, Edward, Esq., and John, and three daughters, Margaret, Cecily, and Priscilla (wife of Richard Nevill).

WILLIAM FENWICK, Esq., died 12 June 1647.

Hodgson *Hist. of Northumberland* 2(2) (1832): 113–114. Glover & St. George *Vis. of Yorkshire 1584–5, 1612* (1875): 68–69 (Gargrave ped.: "Elizabeth [Gargrave], mar. to Wm. Fenwick, of Stanton in Com. Northumberland 161[illegible]"). *George Vis. of Northumberland 1615* (1878): 45 (Fenwick ped.: "Will'm Fenwicke sonne and heire = Elizabeth dau. of Sr [illegible] Gargrave of Nostell, Kt."). *Foster Pets. Rec. at the Heralds' Vis. of Northumberland* (1903): 52 (Fenwick ped.). *PWHS* 49 (1925): 151–160 (1926): 257–272. *Parish Reg. of Wragby* 1 1538–1704 (Yorkshire Parish Reg. Soc. 109) (1938): 24, 65. *Misc. Gen. et Her.* 5th Ser. 1 (1866): 226–227. *Hasler Hist. of Commons 1558–1603* 2 (1981): 166 [illegible] of Cotton Gargrave).

Children of William Fenwick, Esq., by Elizabeth Gargrave:

i. **EDWARD FENWICK**, Esq., of Stanton, Northumberland, son and heir, born 29 Oct. 1606. He married **SARAH NEVILLE**. They had eleven children, including Robert Fenwick.* EDWARD FENWICK, Esq., died 14 Aug. 1689. *St. George Vis. of Northumberland 1615* (1878): 45 (Fenwick ped.: "Edward [Fenwick] sonne and heire aetat. 9 annor. 1615".). *Foster Pets. Rec. at the Heralds' Vis. of Northumberland* (1903): 52 (Fenwick ped.).

ii. **JOHN FENWICK**, Esq., of Brockham, Surrey and Binfield, Berkshire, younger son. He was admitted to Gray's Inn 15 March 1606/ 9. He married (1st) before 10 May 1644 (date of lawsuit) **ELIZABETH COVERT**, daughter of Walter Covert, Knt., of Maldstone, Kent, by Anne, daughter and heiress of John Covert (**descendant of King John**) [see COVERT 16 for her ancestry]. She was baptized at Boxley, Kent in 1610, and was a legatee in the 1632 will of her mother. They had three daughters, Elizabeth (wife of John Adams), Anne (wife of Samuel Hedges, and Priscilla (wife of Edward Champney). He was a cavalry major under Cromwell. His wife, Elizabeth, was buried at Thakeham, Sussex 30 Aug. 1654. He married (2nd) St. Bride's Fleet Street, London 5 May 1655 **MARY MARTEN**, widow of Richard Rogers, Knt., and sister of Henry Marten, Knt. They had no issue. In 1663 Richard Worsley and another sued him and his wife, Dame Mary, regarding the manor of Eaton Hastings, Berkshire. He joined the Society of Friends, and became a supporter of establishment of Quaker colony in America. He immigrated to New Jersey on the ship *Griffin* in 1673. He founded Fenwick's Colony at Salem, New Jersey. JOHN FENWICK, Esq, left a will dated 7 Aug. 1683, proved 16 April 1684. Kerry *Hist. & Antiqs. of the Hundred of Bray* (1861): 69–70. Shourds *Hist. & Gen. of Fenwick's Colony* (1876). *Docs. Rel. the Col. Hist. of New Jersey* (Archives of New Jersey 1st Ser. 23 (1901): 162. *Sussex Arch. Colls.* 46 (1903): 170–180; 47 (1904): 116–147; 48 (1905): 1–15. *NEHGR* 82 (1928): 154 (arms of John Fenwick: Silver a chief gules as a marshalling, three leo. and one counterchanged). *D.A.B.* 6 (1931): 330–331 (John Fenwick). Comber *Sussex Gens.* 2 (1932): 179–186 (sub Covert). *Chancery Proc., Bridges* D *Iv. 1613–1714* 4 (List & Indexes 45) (1936): 343.

Plantagenet Ancestry 453

Esq., Francis, Lawrence, and George, and seven daughters, Rosamond (wife of Thomas Pilkington, Esq.), Elizabeth (wife of Edward Percy), Beatrice (wife of Charles Bamby), Muriel (wife of Thomas Savile, Esq.), Anne (wife of Henry Everingham, Esq.), Dionis (wife of Francis Metham, Esq.), and Barbara (wife of Francis Bishop). From 1542 he was engaged in the Scottish war. In May 1544 he had command of 100 men and was knighted by the Earl of Hertford at Leith. In March 1545 he was among the captains appointed to garrison the borders, but at the end of April 1545, Robert Bowes reported that he wished to return home on weighty private business. He married (2nd) in 1549 **AGNES CHEYNE**, widow of Edward Restwold (died 1547), of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Hedsor, and Monks Risborough, Buckinghamshire, and daughter of John Cheyne, of Drayton Beauchamp, Buckinghamshire. They had no issue. In 1552 his wife, Agnes, sold her life interest in the manor of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Buckinghamshire. In 1555 he received a lease for 21 years of certain lands of Richard Bunny in Yorkshire. SIR THOMAS WATERTON died 28 July 1558.

Burke *Gen. & Heraldic Dict. of the Landed Gentry of Great Britain & Ireland* 2 (5th ed., 1871): 1475–1476 (sub Waterton). Glover & St. George *Vis. of Yorkshire 1584–5, 1612* (1875): 104–105 (Waterton ped.: "Thomas Waterton, of Walton, miles. = Jana, filia Ricardi Tempest, militis, of Bracewell."), 312 (Waterton ped.: "Sr Thomas Waterton, of Walton. = Jane, dau. of Sr Richard Tempest, of Bracewell, knt."), 319 (Tempest ped.: "Jane [Tempest], mar. to Sr Thos. Waterton, of Walton."). *Flower Vis. of Yorkshire 1563–4* (H.S.P. 16) (1881): 314–315 (Tempest ped.: "Jane [Tempest] mar. to Sr Thomas Waterton of Walton."). *List of Sheriffs for England & Wales* (PRO Lists and Indexes 9) (1898): 163. Maddison *Lincolnshire Pedigrees* 3 (H.S.P. 52) (1904): 952–956 (Tempest ped.). *VCH Buckingham* 3 (1925): 184–193. Bindoff *House of Commons 1509–1558* 3 (1982): 556–557 (biog. of Thomas Waterton I).

8. THOMAS WATERTON, Esq., of Walton, Yorkshire, and Corringham, Lincolnshire, Burgess (M.P.) for York, Yorkshire, 1554, Knight of the Shire for Yorkshire, 1572, 2nd son and eventual heir, born before 1526. He married before 1552 **BEATRICE RESTWOLD**, daughter of Edward Restwold, of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Hedsor, and Monks Risborough, Buckinghamshire, by Agnes, daughter of John Cheyne. They had [illegible] Thomas, Esq., Richard, and George, and three daughters, Anne (or Agnes, [illegible] wife of Robert Waterhouse, Esq.), and Ann[illegible] wife of [illegible]. His wife [illegible] to her brother, Edward Restwold, of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Buckinghamshire. In 1560 Thomas and his wife, Beatrice, and her three sisters, Elizabeth Tolley, Bridget Bunny, Margaret Greenhill, Jane Lee, and Katherine Fitzherbert combined to sell the manor of Vache (in Chalfont St. Giles), Buckinghamshire to Thomas Restwood. The same year the same parties also obtained license to sell the manor of Monks Risborough, Buckinghamshire. He was appointed commissioner for ecclesiastical causes for the province of York in 1573. THOMAS WATERTON, Esq., died 5 Nov. 1575.

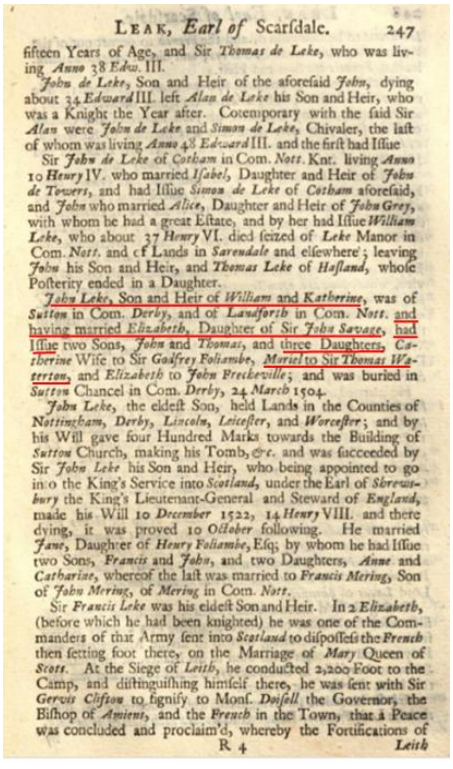
Burke *Gen. & Heraldic Dict. of the Landed Gentry of Great Britain & Ireland* 2 (5th ed., 1871): 1475–1476 (sub Waterton). Glover & St. George *Vis. of Yorkshire 1584–5, 1612* (1875): 104–105 (Waterton ped.: "Thomas Waterton, of Walton, nupta Beatrix, filiae[illegible] co-heir[illegible] Restwold."), 312 (Waterton ped.: "Thomas Waterton, 2nd son and heir. = Beatrix, dau. and co-heir of ... Restwold."). *VCH Buckinghamshire* 3 (1906): 256–260; 3 (1925): 54–57 (Restwold arms: Party sallerwise, ermine and gules), 184–193. *C.P.R.* 1566–1569 (1939): 376. Bindoff *House of Commons 1509–1558* 3 (1982): 189–190 (biog. of Anthony [illegible]).

Children: Thomas Waterton, Esq., by Beatrice [illegible]:

i. **ANNE** (or **AGNES**) **WATERTON**, married **COTTON GARGRAVE**, Esq., of Nostell Priory, and Kinsley, Yorkshire [see GARGRAVE 17].

Muriel Waterton, daughter of John Leeke and Elizabeth Stanley

A688. The 18th century trace by English antiquarian, genealogist and historian, Arthur Collins (1735, p247), confirms also that John Leeke of Sutton, Derby and his wife Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Savage, are parents of Muriel Waterton (nee Leeke):



LEAK, *Earl of* Scarfdale. 247

fifteen Years of Age, and Sir *Thomas de Leke*, who was living *Anno* 38 *Edw.* III.

John de Leke, Son and Heir of the aforeſaid *John*, dying about 34 *Edward* III. left *Alan de Leke* his Son and Heir, who was a Knight the Year after. Cotemporary with the ſaid Sir *Alan* were *John de Leke* and *Simon de Leke*, Chivaler, the laſt of whom was living *Anno* 43 *Edward* III. and the firſt had Iſſue

Sir *John de Leke* of *Cotham* in Com. *Nott.* Knt. living *Anno* 10 *Henry* IV. who married *Iſabel*, Daughter and Heir of *John de Towers*, and had Iſſue *Simon de Leke* of *Cotham* aforeſaid, and *John* who married *Alice*, Daughter and Heir of *John Grey*, with whom he had a great Eſtate, and by her had Iſſue *William Leke*, who about 37 *Henry* VI. died ſeized of *Leke* Manor in Com. *Nott.* and of Lands in *Sarendale* and elſewhere; leaving *John* his Son and Heir, and *Thomas Leke* of *Hoſland*, whoſe Poſterity ended in a Daughter.

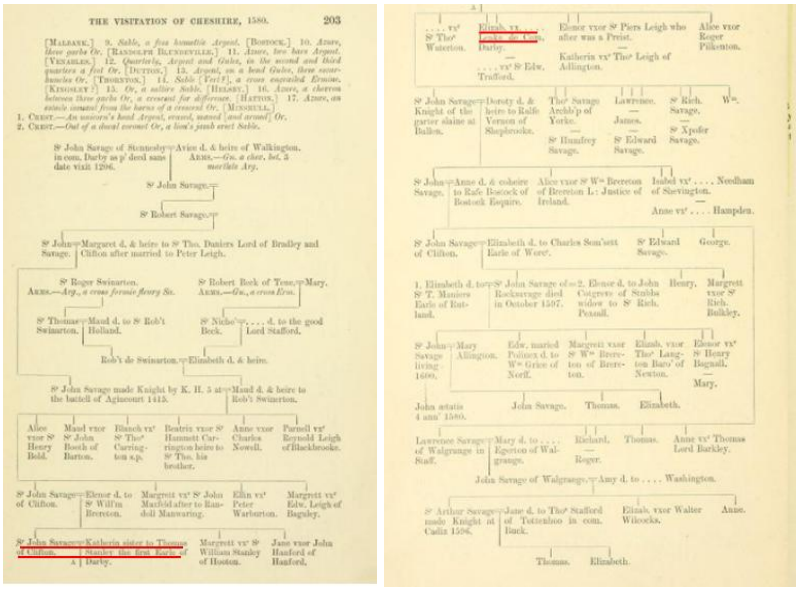
John Leke, Son and Heir of *William* and *Katherine*, was of *Sutton* in Com. *Derby*, and of *Landforth* in Com. *Nott.* and having married *Elizabeth*, Daughter of Sir *John Savage*, had Iſſue two Sons, *John* and *Thomas*, and three Daughters, *Catherine* Wife to Sir *Godfrey Foliambe*, *Muriel* to Sir *Thomas Waterton*, and *Elizabeth* to *John Brecheville*; and was buried in *Sutton* Chancel in Com. *Derby*, 24 *March* 1504.

John Leke, the eldeſt Son, held Lands in the Counties of *Nottingham*, *Derby*, *Lincoln*, *Leiceſter*, and *Worceſter*; and by his Will gave four Hundred Marks towards the Building of *Sutton* Church, making his Tomb, &c. and was ſucceeded by Sir *John Leke* his Son and Heir, who being appointed to go into the King's Service into *Scotland*, under the Earl of *Shrewsbury* the King's Lieutenant-General and Steward of *England*, made his Will 10 *December* 1522, 14 *Henry* VIII. and there dying, it was proved 10 *October* following. He married *Jane*, Daughter of *Henry Foliambe*, Eſq; by whom he had Iſſue two Sons, *Francis* and *John*, and two Daughters, *Anne* and *Catharine*, whereof the laſt was married to *Francis Mering*, Son of *John Mering*, of *Mering* in Com. *Nott.*

Sir *Francis Leke* was his eldeſt Son and Heir. In 2 *Elizabeth*, (before which he had been knighted) he was one of the Commanders of that Army ſent into *Scotland* to diſpoſſeſs the *French* then ſetting foot there, on the Marriage of *Mary* Queen of *Scots*. At the Siege of *Leith*, he conducted 2,200 Foot to the Camp, and diſtinguiſhing himſelf there, he was ſent with Sir *Gervis Clifton* to ſignify to Monſ. *Doiſell* the Governor, the Biſhop of *Amiens*, and the *French* in the Town, that a Peace was concluded and proclaim'd, whereby the Fortifications of

R 4 *Leith*

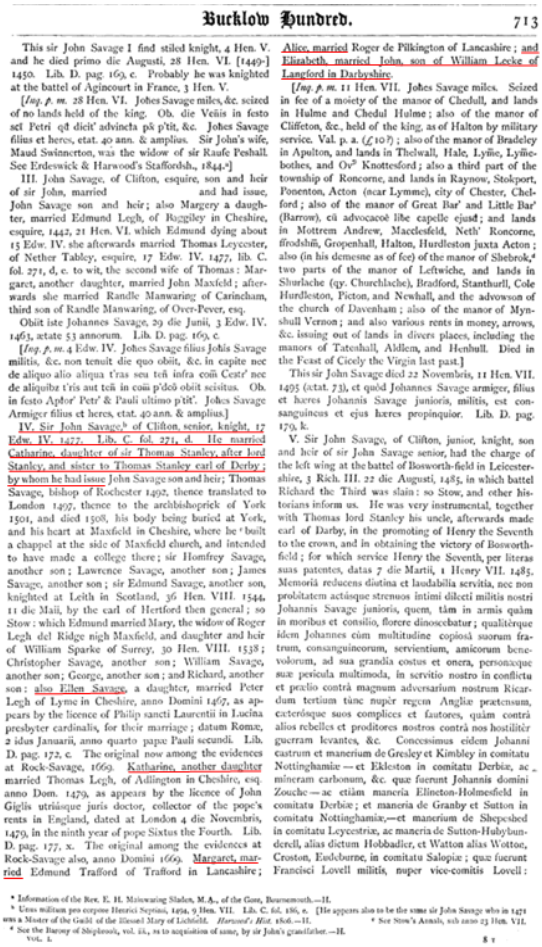
A689. Muriel's mother, Elizabeth Leeke (nee Savage), is the daughter of Sir John Savage and Lady Katherine Savage (nee Stanley) (Glover, R, Visitation of Cheshire in the year 1580 under the auspices of the College of Arms, Great Britain, and published in 1882, pp203-204):



THE VISITATION OF CHESHIRE, 1580. 203

Elizabeth Leeke, daughter of Sir John Savage and Katharine Stanley

A690. George Ormerod (1882, p713) makes from evidence he gathered that Elizabeth, wife of John Leeke, was the youngest of many children born to Sir John Savage and Katharine Stanley:



Bucklow Hundred. 713

This sir John Savage I find stiled knight, 4 Hen. V. and he died primo die Augusti, 28 Hen. VI. [1449-] 1450. Lib. D. pag. 169, c. Probably he was knighted at the battel of Agincourt in France, 3 Hen. V.

[*Inq. p. m.* 28 Hen. VI. Johes Savage miles, &c. seized of no lands held of the king. Ob. die Veneris in festo sci Petri q̃d dicit' advincula p̃s p'tit, &c. Johes Savage filius et heres, etat. 40 ann. & amplius. Sir John's wife, Maud Swinnerton, was the widow of sir Raufe Peshall. See Erdeswick & Harwood's Staffordsh., 1844.]

III. John Savage, of Clifton, esquire, son and heir of sir John, married and had issue, John Savage son and heir; also Margery a daughter, married Edmund Legh, of Boggiley in Cheshire, esquire, 1442, 21 Hen. VI. which Edmund dying about 15 Edw. IV. she afterwards married Thomas Leycester, of Nether Tabley, esquire, 17 Edw. IV. 1477, lib. C. fol. 271, d, e. to wit, the second wife of Thomas: Margaret, another daughter, married John Maxfeld; afterwards she married Randle Manwaring of Carincham, third son of Randle Manwaring, of Over-Pever, esq.

Obiit iste Johannes Savage, 29 die Junii, 3 Edw. IV. 1463, ætate 53 annorum. Lib. D. pag. 169, c.

[*Inq. p. m.* 4 Edw. IV. Johes Savage filius Johis Savage militis, &c. non tenuit die quo obiit, &c. in capite nec de aliquo alio aliqua t'ras seu ten̄ infra coñ Cestr' nec de aliquibz t'ris aut ten̄ in coñi p'dco obiit seisitus. Ob. in festo Apl̃or' Petr' & Pauli ultimo p'tit'. Johes Savage Armiger filius et heres, etat. 40 ann. & amplius.]

IV. Sir John Savage,[b] of Clifton, senior, knight, 17 Edw. IV. 1477. Lib. C. fol. 271, d. He married Catharine, daughter of sir Thomas Stanley, after lord Stanley, and sister to Thomas Stanley earl of Derby; by whom he had issue John Savage son and heir; Thomas Savage, bishop of Rochester 1492, thence translated to London 1497, thence to the archbishopriek of York 1501, and died 1508, his body being buried at York, and his heart at Maxfeld in Cheshire, where he built a chappel at the side of Maxfeld church, and intended to have made a college there; sir Homfrey Savage, another son; Lawrence Savage, another son; James Savage, another son; sir Edmund Savage, another son, knighted at Leith in Scotland, 36 Hen. VIII. 1544, 11 die Maii, by the earl of Hertford then general; so Stow: which Edmund married Mary, the widow of Roger Legh del Ridge nigh Maxfield, and daughter and heir of William Sparke of Surrey, 30 Hen. VIII. 1538; Christopher Savage, another son; William Savage, another son; George, another son; and Richard, another son: also Ellen Savage, a daughter, married Peter Legh of Lyme in Cheshire, anno Domini 1467, as appears by the licence of Philip sancti Laurentii in Lucina presbyter cardinalis, for their marriage; datum Romæ, 2 idus Januarii, anno quarto papæ Pauli secundi. Lib. D. pag. 172, c. The original now among the evidences at Rock-Savage, 1669. Katharine, another daughter married Thomas Legh, of Adlington in Cheshire, esq. anno Dom. 1479, as appears by the licence of John Giglis utriúsque juris doctor, collector of the pope's rents in England, dated at London 4 die Novembris, 1479, in the ninth year of pope Sixtus the Fourth. Lib. D. pag. 177, x. The original among the evidences at Rock-Savage also, anno Domini 1669. Margaret, married Edmund Trafford of Trafford in Lancashire; Alice, married Roger de Pilkington of Lancashire; and Elizabeth, married John, son of William Lecke of Langford in Darbyshire.

[*Inq. p. m.* 11 Hen. VII. Johes Savage miles. Seized in fee of a moiety of the manor of Chedull, and lands in Hulme and Chedul Hulme; also of the manor of Cliffeton, &c., held of the king, as of Halton by military service. Val. p. a. (£10?); also of the manor of Bradeley in Apulton, and lands in Thelwall, Hale, Lyffe, Lyffebothes, and Ov^r Knottesford; also a third part of the township of Roncorne, and lands in Raynow, Stokport, Ponenton, Acton (scar Lymme), city of Chester, Chelford; also of the manor of Great Bar' and Little Bar' (Barrow), cũ advocacoẽ libe capelle ejusd'; and lands in Mottrem Andrew, Macclesfeld, Neth' Roncorne, ffrodshfi, Gropenhall, Halton, Hurdleston juxta Acton; also (in his demesne as of fee) of the manor of Shebrok,[c] two parts of the manor of Leftwiche, and lands in Shurlache (qy. Churchlache), Bradford, Stanthurll, Cole Hurdleston, Picton, and Newhall, and the advowson of the church of Davenham; also of the manor of Mynshull Vernon; and also various rents in money, arrows, &c. issuing out of lands in divers places, including the manors of Tatenhall, Aldlem, and Henbull. Died in the Feast of Cicely the Virgin last past.]

This sir John Savage died 22 Novembris, 11 Hen. VII. 1495 (ætat. 73), et quòd Johannes Savage armiger, filius et hæres Johannis Savage junioris, militis, est consanguineus et ejus hæres propinquior. Lib. D. pag. 179, k.

V. Sir John Savage, of Clifton, junior, knight, son and heir of sir John Savage senior, had the charge of the left wing at the battel of Bosworth-field in Leicestershire, 3 Rich. III. 22 die Augusti, 1485, in which battel Richard the Third was slain: so Stow, and other historians inform us. He was very instrumental, together with Thomas lord Stanley his uncle, afterwards made earl of Darby, in the promoting of Henry the Seventh to the crown, and in obtaining the victory of Bosworth-field; for which service Henry the Seventh, per literas suas patentes, datas 7 die Martii, 1 Henry VII. 1485, Memoriâ reducens diutina et laudabilia servitia, nec non probitatem actúsque strenuos intimi dilecti militis nostri Johannis Savage junioris, quem, tàm in armis quàm in moribus et consilio, florere dinoscebatur; qualitèrque idem Johannes cùm multitudine copiosâ suorum fratrum, consanguineorum, servientium, amicorum benevolorum, ad sua grandia costus et onera, personæque suæ pericula multimoda, in servitio nostro in conflictu et prælio contrà magnum adversarium nostrum Ricardum tertium tùnc nupèr regem Angliæ prætensum, cæterósque suos complices et fautores, quàm contrà alios rebelles et proditores nostros contrà nos hostilitèr guerram kvantes, &c. Concessimus eidem Johanni custrum et manerium de Gresley et Kimbley in comitatu Nottinghamiæ — et Ekleston in comitatu Derbiæ, ac mineram carbonum, &c. quæ fuerunt Johannis domini Zouche — ac etiàm maneria Elineton-Holmesfield in comitatu Derbiæ; et maneria de Granby et Sutton in comitatu Nottinghamiæ,—et manerium de Shepeshed in comitatu Leycestriæ, ac maneria de Sutton-Hubybundercll, alias dictum Hobbadier, et Watton alias Wottoe, Croston, Eudeburne, in comitatu Salopiæ; quæ fuerunt Francisci Lovell militis, nuper vice-comitis Lovell:

[a] Information of the Rev. E. H. Molewaring Sladen, M.A., of the Gore, Bournemouth.—H.

[b] Unus militum pro corpore Henrici Septimi, 1494, 9 Hen. VII. Lib. C. fol. 180, c. [He appears also to be the same sir John Savage who in 1491 was a Master of the Guild of the Blessed Mary of Lichfield. *Harwood's Hist.* 1806.—H.

[c] See the Barony of Shipbrook, vol. iii., as to acquisition of same, by sir John's grandfather.—H.

VOL. I. 8 Y

A691. Burke (1877, p473) accounts for the marriage of Elizabeth's parents, Sir John Savage and Katharine [Stanley] [mine], sometimes spelled Catherine (J Bernard Burke, 1877, p473, published 1978):

3rd Earl of Scarborough, who assumed, in consequence, by act of parliament, the additional surname of Saunderson.

The family of Saunderson, of Castle Saunderson, co. Cavan, claims descent from this noble house.

Arms—Paly of six, arg. and az., a bend, ss.

SAVAGE – VISCOUNTS SAVAGE, VISCOUNTS COLCHESTER, EARL RIVERS.

Viscounty of Savage, by Letters Patent, dated 6 November, 1626.
Viscounty of Colchester, by Letters Patent, dated 5 July, 1621.
Earldom, by Letters Patent, dated 4 November, 1626.

Lineage.

Of this family, whose chief seat, for many generations, had been at the Castle of Frodsham, in Cheshire, and partly at another house, more recently erected, at Clifton, on the opposite side of the river, called Rock Savage, was

JOHN SAVAGE, Esq. (descended of the Savages of Steinesbre, co. Derby), who m. about 49th EDWARD III., Margaret, widow of John Radcliffe, and dau. and heir of Sir Thomas Danlers (commonly called Daniels), of Bradley, in Appleton, and in right of this marriage became of Clifton. By this lady (who m. 3rdly, Piers Legh, of Maxfield, by whom she had two sons, Piers, ancestor of the Leghs of Lyme, and John, ancestor of the Leghs, of Ridge), John Savage was father of

SIR JOHN SAVAGE, of Clifton, Knt., who m. Maud, dau. and heir of Sir Robert Swinnerton, and had issue, JOHN, his heir; William; Arnold; George; Roger; Margaret, m. to John, 2nd son and eventual heir of Sir Piers Dutton, of Dutton, and Maude, m. to Sir Thomas Booth, of Barton, co. Lancaster. Sir John Savage d. 1 August, 1450, and was s. by his eldest son,

JOHN SAVAGE, Esq., of Clifton, who had besides two dans. Margery m. 1st, to Edmund Leigh, Esq., of Baggeley, co. Chester, and 2ndly, to Thomas Leycester, Esq., of Nether Tabley and Margaret m. 1st, to John Maxfield; and 2ndly, to Randle, 3rd son of Randle Malbanke, Esq., of Over-Peyer, a son and heir,

SIR JOHN SAVAGE, of Clifton, Knt., who m. Catherine, dau. of Sir Thomas Stanley, afterwards Lord Stanley, and sister of Thomas Stanley, Earl of Derby, and had with other issue,

John (Sir), his heir.
Thomas, archbishop of York, 1501, d. 1508.
Humfrey (Sir).
Edmund (Sir), knighted by the Earl Hertford, at Leith, 11 May, 1544, m. Mary, dau. and heir of William Sparke, of Surrey, and widow of Roger Legh, of Ridge, High Maxfield.
William-George.
Richard.
Ellen, m. to Peter Legh, Esq., of Lyme, co. Chester.
Katherine, m. Thomas Legh, Esq., of Adlington, co. Chester.
Margaret, m. to Edmund Trafford, of Trafford, co. Lancaster.
Alice, m. to Roger Pilkington.
Elizabeth, m. to John, son of William Leeke, of Longford, co. Derby.

Sir John d. 22 November, 1495, aged seventy-three. The eldest son,

A692. Burke (1877, p473), reveals that the males of this house of Savage became extinct in 1728. Whereas, it is apparent from other evidence submitted in this petition, that Burke (1877, p474) was unaware Elizabeth Savage's (nee Leeke), genealogical legacy survives in Australia.

A693. Hence, at this stage of the trace, the petitioners submit they have provided the necessary genealogical evidence required to uphold the fact they carry the Savage blood in their veins, to the maximum extent possible, inherited from the first Viscount Savage, Viscount Colchester and Earl of Rivers and his wife:

Elizabeth, m. to Thomas Langton, Baron of Newton, in Lancashire.
Elenora, m. 1st, to Sir Henry Bagnall, son and heir of Sir Nicholas Bagnall, Knt.; and 2ndly, to Sir Sackville Trevor.
Mary, m. to Sir Richard Milles, of Hampshire.
Frances, m. to Thomas Wilkes, Esq., of Surrey.

Sir John m. 2ndly, Elenora, widow of Sir Richard Pexhull, of Beaurepair, co. Hants, and dau. of John Cotgreve, and dying 5 December, 1597, was s. by his eldest surviving son,

Sir John Savage, of Rock Savage, who was created a baronet 9th James, 1611, being the 19th advanced to the rank of baronet, upon the institution of that order. He m. Mary, dau. and co-heir of Richard Allington, and had issue,

John, d. young.
Thomas, his successor.
John. Richard.
William.
Elizabeth, m. 1st, to Thomas Mainwaring; and 2ndly, to Sir Raufe Done, of Duddon, co. Chester.
Grace, m. to Sir Richard Wilbraham, Bart., of Woodhey.

Sir John Savage, who was mayor of Chester in 1607, and sheriff of Chester the same year, d. in July (buried the 14th), 1615, and was s. by his eldest surviving son,

Sir Thomas Savage, Knt. He m. Elizabeth, eldest dau. and eventually co-heir of Thomas, Lord D'Arcy, of Chiche; which Lord D'Arcy (who d. 1639), was created, 5 July, 1621, Viscount Colchester, and elevated, 4 November, 1626, to the dignity of Earl Rivers, both honours to revert, in default of male issue, to his son-in-law, Sir Thomas Savage, and his heirs male, who was himself created, in two days afterwards, Viscount Savage, *of Rock Savage, co. Chester*. Lord Savage had issue by the Lady Elizabeth D'Arcy, (who was created Countess Rivers for life, 21 April, 1641, and d. in 1650), seven sons and six daus., viz.,

John, his successor.
Thomas, m. Elizabeth, dau. and co-heir of William Whitmore, Esq., of Leighton, in Cheshire (by Margaret, his wife, sister and co-heir of Sir George Beeston, of Beeston, co. Chester), and widow of Sir Edward Somerset, 5th son of Edward Somerset, Earl of Worcester, and had issue,

D'Arcy, who s. at Leighton, and left a dau.,

Bridget Savage, who m. Sir Thomas Mostyn, Bart. of Mostyn.

Elizabeth, m. to Marmaduke, Lord Langdale.

Francis.
William, } all d. s. p.
James, }
Richard, }
Charles, left a dau.,

Mary Savage, who m. Jeremy Thoresby, of Leeds, and left two daus.,

Elizabeth. Mary.

Jane, m. to John, Marquess of Winchester.
Dorothy, m. to Charles, Viscount Andover.
Elizabeth, m. to Sir John Thimbleby, Knt., of Irnham, in Lincolnshire.
Anne, m. to Robert, son and heir of Thomas, Lord Brudenell, afterwards Earl of Cardigan.
Catherine, a nun at Dunkirk.
Henrietta-Maria, m. to Ralph Sheldon, Esq., of Beoley.

His lordship d. in 1635, and was s. by his eldest son,

John Savage, 2nd Viscount Savage, who s. his maternal grandfather in 1639, as Viscount Colchester and Earl Rivers. His lordship m. 1st, Catherine, dau. of William Parker, Lord Morley and Monteagle, and had issue,

Thomas, his successor.
John, d. s. p.
Richard, who m. Alice, dau. and heir of Thomas Trafford, of Bridge-Trafford, co. Chester, and widow of John Barnston, of Churton, and left a son,

John, who inherited as 5th and last Earl.

Elizabeth, m. to William, Lord Petre.
Jane, m. 1st, to George, Lord Chandos; 2ndly, to Sir William Sidley, Bart.; and 3rdly, to George Pitt, Esq., of Strathfieldsaye, in Hampshire. By her last husband, her ladyship left a son,

George Pitt, Esq., of Strathfieldsaye, M.P. for the co. of Hants, whose grandson,

George Pitt, Esq., was created, in 1776, Baron Rivers, *of Strathfieldsaye* (*see* Burke's *Extinct Peerage*).

Catherine, m. to Charles Sidley, Esq., brother of Sir William.
Mary, m. to Henry Killegrew, Esq., groom of the bed-chamber to James, Duke of York.
Frances, d. young.

The earl m. 2ndly, Mary Ogle, and by her had one son, Peter. His lordship d. 10 October, 1654, and was s. by his eldest son,

Thomas Savage, 3rd Earl Rivers, who became, in 1686, in right of his mother, heir of one moiety of the Baronies of Morley, Mounteagle, and Marshal. His lordship m. 1st, Elizabeth, natural dau. of Emanuel Scrope, Earl of Sunderland (which lady, with her sisters, Mary, Marchioness of Winchester, and Arabella, wife of John Grubham Howe, Esq., eventually s. to the ancient inheritance of the Scropes), by whom he had issue,

Thomas, *Lord Colchester*, who m. Lady Charlotte Stanley, dau. of Charles, Earl of Derby, and dying before his father, left an only dau.,

Charlotte, who d. unm.

Richard, his successor.
Elizabeth.
Annabella, m. to Sir Erasmus Norwich, of Brampton, in the co. of Northampton, and d. s. p.

The earl m. 2ndly, Lady Arabella Lindsey, dau. of Robert Bertie, Earl of Lindsey, but had no issue. He d. 15 September, 1694, and was s. by his only surviving son,

Richard Savage, 4th Earl Rivers. This nobleman m. Penelope, dau. and heir of Roger Downes, Esq., of Wardley, in Lancashire, by whom he had surviving issue,

Elizabeth, m. to James, Earl of Barrymore, in Ireland, and left an only dau.,

Penelope, who m. Major-General James Cholmondeley, 2nd surviving son of George, Earl of Cholmondeley, and d. s. p.

His lordship,* who was an eminent soldier and statesman in the reigns of William III. and Queen Anne, d. in 1712, when his honours passed to his kinsman (*revert* to Richard, 3rd son of John, 2nd Viscount Savage),

John Savage, Esq., a Roman Catholic priest, as 5th Earl Rivers, at whose decease, unm. in 1728, the Viscounty of Savage, the Viscounty of Colchester, and the Earldom of Rivers, became extinct.

Arms—Arg., six lions rampant (three, two and one), as

SAVAGE—COUNTESS OF RIVERS.

By Letters Patent, dated 21 April, 1641.

Lineage.

Lady Elizabeth Savage, dau. of Thomas D'Arcy, Lord D'Arcy, of Chiche, and Earl Rivers, and widow of Thomas Savage, 1st Viscount Savage, *of Rock Savage*, was created 21 April, 1641, Countess Rivers, *for life*. Her ladyship d 9 March, 1650, when the title became of course extinct.

SAVILE—BARONS SAVILE, EARLS OF SUSSEX.

Barony, by Letters Patent, dated 21 July, 1628.
Earldom, by Letters Patent, dated 25 May, 1644.

Lineage.

The family of Savile is of great antiquity in the north of England. In the reign of Edward III.,

Sir John Savile, Knt., of Eland, in Yorkshire, was constituted escheator for the cos. Northumberland, Cumberland, and Westmoreland, and in the next reign was sheriff of Yorkshire, and governor of the castle of York. In the 2nd Henry V. (1414-15),

Thomas Savile, of Thornhill, co. York, being at that time one of the Esquires to Edward, Duke of York, was, in consideration of his good services, made forester of that Prince's chase and park at Aryngden, in the same shire. From this Thomas descended

Sir Henry Savile, of Thornhill, K.B., *temp.* King Henry VIII., who by his wife, a dau. and co-heir of Thomas Southill, Esq., of Southill, had a son and heir, Edward, who d. s. p. and a dau., Dorothy, m. to John Kay, Esq., of Woodsome, co. York. He had also, by a concubine, named Barkston, another son,

Sir Robert Savile, *alias* Barkston, Knt., who, in the 15th Elizabeth, served the office of high sheriff for the co.

* The 4th Earl Rivers had two illegitimate children, a dau. Betty, wife of Frederick, Earl of Rochford, and a son, the ill-fated Richard Savage, the poet.

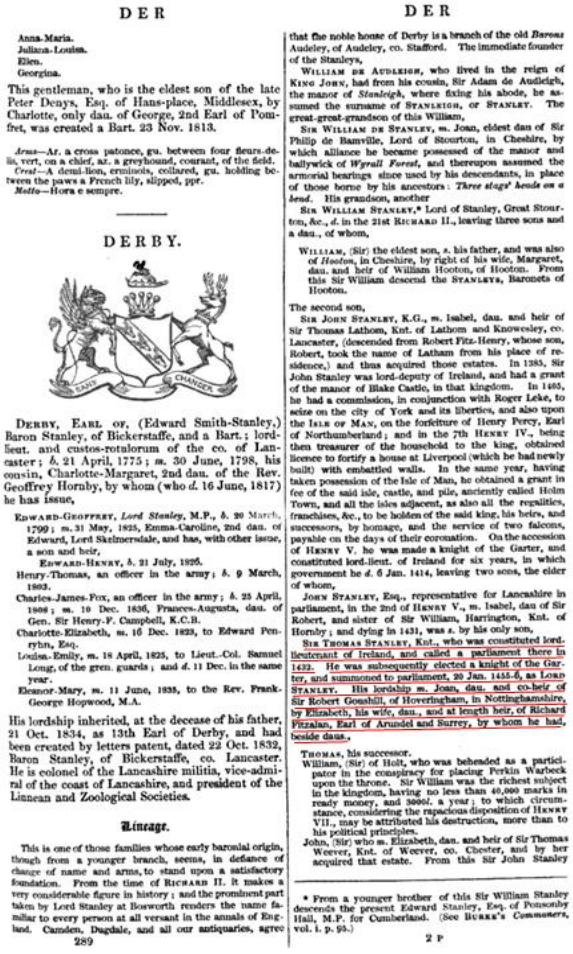
A694. Elizabeth's parents and Muriel's grandparents, Sir John Savage and Katherine Stanley, married in the year 1447 at Clifton, Cheshire, England (Source: U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900; Name: Katharine Stanley; Gender: Female; Spouse: John Savage; Birth Place: Ch; Number Pages: 1; Citation number: 958.000; Source type: Electronic Database; Number of Pages: 1; Submitter Code: JW; Source Information: Yates Publishing. U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900 [database on-line]. Provo, UT, USA: Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2004).

A695. Thornber (2003) makes certain of the marriage union between Sir John Savage and Katharine Stanley taken from parish records (Macclesfield No 7, St. Michael's: The Savage Chapel and Savage Family, Grid Ref: SJ 918 737, 24 January 2003, Cheshire Antiquities, Cheshire, England):

> *"Sir John Savage, of Clifton, senior, knight 17 Edw. IV. 1477. He died 22 November 1495 aged 73 + Catharine, daughter of Sir Thomas Stanley, after Lord Stanley and sister to Thomas Stanley Earl of Derby".*

<u>Katherine Savage, daughter of Lord Thomas Stanley and Joan Goushill</u>

A696. Henry Colburn's (1839, p289) "*A Genealogical and Heraldic Dictionary of the Peerage and Baronetage of the British Empire,"* resolves that Katherine's father, Sir Thomas Stanley (Lord Stanley) married, Katherine's mother, Joan Goushill (1401-1466) (refer also, Burke & Burke, 1848, Pedigree LVII):



DER

Anna-Maria.
Juliana-Louisa.
Ellen.
Georgina.

This gentleman, who is the eldest son of the late Peter Denys, Esq. of Hans-place, Middlesex, by Charlotte, only dau. of George, 2nd Earl of Pomfret, was created a Bart. 23 Nov. 1813.

Arms—Ar. a cross patonce, gu. between four fleurs-de-lis, vert, on a chief, az. a greyhound, courant, of the field.
Crest—A demi-lion, erminois, collared, gu. holding between the paws a French lily, slipped, ppr.
Motto—Hora e sempre.

DERBY.

DERBY, EARL OF, (Edward Smith-Stanley,) Baron Stanley, of Bickerstaffe, and a Bart.; lord-lieut. and custos-rotulorum of the co. of Lancaster; *b.* 21 April, 1775; *m.* 30 June, 1798, his cousin, Charlotte-Margaret, 2nd dau. of the Rev. Geoffrey Hornby, by whom (who *d.* 16 June, 1817) he has issue,

EDWARD-GEOFFREY, *Lord Stanley*, M.P., *b.* 20 March, 1799; *m.* 31 May, 1825, Emma-Caroline, 2nd dau. of Edward, Lord Skelmersdale, and has, with other issue, a son and heir,
EDWARD-HENRY, *b.* 21 July, 1826.
Henry-Thomas, an officer in the army; *b.* 9 March, 1803.
Charles-James-Fox, an officer in the army; *b.* 25 April, 1808; *m.* 10 Dec. 1836, Frances-Augusta, dau. of Gen. Sir Henry-F. Campbell, K.C.B.
Charlotte-Elizabeth, *m.* 16 Dec. 1823, to Edward Penryhn, Esq.
Louisa-Emily, *m.* 18 April, 1825, to Lieut.-Col. Samuel Long, of the gren. guards; and *d.* 11 Dec. in the same year.
Eleanor-Mary, *m.* 11 June, 1833, to the Rev. Frank-George Hopwood, M.A.

His lordship inherited, at the decease of his father, 21 Oct. 1834, as 13th Earl of Derby, and had been created by letters patent, dated 22 Oct. 1832, Baron Stanley, of Bickerstaffe, co. Lancaster. He is colonel of the Lancashire militia, vice-admiral of the coast of Lancashire, and president of the Linnean and Zoological Societies.

Lineage.

This is one of those families whose early baronial origin, though from a younger branch, seems, in defiance of change of name and arms, to stand upon a satisfactory foundation. From the time of RICHARD II. it makes a very considerable figure in history; and the prominent part taken by Lord Stanley at Bosworth renders the name familiar to every person at all versant in the annals of England. Camden, Dugdale, and all our antiquaries, agree

289

DER

that the noble house of Derby is a branch of the old *Barons* Audeley, of Audeley, co. Stafford. The immediate founder of the Stanleys,

WILLIAM DE AUDLEIGH, who lived in the reign of KING JOHN, had from his cousin, Sir Adam de Audleigh, the manor of *Stanleigh*, where fixing his abode, he assumed the surname of STANLEIGH, or STANLEY. The great-great-grandson of this William,

SIR WILLIAM DE STANLEY, *m.* Joan, eldest dau of Sir Philip de Bamville, Lord of Stourton, in Cheshire, by which alliance he became possessed of the manor and bailywick of *Wyrall Forest*, and thereupon assumed the armorial bearings since used by his descendants, in place of those borne by his ancestors: *Three stags' heads on a bend.* His grandson, another

SIR WILLIAM STANLEY,* Lord of Stanley, Great Stourton, &c., *d.* in the 21st RICHARD II., leaving three sons and a dau., of whom,

WILLIAM, (Sir) the eldest son, *s.* his father, and was also of *Hooton*, in Cheshire, by right of his wife, Margaret, dau. and heir of William Hooton, of Hooton. From this Sir William descend the STANLEYS, Baronets of Hooton.

The second son,

SIR JOHN STANLEY, K.G., *m.* Isabel, dau. and heir of Sir Thomas Lathom, Knt. of Lathom and Knowesley, co. Lancaster, (descended from Robert Fitz-Henry, whose son, Robert, took the name of Latham from his place of residence,) and thus acquired those estates. In 1385, Sir John Stanley was lord-deputy of Ireland, and had a grant of the manor of Blake Castle, in that kingdom. In 1405, he had a commission, in conjunction with Roger Leke, to seize on the city of York and its liberties, and also upon the ISLE OF MAN, on the forfeiture of Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland; and in the 7th HENRY IV., being then treasurer of the household to the king, obtained licence to fortify a house at Liverpool (which he had newly built) with embattled walls. In the same year, having taken possession of the Isle of Man, he obtained a grant in fee of the said isle, castle, and pile, anciently called Holm Town, and all the isles adjacent, as also all the regalities, franchises, &c., to be holden of the said king, his heirs, and successors, by homage, and the service of two falcons, payable on the days of their coronation. On the accession of HENRY V. he was made a knight of the Garter, and constituted lord-lieut. of Ireland for six years, in which government he *d.* 6 Jan. 1414, leaving two sons, the elder of whom,

JOHN STANLEY, Esq., representative for Lancashire in parliament, in the 2nd of HENRY V., *m.* Isabel, dau of Sir Robert, and sister of Sir William, Harrington, Knt. of Hornby; and dying in 1431, was *s.* by his only son,

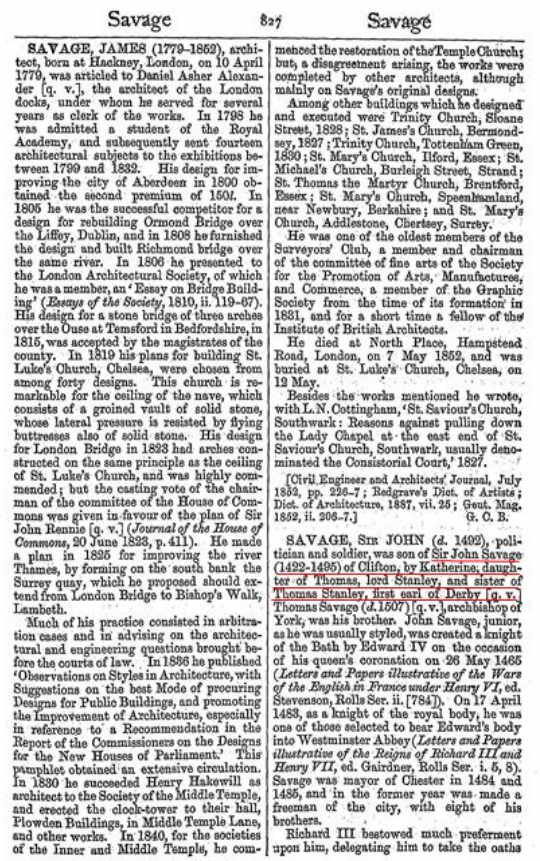
SIR THOMAS STANLEY, Knt., who was constituted lord-lieutenant of Ireland, and called a parliament there in 1432. He was subsequently elected a knight of the Garter, and summoned to parliament, 20 Jan. 1455-6, as LORD STANLEY. His lordship *m.* Joan, dau. and co-heir of Sir Robert Goushill, of Hoveringham, in Nottinghamshire, by Elizabeth, his wife, dau., and at length heir, of Richard Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel and Surrey, by whom he had, beside daus.,

THOMAS, his successor.
William, (Sir) of Holt, who was beheaded as a participator in the conspiracy for placing Perkin Warbeck upon the throne. Sir William was the richest subject in the kingdom, having no less than 40,000 marks in ready money, and 3000*l.* a year; to which circumstance, considering the rapacious disposition of HENRY VII., may be attributed his destruction, more than to his political principles.
John, (Sir) who *m.* Elizabeth, dau. and heir of Sir Thomas Weever, Knt. of Weever, co. Chester, and by her acquired that estate. From this Sir John Stanley

* From a younger brother of this Sir William Stanley descends the present Edward Stanley, Esq. of Ponsonby Hall, M.P. for Cumberland. (See BURKE's *Commoners*, vol. i. p. 95.)

2 P

A697. The Dictionary of National Biography, Volumes 1-22 p827, confirms Katharine Savage (nee Stanley) is the daughter of Thomas, Lord Stanley:



Savage 827 Savage

SAVAGE, JAMES (1779–1852), architect, born at Hackney, London, on 10 April 1779, was articled to Daniel Asher Alexander [q. v.], the architect of the London docks, under whom he served for several years as clerk of the works. In 1798 he was admitted a student of the Royal Academy, and subsequently sent fourteen architectural subjects to the exhibitions between 1799 and 1832. His design for improving the city of Aberdeen in 1800 obtained the second premium of 150*l*. In 1805 he was the successful competitor for a design for rebuilding Ormond Bridge over the Liffey, Dublin, and in 1808 he furnished the design and built Richmond bridge over the same river. In 1806 he presented to the London Architectural Society, of which he was a member, an 'Essay on Bridge Building' (*Essays of the Society*, 1810, ii. 119–67). His design for a stone bridge of three arches over the Ouse at Temsford in Bedfordshire, in 1815, was accepted by the magistrates of the county. In 1819 his plans for building St. Luke's Church, Chelsea, were chosen from among forty designs. This church is remarkable for the ceiling of the nave, which consists of a groined vault of solid stone, whose lateral pressure is resisted by flying buttresses also of solid stone. His design for London Bridge in 1823 had arches constructed on the same principle as the ceiling of St. Luke's Church, and was highly commended; but the casting vote of the chairman of the committee of the House of Commons was given in favour of the plan of Sir John Rennie [q. v.] (*Journal of the House of Commons*, 20 June 1823, p. 411). He made a plan in 1825 for improving the river Thames, by forming on the south bank the Surrey quay, which he proposed should extend from London Bridge to Bishop's Walk, Lambeth.

Much of his practice consisted in arbitration cases and in advising on the architectural and engineering questions brought before the courts of law. In 1836 he published 'Observations on Styles in Architecture, with Suggestions on the best Mode of procuring Designs for Public Buildings, and promoting the Improvement of Architecture, especially in reference to a Recommendation in the Report of the Commissioners on the Designs for the New Houses of Parliament.' This pamphlet obtained an extensive circulation. In 1830 he succeeded Henry Hakewill as architect to the Society of the Middle Temple, and erected the clock-tower to their hall, Plowden Buildings, in Middle Temple Lane, and other works. In 1840, for the societies of the Inner and Middle Temple, he commenced the restoration of the Temple Church; but, a disagreement arising, the works were completed by other architects, although mainly on Savage's original designs.

Among other buildings which he designed and executed were Trinity Church, Sloane Street, 1828; St. James's Church, Bermondsey, 1827; Trinity Church, Tottenham Green, 1830; St. Mary's Church, Ilford, Essex; St. Michael's Church, Burleigh Street, Strand; St. Thomas the Martyr Church, Brentford, Essex; St. Mary's Church, Speenhamland, near Newbury, Berkshire; and St. Mary's Church, Addlestone, Chertsey, Surrey.

He was one of the oldest members of the Surveyors' Club, a member and chairman of the committee of fine arts of the Society for the Promotion of Arts, Manufactures, and Commerce, a member of the Graphic Society from the time of its formation in 1831, and for a short time a fellow of the Institute of British Architects.

He died at North Place, Hampstead Road, London, on 7 May 1852, and was buried at St. Luke's Church, Chelsea, on 12 May.

Besides the works mentioned he wrote, with L. N. Cottingham, 'St. Saviour's Church, Southwark: Reasons against pulling down the Lady Chapel at the east end of St. Saviour's Church, Southwark, usually denominated the Consistorial Court,' 1827.

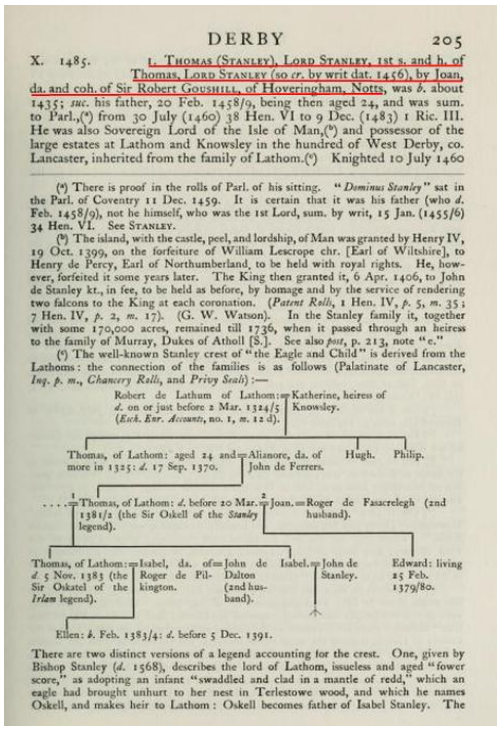
[Civil Engineer and Architects' Journal, July 1852, pp. 226–7; Redgrave's Dict. of Artists; Dict. of Architecture, 1887, vii. 25; Gent. Mag. 1852, ii. 206–7.] G. C. B.

SAVAGE, Sir JOHN (*d.* 1492), politician and soldier, was son of Sir John Savage (1422-1495) of Clifton, by Katherine, daughter of Thomas, lord Stanley, and sister of Thomas Stanley, first earl of Derby [q. v.] Thomas Savage (*d.* 1507) [q. v.], archbishop of York, was his brother. John Savage, junior, as he was usually styled, was created a knight of the Bath by Edward IV on the occasion of his queen's coronation on 26 May 1465 (*Letters and Papers illustrative of the Wars of the English in France under Henry VI*, ed. Stevenson, Rolls Ser. ii. [784]). On 17 April 1483, as a knight of the royal body, he was one of those selected to bear Edward's body into Westminster Abbey (*Letters and Papers illustrative of the Reigns of Richard III and Henry VII*, ed. Gairdner, Rolls Ser. i. 5, 9). Savage was mayor of Chester in 1484 and 1485, and in the former year was made a freeman of the city, with eight of his brothers.

Richard III bestowed much preferment upon him, delegating him to take the oaths

Joan Stanley, daughter of Sir Robert Goushill and Elizabeth Fitzalan

A698. Joan Stanley, nee Goushill, daughter of Sir Robert Goushill, married Thomas, Lord Thomas Stanley (Cockayne, G.E, 1910, p205):



DERBY 205

X. 1485. 1. THOMAS (STANLEY), LORD STANLEY, 1st s. and h. of THOMAS, LORD STANLEY (*so cr.* by writ dat. 1456), by Joan, da. and coh. of Sir Robert GOUSHILL, of Hoveringham, Notts, was *b.* about 1435; *suc.* his father, 20 Feb. 1458/9, being then aged 24, and was sum. to Parl.,(a) from 30 July (1460) 38 Hen. VI to 9 Dec. (1483) 1 Ric. III. He was also Sovereign Lord of the Isle of Man,(b) and possessor of the large estates at Lathom and Knowsley in the hundred of West Derby, co. Lancaster, inherited from the family of Lathom.(c) Knighted 10 July 1460

(a) There is proof in the rolls of Parl. of his sitting. "*Dominus Stanley*" sat in the Parl. of Coventry 11 Dec. 1459. It is certain that it was his father (who *d.* Feb. 1458/9), not he himself, who was the 1st Lord, sum. by writ, 15 Jan. (1455/6) 34 Hen. VI. See STANLEY.

(b) The island, with the castle, peel, and lordship, of Man was granted by Henry IV, 19 Oct. 1399, on the forfeiture of William Lescrope chr. [Earl of Wiltshire], to Henry de Percy, Earl of Northumberland, to be held with royal rights. He, however, forfeited it some years later. The King then granted it, 6 Apr. 1406, to John de Stanley kt., in fee, to be held as before, by homage and by the service of rendering two falcons to the King at each coronation. (*Patent Rolls*, 1 Hen. IV, *p.* 5, *m.* 35; 7 Hen. IV, *p.* 2, *m.* 17). (G. W. Watson). In the Stanley family it, together with some 170,000 acres, remained till 1736, when it passed through an heiress to the family of Murray, Dukes of Atholl [S.]. See also *post*, p. 213, note "c."

(c) The well-known Stanley crest of "the Eagle and Child" is derived from the Lathoms: the connection of the families is as follows (Palatinate of Lancaster, *Inq. p. m.*, *Chancery Rolls*, and *Privy Seals*):—

Robert de Lathum of Lathom: *d.* on or just before 2 Mar. 1324/5 (*Exch. Enr. Accounts*, no. 1, *m.* 12 d.) = Katherine, heiress of Knowsley.

Thomas, of Lathom: aged 24 and more in 1325: *d.* 17 Sep. 1370. = Alianore, da. of John de Ferrers. | Hugh. | Philip.

. . . . = 1 Thomas, of Lathom: *d.* before 20 Mar. 1381/2 (the Sir Oskell of the *Stanley* legend). = 2 Joan. = Roger de Fasacrelegh (2nd husband).

Thomas, of Lathom: *d.* 5 Nov. 1383 (the Sir Oskatel of the *Irlam* legend). = Isabel, da. of Roger de Pilkington. | John de Dalton (2nd husband). | Isabel. = John de Stanley. | Edward: living 25 Feb. 1379/80.

Ellen: *b.* Feb. 1383/4: *d.* before 5 Dec. 1391.

There are two distinct versions of a legend accounting for the crest. One, given by Bishop Stanley (*d.* 1568), describes the lord of Lathom, issueless and aged "fower score," as adopting an infant "swaddled and clad in a mantle of redd," which an eagle had brought unhurt to her nest in Terlestowe wood, and which he names Oskell, and makes heir to Lathom: Oskell becomes father of Isabel Stanley. The

A699. Most curiously Professor Robert Palmer, CBE, FBA, FRSF, Bishop Wardlaw Professor of Medieval History Emeritus at the University of St Andrews, Scotland, makes in his documentary "The Plantagenets," (BBC2, 2014), Lord Thomas Stanley implicit in King Richard III's death.

A700. Subsequently, Palmer (2014, BBC) makes Henry Tudor eliminating all Plantagenet descendants. Clearly this cannot be true, because Lord Thomas Stanley married Plantagenet Joan Goushill and through this union, there are surviving offspring. This would have been known at the time, and long after the death of Richard III, equally known throughout the reign of King Henry VII.

A701. As evidenced by this family trace, albeit taking the journey along the mixed male-female line, descending from Thomas Stanley and Joan Goushall, the Plantagenet bloodline is extant today survives in Australia. This claim is easily verifiable now by checking the petitioners' genealogical continuity records issued by the Crown's authorities in England and Australia.

A702. Those same records make true that the researcher along with his close blood relatives, are among the extant members of the "Plantagenets" and carry forward to the maximum extent possible the blood of Thomas Stanley and Joan Goushall (et al).

<u>Elizabeth Fitzalan, great granddaughter of Edward I & Eleanor of Castile</u>

A703. Sir Bernard Burke (1865, p321), an expert genealogist of his time, first awakened the researcher to his family's shared dynastic descent from King Edward I. This descent p[assed through more recent lineal ancestors Joan Goushill, daughter of Elizabeth Fitzalan, daughter of Richard Fitzalan:

D E R

sheriff of Anglesey, m. Isabel (or Elizabeth), dau. of Sir Robert, and sister and heir of Sir William Harrington, Knt. of Hornby, co. Lancaster, and had, beside two daus.,

THOMAS (Sir), 1st *Baron Stanley*, of whom presently.
Richard, } successively archdeacons of Chester.
Edward, }

The eldest son and heir,

SIR THOMAS STANLEY, lord-lieutenant of Ireland for six years, (1432,) comptroller of the household, and chamberlain to HENRY VI.; K.G., 1456; knight of the shire; summoned as *Baron Stanley*, 20 Jan. 1456 (34th HENRY VI.). His lordship m., Joan, dau. and co-heir of Sir Robert Goushill, Knt. of Heveringham, co. Notts, by Elizabeth his wife, (widow of Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, and dau. and co-heir of Richard Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel, by Elizabeth, his wife, dau. of William Bohun, Earl of Northampton, son of Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford and Essex, by his wife, the Princess Elizabeth Plantagenet, dau. of King EDWARD I.,) by whom he had, beside three daus.,

THOMAS, his successor.
William (Sir), of Holt, who was beheaded as a participator in the conspiracy for placing Perkin Warbeck upon the throne. Sir William was the richest subject in the kingdom, having no less than 40,000 marks in ready money, and £3,000 a-year: to which circumstance, considering the capricious dis-

A704. There are records across various pedigrees contained with Burke's, 1848 - *The Royal Families of* England, Scotland, and Wales, evidencing Joan's parentage are Sir Robert Goushill and Elizabeth Fitzalan. They further chart Joan's descent from King Edward I and Queen Eleanor of Castile (1241-1290).

A705. Below, is further evidence of Elizabeth Fitzalan's illustrious lineage with images sourced from the Hoveringham St Michael Monuments and Memorials Project (North-west corner of church) (Images attributed to the Southwell & Nottingham Church History Project, Hoveringham St Michael, Monuments & Memorials):

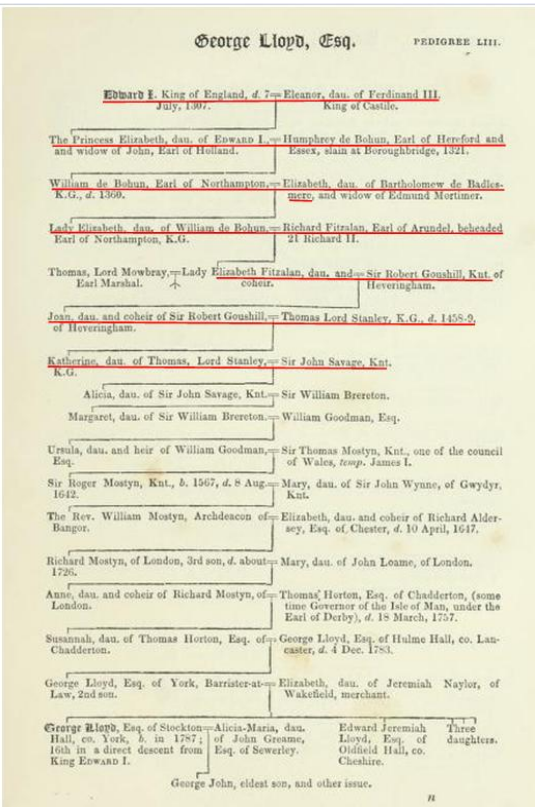
A706. The images are of Elizabeth Fitzalan and Sir Robert Goushill and the monument they depict is the oldest and most significant monument in the church. The large double alabaster tomb is to the memory of Sir Robert Goushill and his wife Elizabeth Fitzalan.

A707. It dates from the early 15th century. This is the third Hoveringham church in which it has graced.

A708. Close by the tomb is a framed document explaining its history. The wording reads:

> THE ALABASTER TOMB
> The recumbent effigies are those of
> Sir Robert Goushill and his wife Elizabeth Fitzalan,
> grand-daughter of King Edward I and sister of
> Thomas 15th Duke of Arundel
> Elizabeth married Robert Goushill of
> Hoveringham in 1401, after the death of her second
> husband Thomas Mowbury Duke of Norfolk
> in the previous year.
>
> In 1403 Robert was wounded fighting
> for Henry VI at the Battle of Shrewsbury. For his
> conduct on the field Robert was knighted, before
> being treacherously stabbed to death by his servant.
> The Knight wears a camail and huaberk of
> mail with plate armour upon arms and legs.
>
> The collar, which shows his Lancastrian
> allegiance, and the elaborate sword-belt, are both
> well preserved.
>
> His head surmounted by a bascinet, with
> its wreath, rests upon his haulm with its device of
> a Saracens head.
> The Duchess is clothed as a peeress with
> A coronet denoting her rank.

A709. The pedigree shown below was selected because it further charts ascending from Joan's daughter Katharine Savage (nee Stanley) (Muriel Leeke's grandmother), her descent from King Edward I and Queen Eleanor of Castile:



George Lloyd, Esq. PEDIGREE LIII.

Edward I. King of England, *d.* 7 July, 1307. = Eleanor, dau. of Ferdinand III. King of Castile.

The Princess Elizabeth, dau. of Edward I. and widow of John, Earl of Holland. = Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford and Essex, slain at Boroughbridge, 1321.

William de Bohun, Earl of Northampton, K.G., *d.* 1360. = Elizabeth, dau. of Bartholomew de Badlesmere, and widow of Edmund Mortimer.

Lady Elizabeth, dau. of William de Bohun, Earl of Northampton, K.G. = Richard Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel, beheaded 21 Richard II.

Thomas, Lord Mowbray, Earl Marshal. = Lady Elizabeth Fitzalan, dau. and coheir. = Sir Robert Goushill, Knt. of Hoveringham.

Joan, dau. and coheir of Sir Robert Goushill, of Hoveringham. = Thomas Lord Stanley, K.G., *d.* 1458-9.

Katherine, dau. of Thomas, Lord Stanley, K.G. = Sir John Savage, Knt.

Alicia, dau. of Sir John Savage, Knt. = Sir William Brereton.

Margaret, dau. of Sir William Brereton. = William Goodman, Esq.

Ursula, dau. and heir of William Goodman, Esq. = Sir Thomas Mostyn, Knt., one of the council of Wales, *temp.* James I.

Sir Roger Mostyn, Knt., *b.* 1567, *d.* 8 Aug. 1642. = Mary, dau. of Sir John Wynne, of Gwydyr, Knt.

The Rev. William Mostyn, Archdeacon of Bangor. = Elizabeth, dau. and coheir of Richard Aldersey, Esq. of Chester, *d.* 10 April, 1647.

Richard Mostyn, of London, 3rd son, *d.* about 1726. = Mary, dau. of John Loame, of London.

Anne, dau. and coheir of Richard Mostyn, of London. = Thomas Horton, Esq. of Chadderton, (some time Governor of the Isle of Man, under the Earl of Derby), *d.* 18 March, 1757.

Susannah, dau. of Thomas Horton, Esq. of Chadderton. = George Lloyd, Esq. of Hulme Hall, co. Lancaster, *d.* 4 Dec. 1783.

George Lloyd, Esq. of York, Barrister-at-Law, 2nd son. = Elizabeth, dau. of Jeremiah Naylor, of Wakefield, merchant.

George Lloyd, Esq. of Stockton Hall, co. York, *b.* in 1787; 16th in a direct descent from King Edward I. = Alicia-Maria, dau. of John Greame, Esq. of Sewerley.

Edward Jeremiah Lloyd, Esq. of Oldfield Hall, co. Cheshire.

Three daughters.

George John, eldest son, and other issue.

H

A710. Burke's (1848, Pedigree LVII) chart shown above clearly accounts for Kathrine's mother, Joan Goushill, daughter of Elizabeth Fitzalan.

A711. Elizabeth Fitzalan is the daughter of William Bohun, the son of Princess Elizabeth Plantagenet, and grandson of King Edward I (1239-1307) and Queen Eleanor of Castile (1241-1290). It is these monarchs who are Katherine Savage, nee Stanley's 4th great grandparents (Burke, 1848, Pedigree LIII, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales: With their Descendants). Katherine, further made certain the daughter of Lord Thomas Stanley, the researcher' shared lineal ancestor.

A712. Suffice to say, because Edward I is the 5th great grandson of King William I and Matilda of Flanders, the researcher is justified to claim by the evidence submitted thus far, that they are descended from King William I and Matilda, through their, 14th great grandmother, Muriel Waterton (nee Leeke):

HARRIS & LEVI GUEST'S DESCENT FROM WILLIAM I AND MATILDA OF FLANDERS

William I, King of England 1028-1087
28th great-grandfather of the petitioners: John Lindsay Robert Guest 1960; Dennis Keith Lillee 1949-; Darren John Halifax 1965-(et al, their siblings, and/or offspring and ditto for the forementioned Paul, Hay, Hanley, Matheson, Powell lines in Australia) (Burke & Burke, 1848, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales).

Henry I, King of England 1068-1135
Son of William I
Burke & Burke, 1848, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Empress Matilda 1102-1167
Daughter of Henry II
Burke & Burke, 1848, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Henry II, King of England 1133-1189
Son of Empress Matilda
Burke & Burke, 1848, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

John, King of England 1166-1216
Son of Henry II
Burke & Burke, 1848, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Henry III, King of England 1207- 1272
Son of John Plantagenet
Burke & Burke, 1848, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Edward I, King of England 1239-1307
Son of Henry III and Eleanor of Provence 1223-1291. Burke & Burke, 1848, Pedigree LIII, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Princess Elizabeth Plantagenet 1282-1316
Daughter of Edward I and Eleanor of Castile.
Burke & Burke, 1848, Pedigree LIII, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Continued …

William de Bohun 1312-1360
Son of Princess Elizabeth Plantagenet
Burke & Burke, 1848, Pedigree LIII, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Elizabeth de Bohun 1350-1385
Daughter of William De Bohun
Burke & Burke, 1848, Pedigree LIII, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Elizabeth Fitzalan 1366-1425
Daughter of Elizabeth de Bohun
Will writ record 12 Feb, 1420-1 (York Wills,' I., 397; Flower, W, 1881 [pub] p337, The Visitation of Yorkshire in the years 1563 and 1564 Burke & Burke, 1848, Pedigree LIII, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Joan Goushill 1401-1466
Daughter of Elizabeth Fitzalan
Burke & Burke, 1848, Pedigree LIII, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales (various pedigrees); Richardson, 2011, 2005, p771; Colburn, 1839, p289.

Katherine Stanley (about 1425-bfr 1498)
Daughter of Joan Goushall
Robert Glover, 1580, pp203-204; Dictionary of National Biography, Volumes 1-22 p827; Richardson, D, 2005, p771; Saint-George, Henry, Sir, 1882, p93, Visitation of Wiltshire, 1623, p98, Hitchcock Pedigree; Collins A, 1735, p247; Burke & Burke, 1848, Pedigree LIII, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales.

Elizabeth Savage 1444-1492
Daughter of Katherine Stanley
Collins A, 1735, p247; The Peerage of England; Robert Glover, 1580, pp203-204; Richardson, 2011, p296, ref 12.

Muriel Leeke 1476-1520
Daughter of Elizabeth Savage
Burke 1836, p1532; Dr J.W. Walker 1931, p396; Richardson, 2011, p296, ref 13; Collins A, 1735, p247; Glover, 1580, pp203-204.

Sir Thomas Waterton I 1501-1558
Son of Muriel Leeke
Burke 1836, p1532; Dr J.W. Walker 1931, pp 398-399; The History of Parliament: The House of Commons 1509-1558, ed. S.T. Bindoff, 1982, Richardson 2011, p453; Richardson, 2011, p296, ref 13.

Sir Thomas Waterton, Esq II 1526-1575
Son of Thomas Waterton I
(Dr J.W. Walker, 1931, p403; Burke's (1836, p1532; Bindoff 1982, p557; Richardson D, 2011, p453).

Jane Waterton 1557-aft 1607
Daughter of Sir Thomas Waterton II
(Dr J.W. Walker, 1931, p403; Burke, 1836, p1532; Bindoff 1982, p557; St. Michael, Our Lady's Church, Wragby, Yorkshire, England; England, Select Marriages, 1538–1973; FHL Film Number, 844560; Hunter & Clay, 1894, p847; Dr J.W. Walker, 1931, p403; Hallifax Antiquarian Society Papers, John Lister MA, 1917, p53; 1916, Vol, p261; Dr Ille 2016, p19).

Continued …

Robert Hallifax 1586-1628
First to take the surname "Hallifax". Robert is the son of Jane Waterton and Sir Robert Waterhouse MP.
Coll Arms Ms 7D14/45, 16th December, 1788; Hunter, Joseph: F.M.G, pt. 3 of 4, Harleian Soc. 39, 1895, pp 844-847.

Thomas Hallifax 1621-1676
Son of Robert Hallifax
Coll Arms Ms 7D14/45, 16th December, 1788

Thomas Hallifax 1653-1711
Son of Thomas Hallifax
Coll Arms Ms 7D14/45, 16th December, 1788

William Hallifax 1696-Unknown
Son of Thomas Hallifax
Coll Arms Ms 7D14/45, 16th December, 1788

Thomas Hallifax 1717-1789
Son of William Hallifax
Coll Arms Ms 7D14/45, 16th December, 1788

Reverend Robert Hallifax 1761-1838, M.A. of Magdalen College, Oxford
Son of Thomas Hallifax
Coll Arms Ms 7D14/45, 16th December, 1788

Thomas New Hallifax 1789-1835
Son of Reverend Robert Hallifax 1761-1838, M.A of Magdalen College, Oxford and petitioners, shared 4th great grandfather

Ambrose William Hallifax 1821-1874
Son of Thomas New Hallifax, grandson of Rev Robert Hallifax
(*Coll Arms Ms 7D14/45, 16th December, 1788.*
Ambrose first of the line to call Australia home.

Augustus New Hallifax II 1855-1886
Son of Ambrose William Hallifax

Violet Ethel Hallifax 1882-1955
Daughter of Augustus New Hallifax II

Augustus Halifax Hay 1910-1985
Son of Violet Ethel Hallifax

Norma Irene Hay 1932-2021
Daughter of Augustus Halifax Hay

John Lindsay Robert Guest 1960-
Son of Norma Irene Hay and zero participants for the evidence-based trace.

Robert John Guest 1982-
Son of John L.R. Guest and Elizabeth Ellen Guest, husband of Fiona Louise Cummane and father of their two children, brothers:

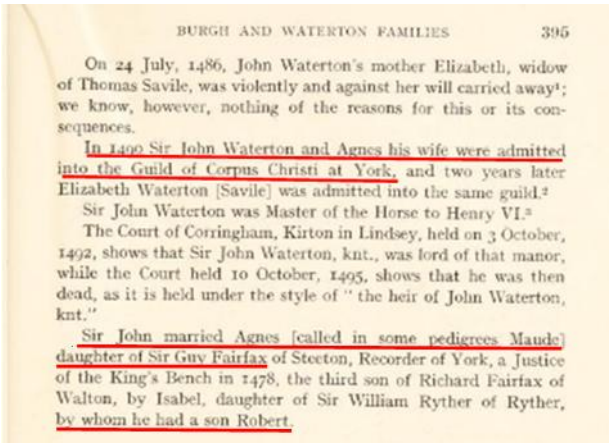
Harris Robert Guest 2018-& Levi John Guest 2020

A713. Muriel Waterton, nee Leeke's ancient bloodline, extant, now rests. Attention is returned to the heritage of her parents in law, Sir John Waterton and Agnes (Maud) Fairfax.

This page is intentionally left blank.

15th great grandparents Sir John Robert Waterton & Agnes Fairfax

A714. Returning now to the ascending trace from the petitioners' 14th great grandfather, Robert Waterton, Muriel Leeke's husband, the following evidence confirms Robert's parents are Sir John Waterton and Agnes Fairfax (Agnes sometimes given the name Maud- Refer Dr Walker below). Submitted below, Dr J.W. Walker's (1931, p395) account makes certain Robert Waterton is the son of Sir John Waterton and Agnes Fairfax:



BURGH AND WATERTON FAMILIES 395

On 24 July, 1486, John Waterton's mother Elizabeth, widow of Thomas Savile, was violently and against her will carried away[1]; we know, however, nothing of the reasons for this or its consequences.

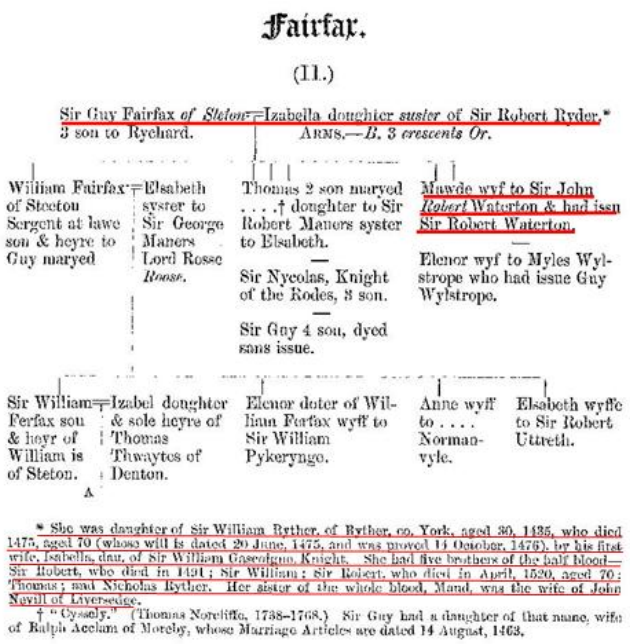
In 1490 Sir John Waterton and Agnes his wife were admitted into the Guild of Corpus Christi at York, and two years later Elizabeth Waterton [Savile] was admitted into the same guild.[2]

Sir John Waterton was Master of the Horse to Henry VI.[3]

The Court of Corringham, Kirton in Lindsey, held on 3 October, 1492, shows that Sir John Waterton, knt., was lord of that manor, while the Court held 10 October, 1495, shows that he was then dead, as it is held under the style of "the heir of John Waterton, knt."

Sir John married Agnes [called in some pedigrees Maude] daughter of Sir Guy Fairfax of Steeton, Recorder of York, a Justice of the King's Bench in 1478, the third son of Richard Fairfax of Walton, by Isabel, daughter of Sir William Ryther of Ryther, by whom he had a son Robert.

A715. Below William Flower (1881, p119), esquire, Norroy king of arms v 16, confirms the marriage between Robert's parents, Sir John "Robert" Waterton and "Maude" Waterton (nee Fairfax), daughter of Sir Guy Fairfax and Isabel Ryder (Ryther):



Fairfax.

(11.)

Sir Guy Fairfax *of Steton*=Izabella doughter *suster* of Sir Robert Ryder,* 3 son to Rychard. | ARMS.—*B. 3 crescents Or.*

William Fairfax of Steeton Sergent at lawe son & heyre to Guy maryed = Elsabeth syster to Sir George Manors Lord Rosse *Roose.*

Thomas 2 son maryed . . . .† doughter to Sir Robert Manors syster to Elsabeth. — Sir Nycolas, Knight of the Rodes, 3 son. — Sir Guy 4 son, dyed sans issue.

Mawde wyf to Sir John *Robert* Waterton & had issu Sir Robert Waterton. — Elenor wyf to Myles Wylstrope who had issue Guy Wylstrope.

Sir William Ferfax son & heyr of William is of Steton. A = Izabel doughter & sole heyre of Thomas Thwaytes of Denton.

Elenor doter of William Ferfax wyff to Sir William Pykeryngo.

Anne wyff to . . . . Normanvyle.

Elsabeth wyffe to Sir Robert Uttreth.

* She was daughter of Sir William Ryther, of Ryther, co. York, aged 30, 1435, who died 1475, aged 70 (whose will is dated 20 June, 1475, and was proved 14 October, 1476), by his first wife, Isabella, dau. of Sir William Gascoigne, Knight. She had five brothers of the half blood—Sir Robert, who died in 1491; Sir William; Sir Robert, who died in April, 1520, aged 70; Thomas; and Nicholas Ryther. Her sister of the whole blood, Maud, was the wife of John Nevill of Liversedge.

† "Cyssely." (Thomas Norcliffe, 1738–1768.) Sir Guy had a daughter of that name, wife of Ralph Acclam of Morely, whose Marriage Articles are dated 14 August, 1463.

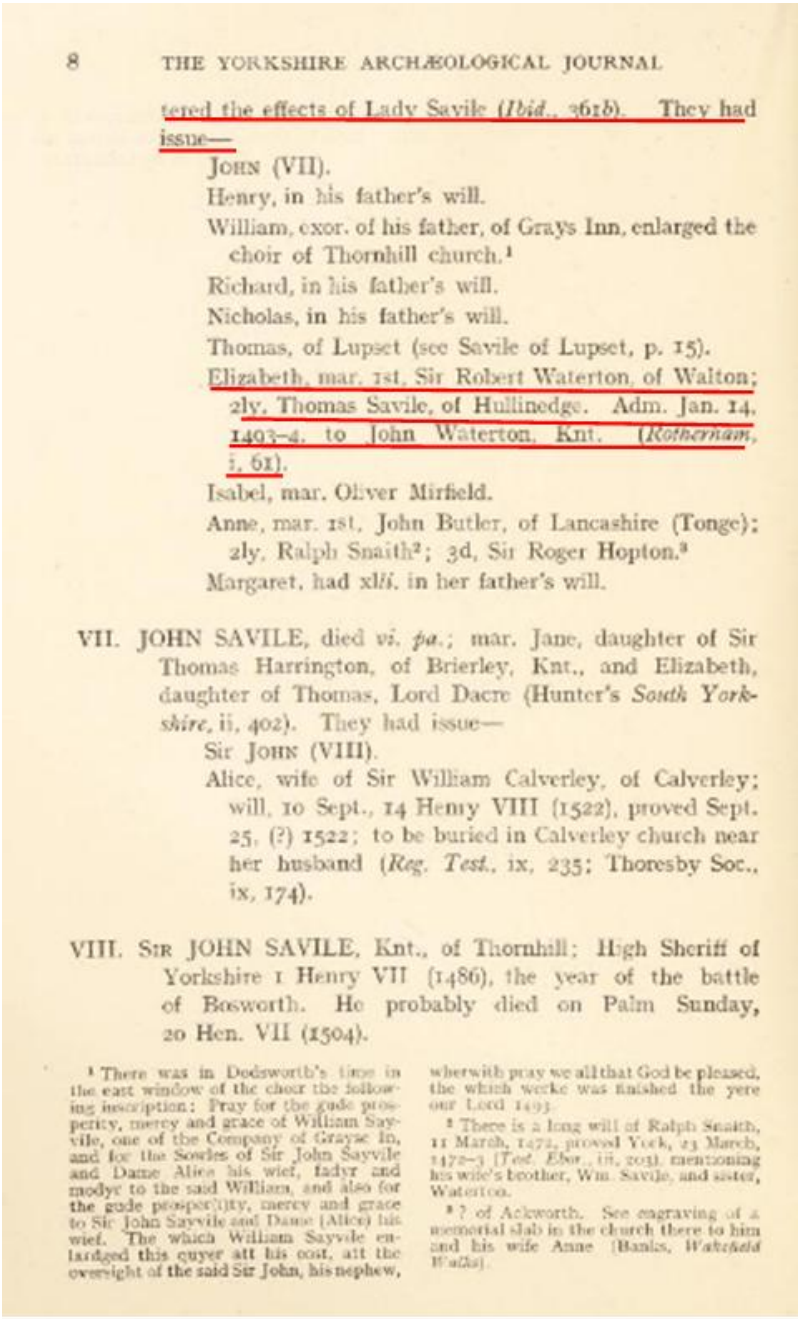
A716. Most interesting is Dr J.W. Walker (1931, p395) who took the time in his writing to recognise Sir John [Robert] Waterton [mine] and Agnes Waterton, (nee Fairfax) were both admitted into the Guild of Corpus Christi at York.

A717. This religious Guild is known historically to be the most important of all religious Guilds (Johnston, 1976, pp 372-384, *The Guild of Corpus Christi and the Procession of Corpus Christi in York*), and attests to their social standing at the time.

This page is intentionally left blank.

16th great grandparents Robert Waterton & Elizabeth Savile

A718. This Sir John "Robert" Waterton (Flower, 1881, p119), is the son of Robert Waterton (d1482), and Elizabeth Waterton (nee Savile) (Yorkshire Archaeological Journal Vol. 25, *The Saville Family by the Late J.W. Clay, F.S.A, p8):*



8 THE YORKSHIRE ARCHÆOLOGICAL JOURNAL

tered the effects of Lady Savile (*Ibid.*, 361*b*). They had issue—

JOHN (VII).
Henry, in his father's will.
William, exor. of his father, of Grays Inn, enlarged the choir of Thornhill church.[1]
Richard, in his father's will.
Nicholas, in his father's will.
Thomas, of Lupset (see Savile of Lupset, p. 15).
Elizabeth, mar. 1st, Sir Robert Waterton, of Walton; 2ly, Thomas Savile, of Hullinedge. Adm. Jan. 14, 1493–4, to John Waterton, Knt. (*Rotherham*, i, 61).
Isabel, mar. Oliver Mirfield.
Anne, mar. 1st, John Butler, of Lancashire (Tonge); 2ly, Ralph Snaith[2]; 3d, Sir Roger Hopton.[3]
Margaret, had xl*li.* in her father's will.

VII. JOHN SAVILE, died *vi. pa.*; mar. Jane, daughter of Sir Thomas Harrington, of Brierley, Knt., and Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas, Lord Dacre (Hunter's *South Yorkshire*, ii, 402). They had issue—
Sir JOHN (VIII).
Alice, wife of Sir William Calverley, of Calverley; will, 10 Sept., 14 Henry VIII (1522), proved Sept. 25, (?) 1522; to be buried in Calverley church near her husband (*Reg. Test.*, ix, 235; Thoresby Soc., ix, 174).

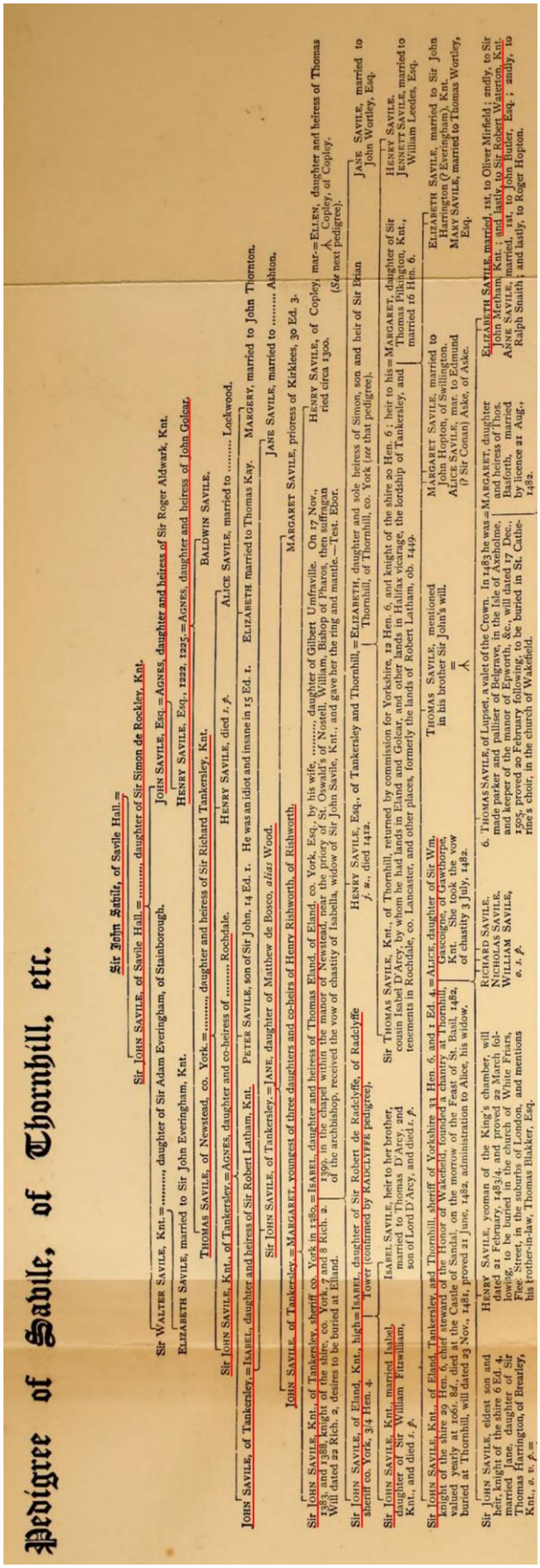
VIII. SIR JOHN SAVILE, Knt., of Thornhill; High Sheriff of Yorkshire 1 Henry VII (1486), the year of the battle of Bosworth. He probably died on Palm Sunday, 20 Hen. VII (1504).

[1] There was in Dodsworth's time in the east window of the choir the following inscription: Pray for the gude prosperity, mercy and grace of William Sayvile, one of the Company of Grayse In, and for the Soules of Sir John Sayvile and Dame Alice his wief, fadyr and modyr to the said William, and also for the gude prosper(i)ty, mercy and grace to Sir John Sayvile and Dame (Alice) his wief. The which William Sayvile enlardged this quyer att his cost, att the oversight of the said Sir John, his nephew, wherwith pray we all that God be pleased, the which werke was finished the yere our Lord 1493.

[2] There is a long will of Ralph Snaith, 11 March, 1472, proved York, 23 March, 1472–3 (*Test. Ebor.*, iii, 203), mentioning his wife's brother, Wm. Savile, and sister, Waterton.

[3] ? of Ackworth. See engraving of a memorial slab in the church there to him and his wife Anne (Banks, *Watchfield Walks*).

A719. Foster's (1874, p148) confirms the marriage between Sir Robert Waterton and Elizabeth Savile, making Sir Robert, Elizabeth's third, and final husband:



Pedigree of Savile, of Thornhill, etc.

Sir John Savile, of Savile Hall. =

Sir John Savile, of Savile Hall. = ..., daughter of Sir Simon de Rockley, Knt.

Sir Walter Savile, Knt. = ..., daughter of Sir Adam Everingham, of Stainborough.

John Savile, Esq. = Agnes, daughter and heiress of Sir Roger Aldwark, Knt.

Elizabeth Savile, married to Sir John Everingham, Knt.

Henry Savile, Esq., 1222, 1225. = Agnes, daughter and heiress of John Golcar.

Thomas Savile, of Newstead, co. York. = ..., daughter and heiress of Sir Richard Tankersley, Knt.

Baldwin Savile.

Sir John Savile, Knt., of Tankersley. = Agnes, daughter and co-heiress of ..... Rochdale.

Henry Savile, died s. p.

Alice Savile, married to ..... Lockwood.

John Savile, of Tankersley. = Isabel, daughter and heiress of Sir Robert Latham, Knt.

Peter Savile, son of Sir John, 14 Ed. 1. He was an idiot and insane in 15 Ed. 1.

Elizabeth married to Thomas Kay.

Margery, married to John Thornton.

Sir John Savile, of Tankersley. = Jane, daughter of Matthew de Bosco, *alias* Wood.

Jane Savile, married to ..... Ashton.

John Savile, of Tankersley. = Margaret, youngest of three daughters and co-heirs of Henry Rishworth, of Rishworth.

Margaret Savile, prioress of Kirklees, 30 Ed. 3.

Sir John Savile, Knt., of Tankersley, sheriff co. York in 1380. = Isabel, daughter and heiress of Thomas Eland, of Eland, co. York, Esq., by his wife, ..., daughter of Gilbert Umfraville. On 17 Nov., 1383, and 1388, knight of the shire, co. York, 7 and 8 Rich. 2. Will dated 22 Rich. 2, desires to be buried at Eland. 1399, in the chapel within the manor of Newstead, near the priory of St. Oswald's of Nostell; William, Bishop of Pharos, then suffragan of the archbishop, received the vow of chastity of Isabella, widow of Sir John Savile, Knt., and gave her the ring and mantle.—Test. Ebor.

Henry Savile, Esq., of Tankersley and Thornhill. = Elizabeth, daughter and sole heiress of Simon, son and heir of Sir Brian Thornhill, of Thornhill, co. York (*see* that pedigree).

Henry Savile, married to Ellen, daughter and heiress of Thomas A. Copley, of Copley. (*See* next pedigree).

Jane Savile, married to John Wortley, Esq.

Sir John Savile, of Eland, Knt., high = Isabel, daughter of Sir Robert de Radclyffe, of Radclyffe Tower (confirmed by Radcliffe pedigree).

Henry Savile, Esq., of Tankersley and Thornhill, *j. s.*, died 1412.

Sir Thomas Savile, Knt., of Thornhill, returned by commission for Yorkshire, 12 Hen. 6, and knight of the shire 20 Hen. 6; heir to his = Margaret, daughter of Sir Thomas Pilkington, Knt., married 16 Hen. 6.

Henry Savile.

Jennett Savile, married to William Leedes, Esq.

Sir John Savile, Knt., married Isabel, daughter of Sir William Fitzwilliam, Knt., and died *s. p.*

Isabel Savile, heir to her brother, married to Thomas D'Arcy, and son of Lord D'Arcy, and died *s. p.*

Sir Thomas Savile, Knt., of Thornhill, returned by commission for Yorkshire, 12 Hen. 6, and knight of the shire 20 Hen. 6; heir to his cousin Isabel D'Arcy, by whom he had lands in Eland and Golcar, and other lands in Halifax vicarage, the lordship of Tankersley, and tenements in Rochdale, co. Lancaster, and other places, formerly the lands of Robert Latham, ob. 1449.

Sir John Savile, Knt., of Eland, Tankersley, and Thornhill, sheriff of Yorkshire 33 Hen. 6, and 1 Ed. 4. = Alice, daughter of Sir Wm. Gascoigne, of Gawthorpe, Knt. She took the vow of chastity 3 July, 1492.

Thomas Savile, mentioned in his brother Sir John's will. = A

Margaret Savile, married to John Hopton, of Swillington.

Alice Savile, mar. to Edmund (? Sir Conan) Aske, of Aske.

Elizabeth Savile, married to Sir John Harrington (? Everingham), Knt.

Mary Savile, married to Thomas Wortley, Esq.

Sir John Savile, eldest son and heir, knight of the shire 6 Ed. 4, married Jane, daughter of Sir Thomas Harrington, of Brearley, Knt., *a. v. p.* =

Henry Savile, yeoman of the King's chamber, will dated 21 February, 1483/4, and proved 22 March following, to be buried in the church of White Friars, Fleet Street, in the suburbs of London, and mentions his brother-in-law, Thomas Blakker, Esq.

Richard Savile.

Nicholas Savile.

William Savile, *a. s. p.*

6. Thomas Savile, of Lupset, a valet of the Crown. In 1483 he was made parker and palliser of Belgrave, in the Isle of Axeholme, and keeper of the manor of Epworth, &c., will dated 17 Dec., 1505, proved 20 February following, to be buried in St. Catherine's choir, in the church of Wakefield.

Margaret Savile, daughter and heiress of Thos. Basforth, married by licence 21 Aug., 1482.

Elizabeth Savile, married 1st, to Oliver Mirfield; 2ndly, to Sir John Metham, Knt.; and lastly, to Sir Robert Waterton, Knt.

Anne Savile, married, 1st, to John Butler, Esq.; 2ndly, to Ralph Snaith; and lastly, to Roger Hopton.

A720. Dr J.W. Walker (1931, pp393-394) makes certain Sir Robert Waterton who married Elizabeth Savile, is the son of Richard Waterton and Constance Assenhull.

A721. The submission below begins with the identity of his parents Richard Waterton and Constance Assenhull (Dr J.W. Walker, 1931, p393) then follows Dr Walker's (1931) account of the immediate family of Richard Waterton and wife Constance Assenhull including their son's marriage to Elizabeth Savile (Dr Walker, 1931, p394):

In 1455, he was appointed one of the Commissioners to raise money in the county of Lincoln for the defence of Calais by letters of credence, dated 14 May of that year.[1]

Richard Waterton, esq., paid a fine of 2*s*., Sir Thomas Harrington paid 3*s*. 3*d*., and Nicholas Wortley paid 20*d*. to the lord of the manor at the tourn of the liberty of Stayncross, W.R. Yorks., held 1 October, 1461.[2]

He was present at the Parliament held at Westminster in November, 1461.[3]

Isabel, widow of John Bosvile, of Ardsley who died in 1441, a sister and coheir (with Agnes, wife of John Wentworth) of Sir William Dronsfield, knt., of West Bretton, founded a chantry at the altar of the B.V.M. on the north side of the chapel of St. Michael in Cawthorne church. The foundation deed is dated on the feast of St. Margaret (20 July), 1455. Isabel's second husband, Henry Langton, is joined with her in the deed, and the chantry was to be for ever called the Chantry of John Bosvile. Among the endowments for the stipend of the chaplain were two acres of land, lying together in a croft between the land of Richard Waterton on two sides, for the building of a house and the construction of a garden for the use of the chaplain, and his successors, and with an annual rent of 10*os*. to be taken from Isabel's lands in Cawthorne. To this deed of foundation, Sir Thomas Harrington, Richard Waterton, Thomas Everingham, Aymer Burdet, and others witness.[4]

The chapel of St. Michael, on the north side of the chancel of Cawthorne church, has been used (until recently) for more than two hundred years as the mortuary chapel of the Spencers and Stanhopes of Cannon Hall.

By his wife Constance Assenhull, Richard Waterton had a son Robert, and two daughters, Eufemia and Jane. Under the will of Eufemia, widow of Sir John Langton of Farnley, Eufemia Waterton, daughter of Richard Waterton, received "j parvam peciam argenti pounced cum le werthes," also "j ollam argenteam." The will was proved 24 November, 1463.[5]

The younger daughter Jane married Sir Robert Tyrwhit, knt., of Kettleby, who was possessed of 18 manors in Lincolnshire, and died in 1457–8, leaving a very young widow.[6]

Richard Waterton died early in 1479, and his *inq. p.m.* was taken on 27 March of that year.

[1] *Acts of Privy Council*, vi, 243.
[2] Deeds at Woolley Hall, Yorks.
[3] *Ann. Will. de Wyrcester*, 778 (Rolls ed.), ii, 31.
[4] *S. Yorks.*, ii, 238.
[5] *Test. Ebor.* (Surt. Soc.), ii, 258–60.
[6] *Coll. Top. et Geneal.*, ii. 61.

ROBERT WATERTON succeeded to his father's estates in Lincolnshire and Yorkshire. His name appears in the Wakefield Manor Court Rolls from 1480 to 1482 as owner of Walton. He was knighted by Richard, Duke of Gloucester, at the surrender of Berwick, 24 August, 1482, and died the same year.

SAVILE.
Arg. on a bend sa. three owls of the field.

He married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Savile of Thornhill by Alice, daughter of Sir William Gascoigne, knt., of Gawthorp, by whom he had two sons, SIR ROBERT WATERTON, who married Beatrice, daughter of Thomas Clifford, and died 10 December, 1475, in the lifetime of his father, and without issue; the younger son was named John.

After the death of her first husband, Elizabeth Waterton in 1483 married Thomas Savile of Hullinedge, whose will was proved 3 April, 1490. They joined in founding a chantry at St. Mary's altar in the south aisle of Sandal church to pray for the souls of Henry Savile, brother of Thomas Savile, and for Thomas and his wife Elizabeth. By the death of Thomas Savile in 1490 delay took place in the foundation, and it was not until 3 May, 1496, that the deed of foundation was actually signed.[1]

Elizabeth Savile died on 3 January, 1493–4, and her son John Waterton administered his mother's effects on the 14th of the same month.[2]

JOHN WATERTON is described in the Wakefield Manor Court Rolls from 1484 to 1494 as Sir John Waterton, knt.

He presented William Dawtrie to the rectory of Kirkheaton, 29 May, 1479,[3] who by his will, dated 1511, left to the church of Heton his old Vestments with Alb and other things pertaining to the same, and a book called "Legends of the Saints," and a great chest bound with iron.[4] The rector's arms—azure five fusils in fess argent—were in the middle Quyer of the church.[5]

[1] *Yorks. Arch. Jl.*, xxiv, 27.
[2] Reg. Abp. Rotherham, i, 61.
[3] Reg. Abp. Booth, f. 24.
[4] Tolson, *Kirkheaton*, 103.
[5] Ibid., 42.

This page is intentionally left blank.

17th great grandparents Richard Waterton & Constance Assenhull

A722. Tolhson (1929, p76) recognises the marriage of Constance Assenhull, daughter of Sir William Assenhull and Joan de Burgh, to Richard Waterton (Tolhson L., FSA, 1929, p76, The History of the Church of St John's Baptist, Kirkheaton, Parish, Yorkshire and the Annals of the Parish):

No. 8. Richard de Dronsfeld. Again the second member of a family to be Rector. He was Presented by Sir Robert Nevile of Hornby, Kt. He died 1430. Letters of Administration ominum bonarum of Richard Dronsfeld, Rectoris de Heton were granted to John Byrton of Burton at York, 13th Sept. 1430.

1380-1430.

No. 9. William Cussyng d'Eston. Of this Rector nothing is known, he was Presented by Sir Wm. Assenhull, who married Joan, one of the co-heirs of Sir John de Burgh. Constance, daughter of Sir Wm., married Richard Waterton of Walton, and in the pedigree of Waterton, Assenhull is described as Knight of the Shire of Cambridge in 1422. There is a place called Eston in the North Riding of Yorkshire, and an Easton in the East Riding, also several Eastons in the Midland and Eastern Counties. The Archbishop's Register does not tell us whether Wm. Cussyng resigned or died.

1430-1439.

No. 10. William Nevile was no doubt a member of the great and powerful family of the Neviles of Hornby or Liversedge. He was Presented by Lady Margaret, widow of Sir Wm. Harrington of Hornby and Brierley and daughter of Sir Robert Nevile of Hornby. He resigned in 1477 on account of infirmity and was granted an annual pension of VII marks for life out of the fruits and issues of the Church. The assignment says:—" Whereas our beloved in Christ Dominus William Nevile late Rector of the parish Church of Heton in our Diocese has for so long a time laudably carried on and exercised the cure and rule of the said Church that at the present time on account of his age and bodily debility he is unable, as it were, to the actual exercise of the said cure, which is great and ample, wishing rather to be relieved altogether from the burden of the said Church than that the flock committed to him should be exposed to the devouring of wolves, he has of his own free will resigned the same Church with all its rights and appurtenances into our hands, humbly supplicating that as he has not otherwise the wherewithal sufficient to live, we would deign to assign to him a fit and competent pension.

A723. It is Roskell, Clark & Rawcliffe (1993) who determined that Richard Waterton and Constance Assenhull most probably married in 1435 (History of Parliament record for Assenhull, alias Harpeden, William, d.1443, of Guilden Morden, Cambs. and Walton, Yorks, Roskell, Clark, L., Rawcliffe., C, 1993):

In about 1435 Asenhill's only daughter, Constance, was married to Richard Waterton† (son of John Waterton* of Bramley, Surrey), an occasion marked by Sir William's settlement on the couple of the property in Yorkshire which had belonged to Constance's mother. Having founded a perpetual chantry in the house of the Carmelites at Cambridge with the intention that it should be his place of burial, in 1440 he obtained permission from Pope Eugenius IV to have his wife's body exhumed from Guilden Morden parish church and re-interred in the friary. He himself died shortly before 22 Apr. 1443.[6]

Ref Volumes: 1386-1421

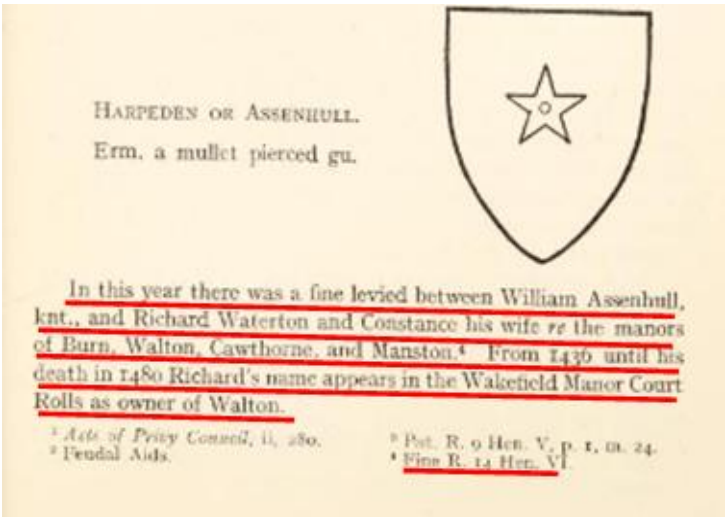
Authors: J. S. Roskell / L. S. Woodger

Notes

Variants: Asunhall, Essenhell, Hasehull.

1. *Derby's Expeds.* (Cam. Soc. n.s. lii), 8, 136, 258, 268, 270, 272; *Test. Vetusta* ed. Nicolas, 144; *CPR*, 1396-9, pp. 195, 518, 538.
2. *CPR*, 1399-1401, p. 206; 1405-8, p. 434; *Rot. Gasc. et Franc.* ed. Carte, ii. 183, 185; E101/404/21, f. 45; DL28/27/10; DL42/16 (pt.3), ff. 43, 140.
3. *Yorks. Arch. Soc.* xxx. 345-8; *VCH Cambs.* viii. 99; *CIMisc.* vii. 427; *Feudal Aids*, i. 190; vi. 409; *CFR*, xiii. 60; *CPR*, 1408-13, p. 52; *CCR*, 1429-35, p. 249; PCC Marche 48, 53; F. Blomefield, *Norf.* vii. 519; *15th Cent. Eng.* ed. Chrimes, Ross and Griffiths, 98.
4. *CPR*, 1413-16, p. 134; 1422-9, pp. 12, 287; E101/46/39, 69/4/407, 70/1/553; *DKR*, xliv. 568; C219/12/3, 5, 6; *CCR*, 1419-22, p. 228.
5. *CPR*, 1429-36, pp. 61, 385; *HMC Rutland*, iv. 86; *PPC*, iv. 328.
6. *Yorks. Arch. Soc.* xxx. 391; *CPL*, ix. 119; *CPR*, 1441-6, p. 159; *CFR*, xvii. 233.

A724. Dr J.W. Walker (1931, p391) offers further evidence of Richard and Constance's marriage ("Fine R, 14 Hen.VI, issue and father"):



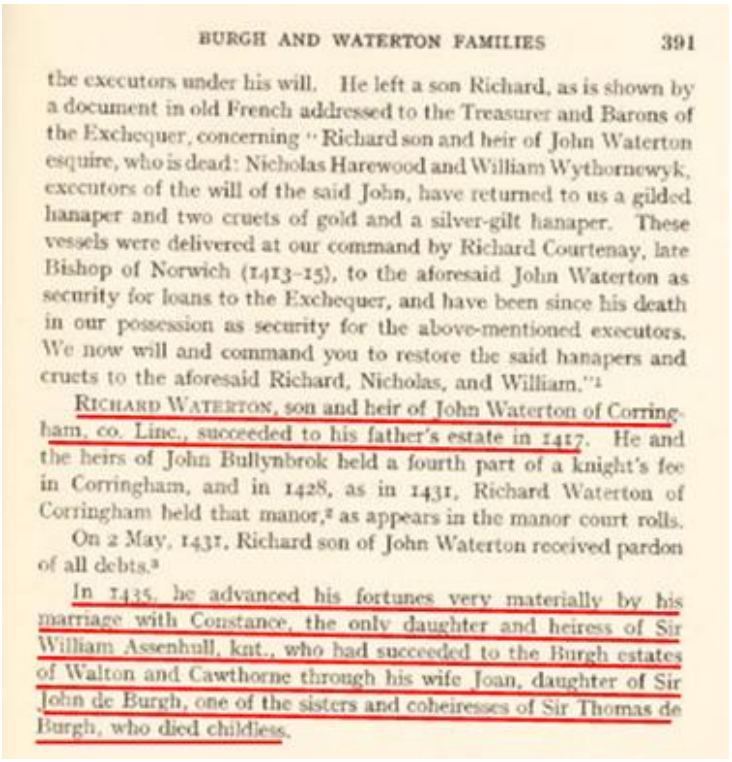
HARPEDEN OR ASSENHULL.

Erm. a mullet pierced gu.

In this year there was a fine levied between William Assenhull, knt., and Richard Waterton and Constance his wife *re* the manors of Burn, Walton, Cawthorne, and Manston.[4] From 1436 until his death in 1480 Richard's name appears in the Wakefield Manor Court Rolls as owner of Walton.

[1] *Acts of Privy Council*, ii, 280.
[2] Feudal Aids.
[3] Pat. R. 9 Hen. V, p. 1, m. 24.
[4] Fine R. 14 Hen. VI.

A725. Dr Walker (1931, p391) empathises that the marriage between Richard and Constance was important to the welfare of rising generations:



BURGH AND WATERTON FAMILIES 391

the executors under his will. He left a son Richard, as is shown by a document in old French addressed to the Treasurer and Barons of the Exchequer, concerning "Richard son and heir of John Waterton esquire, who is dead: Nicholas Harewood and William Wythornewyk, executors of the will of the said John, have returned to us a gilded hanaper and two cruets of gold and a silver-gilt hanaper. These vessels were delivered at our command by Richard Courtenay, late Bishop of Norwich (1413-15), to the aforesaid John Waterton as security for loans to the Exchequer, and have been since his death in our possession as security for the above-mentioned executors. We now will and command you to restore the said hanapers and cruets to the aforesaid Richard, Nicholas, and William."[1]

RICHARD WATERTON, son and heir of John Waterton of Corringham, co. Linc., succeeded to his father's estate in 1417. He and the heirs of John Bullynbrok held a fourth part of a knight's fee in Corringham, and in 1428, as in 1431, Richard Waterton of Corringham held that manor,[2] as appears in the manor court rolls.

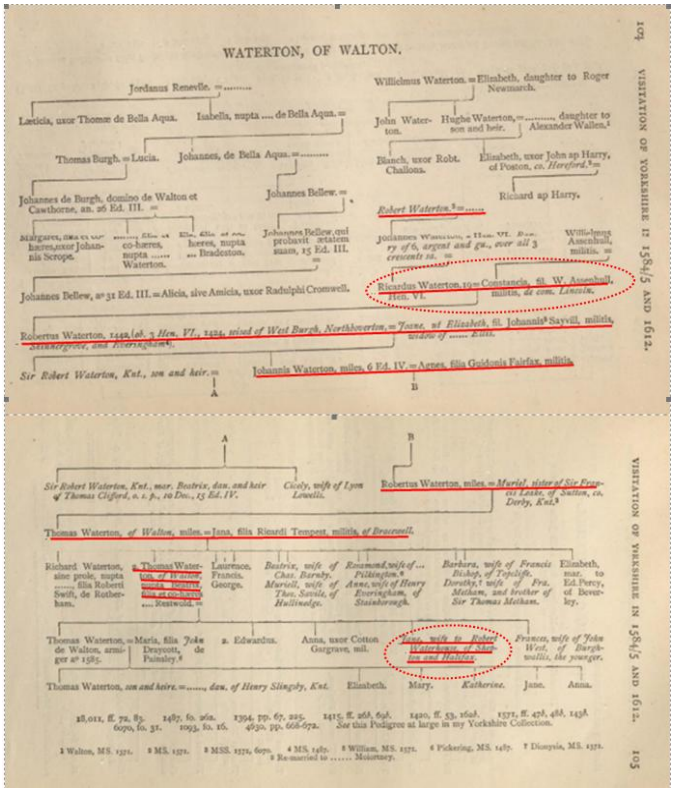
On 2 May, 1431, Richard son of John Waterton received pardon of all debts.[3]

In 1435, he advanced his fortunes very materially by his marriage with Constance, the only daughter and heiress of Sir William Assenhull, knt., who had succeeded to the Burgh estates of Walton and Cawthorne through his wife Joan, daughter of Sir John de Burgh, one of the sisters and coheiresses of Sir Thomas de Burgh, who died childless.

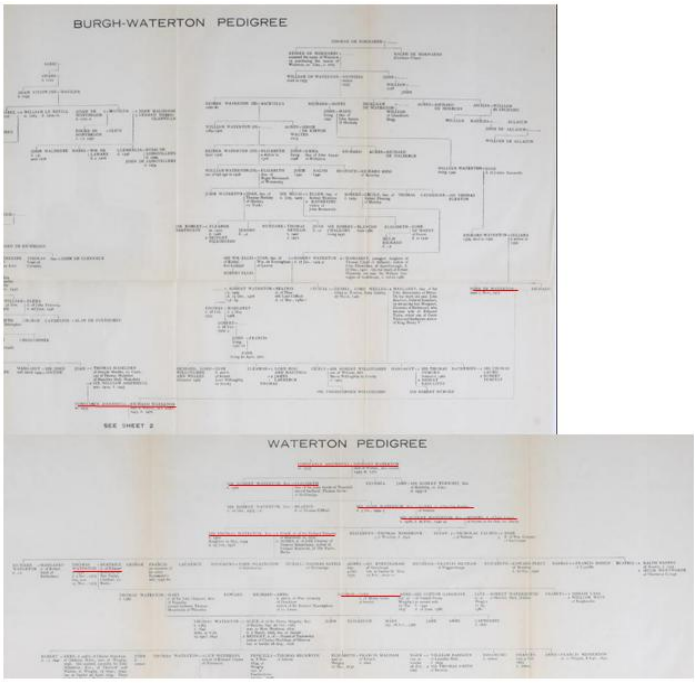
A726. The researcher believes the Waterton and Walton pedigree that appeared in the 1584/5 Visitations of Yorkshire conducted by Robert Glover (1584/5, pp104-105) is accurate. This is because Dr Walker's (1931) more recent research found the same results ascending from Jane Waterhouse (1557-aft 1607) (nee Waterton), to Richard Waterton (c1411-1480) and Constance Assenhull; and then further to Richard Waterton's father John Waterton.

A727. The present researcher came to the same conclusions independently, also following the evidence, but traced in an ascending direction.

A728. Submitted below is Glover's (1580, pp104-105) pedigree chart revealing the lineage ascending from Jane to her lineal ancestors Richard and Constance, and also onto Richard's father John Waterton:



A729. Next submission is a back to back compilation of Dr Walker's research Sheets 1 & 2 charts which track Jane Waterhouse's descent from John Waterton (Dr Walker, 1931, after p418). The charts are easily compared to Glover's pedigree chart for the Watertons' of Walton and both traces match:

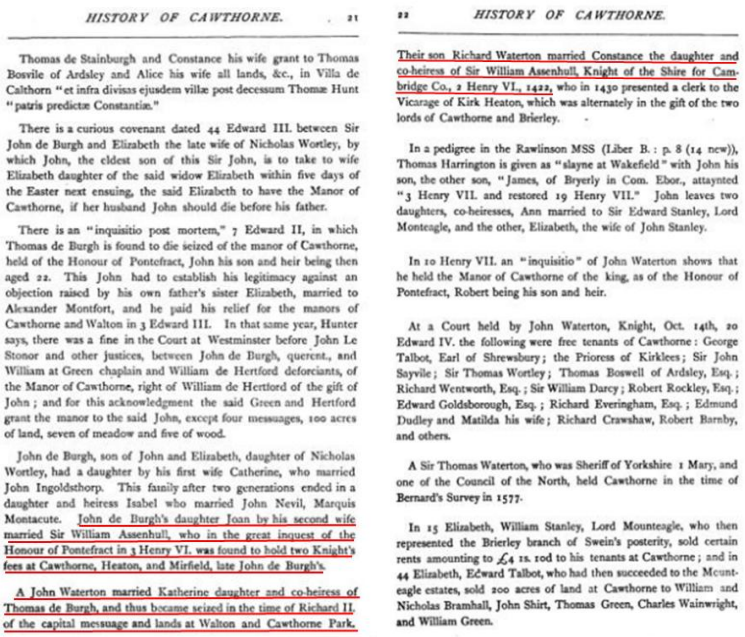


A730. Evidence submitted next makes certain, Richard Waterton's mother is Catherine Waterton (nee de Burgh).

This page is intentionally left blank.

18th great grandparents John Waterton & Catherine de Burgh

A731. First, Charles Pratt, (1882, pp21-22), the Vicar of Cawthorne confirms the marriage between Richard Waterton's parents, John Waterton and Catherine de Burgh:



HISTORY OF CAWTHORNE. 21

Thomas de Stainburgh and Constance his wife grant to Thomas Bosvile of Ardsley and Alice his wife all lands, &c., in Villa de Calthorn "et infra divisas ejusdem villæ post decessum Thomæ Hunt "patris predictæ Constantiæ."

There is a curious covenant dated 44 Edward III. between Sir John de Burgh and Elizabeth the late wife of Nicholas Wortley, by which John, the eldest son of this Sir John, is to take to wife Elizabeth daughter of the said widow Elizabeth within five days of the Easter next ensuing, the said Elizabeth to have the Manor of Cawthorne, if her husband John should die before his father.

There is an "inquisitio post mortem," 7 Edward II, in which Thomas de Burgh is found to die seized of the manor of Cawthorne, held of the Honour of Pontefract, John his son and heir being then aged 22. This John had to establish his legitimacy against an objection raised by his own father's sister Elizabeth, married to Alexander Montfort, and he paid his relief for the manors of Cawthorne and Walton in 3 Edward III. In that same year, Hunter says, there was a fine in the Court at Westminster before John Le Stonor and other justices, between John de Burgh, querent., and William at Green chaplain and William de Hertford deforciants, of the Manor of Cawthorne, right of William de Hertford of the gift of John; and for this acknowledgment the said Green and Hertford grant the manor to the said John, except four messuages, 100 acres of land, seven of meadow and five of wood.

John de Burgh, son of John and Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Wortley, had a daughter by his first wife Catherine, who married John Ingoldsthorp. This family after two generations ended in a daughter and heiress Isabel who married John Nevil, Marquis Montacute. John de Burgh's daughter Joan by his second wife married Sir William Assenhull, who in the great inquest of the Honour of Pontefract in 3 Henry VI. was found to hold two Knight's fees at Cawthorne, Heaton, and Mirfield, late John de Burgh's.

A John Waterton married Katherine daughter and co-heiress of Thomas de Burgh, and thus became seized in the time of Richard II. of the capital messuage and lands at Walton and Cawthorne Park.

22 HISTORY OF CAWTHORNE.

Their son Richard Waterton married Constance the daughter and co-heiress of Sir William Assenhull, Knight of the Shire for Cambridge Co., 2 Henry VI., 1422, who in 1430 presented a clerk to the Vicarage of Kirk Heaton, which was alternately in the gift of the two lords of Cawthorne and Brierley.

In a pedigree in the Rawlinson MSS (Liber B.: p. 8 (14 new)), Thomas Harrington is given as "slayne at Wakefield" with John his son, the other son, "James, of Bryerly in Com. Ebor., attaynted "3 Henry VII. and restored 19 Henry VII." John leaves two daughters, co-heiresses, Ann married to Sir Edward Stanley, Lord Monteagle, and the other, Elizabeth, the wife of John Stanley.

In 10 Henry VII. an "inquisitio" of John Waterton shows that he held the Manor of Cawthorne of the king, as of the Honour of Pontefract, Robert being his son and heir.

At a Court held by John Waterton, Knight, Oct. 14th, 20 Edward IV. the following were free tenants of Cawthorne: George Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury; the Prioress of Kirklees; Sir John Saywile; Sir Thomas Wortley; Thomas Boswell of Ardsley, Esq.; Richard Wentworth, Esq.; Sir William Darcy; Robert Rockley, Esq.; Edward Goldsborough, Esq.; Richard Everingham, Esq.; Edmund Dudley and Matilda his wife; Richard Crawshaw, Robert Barnby, and others.

A Sir Thomas Waterton, who was Sheriff of Yorkshire 1 Mary, and one of the Council of the North, held Cawthorne in the time of Bernard's Survey in 1577.

In 15 Elizabeth, William Stanley, Lord Mounteagle, who then represented the Brierley branch of Swein's posterity, sold certain rents amounting to £4 1s. 10d to his tenants at Cawthorne; and in 44 Elizabeth, Edward Talbot, who had then succeeded to the Mounteagle estates, sold 200 acres of land at Cawthorne to William and Nicholas Bramhall, John Shirt, Thomas Green, Charles Wainwright, and William Green.

A732. The highly respected authority which is William Brocklehurst, Stonehouse, D.C.L. (1793-1862), Archdeacon of Stow from 1862 (British History on-line), matriculated at Corpus Christi College, Oxford in 1812, graduating B.A. in 1816 (Foster, Joseph, 1888–1892, "Stonehouse, William [Brocklehurst] in the Alumni Oxonienses: the Members of the University of Oxford, 1715-1886"), records John Waterton's marriage to Catherine de Burgh. He further makes her the daughter of Thomas de Burgh of Walton (Harleian MSS, 4460; Grosvenor Roll, 4te, 1832L) (Stonehouse, W.B, 1839, p447, The History and Topography of the Isle of Axholme: being that part of Lincolnshire which is west of Trent):

MANOR OF CROULE.—WATERTON. 447

ton, "to hold as freely as his father held the same;" and to Richard de Halberge, who had married his daughter Agnes, he gave one bovate and a half of land.

We learn from other documents* that John de Waterton acquired the messuage and lands at Walton and Cawthorne Park by marriage with Catherine, daughter and heiress of Thomas de Burge, of Walton. William Waterton married the daughter and heiress of Thomas Methley, of Methley, near Wakefield, by which marriage he obtained that lordship. Sir Hugh, his cousin, also married Ellen, the daughter of Thomas Mowbray, by which he became possessed of more extensive possessions in the Isle of Axholme. In the celebrated controversy between Sir Richard Scrope and Sir Robert Grosvenor, respecting their right to the coat of arms-azure a bend or, wherein many of the most eminent warriors of the age were examined, this noble knight† was a witness on behalf of Scrope. His evidence was taken on the 10th of June, in the 9th year of Richard the Second, A. D. 1386, at the palace of John of Gant, King of Castile and Leon, in the Friars Carmelites at Plymouth§. Previous to this transaction he had been knighted, and was retained in the service of John of Gant‡. He had also the office of attorney to Henry Duke of Hereford, during the Duke's absence from England‖. In the year 1401 he was one of the custodes of the King's son, Thomas of Lancaster,

* Harleian MSS. 4460.

† Grosvenor Roll, 4to. 1832.

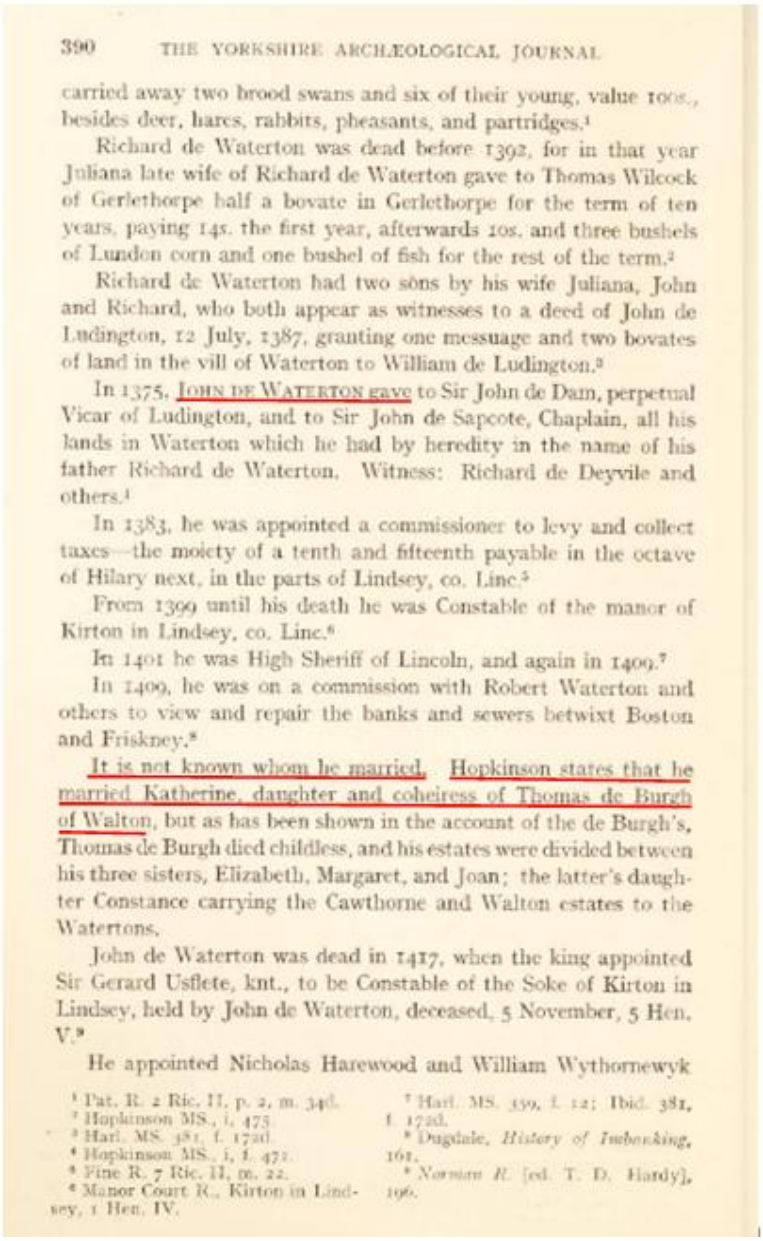
§ The Commissioners appointed to receive this evidence, by the Constable of England, were Lord Fitz Walter, Sir John Marmion, and Sir John Kintwode. Sir Hugh's evidence was as follows.—"Hugh Waterton, Esquier, p'dict' pr. le p'tie Mons. Richard Lescrope, jurez etenamnes, dit qil ad vewe et oeun le dit Mons. Richard estre armeez, et le champ d'azur ove un bende d'or, et autres de son lynages armeez en mesmes les armes, ove differences en div'ses iragm et jo'nes et unqs devant le debate comence navoit vewe ne conu la cont'arie mes q' les dits armes eunt totdys este au dit Mons. Richard et ces auncestris, come il ad oy pler de veux pes chivallers et esquires, et come coe et publicke voix et fame laboure en cest p'tie. Et coment de Mons. Robert Grovenour unqes ne vist ne ovust pler qil portast navoit ticls armes dague ove une bende dor tanq' la darrein iraye en Escoce ove n're p le Roy.

‡ Regist. Duds Johannis Lancastriæ.

‖ Finders. lii. pt. iv, p. 149.

5 U

A733. Dr Walker (1931, p390) acknowledges Hopkinson MS, I, f, 471 records of the marriage of Richard's parents John Waterton and Catherine de Burgh, daughter of Thomas de Burgh. He recoils somewhat preferring to present the view that Thomas de Burgh died childless:



390 THE YORKSHIRE ARCHÆOLOGICAL JOURNAL

carried away two brood swans and six of their young, value 100s., besides deer, hares, rabbits, pheasants, and partridges.[1]

Richard de Waterton was dead before 1392, for in that year Juliana late wife of Richard de Waterton gave to Thomas Wilcock of Gerlethorpe half a bovate in Gerlethorpe for the term of ten years, paying 14s. the first year, afterwards 10s. and three bushels of Lundon corn and one bushel of fish for the rest of the term.[2]

Richard de Waterton had two sons by his wife Juliana, John and Richard, who both appear as witnesses to a deed of John de Ludington, 12 July, 1387, granting one messuage and two bovates of land in the vill of Waterton to William de Ludington.[3]

In 1375, JOHN DE WATERTON gave to Sir John de Dam, perpetual Vicar of Ludington, and to Sir John de Sapcote, Chaplain, all his lands in Waterton which he had by heredity in the name of his father Richard de Waterton. Witness: Richard de Deyvile and others.[4]

In 1383, he was appointed a commissioner to levy and collect taxes—the moiety of a tenth and fifteenth payable in the octave of Hilary next, in the parts of Lindsey, co. Linc.[5]

From 1399 until his death he was Constable of the manor of Kirton in Lindsey, co. Linc.[6]

In 1401 he was High Sheriff of Lincoln, and again in 1409.[7]

In 1409, he was on a commission with Robert Waterton and others to view and repair the banks and sewers betwixt Boston and Friskney.[8]

It is not known whom he married. Hopkinson states that he married Katherine, daughter and coheiress of Thomas de Burgh of Walton, but as has been shown in the account of the de Burgh's, Thomas de Burgh died childless, and his estates were divided between his three sisters, Elizabeth, Margaret, and Joan; the latter's daughter Constance carrying the Cawthorne and Walton estates to the Watertons.

John de Waterton was dead in 1417, when the king appointed Sir Gerard Usflete, knt., to be Constable of the Soke of Kirton in Lindsey, held by John de Waterton, deceased, 5 November, 5 Hen. V.[9]

He appointed Nicholas Harewood and William Wythornewyk

[1] Pat. R. 2 Ric. II, p. 2, m. 34d.
[2] Hopkinson MS., i, 475.
[3] Harl. MS. 581, f. 172d.
[4] Hopkinson MS., i, f. 471.
[5] Fine R. 7 Ric. II, m. 22.
[6] Manor Court R., Kirton in Lindsey, 1 Hen. IV.
[7] Harl. MS. 559, f. 12; Ibid. 581, f. 172d.
[8] Dugdale, *History of Imbanking*, 161.
[9] *Norman R.* [ed. T. D. Hardy], 196.

A734. Upon close scrutiny, Dr Walker (1931, p343, p391, p418, Sheet 1) makes three analogous statements that Thomas de Burgh died childless, but none of them are supported by evidence (refer Dr Walker, 1931, p343, p391, p418, Sheet 1).

A735. Suffice to say, Dr Walker's (1931, p343) claims that Thomas de Burgh died childless, is unfounded.

A736. This is the only blemish detected by the present researcher a descendant of those involved. It should not be viewed as a major criticism of Dr Walker's research. Rather, the present researcher appreciated Dr Walker completed a most skilled, comprehensive and otherwise circumspect trace of their family's lineage. To which the family will forever remain indebted.

A737. Suffice to say, the conclusion reached from consideration of all available facts and information, and in lieu of any disconfirming evidence, is that Catherine Waterton (nee de Burgh) is the daughter of Thomas de Burgh and Lady Fellbrigge. Therefore, she is the granddaughter of Sir John de Burgh and Mary de Grey, rather than being their daughter.

A738. Even allowing for error, it is certain Catherine Waterton (nee de Burgh), is a close descendent of Sir John de Burgh and Mary de Grey (Refer evidence: Harleian MSS, 4460; Grosvenor Roll, 4te, 1832; Harl. MS. 359., f. 12; Ibid. 381, f172d; Hopkinson, Pratt 1882, pp21-22; Stonehouse, 1839; Howard and Howard 2001, p2; Dr J.W. Walker, 1931, p390; Richardson, D, 2004, p733, Plantagenet Ancestry; Richardson, D, 2011, p243, Magna Carta Ancestry, 2nd Edition, Vol. IV, p243; Richardson, D, 2013, p223, Royal Ancestry, Vol. V).

A739. On the weight of evidence prudence dictates that for the memory of the researcher's lineal ancestors involved, the family settles that Catherine de Burgh is the daughter of Thomas de Burgh knowing with certainty that Thomas de Burgh is the son of Sir John de Burgh and Mary de Grey.

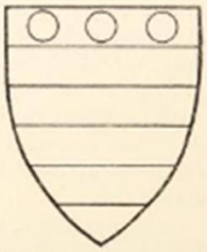
This page is intentionally left blank.

19th great grandparents Thomas de Burgh & Lady Fellbrigge

A740. Dr Walker's (1931) account makes Thomas de Burgh the son of Sir John de Burgh and Mary de Grey (Dr J.W. Walker, 1931, pp 339-340, refer Gough, Sep: Mon. 1, pt. ii, 220. Hailstone, Hist of Bottisham, 109):

GREY OF RUTHIN.

Barry of six arg. and az.; three torteaux in chief.



Sir John was twice married, his first wife being Mary, daughter

[1] Pat. R. 8 Ric. II, p. 2, m. 31d.
[2] Pat. R. 9 Ric. II, p. 2, m. 30d.
[3] Abp. Arundel's Reg., f. 37.

(Refer foot of page 339)

of Roger, Lord Grey de Ruthin, and Elizabeth, daughter of John, second Earl Hastings of Abergavenny and his wife Isabel, daughter of William, Earl of Pembroke and Joanna de Muntchesnil, niece of Anselm, sixth Earl of Pembroke. She bore him two sons, John and Thomas, and on her death, about 1360, was buried in Anglesey Priory in Cambridgeshire, which had been founded for Austin Canons by Henry I.[1]

In one of the windows of the Burgh chapel in Burgh church were the arms of Burgh impaling those of Grey of Ruthin—barry of six argent and azure three torteaux in chief.[2]

In 1362 Sir John married Katherine, daughter of John d'Engayn of Quy cum Stow and Teversham, co. Cambs., and of Joan his wife.[3] By her he had three daughters, Elizabeth, Margaret, and Joan.

ENGAYNE.

Gu. a fesse dancettée or between six crosses crosslet of the last.

Sir John de Burgh died in the summer of 1393; in his will, dated 1384, he mentions his first wife Mary. He was buried within an altar tomb in the eastern recess on the north side of the quire of Burgh church near the altar.[4] The knight lies upon a rough bed of boulder-stones, his body half-turned upon the right side, the left leg crossed over the right one; on his head he wears a keel-shaped bascinet, which rests upon his tilting helm; over the camail of mail which covers the sides of the face, the neck, and shoulders, is a collar of SS. He wears a short, tight-fitting, embroidered surcoat; his shield, fastened to the left arm, is suspended by a guige passing over the right shoulder, and a baldric of raised rectangular studs lies across his hips; his gauntleted right hand reaches across his breast to hold a tilting-spear, which has now gone; his legs are encased in mail, and sollerets defend his feet, which are placed upon a lion.

[1] Gough. *Sep. Mon.* I, pt. ii, 220. Hailstone, *Hist. of Bottisham*, 109.
[2] Cole's MS., xviii, f. 63 (Add. MS. 5819).
[3] *Visitation of Cambridge* (Harl. Soc.). Add MS. 4962, f. 15. Ed. Hailstone *History of Bottisham*, 164.
[4] Sir John de Burgh's alabaster effigy, with that of his wife Katherine, lies now upon the middle altar-tomb in Burgh church.

A741. Hunter G & Hunter M (2001, p2), A Guide to the Parish Church of Saint Augustine of Canterbury Burrough Green, confirmed from parish records that Thomas de Burgh, the son of Sir John de Burgh and Mary de Grey, (Dr Walker, 1931, p340). Thomas succeeded his father as lord of the Manor. It is further recognised from the same parish records that Thomas married "a lady of the Fellbrigge family of Norfolk" (*Ibid Dr* Walker, 1931):

Name	***Born***	***Died***	***Notes***
Thomas de Burgh	1086		First Lord of the Manor.
Philip de Burgh		1164	Married Alice and then Ismania.
Thomas de Burgh		1199	Married Sara Neville. He reached a high position at Court and this may account for the reference in Shakespeare's *King John* to a de Burgh as the King's Chamberlain.
Thomas de Burgh		1232	Married Maria de Cokefield. No heirs and therefore succeeded by his brother.
Philip de Burgh		1235	Married Maud de Morvill and buried in Easby Abbey.
Thomas de Burgh Kt		1284	Married niece of Walter de Grey, Archbishop of York.
Philip de Burgh		1285	
Thomas de Burgh	1278	1322	Married Lucy de Bellew. Represented Cambridgeshire in Parliament. Buried in Hornby Church.
John de Burgh Kt	1300	1330	Entered the religious life about 1328. Died before completing his novitiate and therefore **buried at Burrough Green** as a Knight.
Thomas de Burgh		1334	Married Margaret Waldegrave and **buried at Burrough Green**.
John de Burgh	1328	1393	Married Mary Grey and then **Catharine Engayne** (died 1409) and **buried at Burrough Green**.
Thomas de Burgh		1411	Married a lady of the Felbrigge family of Norfolk.
Elizabeth de Burgh		1421	Married **Sir John Ingoldesthorpe** (1361-1420) **buried at Burrough Green**.
Thomas Ingoldesthorpe		1422	Married Margaret de la Pole. Possibly buried in France.
Edmund Ingoldesthorpe		1456	Married Joan Tiptoft, aunt of the Earl of Worcester.
Isabel			Married John Neville, Marquis of Montagu.

20th great grandparents John de Burgh & Mary de Grey

A742. In addition to Hunter & Hunter (2001, p2) and Dr Walker (1931, p340, it is Douglas Richardson (2011, p271) who further provides details of Mary de Burgh's (nee de Grey), marriage to Sir John de Burgh:

GREY

HENRY DE BOHUN, Earl of Hereford, married **MAUD DE MANDEVILLE**, Countess of Essex.
HUMPHREY DE BOHUN, Knt., Earl of Hereford and Essex, married **MAUD OF EU**.
ELEANOR DE BOHUN, married **JOHN DE VERDUN**, Knt., of Alton, Staffordshire.
MAUD DE VERDUN, married **JOHN DE GREY**, Knt., 2nd Lord Grey of Wilton [see WILTON 4].

5. ROGER DE GREY, Knt., of Ruthin and Dyffryn-Clwyd, Denbighshire, Wales, Brogborough, Thurleigh, Harrold, Puddington, and Wrest (in Silsoe), Bedfordshire, Over Bletchley, Simpson, and Stoke Hammond, Buckinghamshire, Hemingford Grey, Huntingdonshire, younger son. He married **ELIZABETH DE HASTINGS**, daughter of John de Hastings, Knt., 1st Lord Hastings, by his 1st wife, Isabel, daughter of William de Valence, Knt., Lord (or Earl) of Pembroke [see PEMBROKE 5 for her ancestry]. She was a near kinswoman of King Edward I of England.[176] They had two sons, John, Knt., and Reynold, Knt. [2nd Lord Grey of Ruthin], and four daughters, Juliane, Mary (wife of John de Burgh, Knt.), Joan (wife of William de Pateshulle, Knt.), and Maud (wife of William de la Roche). In 1307 Roger had property in Debden, Essex and the manor of Syweneston, Buckinghamshire settled on him by his father. In 1311 his father settled the reversion of 13

[174] Ancestors of **George, Giles & Robert Brent.**
[175] Ancestors of **Elizabeth Bosvile.**

[176] Elizabeth de Hastings' maternal grandfather, William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, was a younger son of Hugh X de Lusignan, Count of la Marche and Angoulême, by his wife, Isabel of Angoulême (widow of King John of England).

A743. Dr Walker (1931, p340) found in Sir John de Burgh's Will, made in 1384, some three decades after the death of first wife Mary, that near the end of his life, Sir John remembers her:

In 1362 Sir John married Katherine, daughter of John d'Engayn of Quy cum Stow and Teversham, co. Cambs., and of Joan his wife.[3] By her he had three daughters, Elizabeth, Margaret, and Joan.

ENGAYNE.

Gu. a fesse dancettée or between six crosses crosslet of the last.

Sir John de Burgh died in the summer of 1393; in his will, dated 1384, he mentions his first wife Mary. He was buried within an altar tomb in the eastern recess on the north side of the quire of Burgh church near the altar.[4] The knight lies upon a rough bed of boulder-stones, his body half-turned upon the right side, the left leg crossed over the right one; on his head he wears a keel-shaped bascinet, which rests upon his tilting helm; over the camail of mail which covers the sides of the face, the neck, and shoulders, is a collar of SS. He wears a short, tight-fitting, embroidered surcoat; his shield, fastened to the left arm, is suspended by a guige passing over the right shoulder, and a baldric of raised rectangular studs lies across his hips; his gauntleted right hand reaches across his breast to hold a tilting-spear, which has now gone; his legs are encased in mail, and sollerets defend his feet, which are placed upon a lion.

[1] Gough. *Sep. Mon.* I, pt. ii, 220. Hailstone, *Hist. of Bottisham*, 109.
[2] Cole's MS., xviii, f. 63 (Add. MS. 5819).
[3] *Visitation of Cambridge* (Harl. Soc.). Add MS. 4962, f. 15. Ed. Hailstone *History of Bottisham*, 164.
[4] Sir John de Burgh's alabaster effigy, with that of his wife Katherine, lies now upon the middle altar-tomb in Burgh church.

This page is intentionally left blank.

21st great grandparents Roger de Grey & Elizabeth de Hastings

A744. Richardson (2011, p271, Magna Carta Ancestry), succinctly captures the immediate ascending lineage enjoyed by Mary de Burgh, (1330-1361) (nee de Grey).

A745. He records that her mother Elizabeth is the daughter of John de Hastings Knight, 1st Lord of Hastings, by his 1st wife, Isabel, daughter of William de Valance, Knight, Lord (or Earl) of Pembroke, a near kinswomen of King Edward I of England (refer also the foot note below making William de Valence, the son of Isabella of Angoulême by her 2nd husband, Hugh X of Lusignan):

GREY

HENRY DE BOHUN, Earl of Hereford, married **MAUD DE MANDEVILLE**, Countess of Essex.
HUMPHREY DE BOHUN, Knt., Earl of Hereford and Essex, married **MAUD OF EU**.
ELEANOR DE BOHUN, married **JOHN DE VERDUN**, Knt., of Alton, Staffordshire.
MAUD DE VERDUN, married **JOHN DE GREY**, Knt., 2nd Lord Grey of Wilton [see WILTON 4].

5. ROGER DE GREY, Knt., of Ruthin and Dyffryn-Clwyd, Denbighshire, Wales, Brogborough, Thurleigh, Harrold, Puddington, and Wrest (in Silsoe), Bedfordshire, Over Bletchley, Simpson, and Stoke Hammond, Buckinghamshire, Hemingford Grey, Huntingdonshire, younger son. He married **ELIZABETH DE HASTINGS**, daughter of John de Hastings, Knt., 1st Lord Hastings, by his 1st wife, Isabel, daughter of William de Valence, Knt., Lord (or Earl) of Pembroke [see PEMBROKE 5 for her ancestry]. She was a near kinswoman of King Edward I of England.[176] They had two sons, John, Knt., and Reynold, Knt. [2nd Lord Grey of Ruthin], and four daughters, Juliane, Mary (wife of John de Burgh, Knt.), Joan (wife of William de Pateshulle, Knt.), and Maud (wife of William de la Roche). In 1307 Roger had property in Debden, Essex and the manor of Syweneston, Buckinghamshire settled on him by his father. In 1311 his father settled the reversion of 13

[174] Ancestors of **George, Giles & Robert Brent.**
[175] Ancestors of **Elizabeth Bosvile.**

[176] Elizabeth de Hastings' maternal grandfather, William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, was a younger son of Hugh X de Lusignan, Count of la Marche and Angoulême, by his wife, Isabel of Angoulême (widow of King John of England).

A746 From this lineage for Elizabeth de Grey (1296-1352), flows illustrious French and Scottish dynastic bloodlines to Elizabeth's descendants.

A747. Whereby, the research produced by Jonathon Spangler, PhD, University of Oxford, in his 2021, article, "Lost Princes of France: The Courtenay's, from Latin Emperors to Earls of Devon," in Dukes and Princes, History, Heritage and Genealogy about Europe's Highest-Ranking Aristocrats, can be relied for a trustworthy account of the relevance of the present researcher's Courtenay-Dynastic bloodline, and it former exalted position in the line of succession to the French throne until the 17th century.

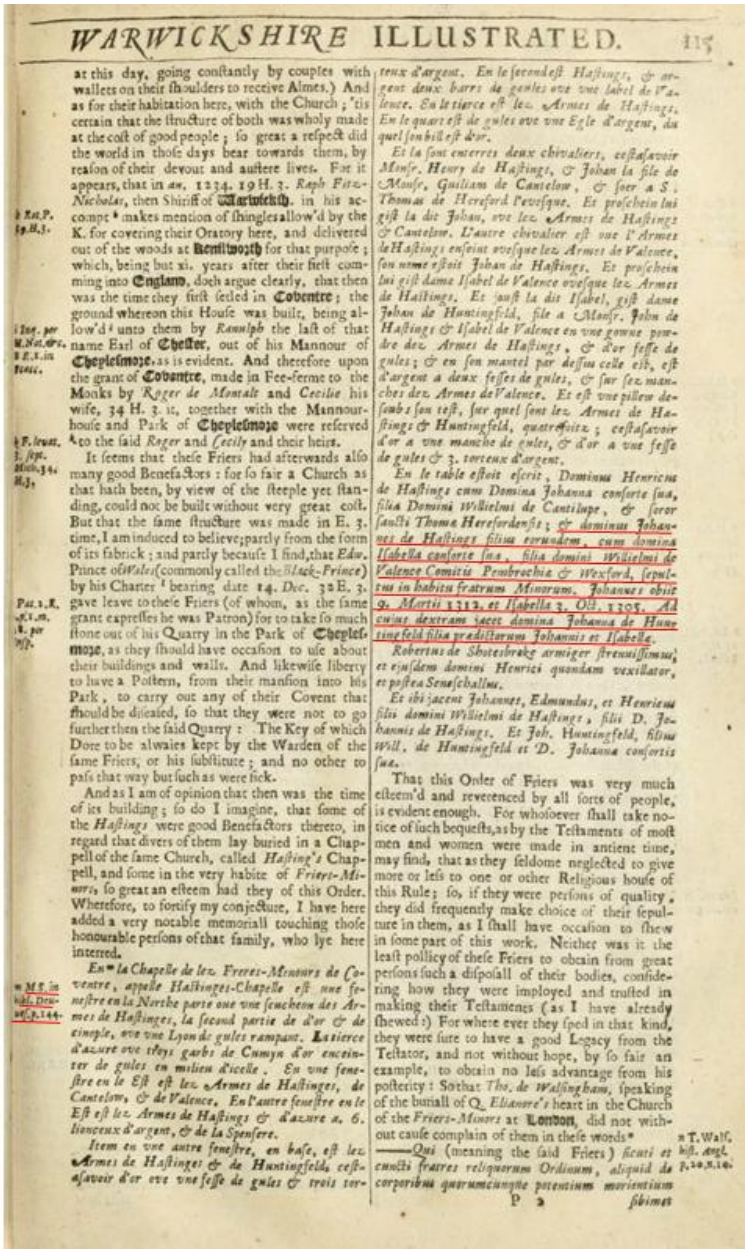
A748. For the purpose of the remainder of this book, Volume II, it is the bloodline of Mary's mother, Elizabeth de Grey (nee de Hastings), which remains the focus for submission of further evidence. The evidence takes the trace to Margaret of Wessex (1045-1093) and Malcolm III of Scotland (1031-1093).

This page is intentionally left blank.

22nd great grandparents John Hastings & Isabel de Valence

A749. It is well documented that Elizabeth's father, John de Hastings (1262-1312) was the first Lord Hastings, in the English Peerage. He was summoned to Parliament by writs directed to Johanni de Hastings, serving in the King's Government from 24th June 1295 to 8th July 1312 (Richardson, D., 2011, pp 327-330, Magna Carta Ancestry 2nd Edition).

A750. It is Sir William Dugdale (1956, p115) who provides evidence of the marriage union between Elizabeth de Grey (nee de Hastings) parents, John de Hastings (1262-1313) and Isabel de Hastings (1266-1305) (nee de Valence):



WARWICKSHIRE ILLUSTRATED. 115

at this day, going constantly by couples with wallets on their ſhoulders to receive Almes.) And as for their habitation here, with the Church; 'tis certain that the ſtructure of both was wholy made at the coſt of good people; ſo great a reſpect did the world in thoſe days bear towards them, by reaſon of their devout and auſtere lives. For it appears, that in an. 1234. 19 H. 3. *Raph Fitz-Nicholas*, then Shiriff of **Warwickſh.** in his accompt [b] makes mention of ſhingles allow'd by the K. for covering their Oratory here, and delivered out of the woods at **Kenilworth** for that purpoſe; which, being but xi. years after their firſt coming into **England**, doth argue clearly, that then was the time they firſt ſetled in **Coventre**; the ground whereon this Houſe was built, being allow'd [c] unto them by *Randph* the laſt of that name Earl of **Cheſter**, out of his Mannour of **Cheppelmoze**, as is evident. And therefore upon the grant of **Coventre**, made in Fee-ferme to the Monks by *Roger de Montalt* and *Cecilia* his wife, 34 H. 3. it, together with the Mannour-houſe and Park of **Cheppelmoze** were reſerved [d] to the ſaid *Roger* and *Cecily* and their heirs.

It ſeems that theſe Friers had afterwards alſo many good Benefactors: for ſo fair a Church as that hath been, by view of the ſteeple yet ſtanding, could not be built without very great coſt. But that the ſame ſtructure was made in E. 3. time, I am induced to believe; partly from the form of its fabrick; and partly becauſe I find, that *Edw.* Prince of *Wales* (commonly called the *Black-Prince*) by his Charter [e] bearing date 14. *Dec.* 32 E. 3. gave leave to theſe Friers (of whom, as the ſame grant expreſſes he was Patron) for to take ſo much ſtone out of his Quarry in the Park of **Cheppelmoze**, as they ſhould have occaſion to uſe about their buildings and walls. And likewiſe liberty to have a Poſtern, from their manſion into his Park, to carry out any of their Covent that ſhould be diſeaſed, ſo that they were not to go further then the ſaid Quarry: The Key of which Dore to be alwaies kept by the Warden of the ſame Friers, or his ſubſtitute; and no other to paſs that way but ſuch as were ſick.

And as I am of opinion that then was the time of its building; ſo do I imagine, that ſome of the *Haſtings* were good Benefactors thereto, in regard that divers of them lay buried in a Chappell of the ſame Church, called *Haſting's* Chappell, and ſome in the very habite of *Friers-Minors*, ſo great an eſteem had they of this Order. Wherefore, to fortify my conjecture, I have here added a very notable memoriall touching thoſe honourable perſons of that family, who lye here interred.

En [m] *la Chapelle de les Freres-Menours de Coventre, appelle Haſtinges-Chapelle eſt une feneſtre en la Northe parte ove vne ſeuchevn des Armes de Haſtinges, la ſecond partie de d'or & de ſinople, ove vne Lyon de gules rampant. La tierce d'azure ove treys garbs de Cumyn d'or encein-ter de gules en milieu d'icelle. En vne feneſtre en le Eſt eſt les Armes de Haſtinges, de Cantelow, & de Valence. En l'autre feneſtre en le Eſt eſt les Armes de Haſtings & d'azure a. 6. lioncevx d'argent, & de La Spenſere.*

Item en vne autre feneſtre, en baſe, eſt les Armes de Haſtinges & de Huntingfelds ceſtaſavoir d'or ove vne feſſe de gules & trois torteux d'argent. En le ſecond eſt Haſtings, & argent deux barrs de gules ove vne label de Valence. En le tierce eſt les Armes de Haſtings. En le quart eſt de gules ove vne Egle d'argent, da quel ſon bill eſt d'or.

Et la ſont enterres deux chivaliers, ceſtaſavoir Monſr. Henry de Haſtings, & Johan la file de Monſr. Guiliam de Cantelow, & ſoer a S. Thomas de Hereford l'evoſque. Et proſchein lui giſt la dit Johan, ove les Armes de Haſtings & Cantelow. L'autre chivalier eſt vne l'Armes de Haſtings enſeint vne ſque les Armes de Valence, ſon nome eſtoit Johan de Haſtings. Et proſchein lui giſt dame Iſabel de Valence vne ſque les Armes de Haſtings. Et ioust la dit Iſabel, giſt dame Johan de Huntingfeld, file a Monſr. John de Haſtings & Iſabel de Valence en vne gowne pourdre des Armes de Haſtings, & d'or feſſe de gules; & en ſon mantel par deſſus celle eſt, eſt d'argent a deux feſſes de gules, & ſur les manches des Armes de Valence. Et eſt vne pillow deſſoubs ſon teſt, ſur quel ſont les Armes de Haſtings & Huntingfeld, quatrefoitz; ceſtaſavoir d'or a vne manche de gules, & d'or a vne feſſe de gules & 3. torteux d'argent.

En le table eſtoit eſcrit, Dominus Henricus de Haſtings cum Domina Johanna conſorte ſua, filia Domini Willielmi de Cantilupe, & ſoror ſanctæ Thomæ Herefordenſis; & dominus Johannes de Haſtings filius eorundem, cum domina Iſabella conſorte ſua, filia domini Willielmi de Valence Comitis Pembrochiæ & Wexford, ſepultus in habitu fratrum Minorum. Johannes obiit 9. Martii 1313. et Iſabella 3. Oct. 1305. Ad cujus dextram jacet domina Johanna de Huntingfeld filia prædictorum Johannis et Iſabellæ.

Robertus de Shotesbroke armiger ſtrenuiſſimus, et ejuſdem domini Henrici quondam vexillator, et poſtea Seneſchallus.

Et ibi jacent Johannes, Edmundus, et Henricus filii domini Willielmi de Haſtings, filii D. Johannis de Haſtings. Et Joh. Huntingfeld, filius Will. de Huntingfeld et D. Johanna conſortis ſuæ.

That this Order of Friers was very much eſteem'd and reverenced by all ſorts of people, is evident enough. For whoſoever ſhall take notice of ſuch bequeſts, as by the Teſtaments of moſt men and women were made in antient time, may find, that as they ſeldome neglected to give more or leſs to one or other Religious houſe of this Rule; ſo, if they were perſons of quality, they did frequently make choice of their ſepulture in them, as I ſhall have occaſion to ſhew in ſome part of this work. Neither was it the leaſt pollicy of theſe Friers to obtain from great perſons ſuch a diſpoſall of their bodies, conſidering how they were imployed and truſted in making their Teſtamenes (as I have already ſhewed:) For where ever they ſped in that kind, they were ſure to have a good Legacy from the Teſtator, and not without hope, by ſo fair an example, to obtain no leſs advantage from his poſterity: So that *Tho. de Walſingham*, ſpeaking of the buriall of Q. *Elianore's* heart in the Church of the *Friers-Minors* at **London**, did not without cauſe complain of them in theſe words* [n]

——*Qui* (meaning the ſaid Friers) *ſicuti et cunctis fratres reliquorum Ordinum, aliquid de corporibus quorumcunque potentium morientium*

[n] T. Walſ. hiſt. Angl. p. 208. 10.

P 2 *ſibimet*

A751. John Hastings, Elizabeth's father, married twice. First to Elizabeth's mother, Isabel de Valence (Burke, 1848, p539), daughter of William de Valence, 1st Earl of Pembroke and they had the following children:

- William de Hastings (1282–1311), eldest son and heir apparent, who predeceased his father.
- John de Hastings, 2nd Baron Hastings (1286-1325), eldest surviving son and heir, who married Juliane de Leybourne (d.1367) by whom he was the father of Lawrence Hastings, 1st Earl of Pembroke.
- Joan de Hastings (d.1307), who married William de Huntingfield (c.1280-1313) of Huntingfield, Suffolk. Like her parents and paternal grandparents (Dugdale, William, Antiquities of Warwickshire, 1666 edition, p.115), she was buried in the Hastings Chapel of the Greyfriars, Coventry (Douglas Richardson Carta Ancestry: A Study in Colonial and Medieval Families, 2nd Edition, p41). Her grandson was William de Huntingfield, 1st Baron Huntingfield (1329–1376).
- **Elizabeth de Hastings who married Roger de Grey,** 1st Baron Grey de Ruthyn (Burke, 1848, p539; Pine, L. G., 1972, p136, The New Extinct Peerage 1884-1971: Containing Extinct, Abeyant, Dormant and Suspended Peerages with Genealogies and Arms), the researcher's 21st great grandparents.

A752. Sir John de Hastings is more formally known as John Hastings, 1st Baron Hastings (6 May 1262 – 28 February 1313), feudal Lord of Abergavenny.

A753. He was an English peer and soldier and one of the Competitors for the Crown of Scotland, in 1290/92 in the Great Cause and signed and sealed the Barons' Letter of 1301.

A754. Sir John de Hastings was Lord of the Manor of Hunningham (Hunningham, in A History of the County of Warwick: Vol. 6, Knightlow Hundred, ed. L F Salzman, London, 1951, pp 117-120).

A755. John Hastings, is further well settled a descendent of Malcolm III and Margaret of Wessex, and other Kings of Scotland (Sir Bernard Burke & Ashworth P Burke, 1914, pp 42-44, Kings of Scotland, Burke's Genealogical and Heraldic History of Peerage, Baronetage and Knightage).

A756. John Hastings and wife Isabel de Valence are made by the evidence, calculated to be the researcher's John L.R. Guest's (1960-) 22nd great grandparents. Thereby making them, Robert John Guest's (1982-) 23rd great-grandparents, and his sons, Harris Robert Guest (2018-) and Levi John Guest's (2020-) 24th great grandparents.

A757. The chart submitted below and extending across several pages is best examined by starting at the foot of Burke & Burke's 1914, p44, Royal Lineage. Whereby it is shown starting from the bottom of the page and reading up, that the researcher's 22nd great grandfather, John Hastings, 1st Baron Hastings (6 May 1262 – 28 February 1313) is the son of Sir Henry Hastings of Ashill, Norfolk, who in turn is the son of Ada Huntingdon and Henry Hastings the elder: Scotland (Sir Bernard Burke & Ashworth P Burke, 1914, pp 42-44, Royal Lineage):

Comyn, and their descendant, John Comyn, known as *the Black Comyn*, was one of the competitors for the Scottish crown in 1291. Donald Bane was *s.* by

EDGAR, *b.* 1074, son of MALCOLM III., reigned from 1097 to 1107, *d.* unm. 8 Jan. 1106-7, and was *s.* by his brother,

ALEXANDER I., *b.* 1077. While Alexander reigned over Scotland, north of the Forth and Clyde, his brother DAVID, who had been trained in England, and was Earl of Northumberland, ruled with the title of Earl in Lothian and Cumbria. Alexander *m.* Sybilla, natural dau. of HENRY I. of England. She *d. s. p.* 12 July, 1122. ALEXANDER *d.* at Stirling, 23 April, 1124, and was *s.* by his youngest brother,

DAVID I., called *the Saint*, *b.* about 1080, *m.* about 1114 Matilda, widow of Simon de Senlis or St. Liz, and dau. and heir of Waltheof, Earl of Huntingdon, and by her had issue,

1. Malcolm, strangled when a child by his great uncle Donald Bane.
2. HENRY, Earl of Huntingdon, who *d. v. p.* 12 June, 1152, having *m.* 1139, Adeline, who *d.* 1178, dau. of William de Warenne, Earl of Surrey, by whom he had three sons and three daus.,
   1. MALCOLM, who *s.* his grandfather.
   2. WILLIAM The Lion, afterwards King of Scotland.
   3. DAVID, Earl of Huntingdon in England, *m.* 26 Aug. 1190, Maud, dau. and in her issue co-heir of Hugh de Kevilloc, Earl of Chester, and *d.* 17 June, 1219, having had three sons and four daus.,
      (1) Robert } both *d. v. p.* unm.
      (2) Henry }
      (3) JOHN, called *The Scot*, Earl of Chester and Huntingdon, *d. s. p.* 5 June, 1237.
      (1) MARGARET, *m.* 1209, Alan, Lord of Galloway, who *d.* 1234, and had two daus.,
         1a. Christian, *m.* 1236, William de Fortibus, *Earl of Albemarle*, but *d. s. p.* 1245-6.
         2a. Devorgulla, *m.* 1233, JOHN BALIOL, who *d.* 1269. She *d.* 28 Jan. 1289-90, having by him had issue,
            1b. Hugh (Sir) of Barnard Castle, *d. s. p.* before 10 April, 1271.
            2b. Alan, of Barnard Castle, *d. s. p.*
            3b. Alexander (Sir) of Barnard Castle, *d. s. p.* before 13 Nov. 1278.
            4b. JOHN BALIOL, the successful competitor for the crown in 1292.
            1b. Cecilia, *d.* unm.
            2b. Ada, *m.* 1266, William Lindsay, of Lambarton.
            3b. Alianora, *m.* John COMYN, of Badenoch.
      (2) ISOBEL, *m.* Robert de Brus, Lord of Annandale, and by him who *d.* 1245, had with a dau. Beatrice, *m.* Hugo de Neville, an only son,
         ROBERT BRUCE, Lord of Annandale, the competitor for the Crown in 1291-92. He *m.* Isabel, dau. of Gilbert de Clare, 3rd Earl of Gloucester and Hereford, and *d.* before 3 May, 1294, having had issue,
            1b. Robert Bruce, Lord of Annandale, *m.* 1271, Margaret, widow of Adam de Kilconcath or Kilconquhar and dau. and heir of Neil, 2nd *Earl of Carrick*, in whose right he became Earl of Carrick. By her who *d.* 1292, he had issue,
               1c. ROBERT, eventually KING OF SCOTLAND.
               2c. EDWARD, had the Earldom of Carrick conferred on him by his brother, was crowned KING OF IRELAND, 2 May, 1316, and killed at the battle of Dundalk, 14 Oct. 1318 *s.p.l.*
               3c. Thomas, and 4c. Alexander, executed at Carlisle, 9 Feb. 1306-7.
               5c. Nigel, beheaded Sept. 1306.
               1c. Isabel, *m.* before 25 Sept. 1293, Eric II, King of Norway, son of Magnus VI.
               2c. Mary, *m.* 1st, Sir Neil Campbell, of Lochow; 2ndly, Sir Alexander Fraser, Lord Chamberlain of Scotland.
               3c. Christian, *m.* 1st, Gratney, Earl of Mar; 2ndly, Sir Christopher Seton; 3rdly, Sir Andrew Moray, of Bothwell.
               4c. Matilda, *m.* Hugh, Earl of Ross.
               5c. Margaret, *m.* Sir William de Carlyle.
            2b. William, *m.* Elizabeth, dau. and heir of Raymond de Sully.
            3b. Bernard (Sir), of Conington and Exton, co. Rutland, *m.* 1st, Alicia de Clare and 2ndly, Constance de Morleyn. His son Sir John Bruce, of Exton, left an only dau. and heir, Jane, *m.* Sir Nicholas Green.
            4b. Richard, *d.* before 26 Jan. 1286-7, *v.p.*
      (3) Matilda, *d.* unm.
      (4) Ada, *m.* Henry de Hastings, and was mother of Sir Henry Hastings, of Ashill, Norfolk, whose son John, 1st Baron Hastings, was one of the competitors for the Crown in 1291 (see HASTINGS, B.).
   1. Ada, *m.* 1161, Florent, Count of Holland, whose descendant, Florent, Count of Holland, was a competitor for the Crown in 1291-92.
   2. Margaret, *m.* 1st, 1160, Conan de Bretagne, Earl of Richmond, who *d.* 20 Feb. 1170-1, leaving an only dau., Constance, wife of Geoffrey, son of HENRY II. of England. Margaret *m.* 2ndly, Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford.
   3. Matilda, *d.* young, 1152.
1. Claricia, *d.* unm.
2. Hodierna, *d.* unm.

DAVID I. *d.* 24 May, 1153, and was *s.* by his grandson,

MALCOLM, called *The Maiden*, *b.* 20 March, 1141-2, *d.* unm. 9 Dec. 1165, and buried at Dunfermline. He was *s.* by his brother,

WILLIAM, known as *The Lion*, *b.* about 1143, enthroned at Scone, 24 Dec. 1165, *m.* 5 Sept. 1186, Ermengarde (who *d.* 11 Feb. 1233-4), dau. of Richard Viscount of Bellomont, and had one son and three daus.,

1. ALEXANDER, *s.* his father as ALEXANDER II.
1. Margaret, *m.* 1221, Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, Justiciary of England, and afterwards of Ireland. She *d. s. p. s.* 1295.
2. Isabel, *m.* 1225, Roger Bigod, Earl of Norfolk, who *d. s. p.* 4 July, 1270.
3. Marjory, *m.* 1 Aug. 1235, Gilbert, Earl of Pembroke. He *d.* after 27 June, 1241. She *d. s. p.* 17 Nov. 1244.

A758. Next ascending, the examiner's attention is drawn to an arrow pointing higher to Ada Huntingdon's parents, Prince Henry of Scotland and wife Ada de Warenne, daughter of William de Warenne II (Ibid, Burke & Burke, 1914, pp 42-44):

44 THE ROYAL LINEAGE.

Comyn, and their descendant, John Comyn, known as *the Black Comyn*, was one of the competitors for the Scottish crown in 1291. Donald Bane was *s.* by

EDGAR, *b.* 1074, son of MALCOLM III., reigned from 1097 to 1107, *d.* unm. 8 Jan. 1106-7, and was *s.* by his brother,

ALEXANDER I., *b.* 1077. While Alexander reigned over Scotland, north of the Forth and Clyde, his brother DAVID, who had been trained in England, and was Earl of Northumberland, ruled with the title of Earl in Lothian and Cumbria. Alexander *m.* Sybilla, natural dau. of HENRY I. of England. She *d. s. p.* 12 July, 1122. ALEXANDER *d.* at Stirling, 23 April, 1124, and was *s.* by his youngest brother,

DAVID I., called *the Saint*, *b.* about 1080, *m.* about 1114, Matilda, widow of Simon de Senlis or St. LIZ, and dau. and heir of Waltheof, Earl of Huntingdon, and by her had issue,

1. Malcolm, strangled when a child by his great uncle Donald Bane.
2. HENRY, Earl of Huntingdon, who *d. v. p.* 12 June, 1152, having *m.* 1139, Adeline, who *d.* 1178, dau. of William de Warenne, Earl of Surrey, by whom he had three sons and three daus.,
   1. MALCOLM, who *s.* his grandfather.
   2. WILLIAM The Lion, afterwards King of Scotland.
   3. DAVID, Earl of Huntingdon in England, *m.* 26 Aug. 1190, Maud, dau. and in her issue co-heir of Hugh de Kevilioc, Earl of Chester, and *d.* 17 June, 1219, having had three sons and four daus.,
      (1) Robert } both *d. v. p.* unm.
      (2) Henry }
      (3) JOHN, called *The Scot*, Earl of Chester and Huntingdon, *d. s. p.* 5 June, 1237.
      (1) MARGARET, *m.* 1209, Alan, Lord of Galloway, who *d.* 1234, and had two daus.,
         1a. Christian, *m.* 1236, William de Fortibus, *Earl of Albemarle*, but *d. s. p.* 1245-6.
         2a. Devorgulla, *m.* 1233, JOHN BALIOL, who *d.* 1269. She *d.* 28 Jan. 1289-90, having by him had issue,
            1b. Hugh (Sir) of Barnard Castle, *d. s. p.* before 10 April, 1271.
            2b. Alan, of Barnard Castle, *d. s. p.*
            3b. Alexander (Sir) of Barnard Castle, *d. s. p.* before 13 Nov. 1278.
            4b. JOHN BALIOL, the successful competitor for the crown in 1292.
            1b. Cecilia, *d.* unm.
            2b. Ada, *m.* 1266, William Lindsay, of Lauhariton.
            3b. Alianora, *m.* John Comyn, of Badenoch.
      (2) ISOBEL, *m.* Robert de Brus, Lord of Annandale, and by him who *d.* 1245, had with a dau. Beatrice, *m.* Hugo de Neville, an only son,
         ROBERT BRUCE, Lord of Annandale, the competitor for the Crown in 1291-92. He *m.* Isabel, dau. of Gilbert de Clare, 3rd Earl of Gloucester and Hereford, and *d.* before 3 May, 1294, having had issue,
            1b. Robert Bruce, Lord of Annandale, *m.* 1271, Margaret, widow of Adam de Kilconcath or Kilconquhar and dau. and heir of Neil, 2nd *Earl of Carrick*, in whose right he became Earl of Carrick. By her who *d.* 1292, he had issue,
               1c. ROBERT, eventually KING OF SCOTLAND.
               2c. EDWARD, had the Earldom of Carrick conferred on him by his brother, was crowned KING OF IRELAND, 2 May, 1316, and killed at the battle of Dundalk, 14 Oct. 1318 *s.p.*
               3c. Thomas, and 4c. Alexander, executed at Carlisle, 9 Feb. 1306-7.
               5c. Nigel, beheaded Sept. 1306
               1c. Isabel, *m.* before 25 Sept. 1293, Eric II, King of Norway, son of Magnus VI.
               2c. Mary, *m.* 1st, Sir Neil Campbell, of Lochow; 2ndly, Sir Alexander Fraser, Lord Chamberlain of Scotland.
               3c. Christian, *m.* 1st, Gratney, Earl of Mar; 2ndly, Sir Christopher Seton; 3rdly, Sir Andrew Moray, of Bothwell.
               4c. Matilda, *m.* Hugh, Earl of Ross.
               5c. Margaret, *m.* Sir William de Carlyle.
            2b. William, *m.* Elizabeth, dau. and heir of Raymond de Sully.
            3b. Bernard (Sir), of Conington and Exton, co. Rutland, *m.* 1st, Alicia de Clare and 2ndly, Constance de Merleyn. His son Sir John Bruce, of Exton, left an only dau. and heir, Jane, *m.* Sir Nicholas Green.
            4b. Richard, *d.* before 26 Jan. 1286-7, *s. p.*
      (3) Matilda, *d.* unm.
      (4) Ada, *m.* Henry de Hastings, and was mother of Sir Henry Hastings, of Ashill, Norfolk, whose son John, 1st Baron Hastings, was one of the competitors for the Crown in 1291 (see HASTINGS, B.).
   1. Ada, *m.* 1161, Florent, Count of Holland, whose descendant, Florent, Count of Holland, was a competitor for the Crown in 1291-92.
   2. Margaret, *m.* 1st, 1160, Conan de Bretagne, Earl of Richmond, who *d.* 20 Feb. 1170-1, leaving an only dau., Constance, wife of Geoffrey, son of HENRY II. of England. Margaret *m.* 2ndly, Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford.
   3. Matilda, *d.* young, 1152.
3. Claricia, *d.* unm.
4. Hodierna, *d.* unm.

DAVID I. *d.* 24 May, 1153. and was *s.* by his grandson,

MALCOLM, called *The Maiden*, *b.* 20 March, 1141-2, *d.* unm. 9 Dec. 1165, and buried at Dunfermline. He was *s.* by his brother,

WILLIAM, known as *The Lion*, *b.* about 1143, enthroned at Scone, 24 Dec. 1165, *m.* 5 Sept. 1186, Ermengarde (who *d.* 11 Feb. 1233-4), dau. of Richard Viscount of Bellomont, and had one son and three daus.,

1. ALEXANDER, *s.* his father as ALEXANDER II.
1. Margaret, *m.* 1221, Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, Justiciary of England, and afterwards of Ireland. She *d. s. p. s.* 1295.
2. Isabel, *m.* 1225, Roger Bigod, Earl of Norfolk, who *d. s. p.* 4 July, 1270.
3. Marjory, *m.* 1 Aug. 1235, Gilbert, Earl of Pembroke. He *d.* after 17 June, 1241. She *d. s. p.* 17 Nov. 1244.

A759. Prince Henry is further shown near the top of Burke & Burke's 1914, p44 research to be the son of King David I of Scotland:

44 THE ROYAL LINEAGE.

Comyn, and their descendant, John Comyn, known as *the Black Comyn*, was one of the competitors for the Scottish crown in 1291. Donald Bane was *s.* by

EDGAR, *b.* 1074, son of MALCOLM III., reigned from 1097 to 1107, *d.* *sans.* 8 Jan. 1106-7, and was *s.* by his brother,

ALEXANDER I., *b.* 1077. While Alexander reigned over Scotland, north of the Forth and Clyde, his brother DAVID, who had been trained in England, and was Earl of Northumberland, ruled with the title of Earl in Lothian and Cumbria. Alexander *m.* Sybilla, natural dau. of HENRY I. of England. She *d. s. p.* 12 July, 1122. ALEXANDER *d.* at Stirling, 23 April, 1124, and was *s.* by his youngest brother,

DAVID I., called *the Saint*, *b.* about 1080, *m.* about 1114, Matilda, widow of Simon de Senlis or St. Liz, and dau. and heir of Waltheof, Earl of Huntingdon, and by her had issue,

1. Malcolm, strangled when a child by his great uncle Donald Bane.
2. HENRY, Earl of Huntingdon, who *d. s. p.* 12 June, 1152, having *m.* 1139, Adeline, who *d.* 1178, dau. of William de Warenne, Earl of Surrey, by whom he had three sons and three daus.,
   1. MALCOLM, who *s.* his grandfather.
   2. WILLIAM The Lion, afterwards King of Scotland.
   3. DAVID, Earl of Huntingdon in England, *m.* 26 Aug. 1190, Maud, dau. and in her issue co-heir of Hugh de Kevilioc, Earl of Chester, and *d.* 17 June, 1219, having had three sons and four daus.,
      (1) Robert } both *d. s. p.* *sans.*
      (2) Henry }
      (3) JOHN, called *The first*, Earl of Chester and Huntingdon, *d. s. p.* 5 June, 1237.
      (1) MARGARET, *m.* 1209, Alan, Lord of Galloway, who *d.* 1234, and had two daus.,
         1a. Christian, *m.* 1236, William de Fortibus, *Earl of Albemarle*, but *d. s. p.* 1245-6.
         2a. Devorgulla, *m.* 1233, JOHN BALIOL, who *d.* 1269. She *d.* 28 Jan. 1289-90, having by him had issue,
            1b. Hugh (Sir) of Barnard Castle, *d. s. p.* before 10 April, 1271.
            2b. Alan, of Barnard Castle, *d. s. p.*
            3b. Alexander (Sir) of Barnard Castle, *d. s. p.* before 13 Nov. 1278.
            4b. JOHN BALIOL, the successful competitor for the crown in 1292.
            1b. Cecilia, *d.* *sans.*
            2b. Ada, *m.* 1266, William Lindsay, of Lamberton.
            3b. Alianora, *m.* John Comyn, of Badenoch.
      (2) ISOBEL, *m.* Robert de Brus, Lord of Annandale, and by him who *d.* 1245, had with a dau. Beatrice, *m.* Hugo de Neville, an only son,
         ROBERT BRUCE, Lord of Annandale, the competitor for the Crown in 1291-92. He *m.* Isabel, dau. of Gilbert de Clare, 3rd Earl of Gloucester and Hereford, and *d.* before 3 May, 1294, having had issue,
            1b. Robert Bruce, Lord of Annandale, *m.* 1271, Margaret, widow of Adam de Kilconcath or Kilconquhar and dau. and heir of Neil, 2nd *Earl of Carrick*, in whose right he became Earl of Carrick. By her who *d.* 1292, he had issue,
               1c. ROBERT, eventually KING OF SCOTLAND.
               2c. EDWARD, had the Earldom of Carrick conferred on him by his brother, was crowned KING OF IRELAND, 2 May, 1316, and killed at the battle of Dundalk, 14 Oct. 1318 *s.p.l.*
               3c. Thomas, and 4c. Alexander, executed at Carlisle, 9 Feb. 1306-7.
               5c. Nigel, beheaded Sept. 1306.
               1c. Isabel, *m.* before 25 Sept. 1293, Eric II, King of Norway, son of Magnus VI.
               2c. Mary, *m.* 1st, Sir Neil Campbell, of Lochow; 2ndly, Sir Alexander Fraser, Lord Chamberlain of Scotland.
               3c. Christian, *m.* 1st, Gratney, Earl of Mar; 2ndly, Sir Christopher Seton; 3rdly, Sir Andrew Moray, of Bothwell.
               4c. Matilda, *m.* Hugh, Earl of Ross.
               5c. Margaret, *m.* Sir William de Carlyle.
            2b. William, *m.* Elizabeth, dau. and heir of Raymond de Sully.
            3b. Bernard (Sir), of Conington and Exton, co. Rutland, *m.* 1st, Alicia de Clare and 2ndly, Constance de Merleyn. His son Sir John Bruce, of Exton, left an only dau. and heir, Jane, *m.* Sir Nicholas Green.
            4b. Richard, *d.* before 26 Jan. 1286-7, *v.p.*
      (3) Matilda, *d.* *sans.*
      (4) Ada, *m.* Henry de Hastings, and was mother of Sir Henry Hastings, of Ashill, Norfolk, whose son John, 1st Baron Hastings, was one of the competitors for the Crown in 1291 (see HASTINGS, B.).
   1. Ada, *m.* 1161, Florent, Count of Holland, whose descendant, Florent, Count of Holland, was a competitor for the Crown in 1291-92.
   2. Margaret, *m.* 1st, 1160, Conan de Bretagne, Earl of Richmond, who *d.* 20 Feb. 1170-1, leaving an only dau., Constance, wife of Geoffrey, son of HENRY II. of England. Margaret *m.* 2ndly, Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford.
   3. Matilda, *d.* young, 1152.
1. Claricia, *d.* *sans.*
2. Hodierna, *d.* *sans.*

DAVID I. *d.* 24 May, 1153. and was *s.* by his grandson,

MALCOLM, called *The Maiden*, *b.* 20 March, 1141-2, *d.* *sans.* 9 Dec. 1165, and buried at Dunfermline. He was *s.* by his brother,

WILLIAM, known as *The Lion*, *b.* about 1143, enthroned at Scone, 24 Dec. 1165, *m.* 5 Sept. 1186, Ermengarde (who *d.* 11 Feb. 1233-4), dau. of Richard Viscount of Bellomont, and had one son and three daus.,

1. ALEXANDER, *s.* his father as ALEXANDER II.
1. Margaret, *m.* 1221, Hubert de Burgh, Earl of Kent, Justiciary of England, and afterwards of Ireland. She *d. s. p. s.* 1293.
2. Isabel, *m.* 1225, Roger Bigod, Earl of Norfolk, who *d. s. p.* 4 July, 1270.
3. Marjory, *m.* 1 Aug. 1235, Gilbert, Earl of Pembroke. He *d.* after 27 June, 1241. She *d. s. p.* 17 Nov. 1244.

A760. The ascending trace continues on Burke & Burke's 1914, p43 submitted below and found ascending from the marking at the bottom of their page 43 confirming King David I is the son of Queen Margaret of Scotland (a.k.a., Margaret of Wessex), daughter of Edward Ætheling; and King Malcolm III of Scotland. The trace ascends further taking the examiners to Malcolm III's apex lineal ancestor, King Donald II at the very top of the extracted page 43:

DONALD II., son of Constantine I., reigned from 889 to 900. He was slain in a Danish invasion, and was *s.* by

CONSTANTINE II., son of Aedh, who reigned 42 years, 900 to 942, and, harassed by the ravages of the Northmen, retired, in 942, to the Monastery of St. Andrews. His successor,

MALCOLM I., son of Donald II., reigned from 942 to 954. His cousin,

INDULPH, son of Constantine II., reigned from 954 to 962. His cousin,

DUBH, son of Malcolm I., reigned from 962 to 967. His cousin,

CUILEAN, son of Indulph, reigned from 967 to 971. His cousin,

KENNETH II., son of Malcolm I., reigned from 971 to 995. His cousin,

CONSTANTINE III., son of Cuilean, reigned from 995 to 997. His cousin,

KENNETH III., son of Dubh, reigned from 997 to 1005, and was slain at Monzievaird about 25 March, 1005, by his cousin,

MALCOLM II., son of Kenneth II., who reigned 1005 to 1034. He *d.* 25 Nov. 1034, having had three daus.,

1. Bethoc, *m.* about 1000, Crinan, the Thane, Lay Abbot of Dunkeld, who was slain 1045, leaving issue,
   1. Duncan, afterwards Duncan I.
   2. Maldred, *m.* Edith, dau. of Uchtred, Earl of Northumberland, and was father of Gospatric, Earl of Northumberland.
   1. A dau., who was mother of Moddan.
2. Donada, *m.* Finlaec, Mormaer of Moray, and had a son,
   Macbeth, King of Scots.
3. Another dau. *m.* Sigurd, Earl of Orkney, and had issue.

His grandson and successor,

DUNCAN I., son of Crinan, Lay Abbot of Dunkeld, and Bethoc his wife, dau. of Malcolm II. He reigned 1034-1040. He *m.* a cousin of Siward, Earl of Northumberland, and had three sons, Malcolm III., Donald Bane, and Melmare. In his reign the north and west of Scotland were conquered by the Northmen, under Thorfinn. His cousin, Macbeth, Mormaer of Moray, joining his fortunes to those of the invader, put Duncan to death 14 Aug. 1040, and ascended the throne.

MACBETH, son of Finlaec, Mormaer of Moray, reigned from 1040 to 1057; *m.* Gruoch, widow of Gillacomgan and dau. of Bode, son of Kenneth III. His kingdom seems to have been confined to the country south and west of the Tay, Thorfinn ruling over the rest. He was slain by Malcolm, son of Duncan I., at Lumphanan, 15 Aug. 1057, *s.p.* His stepson and successor,

LULACH, son of Gillacomgan, Mormaer of Moray, and Gruoch his wife, dau. of Bode, son of Kenneth III., was made king by Macbeth's party, and after reigning seven months, was slain at Essie, in Strathbogie, 17 March, 1057-8. He had a son, Malsnechtai, and also a dau., whose son, Angus, succeeding to the Earldom of Moray, was associated with Malcolm, natural son of Alexander I., in an insurrection against David I., but was defeated and slain in 1130.

MALCOLM III., known as *Canmor, or Great Head*, *b.* about 1031, eldest son of Duncan I., ascended the throne, 17 March, 1057-8. Under him, the provinces acquired by Thorfinn, fell again under native rule. He *m.* 1st, about 1059, Ingibjorg, dau. or widow of Thorfinn, Earl of Orkney, by whom he had issue,

1. Duncan II.
2. Malcolm, living 1094.
3. Donald, *d.* 1085.

He *m.* 2ndly, in 1068-9, Margaret, dau. of Edward Atheling and sister of Edgar Atheling, who had fled to Scotland with his sisters, and by her (who *d.* 16 Nov. 1093) had six sons and two daus., viz.:

4. Edward, wounded with his father at Alnwick, *d.* 16 Nov. 1093.
5. Edmund, mentioned hereafter, *d.* a monk.
6. Ethelred, Lay Abbot of Dunkeld, *d.* before 1097.
7. Edgar,
8. Alexander,
9. David,

   } successively Kings of Scotland.

1. Eadgith, otherwise Matilda, *m.* 11 Nov. 1100, Henry I. of England, and *d.* 1 May, 1118, leaving issue.
2. Mary, *m.* 1101, Eustace, Count of Boulogne, and *d.* 31 May, 1116, leaving issue.

Malcolm was slain at Alnwick, 13 Nov. 1093, and buried at Tynemouth. His brother,

DONALD BANE became King of Scots, 13 Nov. 1093, but was deposed May, 1094, by his nephew,

DUNCAN II., *b.* 1060, son of Malcolm III., by his first wife. He *m.* about 1090, Ethelreda, dau. of Gospatrick, Earl of Northumberland, and had by her a son, Duncan, father of William, whose son, William of Egremont, *d.* under age. Duncan II., after reigning six months, was slain 12 Nov. 1094, when

DONALD BANE resumed the throne, 12 Nov. 1094, his nephew, Edmund, son of Malcolm III. and Margaret, his wife, being conjoined with him. In 1097, through means of Edgar Atheling, Donald was defeated and expelled from Scotland, Edmund imprisoned, and the throne assumed by Edgar, another son of Malcolm III. Donald Bane's granddau. and heiress, Hextilda, *m.* Richard

A761. The earliest credible record of his lineage ends with his lineal ancestor, Kenneth I, also called MacAlpin:

KINGS OF SCOTLAND.

WITH all the light that the researches of Celtic scholars and historical antiquaries have lately thrown on the early history of Scotland, some obscurity still hangs over the succession of the kings of the Picts and Dalriadic Scots; our sketch of the Royal Line will, therefore, begin with the union of Picts and Scots, under a King of Scottish race in 850. By the Celtic principle of "tanistry," which prevailed in Scotland nearly to the end of the eleventh century, the succession, hereditary in a particular family, was elective among the members of that family, a preference being given to the oldest and worthiest.

→ **KENNETH I.** (called *MacAlpin*), reigned from 844 to 859.

DONALD I., his brother, reigned from 859 to 863.

CONSTANTINE I., son of KENNETH I., reigned from 863 to 877. He fell in a battle with the Danes, and was *s.* by his brother,

AEDH, who reigned but one year, 877-8, and is said to have been "slain by his people." His successor was

EOCHA, son of RUN, KING OF STRATHCLYDE, by the daughter of KENNETH I. He reigned 878 to 889; CIRIC or GRIG, son of DUNGAIL, being associated with him. Their successor,

A762. Suffice to say from the evidence submitted, only a sketch of the lineage beyond John Hastings, 1st Baron Hastings (1262-1313) is required to account further for the researcher's blood tie to Edgar Ætheling (1051-1125/6), brother of Margaret of Wessex (1045-1093).

This page is intentionally left blank.

23rd great grandparents Henry de Hastings & Joan Cantilupe

A763. Dr Melissa Julian-Jones, a contemporary expert on the united Hastings-Cantilupe family, in her 2015, PhD Thesis on de Cantilupe and Corbet families (Cardiff University), confirms from the evidence that John Hastings is the husband of Isabel de Valence and he is the son of Henry Hastings (c1225-1268) and Joan Cantilupe (1240-1271), daughter of William Cantilupe (Dr M Julian-Jones, 2015, p81).

A764. Dr Melissa Julian-Jones (2015, p81) is joined by Kingsford, C.L (1901, pp131-132; Dictionary of National Biography, 1885-1900, Volume 25) in making John's parents Henry Hastings and Joan de Cantilupe:

Henry Nugent Bell [q. v.] took the case up, and it was mainly owing to his exertions that the attorney-general, Sir Samuel Shepherd, reported on 29 Oct. 1818, that Hastings had 'sufficiently proved his right to the title of Earl of Huntingdon.' A writ of summons was accordingly issued to him in January 1819, and on the 14th of that month he took his seat in the House of Lords (*Journals of the House of Lords*, lii. 9), where he does not appear to have taken any part in the debates. Though successful in his claim to the earldom, he failed to recover the Leicestershire estates, which had formerly gone with the title. On 7 March 1821 he obtained the rank of commander and the command of the Chanticleer. While cruising in the Mediterranean he was appointed governor of Dominica (13 Dec. 1821), and on 28 March in the following year took the oaths of office (*London Gazette*, 1822, pt. i. p. 533). In 1824, in consequence of a misunderstanding with the other authorities in the island, Huntingdon resigned his post, and returned home. He was promoted to the rank of post-captain on 29 May 1824, and on 14 Aug. following was appointed to the command of the Valorous. Illness compelled him to relinquish his command in the West Indies. Returning to England in May 1828, he died at Green Park, Youghal, on 9 Dec. 1828, aged 49, and was succeeded in the earldom by his eldest son, Francis Theophilus Henry Hastings. He married first, on 12 May 1803, at St. Anne's, Soho, Frances, third daughter of the Rev. Richard Chaloner Cobbe, rector of Great Marlow, Buckinghamshire, by whom he had ten children, including George Fowler Hastings [q. v.] She died on 31 March 1820, and on 28 Sept. following he married secondly Eliza Mary, eldest daughter of Joseph Bettesworth of Ryde in the Isle of Wight, and widow of Alexander Thistlethwayte of Hampshire, by whom he had no children. His widow survived him, and married, for the third time, on 26 April 1838, Colonel Sir Thomas Noel Harris, K.H., and died at Boulogne on 9 Nov. 1846. Engravings by C. Warren after portraits of Huntingdon, and of his first wife by S. W. Lethbridge, will be found in Bell's 'Huntingdon Peerage.'

[H. N. Bell's Huntingdon Peerage, 1820; Gent. Mag. 1829, pt. i. pp. 269–72, 1847, pt. i. 110; Doyle's Official Baronage, 1886, ii. 243; Burke's Peerage, 1889, pp. 743, 744; Notes and Queries, 5th ser. xii. 69, 234, 278, 475, 6th ser. i. 66; Navy Lists.] G. F. R. B.

HASTINGS, HENRY, first BARON HASTINGS by writ (*d.* 1268), baronial leader, was son of Henry Hastings (*d.* 1250), sixth baron by tenure, and Ada, third daughter of David, earl of Huntingdon, brother of William the Lion, by Maud, daughter and coheiress of Hugh, earl of Chester. His grandfather, William Hastings (*d.* 1226), took part with the barons against King John, and in 1216 his lands were forfeited; he was taken prisoner at Lincoln in 1217, and was one of William of Aumale's supporters at Biham in 1221. Henry Hastings the elder fought in Poitou in 1242 and was taken prisoner at Saintes, he served in Scotland in 1244 (*Report on Dignity of a Peer*, iii. 20). In 1250 he was one of the nobles who took the cross, but died in July of the same year. Matthew Paris calls him 'a distinguished knight and wealthy baron' (iv. 213, v. 96, 174).

Henry was under age at his father's death, and the king granted the wardship of his estates to Geoffrey de Lusignan, who, however, in the following year transferred it to William de Cantelupe. In 1260 Hastings received a summons to be at Shrewsbury in arms on 8 Sept. in order to take part in the Welsh war (*Report on Dignity of a Peer*, iii. 21). He was one of the young nobles who at the parliament held in May 1262 supported Simon de Montfort in his complaint of the non-observance of the provisions of Oxford (WYKES, iv. 133), and siding with the barons in the war of 1263 was one of those excommunicated by Archbishop Boniface. Hastings also joined on 13 Dec. 1263 in signing the instrument which bound the barons to abide by the award of Louis IX. In April 1264 he was in Kent with Gilbert de Clare, and took part in the siege of Rochester (GERVASE, ii. 235). He marched with Earl Simon to Lewes, and was knighted by him, either on the morning before the battle on 14 May 1264 (*ib.* ii. 237), or at London on 4 May (according to *Chr. Dover* in *MS. Cott.* Julius, D. ii.) In the battle of Lewes Hastings commanded the Londoners, and took part in their flight from Edward. Afterwards he was made by Earl Simon constable of the castles of Scarborough and Winchester, and on 14 Dec. received the summons to parliament from which the extant barony of Hastings dates (*Report on Dignity of a Peer*, iii. 34). He was one of the barons who were going to take part in the tournament at Dunstable in March 1265 (*Cal. Rot. Pat.* 49 Hen. III). He was taken prisoner at Evesham on 4 Aug. 1265, but afterwards obtaining his release joined Robert Ferrers earl of Derby [q. v.], at Chesterfield in the following May, and only escaped capture with him through being out hunting (ROBERT OF GLOUCESTER, 11849–56). He then went to Kenilworth, and, joining with John de la

Continued …

Ware and others, ravaged the surrounding country, and held the castle against the king from 24 June to 28 Oct. Hastings was specially excepted from the 'Dictum de Kenilworth,' and sentenced to pay a fine of seven years' value of his estates. But being released he broke his oath not to take up arms again, and joining 'the disinherited' in the Isle of Ely became their leader (WYKES, iv. 203). He was, however, forced to submit to Edward in July 1267. He died next year. Wykes, who was a royalist, speaks of his inordinate pride and violence, and calls him 'malefactorum maleficus gubernator' (*ib.* l.c.) He married Joanna de Cantelupe, daughter of his guardian (she is sometimes called Eva, but cf. *Cal. Gen.* i. 197, and *Ann. Dunst.* iii. 257). By her, who survived him, he had with three daughters two sons, John, second baron (1262–1313) [q. v.], and Edmund (see below). Hastings and his wife were buried in the church of the Friars Minor at Coventry (DUGDALE, *Antiq. Warw.* i. 183). His barony, after many vicissitudes [see under HASTINGS, SIR EDWARD, 1381–1437], was revived in 1841 in favour of Sir Jacob Astley, grandfather of the present Lord Hastings.

HASTINGS, EDMUND (*d.* 1314?), Baron Hastings of Inchmahome, Perthshire, younger son of the above, was born after 1262. He is first mentioned in January 1292, when Edward I ordered John Baliol not to prevent Isabella Comyn from marrying whom she wished, as it was in his own power to give her to Edmund de Hastings. This lady was widow of William Comyn of Badenoch, and daughter of Walter Comyn, earl of Menteith in right of his wife. She married Edmund Hastings soon after the date mentioned, though she is not apparently again spoken of as his wife till 1306. Edmund Hastings had a grant of lands in Scotland in 1290, probably the part of the earldom of Menteith which he held in 1306 (*Cal. Documents relating to Scotland*, ii. 1771). He was engaged in the Scottish war in 1298 and 1299, and was at the siege of Caerlaverock in June 1300 with his brother. On 28 Dec. 1299 he had been summoned to parliament, and in February 1301 signed the famous letter of remonstrance to the pope. On the latter occasion he was styled 'dominus de Enchemehelmock,' and this, with the seal bearing the legend 'S: Edmundi: Hasting: Comitatv: Menetei,' has given rise to some discussion (cf. *Archæologia*, xxi. 217). Mr. Riddell has shown that the reference is to Inchmahome (anciently called Inchmacholmok), the chief castle of the earldom of Menteith. Edmund Hastings was specially ordered to stay in Scotland in September 1302. In May 1308 he was thanked for his services in Scotland, and in June was made warden between the Forth and Orkney (*Cal. Doc. Scotl.* iii. 43, 47). Early in 1309 he was warden of Perth, and was made constable of Dundee in May. In May 1312 he was warden of Berwick-on-Tweed. His last summons to parliament was dated 7 July 1313, and he probably died not long after, perhaps next year at Bannockburn. He apparently left no issue.

[Wykes, Dunstable, Waverley, and Worcester Annals in Annales Monastici; Matthew Paris; Continuation of Gervase of Canterbury; Robert of Gloucester (all these are in the Rolls Series); Dugdale's Baronage, i. 574–5; Report on Dignity of a Peer, vol. iii.; Courthope's Historic Peerage, pp. 239, 240; Blaauw's Barons' War. For Edmund Hastings see also T. Riddell's Inquiry into the Law and Practice in Scottish Peerages, ii. 990–1002; Nicolas's Song of Caerlaverock, p. 299; Bain's Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland, vol. iii.] C. L. K.

HASTINGS, HENRY, third EARL OF HUNTINGDON (1535–1595), born in 1535, was eldest son of Francis Hastings, second earl [q. v.], by Catherine, daughter and coheiress of Henry Pole, lord Montacute, brother of Cardinal Pole. Edward VI, whose companion he was in youth, knighted him 20 Feb. 1547–8. On 25 May 1553 he was married at Durham (afterwards Northumberland) House in the Strand, London, to Catherine, daughter of John Dudley, duke of Northumberland [q. v.] He was summoned to parliament as Baron Hastings 23 Jan. 1558–9. He succeeded to the earldom of Huntingdon on the death of his father, 20 June 1561. Through his descent on his mother's side from Edward IV's brother George, duke of Clarence, he claimed after Elizabeth the succession to the throne, in opposition to Lady Catherine Grey and Mary Queen of Scots. His claims were supported by probably the majority of protestant nobles, and during the severe illness of Elizabeth in 1562 the current of opinion pointed towards him as her successor. His pretensions to the succession sometimes occasioned Elizabeth much irritation. In a letter to his brother-in-law Leicester in 1564, Huntingdon relates that when his wife came to court 'it pleased her Majesty to give her a privy nippe especially concerning myselfe' (BELL, *Huntingdon Peerage*, 2nd ed. p. 64). Huntingdon had puritan leanings, and was a strong sympathiser with the Huguenot struggle in France. In 1569 he petitioned Elizabeth for permission to sell his estates and join the Huguenot army with ten thousand men (Don Guerau to Philip of Spain in *MSS. Simancas*, quoted in FROUDE, *England*, cab. ed. ix. 69).

As was only natural, Huntingdon was

A765. Burton & Stober (2013) from the University of Wales, published recently that Joan is buried with her son John Hastings, but her heart is interred elsewhere at the family chapel located in Abergavenny.

A766. An effigy of Joan de Hastings (nee de Cantelupe), at Abergavenny shows Joan holding a heart in her palm. According to Burton & Stober (2013), this is a rare image for a female memorial, even for a high-status noblewoman such as her.

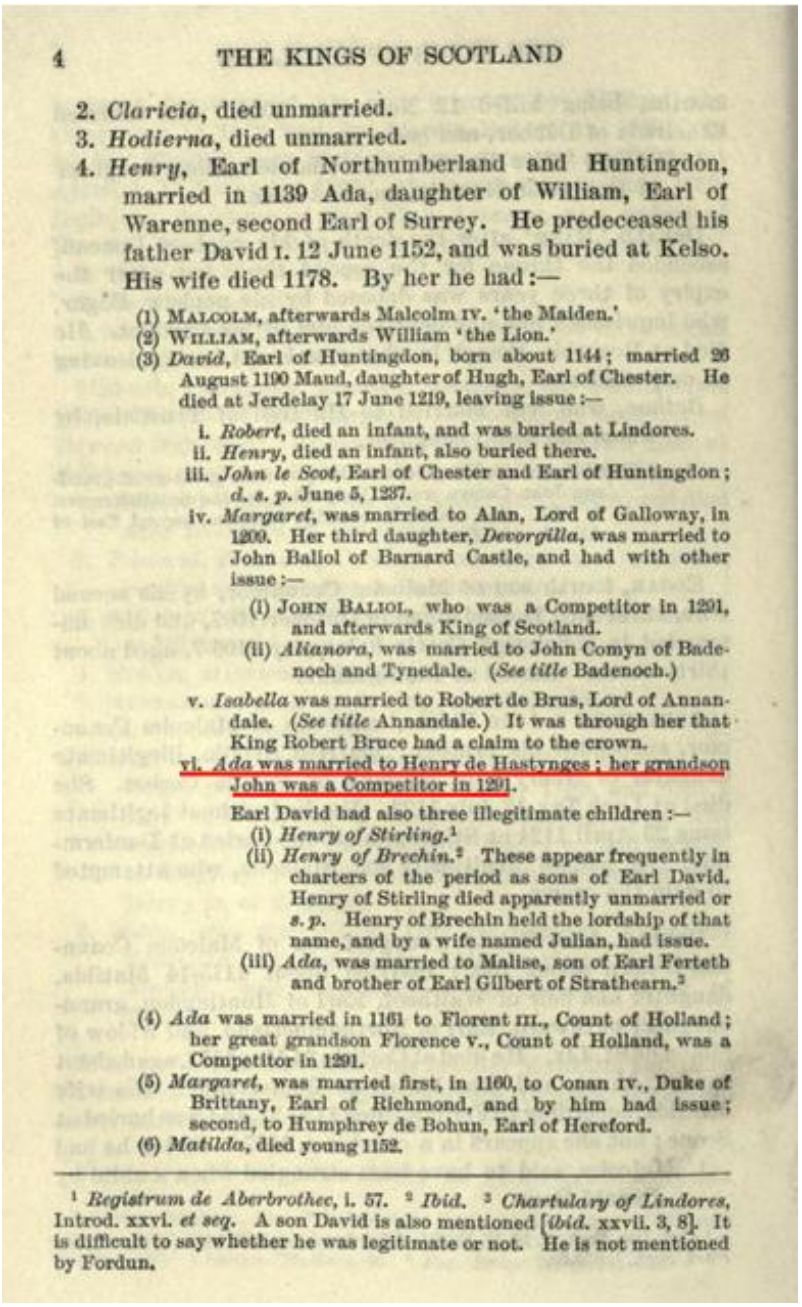
A767. They explain further that Joan, wife of Henry Hastings (the parents of John Hastings), body was buried with son, John de Hastings (d.1312) at the Franciscan friary of Coventry (Burton & Stober, 2013, Eds, Monastic Wales – New Approaches):

> Anglo-Norman burials are predominantly found in the houses in the Welsh March at Brecon (Braose), Abergavenny (the Hastings lords of Abergavenny from the fourteenth century), Tintern (the Marshal earls and countesses of Pembroke, and the earls of Norfolk) and Ewenny. Such burials represent a powerful footprint of lordship, conquest and permanence, whilst at the same time offering indications of devotional aspirations and negotiated space. As one of several Benedictine monasteries with English or continental associations established by the Anglo-Normans in Wales at the end of the eleventh century, Abergavenny is particularly rich in surviving funerary monuments, indicating here that 'a close connection existed between patron and priory'.[14] One burial is that of Eva (d. 1255), daughter of William de Braose, lord of Abergavenny. Her effigy, located in the presbytery, shows her holding a shield which covers most of her body. On the shield are depicted the *fleurs de lis* of the Cantilupes, her marital family. Eva's daughter Joan married Henry de Hastings and thus the patronage of the community passed to his family. Between 1325 and 1348, three members of the Hastings family were interred in a purpose-built chapel located in the south transept of the church. Another striking effigy at Abergavenny depicts Joan de Cantilupe holding a heart in her palm, a rare image for a female memorial, even for a high status noblewoman. Her body was buried with her son, John de Hastings (d. 1312) at the Franciscan friary of Coventry, yet Joan's heart was interred at her family's monastery.[15] Although heart burials of English royals and nobles were not uncommon during the late thirteenth century, this appears to be the only known example in Wales. As patron of Brecon, William de Braose (d. 1211) had shown particular affection towards the community by willing his body for burial in the priory church 'because this is the church I love before all others and because after God and St Mary I have greater confidence in St John'.[16] However, he died abroad and was interred at St Victor in Paris.[17] The monks of Brecon, like other religious communities, maintained a *historia* and genealogical records of their patrons, which suggest an intimate relationship between both parties.[18] Similar histories, some of which contain illustrations and tables of patrons were compiled at other monasteries in the Marches, including Tintern, Tewkesbury and Llanthony Prima.[19]
>
> An important, yet overlooked, feature of Anglo-Norman benefaction and burial in Wales concerns Flemish settlers in Pembrokeshire. Following the forfeiture of the lordship in 1102 King Henry I settled a group of Flemings there, largely in the commote of Rhos.[20] The

This page is intentionally left blank.

24th great grandparents Henry de Hastings & Ada de Huntingdon

A768. Joan's husband and John Hasting's father, Henry Hastings (1225-1268) is the son of Henry Hastings (about 1205-1250) and Ada Huntingdon (c1198-1242). Ada is the daughter of David, 8th Earl of Huntingdon, and Maud of Chester (Paul, James Balfour [Sir], 1904, p4, The Scots Peerage):



4 THE KINGS OF SCOTLAND

2. *Claricia*, died unmarried.
3. *Hodierna*, died unmarried.
4. *Henry*, Earl of Northumberland and Huntingdon, married in 1139 Ada, daughter of William, Earl of Warenne, second Earl of Surrey. He predeceased his father David I. 12 June 1152, and was buried at Kelso. His wife died 1178. By her he had:—

(1) MALCOLM, afterwards Malcolm IV. 'the Maiden.'
(2) WILLIAM, afterwards William 'the Lion.'
(3) *David*, Earl of Huntingdon, born about 1144; married 26 August 1190 Maud, daughter of Hugh, Earl of Chester. He died at Jerdelay 17 June 1219, leaving issue:—

i. *Robert*, died an infant, and was buried at Lindores.
ii. *Henry*, died an infant, also buried there.
iii. *John le Scot*, Earl of Chester and Earl of Huntingdon; *d. s. p.* June 5, 1237.
iv. *Margaret*, was married to Alan, Lord of Galloway, in 1209. Her third daughter, *Devorgilla*, was married to John Baliol of Barnard Castle, and had with other issue:—

(i) JOHN BALIOL, who was a Competitor in 1291, and afterwards King of Scotland.
(ii) *Alianora*, was married to John Comyn of Badenoch and Tynedale. (*See title* Badenoch.)

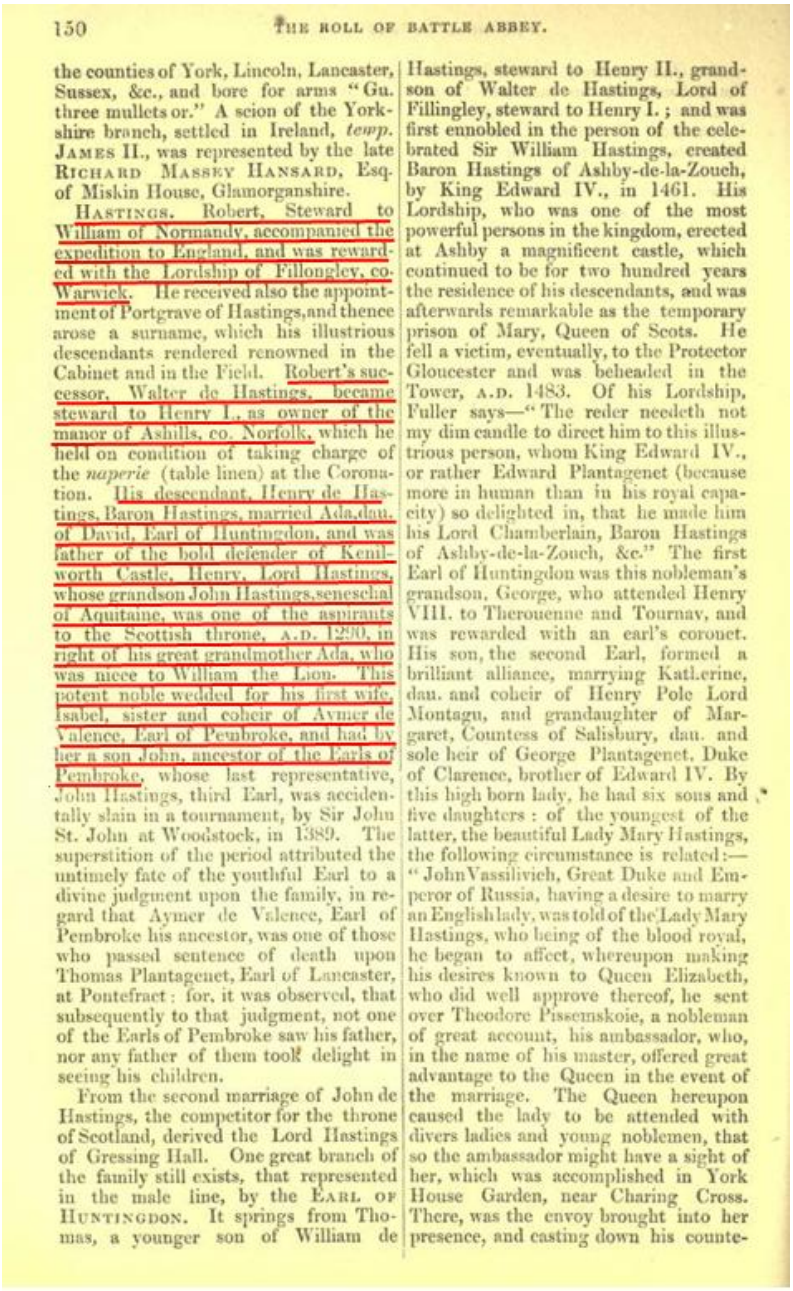
v. *Isabella* was married to Robert de Brus, Lord of Annandale. (*See title* Annandale.) It was through her that King Robert Bruce had a claim to the crown.
vi. *Ada* was married to Henry de Hastynges; her grandson John was a Competitor in 1291.

Earl David had also three illegitimate children:—
(i) *Henry of Stirling.*[1]
(ii) *Henry of Brechin.*[2] These appear frequently in charters of the period as sons of Earl David. Henry of Stirling died apparently unmarried or *s. p.* Henry of Brechin held the lordship of that name, and by a wife named Julian, had issue.
(iii) *Ada*, was married to Malise, son of Earl Ferteth and brother of Earl Gilbert of Strathearn.[3]

(4) *Ada* was married in 1161 to Florent III., Count of Holland; her great grandson Florence V., Count of Holland, was a Competitor in 1291.
(5) *Margaret*, was married first, in 1160, to Conan IV., Duke of Brittany, Earl of Richmond, and by him had issue; second, to Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford.
(6) *Matilda*, died young 1152.

[1] *Registrum de Aberbrothec*, i. 57. [2] *Ibid.* [3] *Chartulary of Lindores*, Introd. xxvi. *et seq.* A son David is also mentioned [*ibid.* xxvii. 3, 8]. It is difficult to say whether he was legitimate or not. He is not mentioned by Fordun.

A769. John Burke & Sir Bernard Burke (1847, p150) in their published research titled, *The Patrician*, further confirm Ada Huntingdon, being the daughter of David, 8th Earl of Huntingdon and the genealogical legacy extends in descending order to her grandson John Hastings:



150 THE ROLL OF BATTLE ABBEY.

the counties of York, Lincoln, Lancaster, Sussex, &c., and bore for arms "Gu. three mullets or." A scion of the Yorkshire branch, settled in Ireland, *temp.* JAMES II., was represented by the late RICHARD MASSEY HANSARD, Esq. of Miskin House, Glamorganshire.

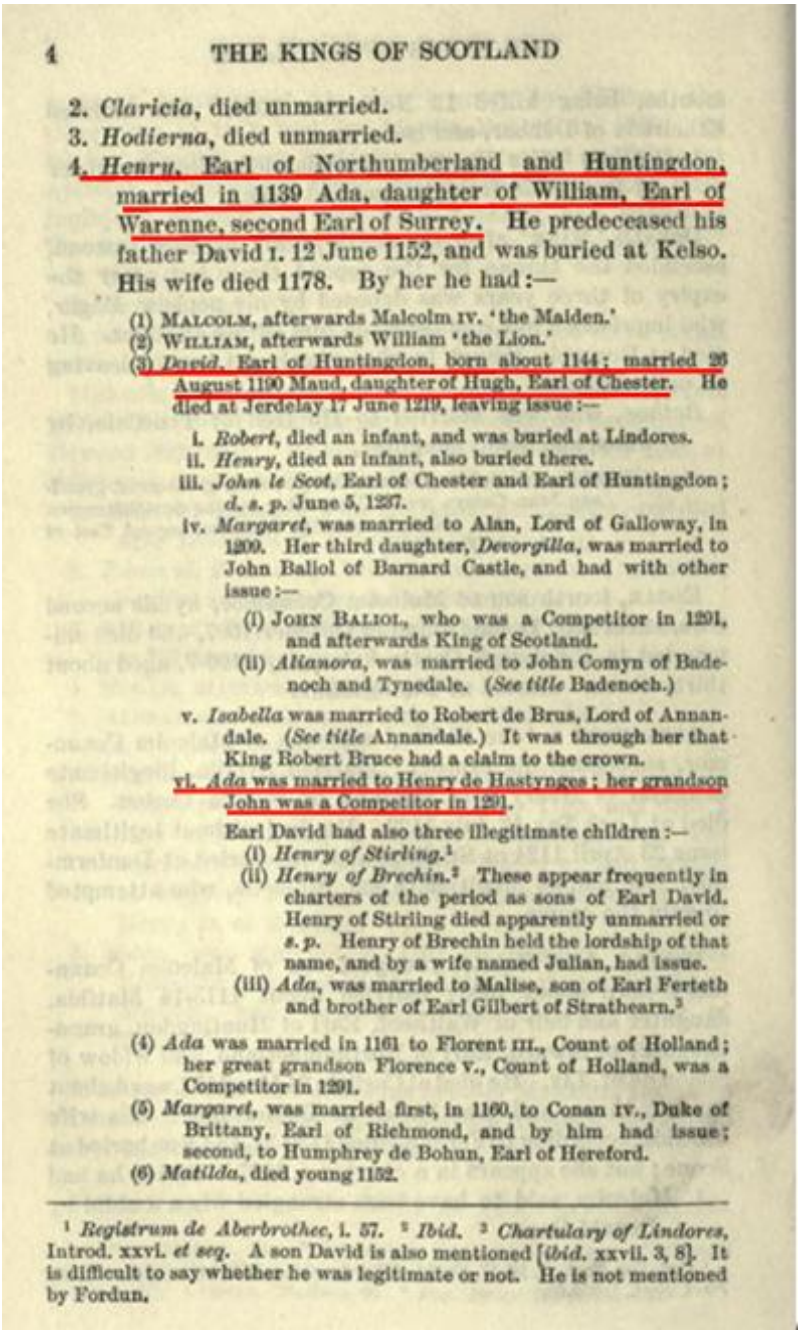
HASTINGS. Robert, Steward to William of Normandy, accompanied the expedition to England, and was rewarded with the Lordship of Fillongley, co. Warwick. He received also the appointment of Portgrave of Hastings, and thence arose a surname, which his illustrious descendants rendered renowned in the Cabinet and in the Field. Robert's successor, Walter de Hastings, became steward to Henry I., as owner of the manor of Ashills, co. Norfolk, which he held on condition of taking charge of the *naperie* (table linen) at the Coronation. His descendant, Henry de Hastings, Baron Hastings, married Ada, dau. of David, Earl of Huntingdon, and was father of the bold defender of Kenilworth Castle, Henry, Lord Hastings, whose grandson John Hastings, seneschal of Aquitaine, was one of the aspirants to the Scottish throne, A.D. 1290, in right of his great grandmother Ada, who was niece to William the Lion. This potent noble wedded for his first wife, Isabel, sister and coheir of Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, and had by her a son John, ancestor of the Earls of Pembroke, whose last representative, John Hastings, third Earl, was accidentally slain in a tournament, by Sir John St. John at Woodstock, in 1389. The superstition of the period attributed the untimely fate of the youthful Earl to a divine judgment upon the family, in regard that Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke his ancestor, was one of those who passed sentence of death upon Thomas Plantagenet, Earl of Lancaster, at Pontefract: for, it was observed, that subsequently to that judgment, not one of the Earls of Pembroke saw his father, nor any father of them took delight in seeing his children.

From the second marriage of John de Hastings, the competitor for the throne of Scotland, derived the Lord Hastings of Gressing Hall. One great branch of the family still exists, that represented in the male line, by the EARL OF HUNTINGDON. It springs from Thomas, a younger son of William de Hastings, steward to Henry II., grandson of Walter de Hastings, Lord of Fillingley, steward to Henry I.; and was first ennobled in the person of the celebrated Sir William Hastings, created Baron Hastings of Ashby-de-la-Zouch, by King Edward IV., in 1461. His Lordship, who was one of the most powerful persons in the kingdom, erected at Ashby a magnificent castle, which continued to be for two hundred years the residence of his descendants, and was afterwards remarkable as the temporary prison of Mary, Queen of Scots. He fell a victim, eventually, to the Protector Gloucester and was beheaded in the Tower, A.D. 1483. Of his Lordship, Fuller says—"The reder needeth not my dim candle to direct him to this illustrious person, whom King Edward IV., or rather Edward Plantagenet (because more in human than in his royal capacity) so delighted in, that he made him his Lord Chamberlain, Baron Hastings of Ashby-de-la-Zouch, &c." The first Earl of Huntingdon was this nobleman's grandson, George, who attended Henry VIII. to Therouenne and Tournay, and was rewarded with an earl's coronet. His son, the second Earl, formed a brilliant alliance, marrying Katherine, dau. and coheir of Henry Pole Lord Montagu, and grandaughter of Margaret, Countess of Salisbury, dau. and sole heir of George Plantagenet, Duke of Clarence, brother of Edward IV. By this high born lady, he had six sons and five daughters: of the youngest of the latter, the beautiful Lady Mary Hastings, the following circumstance is related:—"John Vassilivich, Great Duke and Emperor of Russia, having a desire to marry an English lady, was told of the Lady Mary Hastings, who being of the blood royal, he began to affect, whereupon making his desires known to Queen Elizabeth, who did well approve thereof, he sent over Theodore Pissemskoie, a nobleman of great account, his ambassador, who, in the name of his master, offered great advantage to the Queen in the event of the marriage. The Queen hereupon caused the lady to be attended with divers ladies and young noblemen, that so the ambassador might have a sight of her, which was accomplished in York House Garden, near Charing Cross. There, was the envoy brought into her presence, and casting down his counte-

A770. This record above ties down many generational lines overlapping with previous evidence submitted.

25th great grandparents David 8th Earl of Huntingdon & Matilda of Chester

A771. The Scots Peerage (1904, p104) genealogical account makes certain David and Maud are not only parents of Ada Huntingdon who married Henry Hastings, but also further evidence confirmed David is the son of [Prince] Henry, Earl of Northumberland and Huntingdon, and his wife, Ada de Warenne. Ada being the daughter of William, Earl of Warenne, 2nd Earl of Surrey:



4 THE KINGS OF SCOTLAND

2. *Claricia*, died unmarried.
3. *Hodierna*, died unmarried.
4. *Henry*, Earl of Northumberland and Huntingdon, married in 1139 Ada, daughter of William, Earl of Warenne, second Earl of Surrey. He predeceased his father David I. 12 June 1152, and was buried at Kelso. His wife died 1178. By her he had:—

(1) MALCOLM, afterwards Malcolm IV. 'the Maiden.'
(2) WILLIAM, afterwards William 'the Lion.'
(3) *David*, Earl of Huntingdon, born about 1144; married 26 August 1190 Maud, daughter of Hugh, Earl of Chester. He died at Jerdelay 17 June 1219, leaving issue:—

i. *Robert*, died an infant, and was buried at Lindores.
ii. *Henry*, died an infant, also buried there.
iii. *John le Scot*, Earl of Chester and Earl of Huntingdon; *d. s. p.* June 5, 1237.
iv. *Margaret*, was married to Alan, Lord of Galloway, in 1209. Her third daughter, *Devorgilla*, was married to John Baliol of Barnard Castle, and had with other issue:—
(i) JOHN BALIOL, who was a Competitor in 1291, and afterwards King of Scotland.
(ii) *Alianora*, was married to John Comyn of Badenoch and Tynedale. (*See title* Badenoch.)
v. *Isabella* was married to Robert de Brus, Lord of Annandale. (*See title* Annandale.) It was through her that King Robert Bruce had a claim to the crown.
vi. *Ada* was married to Henry de Hastynges; her grandson John was a Competitor in 1291.

Earl David had also three illegitimate children:—
(i) *Henry of Stirling*.[1]
(ii) *Henry of Brechin*.[2] These appear frequently in charters of the period as sons of Earl David. Henry of Stirling died apparently unmarried or *s. p.* Henry of Brechin held the lordship of that name, and by a wife named Julian, had issue.
(iii) *Ada*, was married to Malise, son of Earl Ferteth and brother of Earl Gilbert of Strathearn.[3]

(4) *Ada* was married in 1161 to Florent III., Count of Holland; her great grandson Florence V., Count of Holland, was a Competitor in 1291.
(5) *Margaret*, was married first, in 1160, to Conan IV., Duke of Brittany, Earl of Richmond, and by him had issue; second, to Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford.
(6) *Matilda*, died young 1152.

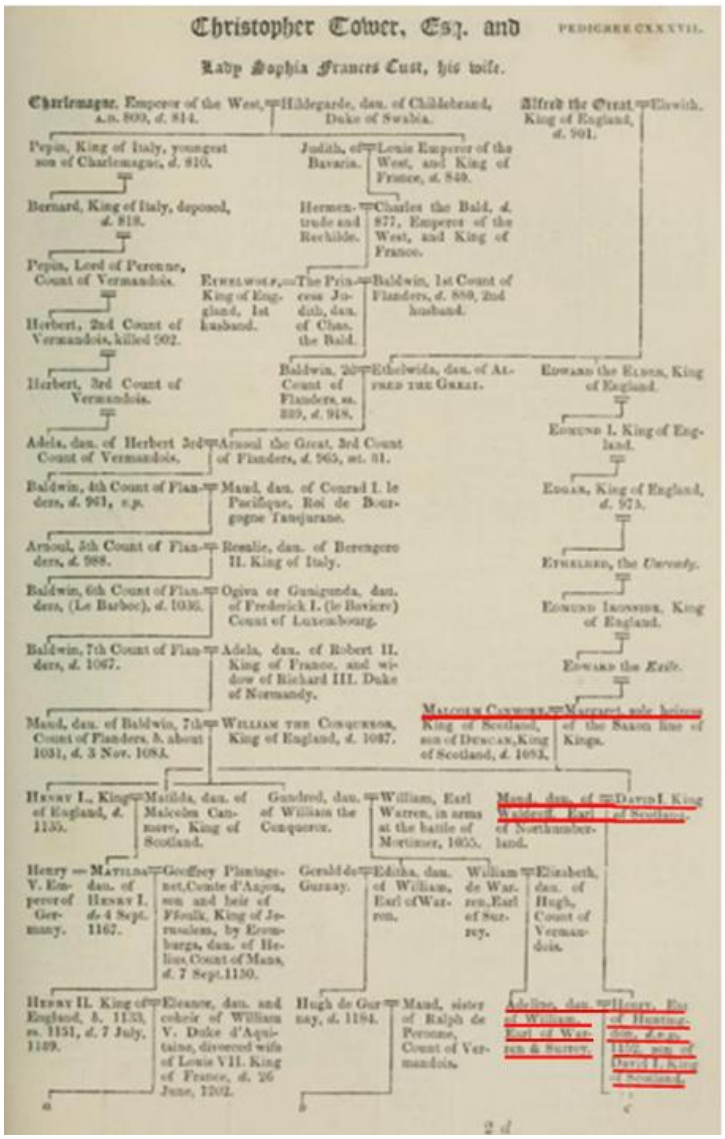
[1] *Registrum de Aberbrothec*, i. 57. [2] *Ibid.* [3] *Chartulary of Lindores*, Introd. xxvi. *et seq.* A son David is also mentioned [*ibid.* xxvii. 3, 8]. It is difficult to say whether he was legitimate or not. He is not mentioned by Fordun.

This page is intentionally left blank.

26th great grandparents Henry of Scotland & Ada de Warenne

A772. Burke & Burke (1848, p402) recognises also that Ada de Warenne (1120-1178) is the wife of Prince Henry of Scotland (1114-1152), the son of King David I of Scotland and Maude of Waldeoff.

A773. The pedigree chart produced by Burke & Burke (1842, p402) from their research recognises Prince Henry son of David I is the grandson of Margaret of Wessex and Malcolm III of Scotland (Refer also: Oram, R., 2011, piii; Huntingdon; Oram, R, 2011, p372, piii; Barlow, 1955, p288):



Christopher Tower, Esq. and PEDIGREE CXXXVII.

Lady Sophia Frances Cust, his wife.

Charlemagne, Emperor of the West, A.D. 800, d. 814. — Hildegarde, dau. of Childebrand, Duke of Swabia.

Alfred the Great, King of England, d. 901. — Elswith.

Pepin, King of Italy, youngest son of Charlemagne, d. 810.

Judith, of Bavaria. — Louis Emperor of the West, and King of France, d. 840.

Bernard, King of Italy, deposed, d. 818.

Hermentrude and Rechilde. — Charles the Bald, d. 877, Emperor of the West, and King of France.

Pepin, Lord of Peronne, Count of Vermandois.

Ethelwolf, King of England, 1st husband. — The Princess Judith, dau. of Chas. the Bald. — Baldwin, 1st Count of Flanders, d. 879, 2nd husband.

Herbert, 2nd Count of Vermandois, killed 902.

Baldwin, 2d Count of Flanders, m. 889, d. 918. — Ethelwida, dau. of Alfred the Great.

Edward the Elder, King of England.

Herbert, 3rd Count of Vermandois.

Edmund I. King of England.

Adela, dau. of Herbert 3rd Count of Vermandois. — Arnoul the Great, 3rd Count of Flanders, d. 965, æt. 81.

Edgar, King of England, d. 975.

Baldwin, 4th Count of Flanders, d. 961, s.p. — Maud, dau. of Conrad I. le Pacifique, Roi de Bourgogne Tansjurane.

Ethelred, the Unready.

Arnoul, 5th Count of Flanders, d. 988. — Rosalie, dau. of Berengere II. King of Italy.

Edmund Ironside, King of England.

Baldwin, 6th Count of Flanders, (Le Barbue), d. 1036. — Ogiva or Gunigunda, dau. of Frederick I. (le Boviere) Count of Luxembourg.

Edward the Exile.

Baldwin, 7th Count of Flanders, d. 1067. — Adela, dau. of Robert II. King of France, and widow of Richard III. Duke of Normandy.

Malcolm Canmore, King of Scotland, son of Duncan, King of Scotland, d. 1093. — Margaret sole heiress of the Saxon line of Kings.

Maud, dau. of Baldwin, 7th Count of Flanders, b. about 1031, d. 3 Nov. 1083. — William the Conqueror, King of England, d. 1087.

Henry I., King of England, d. 1135. — Matilda, dau. of Malcolm Canmore, King of Scotland.

Gundred, dau. of William the Conqueror.

William, Earl Warren, in arms at the battle of Mortimer, 1055.

Maud, dau. of David I. King Waldeoff, Earl of Northumberland. — David I. King of Scotland.

Henry V. Emperor of Germany. — Matilda, dau. of Henry I. d. 4 Sept. 1167.

Geoffrey Plantagenet, Comte d'Anjou, son and heir of Foulk, King of Jerusalem, by Eremburga, dau. of Helias, Count of Mans, d. 7 Sept. 1130.

Gerald de Gurnay.

Editha, dau. of William, Earl of Warren.

William de Warren, Earl of Surrey.

Elizabeth, dau. of Hugh, Count of Vermandois.

Henry II. King of England, b. 1133, m. 1151, d. 7 July, 1189.

Eleanor, dau. and coheir of William V. Duke d'Aquitaine, divorced wife of Louis VII. King of France, d. 26 June, 1202.

Hugh de Gurnay, d. 1184. — Maud, sister of Ralph de Peronne, Count of Vermandois.

Adeline, dau. of William, Earl of Warren & Surrey.

Henry, Earl of Huntingdon, dau. s.p. 1152, son of David I. King of Scotland.

a b c

2 d

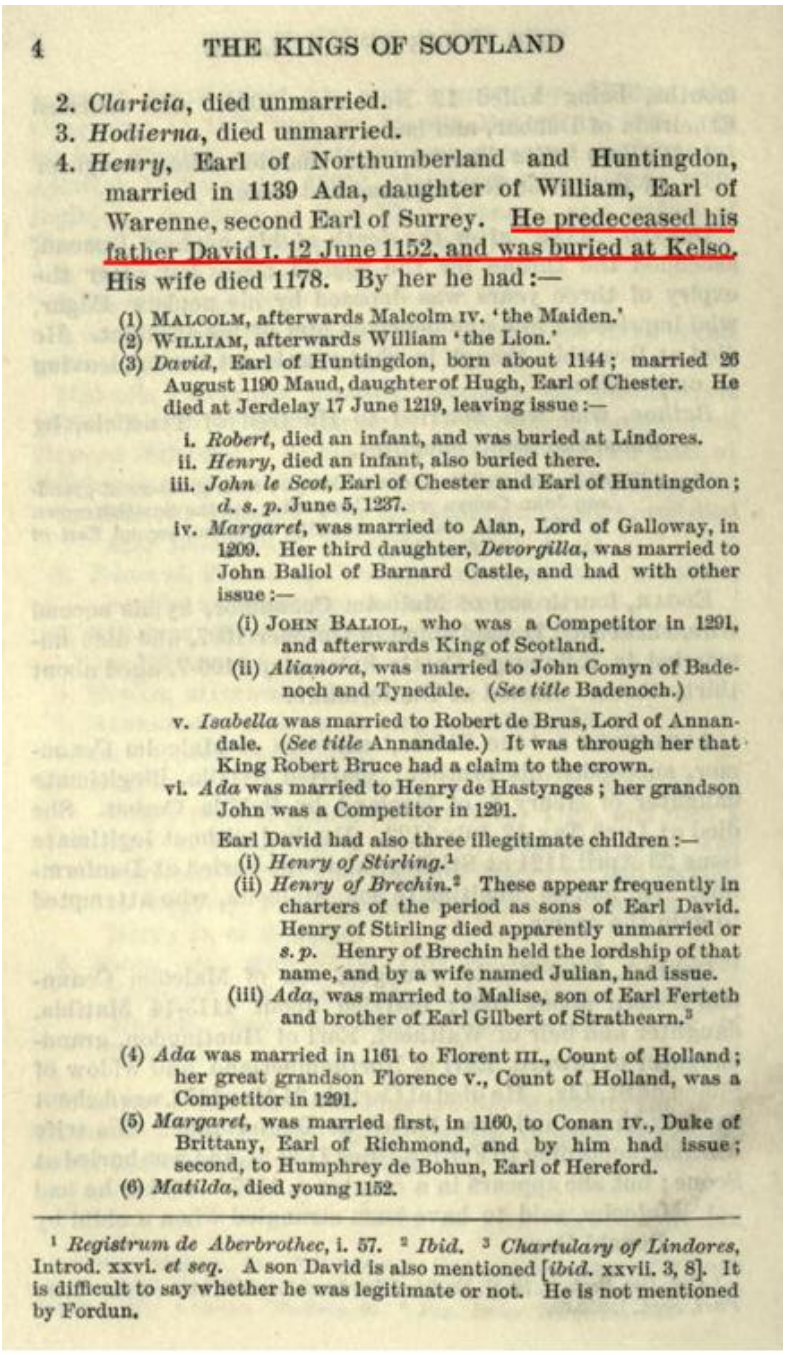
A774. Orderic Vitalis (Prévost), Vol. III, Liber VIII, XXII, p402 makes for a contemporary account that Henry of Scotland is the son of David I, King of Scotland by his wife Matilda [Maud] of Huntingdon.

A775 Orderic names him: "*filium...Henricum duasque filias Clariciam et Hodiernam*" as one of the children of David King of Scotland (refer also: Chronique de Robert de Torigny I, 1125, p172; and "Henricus filius eius" died the year before "David rex Scotiæ," Chronique de Robert de Torigny I, 1153, p274).

This page is intentionally left blank.

27th great grandparents David I of Scotland & Maud of Huntingdon

A776. The Scots Peerage (1904, p4) is yet another trustworthy source to confirm Henry of Scotland, Earl of Northumberland and Huntingdon, husband of Ada de Warenne, is the son of King David I of Scotland. The same record makes further account that Prince Henry pre-deceased his father by about a year and therefore never became King of Scotland:



4 THE KINGS OF SCOTLAND

2. *Claricia*, died unmarried.
3. *Hodierna*, died unmarried.
4. *Henry*, Earl of Northumberland and Huntingdon, married in 1139 Ada, daughter of William, Earl of Warenne, second Earl of Surrey. He predeceased his father David I. 12 June 1152, and was buried at Kelso. His wife died 1178. By her he had:—

(1) MALCOLM, afterwards Malcolm IV. 'the Maiden.'
(2) WILLIAM, afterwards William 'the Lion.'
(3) *David*, Earl of Huntingdon, born about 1144; married 26 August 1190 Maud, daughter of Hugh, Earl of Chester. He died at Jerdelay 17 June 1219, leaving issue:—

i. *Robert*, died an infant, and was buried at Lindores.
ii. *Henry*, died an infant, also buried there.
iii. *John le Scot*, Earl of Chester and Earl of Huntingdon; *d. s. p.* June 5, 1237.
iv. *Margaret*, was married to Alan, Lord of Galloway, in 1209. Her third daughter, *Devorgilla*, was married to John Baliol of Barnard Castle, and had with other issue:—

(i) JOHN BALIOL, who was a Competitor in 1291, and afterwards King of Scotland.
(ii) *Alianora*, was married to John Comyn of Badenoch and Tynedale. (*See title* Badenoch.)

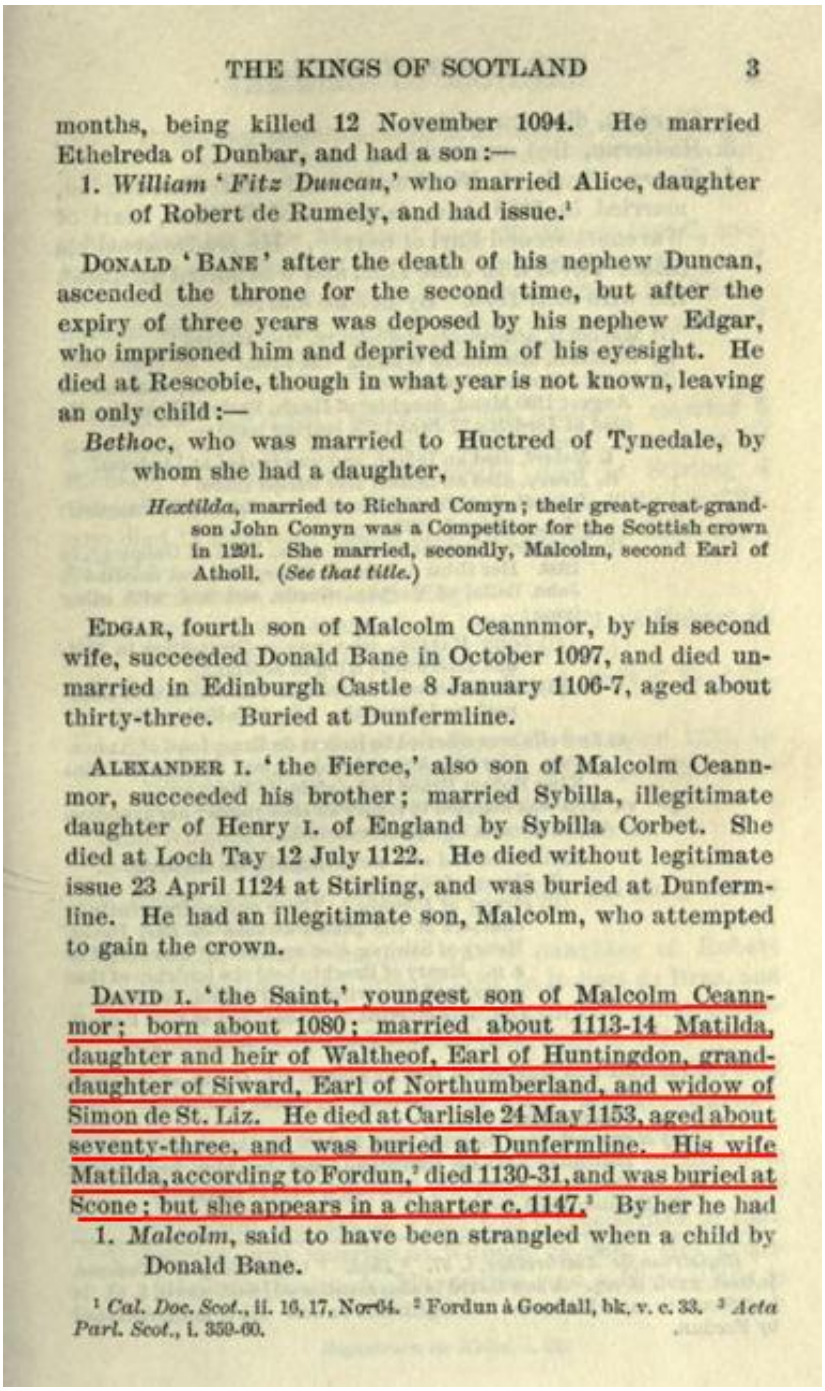
v. *Isabella* was married to Robert de Brus, Lord of Annandale. (*See title* Annandale.) It was through her that King Robert Bruce had a claim to the crown.
vi. *Ada* was married to Henry de Hastynges; her grandson John was a Competitor in 1291.

Earl David had also three illegitimate children:—
(i) *Henry of Stirling*.[1]
(ii) *Henry of Brechin*.[2] These appear frequently in charters of the period as sons of Earl David. Henry of Stirling died apparently unmarried or *s. p.* Henry of Brechin held the lordship of that name, and by a wife named Julian, had issue.
(iii) *Ada*, was married to Malise, son of Earl Ferteth and brother of Earl Gilbert of Strathearn.[3]

(4) *Ada* was married in 1161 to Florent III., Count of Holland; her great grandson Florence V., Count of Holland, was a Competitor in 1291.
(5) *Margaret*, was married first, in 1160, to Conan IV., Duke of Brittany, Earl of Richmond, and by him had issue; second, to Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford.
(6) *Matilda*, died young 1152.

[1] *Registrum de Aberbrothec*, i. 57. [2] *Ibid.* [3] *Chartulary of Lindores*, Introd. xxvi. *et seq.* A son David is also mentioned [*ibid.* xxvii. 3, 8]. It is difficult to say whether he was legitimate or not. He is not mentioned by Fordun.

A777. Sir James Balfour Paul KCVO CStJ FSAS (16 November 1846 – 15 September 1931), Lord Lyon King of Arms, researcher and author of The Scots Peerage, further accounts David I's reign and that he is the youngest son of Malcolm III of Scotland (1031-1093) and Margaret of Wessex (1045-1093) and that his wife was Maud Countess of Huntingdon (1074-1131):



THE KINGS OF SCOTLAND 3

months, being killed 12 November 1094. He married Ethelreda of Dunbar, and had a son:—

1. *William* '*Fitz Duncan*,' who married Alice, daughter of Robert de Rumely, and had issue.[1]

DONALD 'BANE' after the death of his nephew Duncan, ascended the throne for the second time, but after the expiry of three years was deposed by his nephew Edgar, who imprisoned him and deprived him of his eyesight. He died at Rescobie, though in what year is not known, leaving an only child:—

Bethoc, who was married to Huctred of Tynedale, by whom she had a daughter,

Hextilda, married to Richard Comyn; their great-great-grandson John Comyn was a Competitor for the Scottish crown in 1291. She married, secondly, Malcolm, second Earl of Atholl. (*See that title.*)

EDGAR, fourth son of Malcolm Ceannmor, by his second wife, succeeded Donald Bane in October 1097, and died unmarried in Edinburgh Castle 8 January 1106-7, aged about thirty-three. Buried at Dunfermline.

ALEXANDER I. 'the Fierce,' also son of Malcolm Ceannmor, succeeded his brother; married Sybilla, illegitimate daughter of Henry I. of England by Sybilla Corbet. She died at Loch Tay 12 July 1122. He died without legitimate issue 23 April 1124 at Stirling, and was buried at Dunfermline. He had an illegitimate son, Malcolm, who attempted to gain the crown.

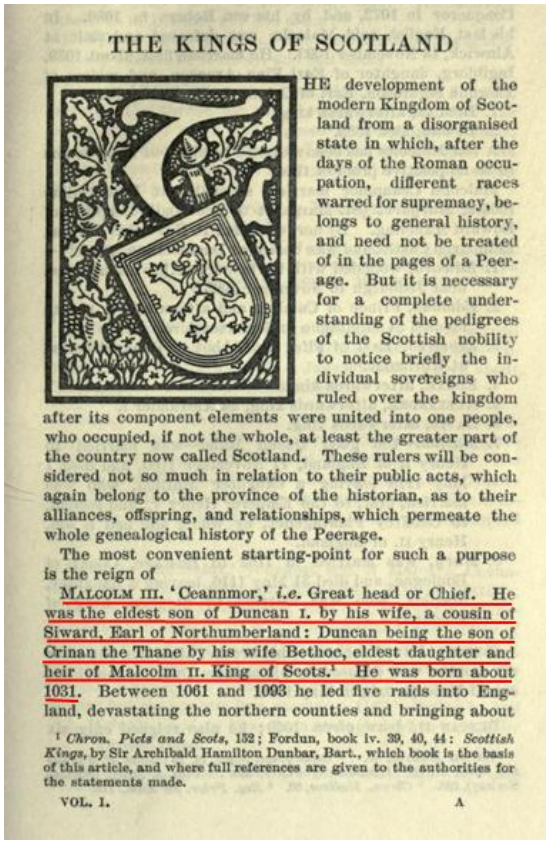
DAVID I. 'the Saint,' youngest son of Malcolm Ceannmor; born about 1080; married about 1113-14 Matilda, daughter and heir of Waltheof, Earl of Huntingdon, granddaughter of Siward, Earl of Northumberland, and widow of Simon de St. Liz. He died at Carlisle 24 May 1153, aged about seventy-three, and was buried at Dunfermline. His wife Matilda, according to Fordun,[2] died 1130-31, and was buried at Scone; but she appears in a charter c. 1147.[3] By her he had

1. *Malcolm*, said to have been strangled when a child by Donald Bane.

[1] *Cal. Doc. Scot.*, ii. 16, 17, Nor-64. [2] Fordun à Goodall, bk. v. c. 33. [3] *Acta Parl. Scot.*, i. 359-60.

28th great grandparents Margaret of Wessex & Malcolm III of Scotland

A778. The Crown's former authority, on Scotland's Peerage, Sir James Balfour Paul (The Scots Peerage, 1904, pp1-2) further accounts for David I's sister, Matilda being the mother of Empress Matilda married to Geoffrey Plantagenet:



THE KINGS OF SCOTLAND

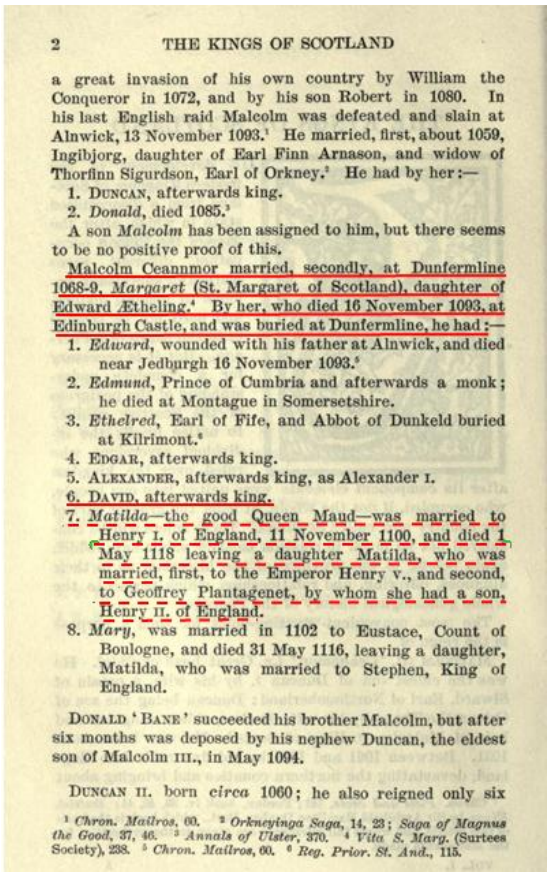
THE development of the modern Kingdom of Scotland from a disorganised state in which, after the days of the Roman occupation, different races warred for supremacy, belongs to general history, and need not be treated of in the pages of a Peerage. But it is necessary for a complete understanding of the pedigrees of the Scottish nobility to notice briefly the individual sovereigns who ruled over the kingdom after its component elements were united into one people, who occupied, if not the whole, at least the greater part of the country now called Scotland. These rulers will be considered not so much in relation to their public acts, which again belong to the province of the historian, as to their alliances, offspring, and relationships, which permeate the whole genealogical history of the Peerage.

The most convenient starting-point for such a purpose is the reign of

MALCOLM III. 'Ceannmor,' *i.e.* Great head or Chief. He was the eldest son of Duncan I. by his wife, a cousin of Siward, Earl of Northumberland: Duncan being the son of Crinan the Thane by his wife Bethoc, eldest daughter and heir of Malcolm II. King of Scots.[1] He was born about 1031. Between 1061 and 1093 he led five raids into England, devastating the northern counties and bringing about

[1] *Chron. Picts and Scots*, 132; Fordun, book iv. 39, 40, 44: *Scottish Kings*, by Sir Archibald Hamilton Dunbar, Bart., which book is the basis of this article, and where full references are given to the authorities for the statements made.

VOL. I. A



2 THE KINGS OF SCOTLAND

a great invasion of his own country by William the Conqueror in 1072, and by his son Robert in 1080. In his last English raid Malcolm was defeated and slain at Alnwick, 13 November 1093.[1] He married, first, about 1059, Ingibjorg, daughter of Earl Finn Arnason, and widow of Thorfinn Sigurdson, Earl of Orkney.[2] He had by her:—

1. DUNCAN, afterwards king.
2. *Donald*, died 1085.[3]

A son *Malcolm* has been assigned to him, but there seems to be no positive proof of this.

Malcolm Ceannmor married, secondly, at Dunfermline 1068-9, *Margaret* (St. Margaret of Scotland), daughter of Edward Ætheling.[4] By her, who died 16 November 1093, at Edinburgh Castle, and was buried at Dunfermline, he had:—

1. *Edward*, wounded with his father at Alnwick, and died near Jedburgh 16 November 1093.[5]
2. *Edmund*, Prince of Cumbria and afterwards a monk; he died at Montague in Somersetshire.
3. *Ethelred*, Earl of Fife, and Abbot of Dunkeld buried at Kilrimont.[6]
4. EDGAR, afterwards king.
5. ALEXANDER, afterwards king, as Alexander I.
6. DAVID, afterwards king.
7. *Matilda*—the good Queen Maud—was married to Henry I. of England, 11 November 1100, and died 1 May 1118 leaving a daughter Matilda, who was married, first, to the Emperor Henry V., and second, to Geoffrey Plantagenet, by whom she had a son, Henry II. of England.
8. *Mary*, was married in 1102 to Eustace, Count of Boulogne, and died 31 May 1116, leaving a daughter, Matilda, who was married to Stephen, King of England.

DONALD 'BANE' succeeded his brother Malcolm, but after six months was deposed by his nephew Duncan, the eldest son of Malcolm III., in May 1094.

DUNCAN II. born *circa* 1060; he also reigned only six

[1] *Chron. Mailros*, 60. [2] *Orkneyinga Saga*, 14, 23; *Saga of Magnus the Good*, 37, 46. [3] *Annals of Ulster*, 370. [4] *Vita S. Marg.* (Surtees Society), 238. [5] *Chron. Mailros*, 60. [6] *Reg. Prior. St. And.*, 115.

A779. As shown on the previous page, Matilda's daughter Empress Matilda and husband Geoffrey Plantagenet are parents of Henry I and II of England. As submitted previously, this bloodline is inherited by the researcher, through his 14th great grandmother Muriel Waterton (nee Leeke), a descendent of Edward I, who in turn descends from Henry II and earlier from King William I and Queen Matilda of Flanders (Refer paragraphs A662, p214; A670, p218; A680, p221; A685-A687, pp223-224; A703-A704, 230; A709, p232; A711-A712, pp233-235; and A745, p255).

A780. The authority which is Royal UK and the British Museum confirm the marriage union between Margaret of Wessex and Malcolm III occurred in 1070. The same authorities record Malcolm III's reign as King of Scotland was from 1058 to 1093 (Royal.UK, Malcolm Canmore, 'great head' or 'chief,' was the eldest son of Duncan I, Early Scottish Monarchs).

Margaret of Wessex and her brother, Edgar Ætheling's lineal ancestry

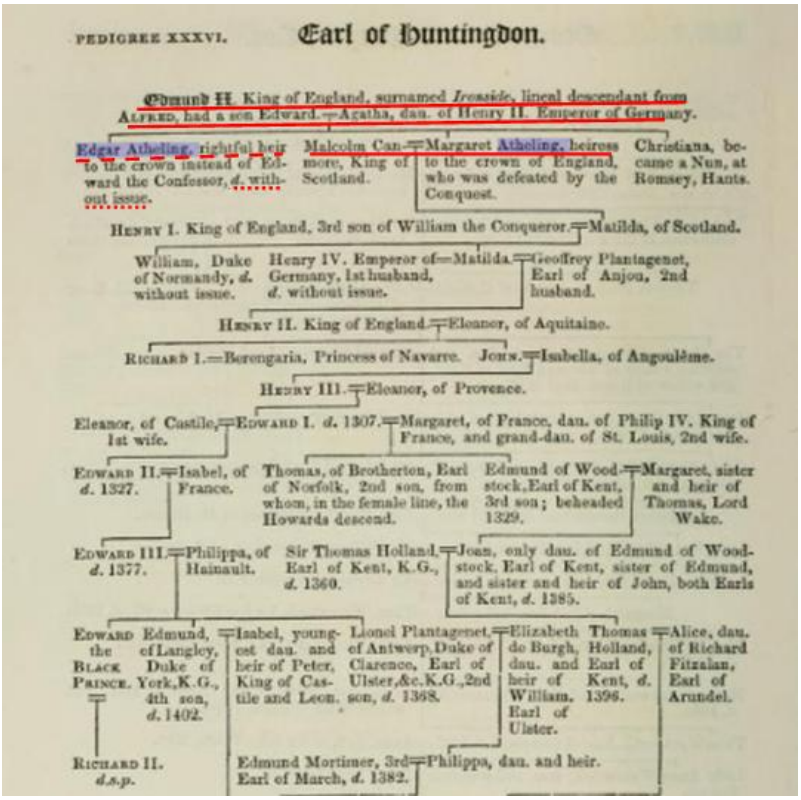
A781. It is known by Burke & Burke (1848, p261) that Margaret of Wessex, known as Margaret of Scotland, Queen Margaret of Scotland, and Pearl of Scotland, and her two siblings, Edgar and Christina, are the children of Edward the Exile and Agatha.

A782. It is well settled in British royal history that Margaret of Wessex is the sister of Edgar Ætheling and Princess Christina Ætheling (Tout, T. F. 1887, "Christina" in Stephen, Leslie, ed., Dictionary of National Biography, Vol. 10., London: Smith, Elder & Co; Starkey, David 2004, p988; The Monarchy of England: The Beginnings).

A783. It is equally well settled that Margaret of Wessex's brother, Edgar Ætheling and sister Christina Ætheling, are members of the Wessex royal family and direct descendants of King Alfred through Edmund Ironside (St John Parker, M, 1999, Britain's Kings & Queens).

A784. Margaret of Wessex (1045-1093) and her two siblings Edgar and Christina are the grand-children of King Edmund Ironside of England through his son Edward (Refer King Edmund and Edward's positions in the genealogical roll of the Kings of England, the British Library Board, Royal 14 B. VI; also Dunlop, E, 2005; Queen Margaret of Scotland, National Museums of Scotland, Edinburgh; Johnson, B, 2023, "St Margaret," Historic UK; Starkey, D 2004, p88; Cartwright M, 202, Saint Margaret of Scotland, World History Encyclopaedia).

A785. According to Sir Bernard Burke & John Burke (1848, p261) in their publication, "Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales," Margaret, Edgar and Christina's mother is Agatha, daughter of Henry II, Emperor of Germany (Burke & Burke, 1848, p261):



PEDIGREE XXXVI. **Earl of Huntingdon.**

Edmund II. King of England, surnamed *Ironside*, lineal descendant from Alfred, had a son Edward.=Agatha, dau. of Henry II. Emperor of Germany.

Edgar Atheling, rightful heir to the crown instead of Edward the Confessor, *d.* without issue. | Malcolm Canmore, King of Scotland. | =Margaret Atheling, heiress to the crown of England, who was defeated by the Conquest. | Christiana, became a Nun, at Romsey, Hants.

Henry I. King of England, 3rd son of William the Conqueror.=Matilda, of Scotland.

William, Duke of Normandy, *d.* without issue. | Henry IV. Emperor of Germany, 1st husband, *d.* without issue. | =Matilda.=Geoffrey Plantagenet, Earl of Anjou, 2nd husband.

Henry II. King of England.=Eleanor, of Aquitaine.

Richard I.=Berengaria, Princess of Navarre. | John.=Isabella, of Angoulême.

Henry III.=Eleanor, of Provence.

Eleanor, of Castile, 1st wife. | =Edward I. *d.* 1307.=Margaret, of France, dau. of Philip IV. King of France, and grand-dau. of St. Louis, 2nd wife.

Edward II.=Isabel, of France, *d.* 1327. | Thomas, of Brotherton, Earl of Norfolk, 2nd son, from whom, in the female line, the Howards descend. | Edmund of Woodstock, Earl of Kent, 3rd son; beheaded 1329. | =Margaret, sister and heir of Thomas, Lord Wake.

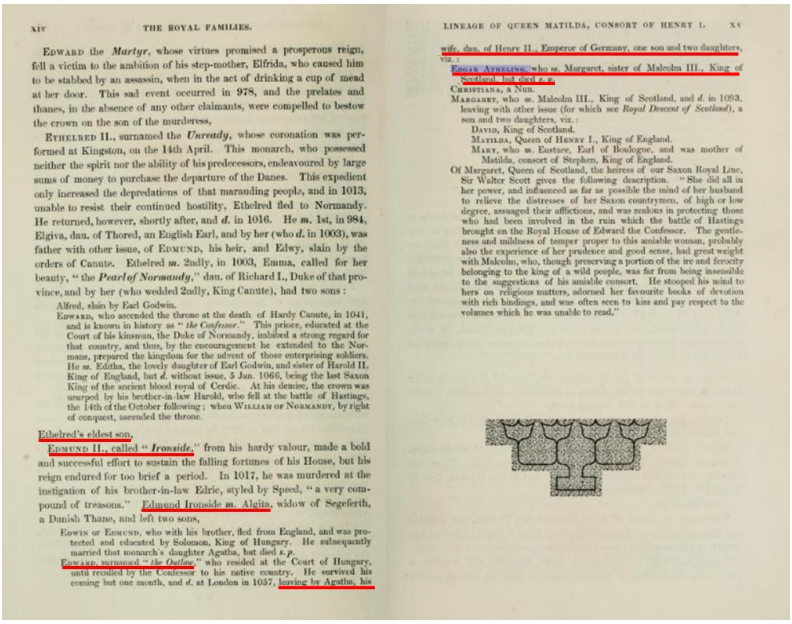
Edward III.=Philippa, of Hainault, *d.* 1377. | Sir Thomas Holland, Earl of Kent, K.G., *d.* 1360. | =Joan, only dau. of Edmund of Woodstock, Earl of Kent, sister of Edmund, and sister and heir of John, both Earls of Kent, *d.* 1385.

Edward the Black Prince. | Edmund, Duke of York, K.G., 4th son, *d.* 1402. | =Isabel, youngest dau. and heir of Peter, King of Castile and Leon. | Lionel Plantagenet, Duke of Clarence, Earl of Ulster, &c. K.G., 2nd son, *d.* 1368. | =Elizabeth de Burgh, dau. and heir of William, Earl of Ulster. | Thomas Holland, Earl of Kent, *d.* 1396. | =Alice, dau. of Richard Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel.

Richard II. *d.s.p.*

Edmund Mortimer, 3rd Earl of March, *d.* 1382. | =Philippa, dau. and heir.

A786. It is further discovered from Sir Bernard Burke & John Burke's (1848, pp XIV, XV), publication Edgar Ætheling, married Malcolm III's sister, Margaret Canmore. Based on unearthing this credible source, the Hallifax family Ms 7D14/45 extant, claim Margaret Canmore as an ancient family member; and recognised accordingly as Edgar Ætheling's (1051-1125/6) wife:



XIV THE ROYAL FAMILIES.

Edward the *Martyr*, whose virtues promised a prosperous reign, fell a victim to the ambition of his step-mother, Elfrida, who caused him to be stabbed by an assassin, when in the act of drinking a cup of mead at her door. This sad event occurred in 978, and the prelates and thanes, in the absence of any other claimants, were compelled to bestow the crown on the son of the murderess,

Ethelred II., surnamed the *Unready*, whose coronation was performed at Kingston, on the 14th April. This monarch, who possessed neither the spirit nor the ability of his predecessors, endeavoured by large sums of money to purchase the departure of the Danes. This expedient only increased the depredations of that marauding people, and in 1013, unable to resist their continued hostility, Ethelred fled to Normandy. He returned, however, shortly after, and *d.* in 1016. He *m.* 1st, in 984, Elgiva, dau. of Thored, an English Earl, and by her (who *d.* in 1003), was father with other issue, of Edmund, his heir, and Edwy, slain by the orders of Canute. Ethelred *m.* 2ndly, in 1003, Emma, called for her beauty, "the *Pearl of Normandy*," dau. of Richard I., Duke of that province, and by her (who wedded 2ndly, King Canute), had two sons:

Alfred, slain by Earl Godwin.

Edward, who ascended the throne at the death of Hardy Canute, in 1041, and is known in history as "*the Confessor*." This prince, educated at the Court of his kinsman, the Duke of Normandy, imbibed a strong regard for that country, and thus, by the encouragement he extended to the Normans, prepared the kingdom for the advent of those enterprising soldiers. He *m.* Editha, the lovely daughter of Earl Godwin, and sister of Harold II. King of England, but *d.* without issue, 5 Jan. 1066, being the last Saxon King of the ancient blood royal of Cerdic. At his demise, the crown was usurped by his brother-in-law Harold, who fell at the battle of Hastings, the 14th of the October following; when William of Normandy, by right of conquest, ascended the throne.

Ethelred's eldest son,

Edmund II., called "*Ironside*," from his hardy valour, made a bold and successful effort to sustain the falling fortunes of his House, but his reign endured for too brief a period. In 1017, he was murdered at the instigation of his brother-in-law Edric, styled by Speed, "a very compound of treasons." Edmund Ironside *m.* Algita, widow of Segeferth, a Danish Thane, and left two sons,

Edwin or Edmund, who with his brother, fled from England, and was protected and educated by Solomon, King of Hungary. He subsequently married that monarch's daughter Agatha, but died *s.p.*

Edward, surnamed "*the Outlaw*," who resided at the Court of Hungary, until recalled by the Confessor to his native country. He survived his coming but one month, and *d.* at London in 1057, leaving by Agatha, his

LINEAGE OF QUEEN MATILDA, CONSORT OF HENRY I. XV

wife, dau. of Henry II., Emperor of Germany, one son and two daughters, viz.:

Edgar Atheling, who *m.* Margaret, sister of Malcolm III., King of Scotland, but died *s.p.*

Christiana, a Nun.

Margaret, who *m.* Malcolm III., King of Scotland, and *d.* in 1093, leaving with other issue (for which see *Royal Descent of Scotland*), a son and two daughters, viz.:

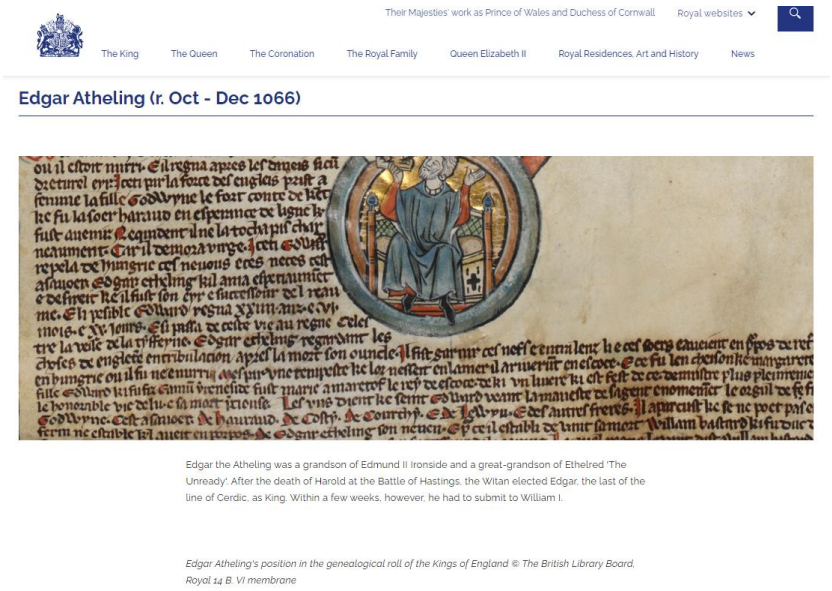
David, King of Scotland.

Matilda, Queen of Henry I., King of England.

Mary, who *m.* Eustace, Earl of Boulogne, and was mother of Matilda, consort of Stephen, King of England.

Of Margaret, Queen of Scotland, the heiress of our Saxon Royal Line, Sir Walter Scott gives the following description. "She did all in her power, and influenced as far as possible the mind of her husband to relieve the distresses of her Saxon countrymen, of high or low degree, assuaged their afflictions, and was zealous in protecting those who had been involved in the ruin which the battle of Hastings brought on the Royal House of Edward the Confessor. The gentleness and mildness of temper proper to this amiable woman, probably also the experience of her prudence and good sense, had great weight with Malcolm, who, though preserving a portion of the ire and ferocity belonging to the king of a wild people, was far from being insensible to the suggestions of his amiable consort. He stooped his mind to hers on religious matters, adorned her favourite books of devotion with rich bindings, and was often seen to kiss and pay respect to the volumes which he was unable to read."

A787. Margaret's brother Edgar the Ætheling was the last male on the last patronymic line of Cerdic. He, Edgar was also the last Saxon King of England (Edgar II, r. Oct-Dec 1066):


Their Majesties' work as Prince of Wales and Duchess of Cornwall
Royal websites
The King
The Queen
The Coronation
The Royal Family
Queen Elizabeth II
Royal Residences, Art and History
News
Edgar Atheling (r. Oct - Dec 1066)
Edgar the Atheling was a grandson of Edmund II Ironside and a great-grandson of Ethelred 'The Unready'. After the death of Harold at the Battle of Hastings, the Witan elected Edgar, the last of the line of Cerdic, as King. Within a few weeks, however, he had to submit to William I.
Edgar Atheling's position in the genealogical roll of the Kings of England © The British Library Board, Royal 14 B. VI membrane

A788. Using traditional genealogical scientific tracing method, validation of Harris Robert Guest's (2018-) and Levi John Guest (2020-) descent from Margaret of Wessex (1045-1093) and Malcolm III of Scotland (1031-1093) and on an alternative line from William I and Matilda of Flanders, included further, in a regular ascending direction their earlier bloodlines flowing to them from Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838), M.A. of Magdalen College, Oxford (Hallifax registered pedigree Ms 7D14/45, 16th December 1788, updated 22nd January 2024).

A789. It is beyond Robert Hallifax (1761-1838) to his matrilineal matriarch, Muriel Leeke the Royal Household official records confirm Muriel's provenance of descent from William I and Matilda of Flanders (Refer A768, p273, Burke & Burke, 1848, The Royal Families of England, Scotland, and Wales, with Muriel Leek's descent from King William I and Queen Matilda further tied through her mother Elizabeth Savage (cf. Burke 1836, p1532; Dr J.W. Walker 1931, p396; Richardson, 2011, p296, ref 13; Collins A, 1735, p247; Glover, 1580, pp203-204).

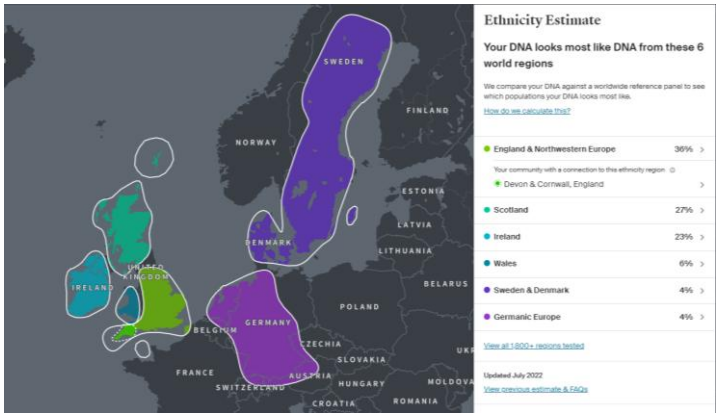
A790. The short section which follows, is the researcher's John L.R. Guest's general DNA ethnicity results. They show the match between his places of origin, and that of known lineal ancestors found along his mother's bloodline.

GENERAL DNA ETHNICITY RESULTS

100% North West European

A791. The researcher has used traditional genealogical tracing methods and modern genetic testing to identify DNA relatives throughout Volume I and II. Submitted below are the places of origin known from John Lindsay Robert Guest's DNA ethnicity test. These places of ethnic origin mirror the places of origin identified from traditional tracing methods.

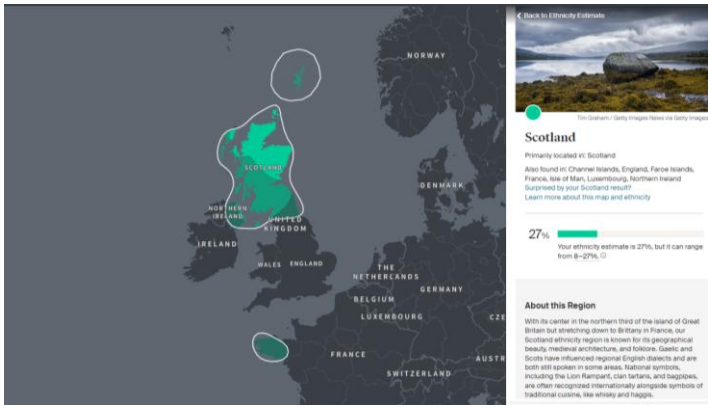
A792. The general DNA ethnicity results submitted below, accords with the places of origin known for each apex elder claimed above or the bloodline that flow to them of an earlier time:



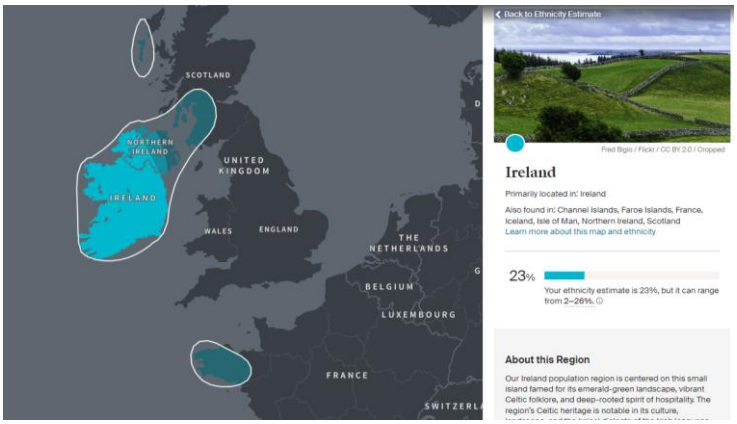
A793. A general breakdown of the results is offered below:

England and North Western Europe – 36%

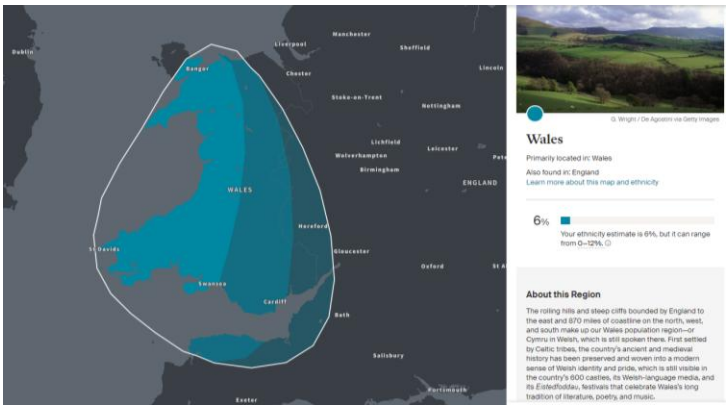
Scotland - 27%



Ireland – 23%

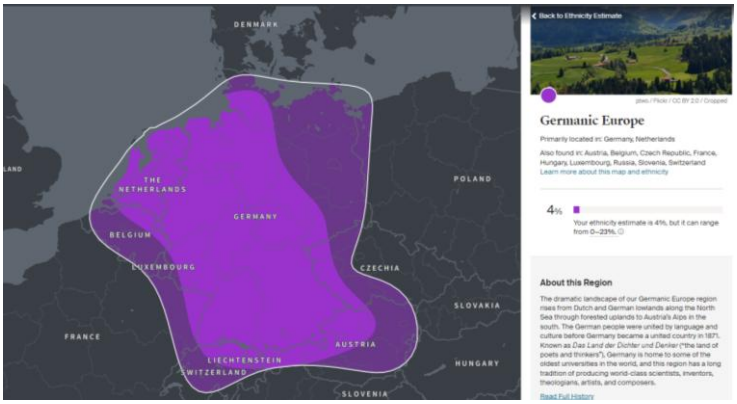

SCOTLAND
NORTHERN IRELAND
UNITED KINGDOM
IRELAND
WALES
ENGLAND
THE NETHERLANDS
BELGIUM
LUXEMBOURG
FRANCE
Back to Ethnicity Estimate
Ireland
Primarily located in: Ireland
Also found in: Channel Islands, Faroe Islands, France, Iceland, Isle of Man, Northern Ireland, Scotland
Learn more about this map and ethnicity
23%
Your ethnicity estimate is 23%, but it can range from 2–26%.
About this Region
Our Ireland population region is centered on this small island famed for its emerald-green landscape, vibrant Celtic folklore, and deep-rooted spirit of hospitality. The region's Celtic heritage is notable in its culture,

Wales – 6%


Wales
Primarily located in: Wales
Also found in: England
Learn more about this map and ethnicity
6%
Your ethnicity estimate is 6%, but it can range from 0–12%.
About this Region
The rolling hills and steep cliffs bounded by England to the east and 870 miles of coastline on the north, west, and south make up our Wales population region—or Cymru in Welsh, which is still spoken there. First settled by Celtic tribes, the country's ancient and medieval history has been preserved and woven into a modern sense of Welsh identity and pride, which is still visible in the country's 600 castles, its Welsh-language media, and its Eisteddfodau, festivals that celebrate Wales's long tradition of literature, poetry, and music.

Sweden & Denmark - 4%

Germanic Europe – 4%

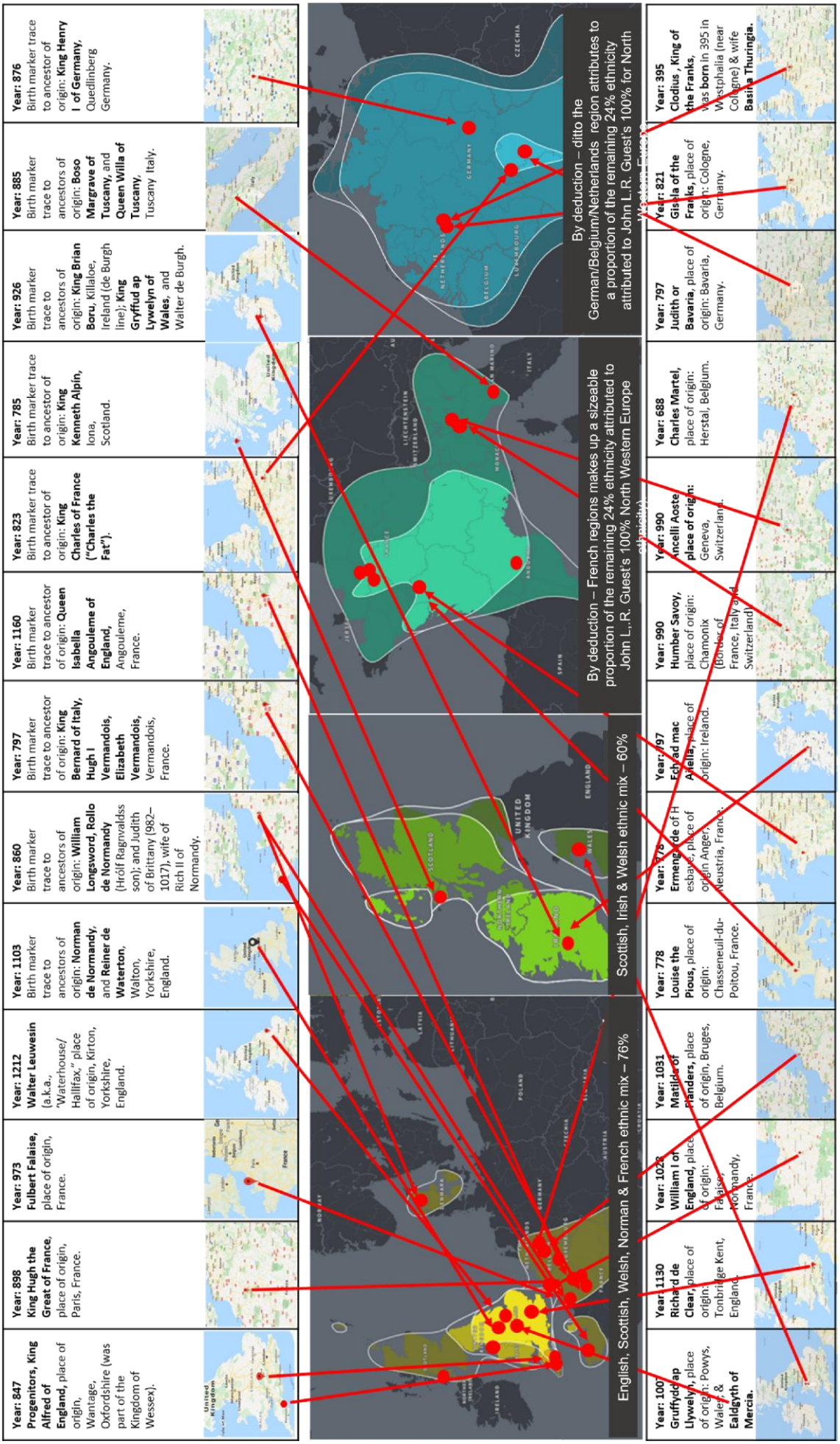


A794. The table below provides more detailed information revealing the places of origin known for early ancestors, taken from traditional genealogical records, and consistent with the places of origin taken from John's DNA ethnicity results. All of which are located within the region best described as North West Europe:

Foundation ancrstor/Ancestral Great Grandparent.	**Date of Birth/Death**	**Blood ties**	**Place of Origin**	**John L.R. Guest's ethic origins**
Saeric Gest c1044-aft1085	C1044	***Refer Guest arms grant(s)***	Caen, Normandy	France/North Western Europe
Thomas Geste (a.k.a. Ghest/Geast)	c1470	***12th great grandfather***	Kings Norton, Worcestershire, England	England/North Western European
Gyles Guest (a.k.a Giles Ghest/Gheast/Geast)	c1495, died 1557	***11th great grandfather***	Kings Norton (presumed), later of nearby Tewkesbury on the border of Counties Worcester/Gloucester.	England/North Western Europe.
Ann Guest, nee Egan *Eagan" (Irish: Mac Aodhagáin, English: Egan)	1711-bfr 1776	***5th great grandmother***	Ireland, probably at Duniry, near Loughrea, Galway, Ireland.	Ireland/North Western Europe
Cerdic (Progenitor House of Wessex)	d534	***Progenitor of the Wessex main stem.***	***Wessex**, one of the kingdoms of Anglo-Saxon England, whose ruling dynasty eventually became kings of the whole country. In its permanent nucleus, its land approximated that of the modern counties of **Hampshire, Dorset, Wiltshire, and Somerset.** At times its land extended north of the river Thames, and it eventually expanded **westward to cover Devon and Cornwall**. The name Wessex is an elision of the **Old English form of "West Saxon".***	England/Wessex
Clovis	466-511	***Progenitor of the House of France – Pre-West, Middle and East Francia***	Antwerp and Limburg in current **Belgium**.	Belgium/North West Europe
Guiscard de Leumesin, Lord Molins (Progenitor of Hallifax/Waterhouse bloodline).	C1070	***28th great grandfather***	**Moulineaux,** Seine-Maritime department, Normandy, France.	England/North Western European
Athon de Courtenay *(Styled **Prince de Courtenay**, France).*	985	***30th great grandfather***	Courtenay, Loiret**, France.**	England/North Western European
Hugh X de Lusginan, ***Count of La Marche***.	1183	***24th great grandfather***	Lusignan, Vienne, Poitou-Charentes, **France**.	England/North Western European
Isabella Angouleme, ***Queen of England***.	1188	***24th great grandmother***	Angouleme, Charente, **France.**	England/North Western European
Richard de Clare, ***2nd Earl of Pembroke***.	1130	***26th great grandfather***	Tonbridge, Kent, **England**.	England/North Western European
Aoife (Eva) MacMurchada, ***Princess of Leinster*** *(Ireland) and Countess of Pembroke*.	1145	***26th great grandmother***	Leinster, **Ireland.**	Ireland
Howel DDA, that is, HOWL THE GOOD (*d.*950)	C890	***XXth great grandfather***	West Wales/Cornwall	Wales/Cornwall
Gilbert de Clare, ***Lord of de Clare.***	1065	***28th great grandfather***	Clare, Suffolk, **England.**	England/North Western European
Adeliza de Clermont, ***Lady de Clare***.	1065	***28th great grandmother***	Northamptonshire, **England.**	England/North Western European
Sir Gilbert Waterhouse I, ***(Knight)***	1280	***24th great grandfather***	Kirton, Lincolnshire, **England.**	England/North Western European
King Ceawlin of Gueissme (a.k.a Wessex)	593	***45th great grandfather***	Wantage, Berkshire, **England.**	England/North Western European
Ealhswith, ***Queen of the Anglo-Saxons.***	852	***35th great grandmother***	Mercia, **England**.	England/North Western European
William I, ***King of England***.	1028	***30th great grandfather***	Faliase, Normandy, **France.**	England/North Western European
Margaret of Wessex et al	1045	***28th great grandmother***	(Wessex England, including and before Edward the Exile)	England/North Western European
Malcolm III of Scotland	1031	***28th great grandfather***	Scotland	Scotland
Matilda of Flanders, ***Queen of England***.	1031		Bruges, **Belgium.**	Germanic Europe
Brian Boru, ***High King of Ireland***.	926	***30th great grandfather***	Killaloe, **Ireland.**	Ireland
Ealdgyth, ***Queen of Wales***.	1037	***30th great grandmother***	Mercia, **England.**	England/North Western European
Humbert Savoy, Founder of the ***House of Savoy***.	980	***31st great grandfather***	Chamonix (Border, France, **Italy,** Swirtzeland)	England/North Western European
Ancelli Aoste (***House of Burgundy***).	990	***31st great grandmother***	Genève, **Switzerland.**	Germanic Europe

Charles Martel, ***Duke and Prince of the Franks*** *and Mayor of the Palace, father of King Charles I (the Great – Charlemagne), (****37th great grandfather****).*	688	***38th great grandfather***	Herstal, **Belgium.**	Germanic Europe
Louis I (the Pious), ***King of France***.	778	***36th great grandfather***	Chasseneuil-du-Poitou, **France.**	England/North Western European
Ermengarde Hesbaye, ***Queen of the Franks***.	778	***36th great grandmother***	Anger, Neustria, **France**.	England/North Western European
Judith of Balvaria, ***Empress and Queen of the Franks***.	797	***36th great grandmother***	Bavaria, **Germany.**	Germanic Europe
Heinrich der Vogler or Heinrich der Finkler (Henry the Fowler), ***King Henry I of Germany*** *(Lineal descendent from Emperors of the Ottanian dynasty).*	876	***33rd great grandfather***	Magdeburg or Halle Saxony-Anhalt, **Germany.**	Germanic Europe
Gisela of Franks, ***Princess of France****, daughter of Louis the Pious,* ***King of France****, mother of Beringer I,* ***King of Italy*** *35th great grandfather).*	821	***36th great grandmother***	Cologne, **Germany.**	Germanic Europe
Edward, Alfred, Aethelwulf, Egbert Æthelings Winchester and Cerdic Hampshire, England (Devon and Cornwall from 722AD)	924 - 534	***Various***	Devon- Cornwall - Winchester-Hampshire England	Germanic Europe
Chlodian de Franks, *1st* ***King of Francia (France)****.*	390	***49th great grandfather***	Cologne (formerly, Westphalia), **Germany.**	Germanic Europe
Basina Thuringia, ***Queen of the Franks.***	398	***49th great grandmother***	*Civitas Tungrorum*, the modern Belgian provinces of Liège and Limburg, **Belgium**.	Germanic Europe

A795. Overleaf the same results are presented in a simplified graphic table.


Year: 847 Progenitors, King Alfred of England, place of origin, Wantage, Oxfordshire (was part of the Kingdom of Wessex).
Year: 898 King Hugh the Great of France, place of origin, Paris, France.
Year: 973 Fulbert Falaise, place of origin, France.
Year: 1212 Walter Leuvesin (a.k.a., "Waterhouse/ Halifax," place of origin, Kirton, Yorkshire, England.
Year: 1103 Birth marker trace to ancestors of origin: Norman de Normandy, and Reiner de Waterton, Walton, Yorkshire, England.
Year: 860 Birth marker trace to ancestors of origin: William Longsword, Rollo de Normandy (Hrólf Ragnvaldsson); and Judith of Brittany (982–1017), wife of Richard II of Normandy.
Year: 797 Birth marker trace to ancestor of origin: King Bernard of Italy, Hugh I Vermandois, Elizabeth Vermandois, Vermandois, France.
Year: 1160 Birth marker trace to ancestor of origin: Queen Isabella Angouleme of England, Angouleme, France.
Year: 823 Birth marker trace to ancestor of origin: King Charles of France ("Charles the Fat").
Year: 785 Birth marker trace to ancestor of origin: King Kenneth Alpin, Iona, Scotland.
Year: 926 Birth marker trace to ancestors of origin: King Brian Boru, Killaloe, Ireland (de Burgh line); King Gryffud ap Lywelyn of Wales, and Walter de Burgh.
Year: 885 Birth marker trace to ancestors of origin: Boso Margrave of Tuscany, and Queen Willa of Tuscany, Tuscany Italy.
Year: 876 Birth marker trace to ancestor of origin: King Henry I of Germany, Quedlinberg Germany.
English, Scottish, Welsh, Norman & French ethnic mix – 76%
Scottish, Irish & Welsh ethnic mix – 60%
By deduction – French regions makes up a sizeable proportion of the remaining 24% ethnicity attributed to John L, R. Guest's 100% North Western Europe
By deduction – ditto the German/Belgium/Netherlands region attributes to a proportion of the remaining 24% ethnicity attributed to John L.R. Guest's 100% for North
Year: 1007 Gruffydd ap Llywelyn, place of origin: Powys, Wales, & Ealdgyth of Mercia.
Year: 1130 Richard de Clear, place of origin: Tonbridge Kent, England.
Year: 1028 William I of England, place of origin: Falaise, Normandy, France.
Year: 1031 Matilda of Flanders, place of origin, Bruges, Belgium.
Year: 778 Louise the Pious, place of origin: Chasseneuil-du-Poitou, France.
Year: 876 Ermengarde of H esbaye, place of origin Anger, Neustria, France.
Year: 797 Echad mac Aillela, place of origin: Ireland.
Year: 990 Humber Savoy, place of origin: Chamonix (Border of France, Italy and Switzerland)
Year: 990 Ancelli Aoste, place of origin: Geneva, Switzerland.
Year: 688 Charles Martel, place of origin: Herstal, Belgium.
Year: 797 Judith or Bavaria, place of origin: Bavaria, Germany.
Year: 821 Giselia of the Franks, place of origin: Cologne, Germany.
Year: 395 Clodius, King of the Franks, was born in 395 in Westphalia (near Cologne) & wife Basilia Thuringia.

A796. John Lindsay Robert Guest's (1960-) DNA ethnicity results giving the places of his ethnic origin match the places of origin known as the same for his co-petitioners.

A797. The petitioners can be certain therefore that for the shared lineage the places their lineal ancestors originate combined, is in an area best described as North West Europe. In turn the area is no greater than the equivalent of one half of the Australian state of Western Australia depicted below:

Source: Graham Meehan on Twitter, 2021, adapted by J.L.R Guest, 2001 to attribute ethnic places of origin with corresponding geographic overlay.

EPILOGUE

Recent developments

A798. By the authority of the King's office, with expert valdiation by the College of Arms, Harris and Levi's longest traceable bloodlines are those which flow to them, through William I and Matilda of Flanders, and Margaret and Malcolm III of Scotland.

A799. Post validation the researcher and his relatives, Dennis Keith Lillee (1949-), AM., MBE, and Darren John Halifax (1965-) (Clan Chief Hallifax), were invited to submit a supplemental petition for the King to consider declaring the creation of the Earldom of Oxford, 1066/67 for Edgar the Ætheling, by William I should the researcher uncover further evidence of the actual creation (Bavister, G, 2024, p1, Succession to the Earldom of Oxford, College of Arms, 1st February, 2024).

A800. Edgar the Ætheling is the brother of Margaret of Scotland and brother-in-law of Malcolm III of Scotland and the researcher, Dennis and Darren's ancient ancestral great uncle.

A801. Recently submitted to His Majesty King Charles III was additional evidence perhaps sufficient to declare the creation. It is available to be read and is submitted as Volume III.

A802. One of the principal experts advising the researcher for evidence, gathered and submitted as presented in Volume III was Professor Tom Licence.

A803. His "Letter of Expert Opinion" (12th September, 2024) is attached to Volume III. Noting, Professor Tom Licence, MA, MPhil, PhD, FHEA, FRHistS, FSA, is Professor of Medieval History, University of East Anglia, Senior Research Fellow, Magdalene College, Cambridge.

A804. Professor Licence's check of the veracity of the evidence submitted in Volume III, and completed on the 12th September, 2024, led him to find in favour of the petitioners' statement that, on balance of probabilities, Edgar the Aetheling was created an Earl by William I.

End Volume II, 24th September, 2024.

This page is intentionally left blank.

ATTACHMENT 1 –

William Hay's (1850-1926), Simmie/Justice Adoptive Family

This page is intentionally left blank.

William Hay's (1850-1926) brother John Simmie (1861-1950)

A1-1. As submitted at paragraph A283, page 97 above, the researcher's 11-year-old eleven year old 2nd great grandfather, William Hay/Simmie (1850-1926), disembarked from the ship Marco Polo in March 1862 in Melbourne, along with eight other family members including his legal parents, John Simmie (1823-1867) and Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice, and his one-year-old adoptive brother John Simmie (1861-1950).

A1-2. William Hay's infant brother in 1862, John Simmie (1861-1950) later went on to become Mayor of Echuca on multiple occasions. He and his sister Mary "Ann" Irons (1863-1959), nee Simmie, are the biological children of John Simmie (1823-1867) and Anne Simmie (1822-1877) nee Justice, and biologically speaking, siblings John and Anne are William Hay's 1st maternal cousins, and distant cousins descending also from the 1709, Mclean-Bain marriage union:

Mr. J. Simmie Was Leading Townsman

The death in Camray on Tuesday of Mr John Simmie of Hare Street marks the passing of one of Echuca's oldest citizens, and a man who devoted the greater part of his life to public service. He was several times Mayor of Echuca, and there was scarcely a public organisation of importance which did not receive his active support over almost half a century.

Deceased who came here as a child witnessed the development of the Echuca district in all its phases, and left his mark on many of its activities.

He was born in Scotland in 1860 at Bishopbriggs and came to Australia in 1862 with his parents in the ship "Marco Polo," the passage occupying 3 months, although the ship was one of the fastest of the old trading clippers. His parents settled in Melbourne, then a young town of less than 30 years, and here John Simmie received his education. At an early age he came north to live with an uncle at Cornelia Creek and he gained experience in station work. In his early twenties he became manager and later owner of Strathallan sheep station.

After 25 years he came to live in Echuca and built "Strathallan" in Hare Street, which has been his home for 44 years. In nearly half a century Mr. Simmie has seen Echuca grow from a small river township to one of the most flourishing centres in the Murray Valley.

In 1878 he married Miss Catherine Jenkins of Golden Square and was fortunate in having one who so capably helped him in his many public offices.

TOWNSMAN

During his long residence in Echuca Mr. Simmie gave fine service to the town. He was for many years a member of the Borough Council and was several times elected Mayor.

For over 30 years he was a valued member of the Hospital Board of Management, and a foundation member of the Bowling and Lawn Tennis Clubs.

For many years he was a most active worker for the Mechanics Institute. He was a Past Master and Life member of the Millewa Masonic Lodge and recently received from Grand Lodge the rare medal presented for 50 years unbroken service.

For over 40 years Mr. Simmie was a member of St. Andrew's Church. He was a generous supporter and served as executive of the Board of Management and Representative Elder of the Session to Assembly for a longer period than any other on record of the Church's history here.

He was also a member of the High School Council and was always interested in the progress of our schools. For over three decades he has been a financial member of the I.O.O.F. He was president of a former Agricultural Society of Echuca and District and also a member of the Echuca Cemetery Trust for a great many years. For over 20 years he has been a Justice of the Peace and gave faithful service to the Courts.

The public owe much to such men who, like Mr. Simmie, are willing to give long and arduous service for the community. In his 90th year his labours are ended but his works for others will live on and serve as a reminder of the pioneers of our town.

General sympathy will be given to his son, John and daughter Catherine of Echuca, in their bereavement.

The large number of friends from Echuca and district who attended the funeral yesterday afternoon, bore testimony to the high esteem in which the late Mr. Simmie was held. After a service at St. Andrew's Presbyterian Church, conducted by Rev. H. W. R. Norwood, assisted by Rev. T. Menzies-Miller, a former Minister of St. Andrew's, with Mrs. Eddy at the organ, the lengthy cortege moved to the Echuca Cemetery.

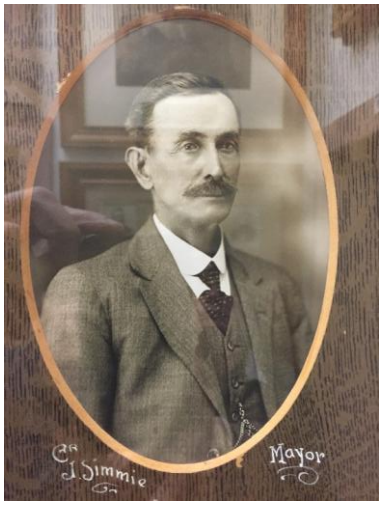
Included among the large number of floral tributes, were wreaths from St. Andrew's Kirk Session; Members of P.W.M.U., Echuca; Wor. Master, Officers and Brethren Millewa Masonic Lodge No. 47; President and Members of Echuca Bowling Club; A. and P. Society, Echuca; Echuca Cemetery Trustees; State School Committee; Members of Ladies' Benevolent Society; Members of Echuca Mark Lodge; Members Echuca Croquet Club; Committee of Management Echuca District and Hospital; Echuca Branch Red Cross.

The coffin-bearers were: Messrs. W. A. Lynch, A. Slorach, A. B. Matthews, H. Fraser, W. Pankhurst and M. Watson.

Messrs. O. Curtis, A. Sutherland, L. Edwards, E. Adamson, R. McKindlay and G. Phillipson were the pall-bearers.

Rev. H. W. R. Norwood officiated at the graveside.

A1-3. The researcher's 2nd great granduncle John Simmie (1861-1950), Mayor of Echuca, and biological distant relative, is pictured below:



A1-4. John married Catherine Jenkins (1872-1947). They had two children: John Macarthur Simmie (1899-1958) and Catherine Loftus Simmie (1901-1991). Daughter Catherine died unmarried and without issue. John and wife Catherine, and spinster daughter Catherine the younger all rest in the same plot in Echuca Cemetery (Australia and New Zealand, Find A Grave Index, 1800s-Current; Record details - Name: John Simmie; Birth Date: 1861; Death Date: 1950; Cemetery: Echuca Cemetery; Burial or Cremation Place: Echuca, Campaspe Shire, Victoria, Australia):

A1-5. John Simmie and Catherine Simmie, nee Jenkins patrilineal genealogical legacy is extant, Shown below is their bloodline tied to the researcher's cousin by distant degree, John Stuart Simmie (1953-). This John Simmie (1953-) has four siblings, Ross, Carole, Colin and Andrew):

John Simmie 1861-1950 = Catherine Jenkins 1872-1947
Parents of John Macarthur Simmie

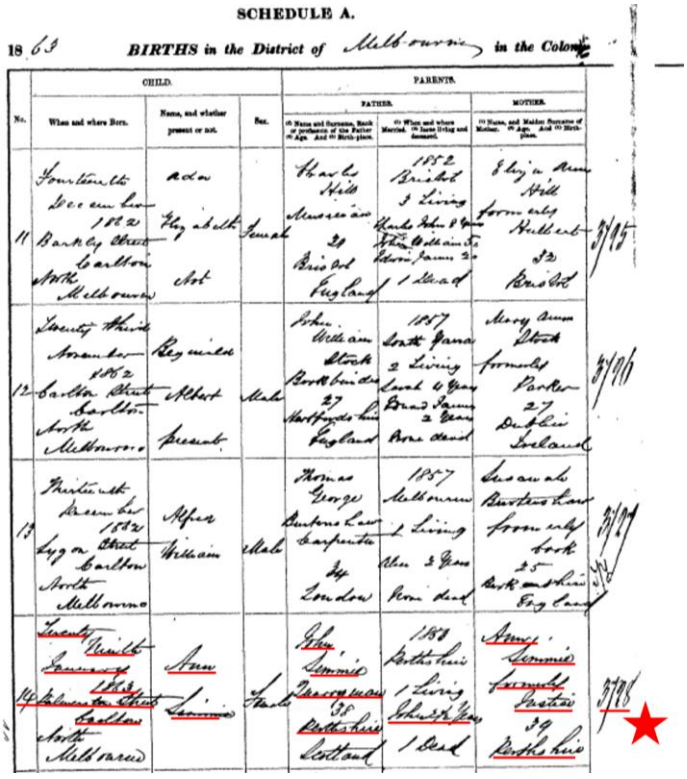
John Macarthur Simmie 1899-1958 = Ida Robson 1896-1989
Parents of John Henry Simmie

John Henry Simmie 1931-2007 = Janice Fay Legge-
Parents of John, Ross, Carole, Colin and Andrew Simmie

John Stuart Simmie 1953-
3rd cousin 1x removed (ditto, Ross, Carole, Colin and Andrew)

William Hay's (1850-1926) sister, Mary Ann Irons (1863-1959)

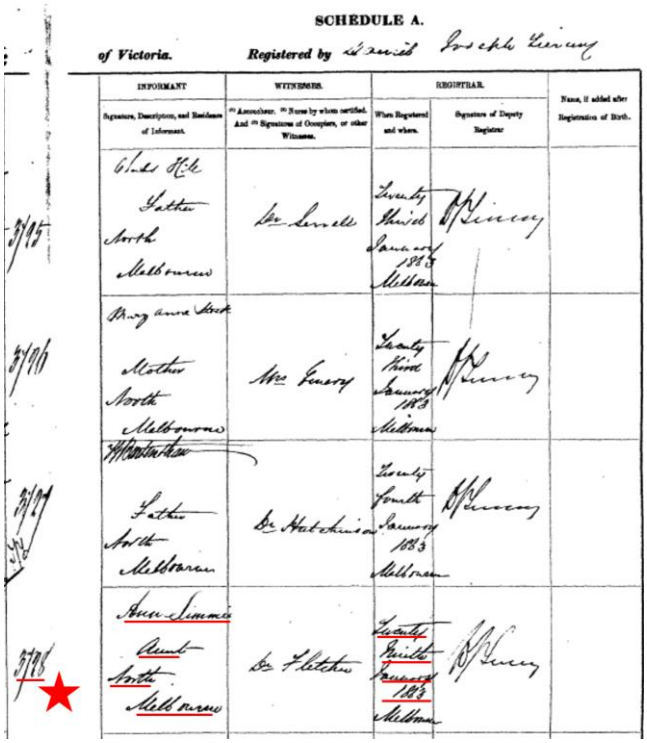
A1-6. John Simmie's (1861-1950) biological sister MaryAnn Irons (1863-1959) (nee Simmie), was born in Melbourne of 29th January 1863 at 14 Palmerston Street Carlton. Her birth name is Ann Simmie but given as habit "Mary" became her preferred first name (Victoria, Australia, Birth Index, 1837-1917; Record details – Name: Ann Simmie; Birth Registration Date: 29th January, 1863; Birth Registration Place: 14 Palmerston Street, Carlton, Victoria, Australia; Father: John Simmie; Mother Maiden: Name: Justice; Reference Number: 25545):



SCHEDULE A.

18 63 BIRTHS in the District of Melbourne in the Colony

No.	CHILD. When and where Born.	Name, and whether present or not.	Sex.	PARENTS. FATHER. Name and Surname, Rank or profession of the Father, Age, And Birth-place.	FATHER. When and where Married. Name living and deceased.	MOTHER. Name, and Maiden Surname of Mother. Age. And Birth-place.	
11	Fourteenth December 1862 Barkly Street Carlton North Melbourne	Elizabeth Not	Female	Charles Hill Mercantile 29 Bristol England	1852 Bristol 3 Living Charles John 8 Years Edwin William 5 Edwin James 2 1 Dead	Elizabeth Ann Hill formerly Hulbert 32 Bristol	3/95
12	Twenty third November 1862 Carlton Street Carlton North Melbourne	Reginald Albert Present	Male	John William Stock Bookbinder 27 Hertfordshire England	1857 South Yarra 2 Living Lucas 6 Years Bread James 3 Years Born dead	Mary Ann Stock formerly Parker 27 Dublin Ireland	3/96
13	Thirteenth December 1862 Lygon Street Carlton North Melbourne	After William	Male	Thomas George Bantons Law Carpenter 34 London	1857 Melbourne 1 Living Ellen 3 Years Born dead	Susannah Bantons Law formerly Cook 25 Kirk Oswald Cumberland England	3/97
14	Twenty Ninth January 1863 Palmerston Street Carlton North Melbourne	Ann Simmie	Female	John Simmie Mercantile 38 Perthshire Scotland	1850 Perthshire 1 Living Edward 8 Years 1 Dead	Mary Simmie formerly Justice 32 Perthshire	3/98



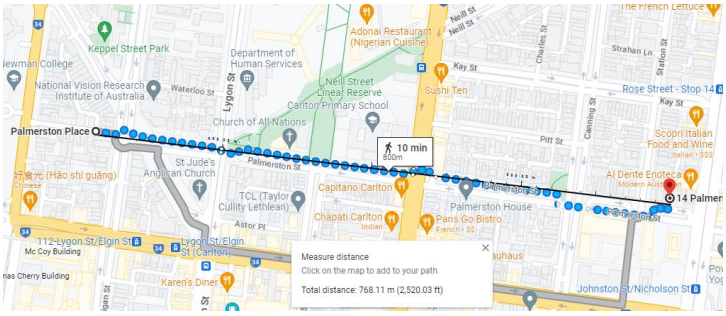
SCHEDULE A.

of Victoria. Registered by David Joseph Emery

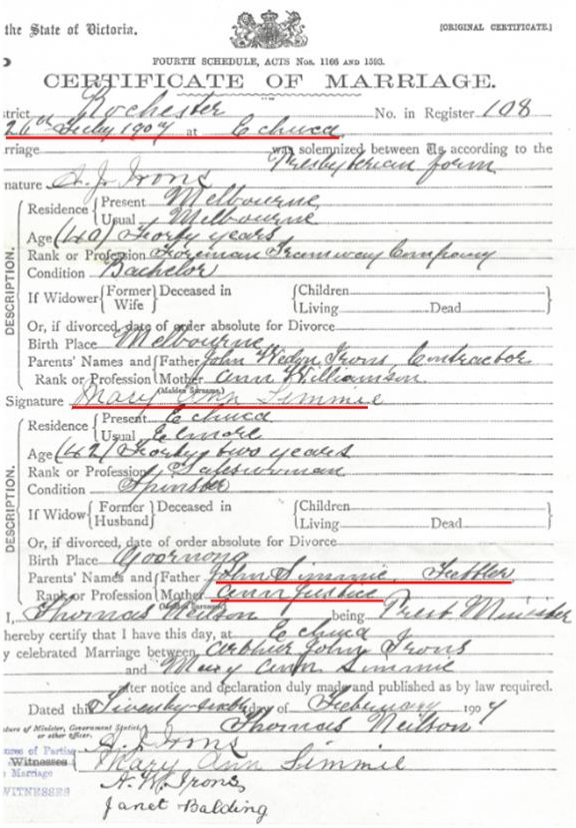
INFORMANT. Signature, Description, and Residence of Informant.	WITNESSES. Accoucheur. Nurse by whom certified. And Signature of Occupier, or other Witness.	REGISTRAR. When Registered and where.	REGISTRAR. Signature of Deputy Registrar	Name, if added after Registration of Birth.	
Elizabeth Hill Father North Melbourne	Dr Lovell	Twenty third January 1863 Melbourne	D J Emery		3/95
Mary Ann Stock Mother North Melbourne	Mrs Emery	Twenty third January 1863 Melbourne	D J Emery		3/96
Thomas Bantons Law Father North Melbourne	Dr Hutchinson	Twenty fourth January 1863 Melbourne	D J Emery		3/97
Ann Simmie Aunt North Melbourne	Dr Fletcher	Twenty Ninth January 1863 Melbourne	D J Emery		3/98

A1-7. "Mary Ann" Simmie's (1863-1959) born "Ann Simmie," birth record is valuable in pin pointing upon arrival in the Colony of Victoria, where William Hay lived, determined precisely upon her birth at her parents' residence at 14 Palmerston Street Carlton. Present was Flora Simmie (1827-1897), nee Penny fairly assumed to have acted as mid-wife enabling safe arrival of the birth of Mary Ann.

A1-8. This was prior to shortly thereafter, then residing at another home brother George Simmie (1828-1906) built for her parents nearby, at Palmerston Place, Carlton. The latter home being previously attributed as their first place of abode upon arrival:



A1-9. Mary Ann Irons (1863-1959) nee Simmie, as she preferred to be named, and her husband John "Arthur" Irons's (1864-1942) marriage certificate, is submitted below (Source: Echuca Museum):



the State of Victoria. [ORIGINAL CERTIFICATE.]

FOURTH SCHEDULE, ACTS Nos. 1166 AND 1513.

CERTIFICATE OF MARRIAGE.

District of Rochester No. in Register 108

26 July 1904 at Echuca

Marriage was solemnized between us according to the Presbyterian form

DESCRIPTION.

Surname J. F. Irons

Residence { Present Melbourne / Usual Melbourne

Age (last) Forty years

Rank or Profession Victorian Tramway Company

Condition Bachelor

If Widower { Former Wife } Deceased in { Children Living / Dead }

Or, if divorced, date of order absolute for Divorce

Birth Place Melbourne

Parents' Names and Rank or Profession { Father John Wedge Irons, Contractor / Mother Anna Williamson }

Signature J. F. Irons

DESCRIPTION.

Surname Simmie (Maiden Surname)

Residence { Present Echuca / Usual Echuca }

Age (last) Forty two years

Rank or Profession Gentlewoman

Condition Spinster

If Widow { Former Husband } Deceased in { Children Living / Dead }

Or, if divorced, date of order absolute for Divorce

Birth Place Geelong

Parents' Names and Rank or Profession { Father John Simmie Settler / Mother Anna Justice }

I, Thomas Melton being Priest Minister

hereby certify that I have this day, at Echuca

y celebrated Marriage between Arthur John Irons

and Mary Ann Simmie

after notice and declaration duly made and published as by law required.

Dated this Twenty-sixth day of February 1904

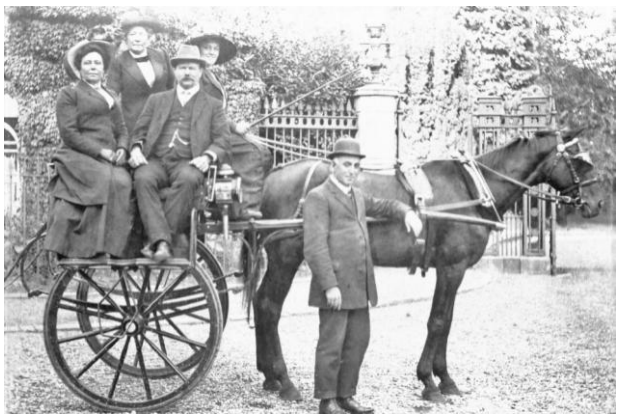
Thomas Melton

Witnesses { J. F. Irons / Mary Ann Simmie / N. M. Irons / Janet Balding }

A1-10. The facsimile which is certificate of marriage above confirms she. "Mary" Ann Simmie is the daughter of John Simmie and Ann Simmie (nee Justice), giving her age at the time of marriage as 42 years old, rather than 44.

A1-11. Pictured left below also in 1908 is the researcher's 2nd great aunt, Mary Ann Irons (1863-1959), nee Simmie, the daughter of John Simmie (1823-1867) and Ann Justice (1822-1877), late of Palmerston Place, Carlton, Victoria pictured with her 1st cousin, Janet Balding (1853-1941):

A1-12. Below, Mary Ann Irons (1863-1959), nee Simmie pictured back row far right with whip in hand and smiling. Standing behind her far-left back row is Janet Trewick (1853-1941) nee Simmie. Seated in the front row are unidentified close blood relatives also making the trip:



A1-13. Janet Trewick (1853-1941), nee Simmie, the daughter of William Simmie (1825-1901) late of Elmore, Victoria and his wife Flora Simmie (1827-1897), nee Penny and is further pictured below with her husband Thomas Matthew Trewick (1846-1922):

A1-14. Janet was born on the 26th November 1853 at Liff Benvie and Invergowrie, Angus Scotland, and died 14th March 1941 at Elmore, Victoria. Husband Thomas was born on the 30th March 1846 at Seaton Delavel, Northumberland, England and died 17th November 1922 at Runnymede, Victoria. They were married on the 11th July 1900 at Elmore, Victoria.

A1-15. Janet was known as "Ayah" the Scottish word for Aunt by her niece Janet Louisa Balding (1891-1979) who was practically the same as Janet and Thomas Trewick's adopted daughter (Informant, Louise Perry of Melbourne, 6th November, 2023).

A1-16. Recognising further that Janet and Thomas stepped in to raise Louise Perry's grandmother, Janet Louisa Balding (1891-1979), from the time she was two days old, and immediately after her biological mother Annie Balding, nee Simmie, Louise's great grandmother died (Ibid, Louise Perry).

William Hay's (1850-1926) uncle & aunt William and Flora Simmie

A1-17. The middle brother of William Hay's (1850-1926) adoptive father John Simmie (1823-1867), William Simmie (1825-1901) married Flora Penny (1827-1897) in Scotland.

A1-18. After migrating to Melbourne in 1862 they occupied a house in Palmerston Place neighbouring William's eldest brother John Simmie's (1823-1867) house, and also in the same street, and built by their youngest brother George who settled in Melbourne first, in 1851.

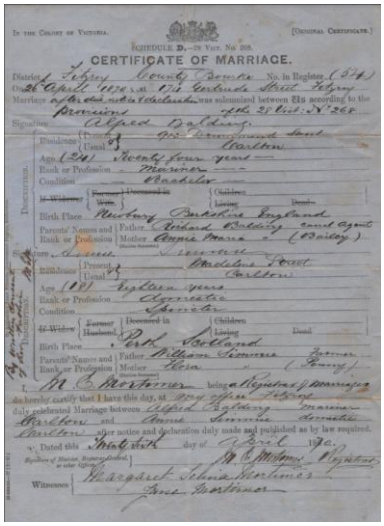
A1-19. A few years later William and Flora Simmie, nee Penny left Palmerston Place Carlton to make Elmore, Victoria their home. John and William's younger brother, is George Simmie (1828-1906), MP was the founding partner of Simmie, Fraser and Craig Company. The elder of the three Simmie brothers, John Simmie (1823-1867) is the researcher 3rd great grandfather by Scotland's adoption laws.

A1-20. A limited account of William and wife Flora Simmie, nee Penny's genealogical legacy now follows. Whereas the submissions that follow are for their eldest and youngest of their five children:

- **Annie Simmie (1852–1891) married Alfred Balding (1846-1923).**
- Janet Trewick (1853-1941), nee Simmie.
- John Simmie (1857-1915).
- George Simmie (1863-1937).
- **James Simmie (1866-1897) married Janet Aberline (1866-1954).**

<u>Annie Simmie and Alfred Balding</u>

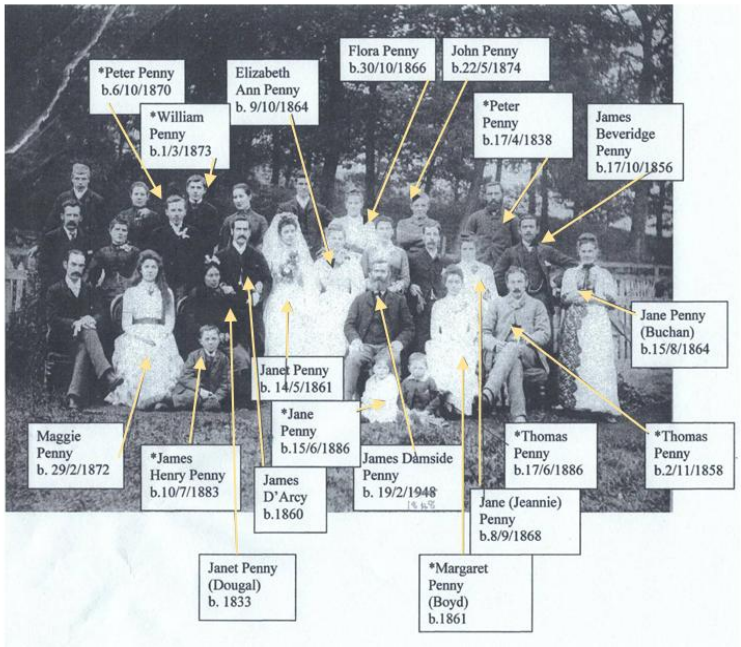
A1-21. Below is the marriage certificate of William Hay (1850-1926) first cousin (biological and by adoption law), Annie Simmie (1852-1891) who married Alfred Balding (1847-1923) (Source Louise Perry, Melbourne) (Victoria BDM, Certificate of Marriage; District of Fitzroy; County Bourke for Alfred Balding; Aged 24 years; Spouse: Annie Simmie, Aged 18 years of Madeline Street Carlton; Date of Marriage: 26th April 1870, daughter of William Simmie, Farmer and Flora Penny):



CERTIFICATE OF MARRIAGE.

A1-22. Annie Balding (1852-1891) nee Simmie is pictured below along with husband Alfred Balding (1847-1923) as an older man. They went on to have 14 children (Image source: Louise Perry of Melbourne). Annie is the researcher's 2nd cousin x 4 times removed. She died just after Janet Louisa Balding's birth in 1819 (Image source: Louisa Perry of Melbourne:

A1-23. Her mother, Flora Simmie (1827-1897) nee Penny's younger brother, James Damside Penny (1848-), is seated in the front row. The photograph was taken at the wedding of Janet Penny (1861-) and James D'Arcy (1860-) at Darmoch, Caputh, Perthshire, Scotland in Scotland on the 16th October 1889 (Source: Louisa Perry, Melbourne after being received from her contemporary cousin in Scotland, Heather June Williams):



A1-24. Below is an extract taken from the Penny family bible, Scotland submitted by Louise Perry for this family history book confirming also in the process Janet and James D Árcy's marriage details (Perry, L, 2023, Extract from Penny Family of Scotland, Submitted 5th November 2023):

JANET PENNY was born on 14 May 1861 in Logie, Perthshire, Scotland. She died on 23 Mar 1947 in Margate, Kent, England (Thanet 5b 1105). She married JAMES D'ARCY on 16 Oct 1889 in Darnoch, Caputh, Perthshire, Scotland, son of Thomas D'ARCY and Mary JOICE. He was born about 1860 in Carrick-Macross, County Monaghan, Ireland. He died on 01 Aug 1951 in Margate, Kent, England (Thanet 5b 603 - Aged 90).

Janet Simmie and Thomas Mathew Trewick

A1-25. The forementioned Janet Louisa Balding's (1891-1979) (Refer paragraph A291, p102) was the youngest of Alfred and Annie Balding, nee Simmie's 14 children. Janet is pictured below, aged 20 years, with her biological aunt, and adoptive mother, "Ayah" Janet Trewick (1853-1941), nee Simmie (refer paragraph, A290, p101).

A1-26. Ayah raised Janet as her own in Victoria, after Annie Balding, nee Simmie died in practice, akin also to the Scotland irregular law of adoption.

A1-27. Interestingly, "Ayah", a Scottish name of endearment for Aunt. Janet Trewick, nee Simmie, otherwise known as Ayah, raised her niece, Janet Louise Balding (1891-1979) after Ayah's sister, Annie Balding nee Simmie's died as her adopted daughter in 1891.

A1-28. The precise nature of the adoption practice used is uncertain. Suffice to say based on family custom and practice, it may have been the same as the legal Scotland irregular system which applied to Janet Trewick's 1st cousin, William Simmie/Hay (1850-1926).

A1-29. Janet Louisa Balding's (1891-1979) and Ayah are photographed visiting Ireland in 1911 (Image source, Ibid Louise Perry):

A1-30. Below is Janet "Ayah" Trewick (1853-1941), nee Simmie, otherwise known by the family as Janet is also the researcher's 1st cousin, five times removed pictured at her home at Methven, Elmore, Victoria in 1933, celebrating her 80th birthday (Ibid image, Louise Perry):

A1-31. Submitted further is a circa 1915 image of "Methven" (Ibid image, Louise Perry):

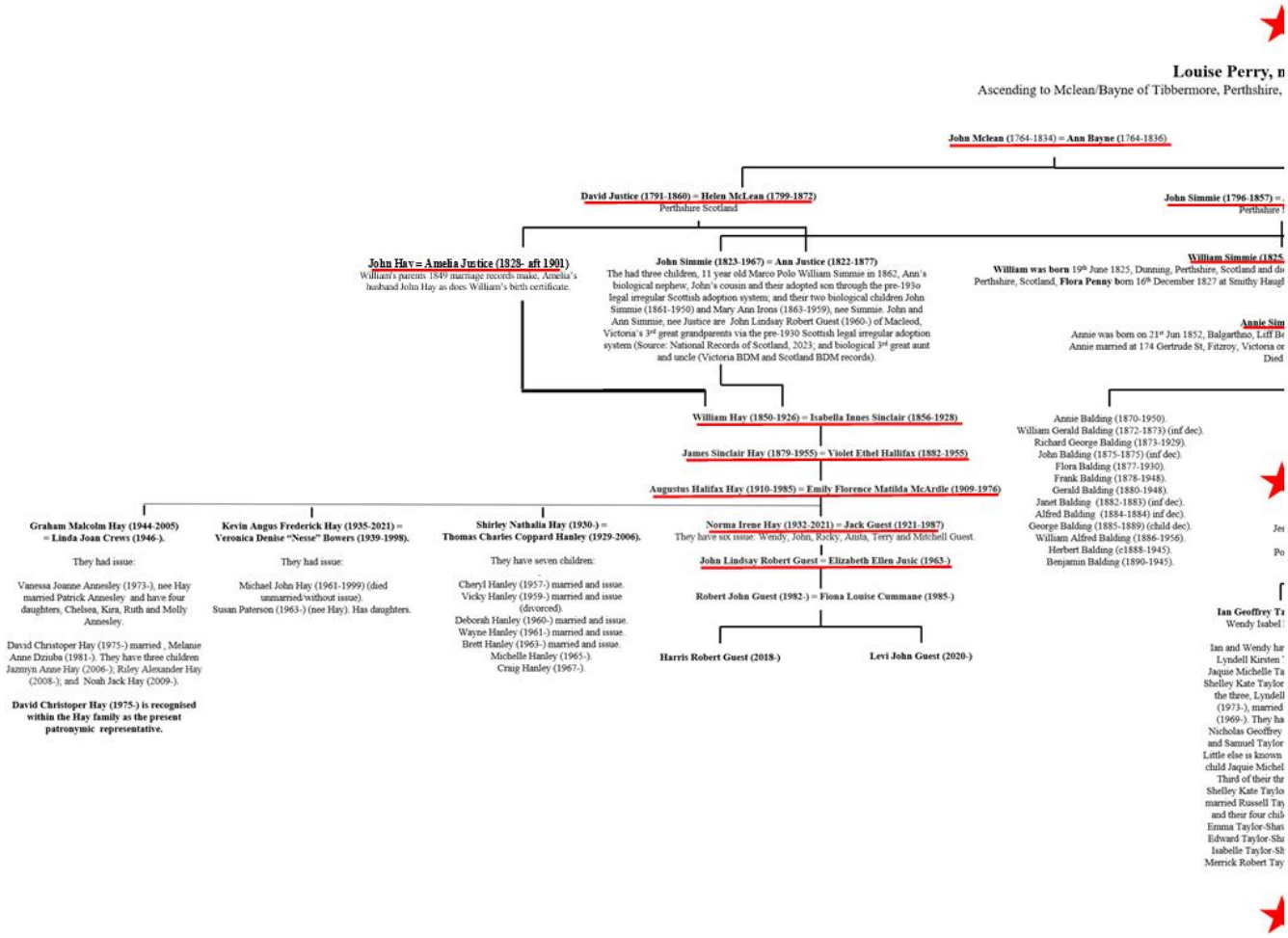
A1-32. Janet Louise Parsons (1891-1979), nee Balding inherited Ayah's Methven property at Elmore, and remained living there as her family home up until shortly before she died in 1979.

A1-33. Janet Louisa Balding (1891-1979) and her husband Cyril Rupert Parsons (1895-1979):

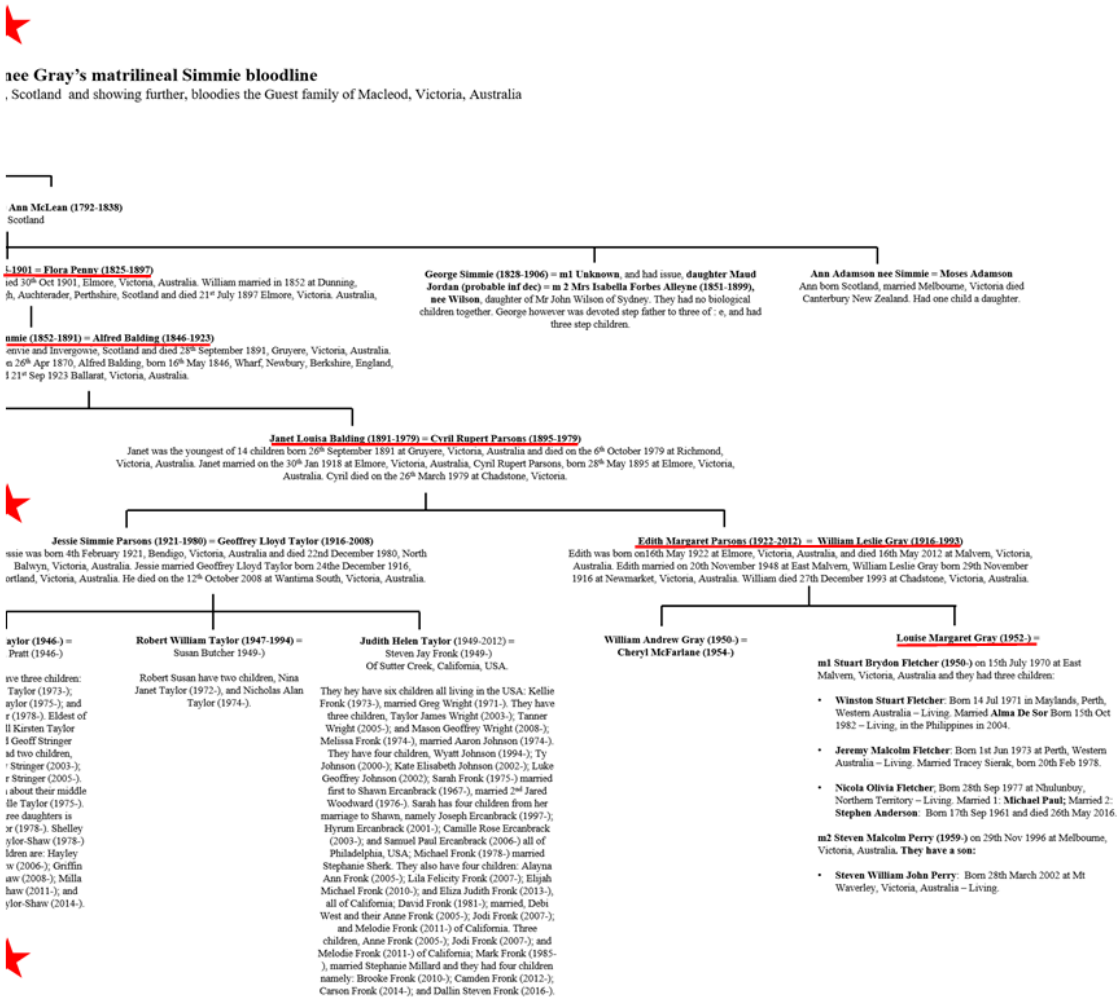
A1-34. They are buried together at Elmore Cemetery:

A1-35. The contributor to this line of family research, Louise Margaret Perry (1952-), nee Gray, is the zero participant in the chart which follows across the next two pages. Louise's brother William Andrew Gray (1950-), married Cheryl McFarland, and thereby enjoys the same family heritage.

Left hand side of the Simmie-Mclean bloodline enjoyed by Louise Perry, nee Gray
(some further enlargement may be required):


Louise Perry, n
Ascending to Mclean/Bayne of Tibbermore, Perthshire,
John Mclean (1764-1834) = Ann Bayne (1764-1836)
David Justice (1791-1860) = Helen McLean (1799-1872)
Perthshire Scotland
John Simmie (1796-1857) =
Perthshire
John Hay = Amelia Justice (1828- aft 1901)
William's parents 1849 marriage records make, Amelia's husband John Hay as does William's birth certificate.
John Simmie (1823-1967) = Ann Justice (1822-1877)
The had three children, 11 year old Marco Polo William Simmie in 1862, Ann's biological nephew, John's cousin and their adopted son through the pre-193o legal irregular Scottish adoption system; and their two biological children John Simmie (1861-1950) and Mary Ann Irons (1863-1959), nee Simmie. John and Ann Simmie, nee Justice are John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) of Macleod, Victoria's 3rd great grandparents via the pre-1930 Scottish legal irregular adoption system (Source: National Records of Scotland, 2023; and biological 3rd great aunt and uncle (Victoria BDM and Scotland BDM records).
William Simmie (1825
William was born 19th June 1825, Dunning, Perthshire, Scotland and du
Perthshire, Scotland, Flora Penny born 16th December 1827 at Smithy Haugl
Annie Sim
Annie was born on 21st Jun 1852, Balgarthno, Liff Be
Annie married at 174 Gertrude St, Fitzroy, Victoria or
Died
William Hay (1850-1926) = Isabella Innes Sinclair (1856-1928)
James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955) = Violet Ethel Hallifax (1882-1955)
Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985) = Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1909-1976)
Annie Balding (1870-1950).
William Gerald Balding (1872-1873) (inf dec).
Richard George Balding (1873-1929).
John Balding (1875-1875) (inf dec).
Flora Balding (1877-1930).
Frank Balding (1878-1948).
Gerald Balding (1880-1948).
Janet Balding (1882-1883) (inf dec).
Alfred Balding (1884-1884) inf dec).
George Balding (1885-1889) (child dec).
William Alfred Balding (1886-1956).
Herbert Balding (c1888-1945).
Benjamin Balding (1890-1945).
Graham Malcolm Hay (1944-2005) = Linda Joan Crews (1946-).
They had issue:
Vanessa Joanne Annesley (1973-), nee Hay married Patrick Annesley and have four daughters, Chelsea, Kira, Ruth and Molly Annesley.
David Christoper Hay (1975-) married , Melanie Anne Dzuiba (1981-). They have three children Jazmyn Anne Hay (2006-); Riley Alexander Hay (2008-); and Noah Jack Hay (2009-).
David Christoper Hay (1975-) is recognised within the Hay family as the present patronymic representative.
Kevin Angus Frederick Hay (1935-2021) = Veronica Denise "Nesse" Bowers (1939-1998).
They had issue:
Michael John Hay (1961-1999) (died unmarried/without issue).
Susan Paterson (1963-) (nee Hay). Has daughters.
Shirley Nathalia Hay (1930-) = Thomas Charles Coppard Hanley (1929-2006).
They have seven children:
Cheryl Hanley (1957-) married and issue.
Vicky Hanley (1959-) married and issue (divorced).
Deborah Hanley (1960-) married and issue.
Wayne Hanley (1961-) married and issue.
Brett Hanley (1963-) married and issue.
Michelle Hanley (1965-).
Craig Hanley (1967-).
Norma Irene Hay (1932-2021) = Jack Guest (1921-1987)
They have six issue: Wendy, John, Ricky, Anita, Terry and Mitchell Guest.
John Lindsay Robert Guest = Elizabeth Ellen Jusic (1963-)
Robert John Guest (1982-) = Fiona Louise Cummane (1985-)
Harris Robert Guest (2018-)
Levi John Guest (2020-)
Ian Geoffrey Ta
Wendy Isabel
Ian and Wendy ha
Lyndell Kirsten
Jaquie Michelle Ta
Shelley Kate Taylor
the three, Lyndell
(1973-), married
(1969-). They ha
Nicholas Geoffrey
and Samuel Taylor
Little else is known
child Jaque Michel
Third of their thr
Shelley Kate Taylo
married Russell Tay
and their four chil
Emma Taylor-Shaw
Edward Taylor-Sha
Isabelle Taylor-Sh
Merrick Robert Tay

Right hand side of the Simmie-Mclean bloodline enjoyed by Louise Perry, nee Gray


ıee Gray's matrilineal Simmie bloodline
, Scotland and showing further, bloodies the Guest family of Macleod, Victoria, Australia
Ann McLean (1792-1838)
Scotland
-1901 = Flora Penny (1825-1897)
ied 30th Oct 1901, Elmore, Victoria, Australia. William married in 1852 at Dunning,
h, Auchterader, Perthshire, Scotland and died 21st July 1897 Elmore, Victoria. Australia,
nmie (1852-1891) = Alfred Balding (1846-1923)
envie and Invergowrie, Scotland and died 28th September 1891, Gruyere, Victoria, Australia.
n 26th Apr 1870, Alfred Balding, born 16th May 1846, Wharf, Newbury, Berkshire, England,
21st Sep 1923 Ballarat, Victoria, Australia.
George Simmie (1828-1906) = m1 Unknown, and had issue, daughter Maud Jordan (probable inf dec) = m 2 Mrs Isabella Forbes Alleyne (1851-1899), nee Wilson, daughter of Mr John Wilson of Sydney. They had no biological children together. George however was devoted step father to three of : e, and had three step children.
Ann Adamson nee Simmie = Moses Adamson
Ann born Scotland, married Melbourne, Victoria died Canterbury New Zealand. Had one child a daughter.
Janet Louisa Balding (1891-1979) = Cyril Rupert Parsons (1895-1979)
Janet was the youngest of 14 children born 26th September 1891 at Gruyere, Victoria, Australia and died on the 6th October 1979 at Richmond, Victoria, Australia. Janet married on the 30th Jan 1918 at Elmore, Victoria, Australia, Cyril Rupert Parsons, born 28th May 1895 at Elmore, Victoria, Australia. Cyril died on the 26th March 1979 at Chadstone, Victoria.
Jessie Simmie Parsons (1921-1980) = Geoffrey Lloyd Taylor (1916-2008)
ssie was born 4th February 1921, Bendigo, Victoria, Australia and died 22nd December 1980, North
Balwyn, Victoria, Australia. Jessie married Geoffrey Lloyd Taylor born 24the December 1916,
ortland, Victoria, Australia. He died on the 12th October 2008 at Wantirna South, Victoria, Australia.
aylor (1946-) =
Pratt (1946-)
ve three children:
Taylor (1973-);
aylor (1975-); and
r (1978-). Eldest of
ll Kirsten Taylor
Geoff Stringer
ad two children,
Stringer (2003-);
r Stringer (2005-).
about their middle
lle Taylor (1975-).
ree daughters is
r (1978-). Shelley
ylor-Shaw (1978-)
ldren are: Hayley
w (2006-); Griffin
aw (2008-); Milla
haw (2011-); and
ylor-Shaw (2014-).
Robert William Taylor (1947-1994) =
Susan Butcher 1949-)
Robert Susan have two children, Nina Janet Taylor (1972-), and Nicholas Alan Taylor (1974-).
Judith Helen Taylor (1949-2012) =
Steven Jay Fronk (1949-)
Of Sutter Creek, California, USA.
They hey have six children all living in the USA: Kellie Fronk (1973-), married Greg Wright (1971-). They have three children, Taylor James Wright (2003-); Tanner Wright (2005-); and Mason Geoffrey Wright (2008-); Melissa Fronk (1974-), married Aaron Johnson (1974-). They have four children, Wyatt Johnson (1994-); Ty Johnson (2000-); Kate Elisabeth Johnson (2002-); Luke Geoffrey Johnson (2002); Sarah Fronk (1975-) married first to Shawn Ercanbrack (1967-), married 2nd Jared Woodward (1976-). Sarah has four children from her marriage to Shawn, namely Joseph Ercanbrack (1997-); Hyrum Ercanbrack (2001-); Camille Rose Ercanbrack (2003-); and Samuel Paul Ercanbrack (2006-) all of Philadelphia, USA; Michael Fronk (1978-) married Stephanie Sherk. They also have four children: Alayna Ann Fronk (2005-); Lila Felicity Fronk (2007-); Elijah Michael Fronk (2010-); and Eliza Judith Fronk (2013-), all of California; David Fronk (1981-); married, Debi West and their Anne Fronk (2005-); Jodi Fronk (2007-); and Melodie Fronk (2011-) of California. Three children, Anne Fronk (2005-); Jodi Fronk (2007-); and Melodie Fronk (2011-) of California; Mark Fronk (1985-), married Stephanie Millard and they had four children namely: Brooke Fronk (2010-); Camden Fronk (2012-); Carson Fronk (2014-); and Dallin Steven Fronk (2016-).
Edith Margaret Parsons (1922-2012) = William Leslie Gray (1916-1993)
Edith was born on16th May 1922 at Elmore, Victoria, Australia, and died 16th May 2012 at Malvern, Victoria, Australia. Edith married on 20th November 1948 at East Malvern, William Leslie Gray born 29th November 1916 at Newmarket, Victoria, Australia. William died 27th December 1993 at Chadstone, Victoria, Australia.
William Andrew Gray (1950-) =
Cheryl McFarlane (1954-)
Louise Margaret Gray (1952-) =
m1 Stuart Brydon Fletcher (1950-) on 15th July 1970 at East Malvern, Victoria, Australia and they had three children:
Winston Stuart Fletcher: Born 14 Jul 1971 in Maylands, Perth, Western Australia – Living. Married Alma De Sor Born 15th Oct 1982 – Living, in the Philippines in 2004.
Jeremy Malcolm Fletcher: Born 1st Jun 1973 at Perth, Western Australia – Living. Married Tracey Sierak, born 20th Feb 1978.
Nicola Olivia Fletcher; Born 28th Sep 1977 at Nhulunbuy, Northern Territory – Living. Married 1: Michael Paul; Married 2: Stephen Anderson: Born 17th Sep 1961 and died 26th May 2016.
m2 Steven Malcolm Perry (1959-) on 29th Nov 1996 at Melbourne, Victoria, Australia. They have a son:
Steven William John Perry: Born 28th March 2002 at Mt Waverley, Victoria, Australia – Living.

This page is intentionally left blank.

Sellwood bloodline

A1-36. The researcher's distant cousin David Sellwood, a contributor to this family research, descends from William Simmie (1825-1901) and Flora Penny (1827-1897) through their daughter Annie Balding (1870-1950) who married William Sellwood (1858-1926).

A1-37. The simple lineal family chart submitted below shows the distant blood tie the researcher shares with David whereby both family members enjoy direct descent from John Mclean (1764-1834) and Ann Bain (1764-1836) late of the Parish of Tibbermore, Perthshire, Scotland:

John Mclean 1764-1834 = Ann Bain 1764-1836
Parents of Ann McLean
David Sellwood and John L.R. Guest's shared
5th great grandparents

Ann McLean 1792-1838 = John Simmie 1796–1857
Parents of William Simmie
David Sellwood's 4th great grandparents, John L.R. Guest's
Ann is John L.R. Guest's 4th great grandaunt /uncle

William Simmie 1825-1901 = Flora Penny 1827-1897
Parents of Ann Simmie
David Sellwood's 3rd great grandparents, John L.R. Guest adoptive 3rd great grandaunt/uncle & William Simmie further John. LR. Guest
William is John L.R. Guest's 1st cousin 4 x removed

Ann Simmie 1852-1891 = Alfred Balding 1847-1923
Parents of Annie Balding
David Sellwood's 2nd great grandparents
Ann is John L.R. Guest's 2nd cousin 4 x removed

Annie Balding 1870-1950 = William Sellwood 1858-1926
Parents of Frank Simmie Sellwood
David Sellwood's great grandparents
Annie is John L.R. Guest's 3rd cousin 3 x removed

Frank Simmie Sellwood 1895-1976 = Ellen C Conacher 1895–1985
Parents of Reginald David Sellwood
David Sellwood's grandparents
Frank John L.R. Guest's 4th cousin 2 x removed

Reginald David Sellwood 1929-2000 = Marion Isabel Delaney 1934–1998
Parents of David Sellwood & John L.R. Guest's
Reginald is John L.R. Guest's 5th cousin 1x removed

David Sellwood 1955- =
John L.R. Guest's 6th cousin

This page is intentionally left blank.

Hamblin bloodline

A1-38. Another of the researcher's distant cousin Mike Hamblin also enjoys direct descent from John Mclean 1764-1834 and Ann Mclean 1764-1836, nee Bain of the Parish of Tibbermore, Perthshire, Scotland.

A1-39. The chart below recognises his descent also from David's lineal ancestors William Simmie (1825-1901) and his wife, Flora Penny (1827-1897).

A1-40. Their son John Simmie 1857-1915, brother of Annie Simmie who married Arthur Balding, married Jamesina Harper (1861-1923). It is the latter members John Simmie and Jamesina Simmie, nee Harper who are Mike Hamblin's maternal great grandparents:

John Mclean 1764-1834 = Ann Bain 1764-1836
Parents of Ann McLean
Mike Hamblin's 4th great grandparents.
John L.R. Guest's 5th great grandparents

Ann McLean 1792-1838 = John Simmie 1796–1857
Parents of William Simmie
Mike Hamblin's 3rd great grandparents.
Ann is John L.R. Guest's
4th great grandaunt /uncle

William Simmie 1825-1901 = Flora Penny 1827-1897
Parents of John Simmie
Mike Hamblin's 2nd great grandparents.
William is John L.R. Guest adoptive 3rd great grandaunt/uncle &
William Simmie further John. LR. Guest
1st cousin 4 x removed

John Simmie 1857-1915 = Jamesina Alice Harper 1861-1923
Parents of Annie Balding
Michael Hamblin's great grandparents
John is John L.R. Guest's 2nd cousin 4 x removed

Alice "Garm" Simmie 1895-1989 = Alan Martin Crowe 1890-1934
Michael Hamblin's grandparents
Alice "Garm" is John L.R. Guest's 3rd cousin 3 x removed

Ailsa Jean Crowe 1917-2016 = Clive Sydney "Bill" Hamblin 1918-1979
Michael Hamblin's parents
Alisa is John L.R. Guest's 4th cousin 2 x removed

Michael "Mike" Hamblin = Jillian Sylvia "Jill" Moore 1953-2019
Parents of Melissa Hamblin and Tamara Hamblin, grandparents of
Oliver, Miam, Sophie, Samu and Benji
Mike is John L.R. Guest's
5th cousin 1x removed

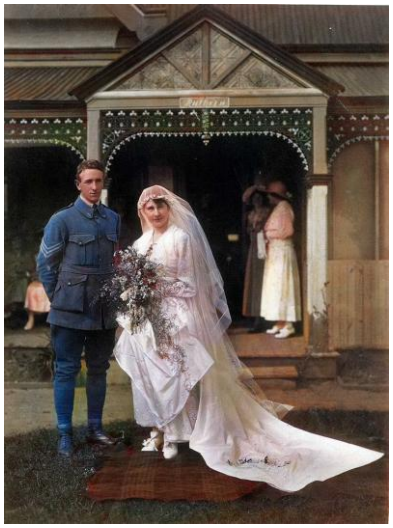
IN MEMORY OF
JILLIAN SYLVIA HAMBLIN
(NEE MOORE)
19. 9. 1953 – 2. 3. 2019
DEARLY LOVED WIFE OF MICHAEL
LOVING MOTHER OF MELISSA & TAMARA
DOTING GRANDMOTHER OF
OLIVER, MIA, SOPHIE, SAMU & BENJI
~ A BEAUTIFUL PERSON NEVER FORGOTTEN ~

A1-41. Mike's great grandparents John Simmie (1857-1915) and Jamesina Alice Simmie (1861-1923), nee Harper are pictured below. The photograph also immediately below to the right of the page captures Jamesina later in life, enjoying a moment with her and John's grandchildren, Ailsa Jean Crowe (1917-2016) and her brother Alan John Crowe (1918-1968).

A1-42. Ailsa went onto marry Bill Hamblin and they are Mike Hamblin's parents (Image circa 1919 and images in this section attributed to David Sellwood/Louise Perry):

A1-43. Pictured below is John and Jamesina Simmie's daughter, Alice "Garm" Simmie (1895-1889) with husband Alan Martin Crowe (189-1934) on their wedding day at "Ruthven" Echuca.

A1-44. They married at the John and Jamesina Simmie's (Alice, a.k.a "Garm's" childhood home) also called Ruthven, in Echuca, on the 20th September 1916 (Victoria, Australia, Marriage Index, 1837-1950; Record details - Name: Alice Simmie; Gender: Female; Marriage Registration Date; 20 September, 1916; Marriage Registration Place: Echuca, Victoria, Australia; Spouse: Alan Martin Crowe; Reference Number: 7666). Also submitted below is Garm as an older woman (Hamblin family images attributed to Mike Hamblin):



A1-45. Below is a photograph of Alice "Garm" Simmie and Alan Crowe's maternal grandson, Michael "Mike" Hamblin (1952-) with his beloved late wife, Jill, both found enjoying a gala night out:

A1-46. Next is a photograph of Mike and Jill Hamblin celebrating their nuptials on the 20th July 1972:

A1-47. Mike was no slouch when it came to playing Australian rules football (ex: Caulfield, Werribbee and Melbourne U19 player), as this article in the Melbourne Newspaper attests (Sunday Press, May 4 1986):

WHEN does any footballer decide his playing days are over?

We have seen so many VFL stars — and others — who have hung on for those few extra games which have ripped lustre from a great career.

Well, this could be a comeback with a kick!

South Warrnambool non-playing coach Mike Hamblin (ex Caulfield, Werribee and Melbourne under 19s) was forced onto the field last weekend.

Several of his players were injured and unavailable.

Statistics show Hamblin, 30, had 22 possessions in the last half of the match against Mortlake.

South Warrnambool kicked 15.20 — 110 to Mortlake 8.4 — 52.

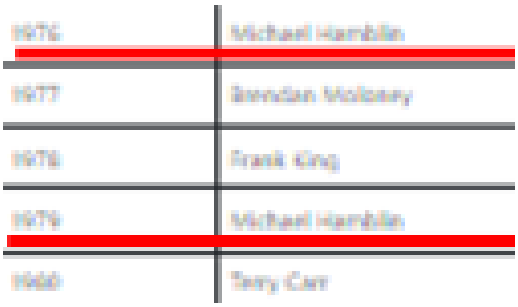
□ □ □

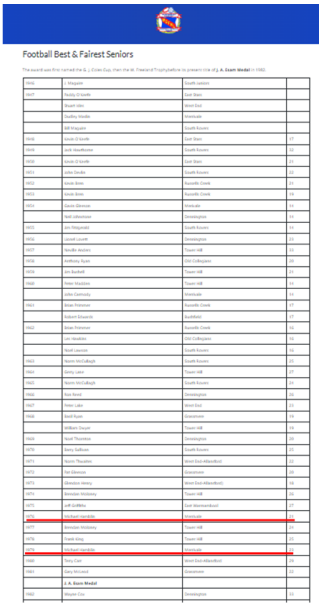
HAMPDEN Football League is re-

SUNDAY PRESS, MAY 4, 1986

A1-48. Such was Mike's contribution to football in the Western District of Victoria that the Warrnambool and District Football & Netball League (WDFNL) named the Football competition's reserve grade Best & Fairest award after him "Mike Hamblin Medal").

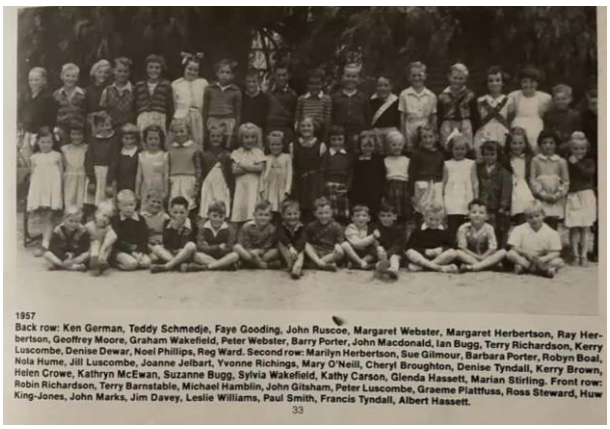
A1-49. Mike won the WDFNL's senior competitions Best & Fairest award twice playing for Merivale Football Club. First in 1976 and again in 1979. The award was first named the G. J. Coles Cup, then the W. Freeland Trophy before its present title of "J. A. Esam Medal" in 1982:





Football Best & Fairest Seniors

A1-50. Submitted below is Mike Hamblin (1952-) at Waaia State School in 1957. He was then aged 5 years and can be found third from the left in the front row. Waaia is situated between Nathalia to its west, and Nurmurkah to its east, and about, 228 kilometres north of the state capital, Melbourne:

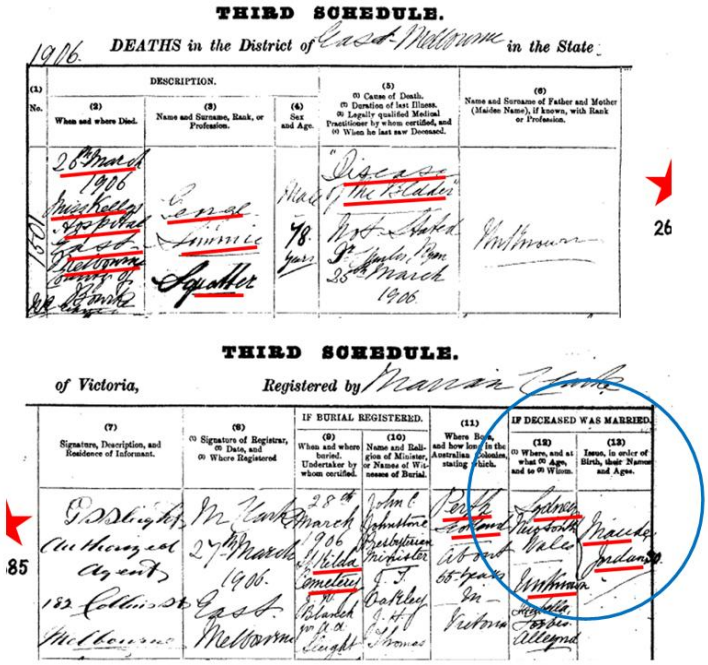


1957
Back row: Ken German, Teddy Schmedje, Faye Gooding, John Ruscoe, Margaret Webster, Margaret Herbertson, Ray Herbertson, Geoffrey Moore, Graham Wakefield, Peter Webster, Barry Porter, John Macdonald, Ian Bugg, Terry Richardson, Kerry Luscombe, Denise Dewar, Noel Phillips, Reg Ward. Second row: Marilyn Herbertson, Sue Gilmour, Barbara Porter, Robyn Boal, Nola Hume, Jill Luscombe, Joanne Jelbart, Yvonne Richings, Mary O'Neill, Cheryl Broughton, Denise Tyndall, Kerry Brown, Helen Crowe, Kathryn McEwan, Suzanne Bugg, Sylvia Wakefield, Kathy Carson, Glenda Hassett, Marian Stirling. Front row: Robin Richardson, Terry Barnstable, Michael Hamblin, John Gitsham, Peter Luscombe, Graeme Plattfuss, Ross Steward, Huw King-Jones, John Marks, Jim Davey, Leslie Williams, Paul Smith, Francis Tyndall, Albert Hassett.
33

William Hay's (1850-1926) uncle George Simmie (1928-1906)

A1-51. The researcher's 3rd great granduncle, and 1st cousin (x 5 removed), George Simmie (1828-1906), married twice. The name of his first wife is unknown but evidence of the marriage is in the form of notation of the marriage on his death certificate submitted below. Evidence makes certain before becoming Mrs Simmie, she was Miss Jordan.

A1-52. Recognised on George's death certificate he and his first wife had a daughter named Maud Jordan, suggesting Maud Jordan was probably born out of wedlock (Australia Death Index, 1787-1985; Record details – Name; George Simmie "Squatter"; Death Age: 78; Birth Date: 1828; Death Date: 1906; Death Place: Melbourne, Victoria; Registration Date: 1906; Registration Place: Australia; Registration Number: 2685; Daughter: Maud Jordan):



THIRD SCHEDULE.

1906. DEATHS in the District of East Melbourne in the State of Victoria,

(1) No.	DESCRIPTION. (2) When and where Died.	(3) Name and Surname, Rank, or Profession.	(4) Sex and Age.	(5) Cause of Death. Duration of last Illness. Legally qualified Medical Practitioner by whom certified, and When he last saw Deceased.	(6) Name and Surname of Father and Mother (Maiden Name), if known, with Rank or Profession.
1501	28th March 1906 Melbourne Hospital East Melbourne Henry G. Parkes	Capt. Simmie Squatter	Male 78 years	Disease of Kidneys Not stated Present at death 28th March 1906	Not Known

26

THIRD SCHEDULE.

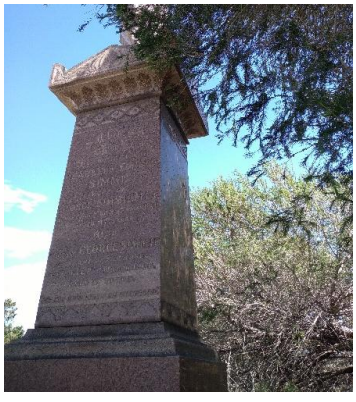
of Victoria, Registered by

(7) Signature, Description, and Residence of Informant.	(8) Signature of Registrar, Date, and Where Registered	IF BURIAL REGISTERED. (9) When and where buried. Undertaker by whom certified.	(10) Name and Religion of Minister, or Name of Witnesses of Burial.	(11) Where Born, and how long in the Australian Colonies, stating which.	IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED. (12) Where, and at what Age, and to Whom.	(13) Issue, in order of Birth, their Names and Ages.
G. S. Blight Authorised Agent 182 Collins St East Melbourne	M. Clark 27th March 1906. East Melbourne	28th March 1906 St Kilda Cemetery Blanch for H. A. Leight	John C. Johnstone Presbyterian Minister J. T. Oakley J.P. St Thomas	Born in England about 65 years in Victoria	Sydney Twigg Wales Widower Angelina Jordan Deceased	Maud Jordan

85

A1-53. In lieu of any further information about George's first wife Miss Jordan, later Mrs Simmie, and the same for their daughter Maud Jordan, it is fair to presume Maud died as an infant.

A1-54. Below is George's burial monument located at St Kilda Cemetery where he, George Simmie (1828-1906), MLC, rests. It is believed his gravestone inscription was carved by his nephew, and stone carver mentee, William Hay/Simmie (1850-1926) in 1906/7:



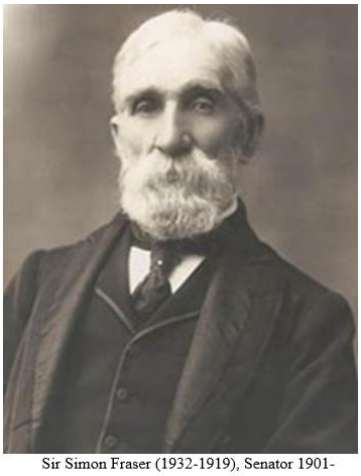
A1-55. Not to be overlooked, is George's occupation on his death certificate "Squatter". A most rare description validating him as significant figure in the modern history of Australia and a genuine part of the Australian Squattocracies', meaning:

> *"Squatting" is a historical Australian term that referred to someone occupying a large tract of Crown land to graze livestock. Initially often having no legal rights to the land, squatters became recognised by the colonial government as owning the land by being the first (and often the only) European settlers in the area. Eventually, the term "Squattocracy", a play on "aristocracy", came into usage to refer to squatters and the social and political power they possessed ("Squattocracy," State Library of NSW, 12th February 2016, Retrieved 19th March, 2018).*

A1-56. A closer look at how it is written on his death certificate submitted as part of article A378, p125, is the emphasis given to it by the hand of the informant to his death record.

A1-57. George Simmie (1828-1906) is photographed below to the left alongside a portrait of his long-term business partner, and best friend, fellow squatter, pastoralist, and also construction business entrepreneur, from about 1855 until George died in 1906, Sir Simon Fraser (1832-1919) (refer paragraph A289-A290, p99):

George Simmie (1828-1906), Coloney of Victoria, MP, John L.R. Guest's 1960-1st cousin, 5 times removed and guardian of William Hay 1851-1926 (J.L.R. Guest's 2nd great grandfather) born Tibbermore, Perth, Scotland (Photograph sourced from Mike Hamblin, Rochester, Victoria, a distant cousin of the zero participant, J.L.R. Guest)



Sir Simon Fraser (1932-1919), Senator 1901-1913, Coloney of Victoria MP. He was born in Big Brook (now known as Lorne), a small rural township in Pictou County, Nova Scotia, Canada. Fraser's father was born in Beauly, Inverness-shire, Scotland, and claimed descent from Clan Fraser of Lovat. He was a business partner and life long friend of George Simmie and paternal grandfather of Australia's 22nd Prime Minister, John "Malcom" Fraser (Photograph sourced from Mike Hamblin, Rochester, Victoria, a distant cousin of the zero participant, J.L.R. Guest).

A1-58. Sir Simon Fraser (1832-1919)was a Canadian-Australian businessman, pastoralist, and politician. He was a Senator for Victoria from 1901 to 1913, having previously been a member of the colonial Parliament of Victoria (Hawkins, F, 1991, p116, Critical Years in Immigration: Canada and Australia Compared. Toronto, Canada).

A1-59. In 1855, After arriving from Canada in 1853 he travelled to the Bendigo goldfields, In 1855 he moved to Melbourne and opened a store on Elizabeth Street, where he engaged in horse trading and imported produce from Sydney.

A1-60. He met George Simmie (1828-1906) in 1855 and with him expanded into construction. They began tendering for government road, bridge and railway contracts along with partner Mathew Craig (Redmond, E.M., 1972, "Fraser, Sir Simon (1832–1919)". Australian Dictionary of Biography, Vol. 4, National Centre of Biography, Australian National University).

A1-61. George Simmie, like Simon Fraser (1832-1919), was a successful entrepreneur, who also became wealthy from their shared partnering and business dealings in construction, grazing and banking. George was equally a prominent and respected public figure.

A1-62. When George died this is what the Kyabram Free Press and Rodney and Deakin Shire Advocate, Victoria, Friday 30th March 1906, Page 5, wrote about him:

Death of the Hon. G. Simmie.
News of the death of the Hon. George Simmie on Monday last was received with sincere regret throughout this district. Some few days ago he entered Dr Ryan's private hospital, Melbourne, to undergo an operation for a bladder trouble. At the time it was feared that there would be great danger in view of his advanced age, and this proved to be the case, for although the operation was successfully performed, his 'strength was not sufficient for him to rally. On Friday, Dr Ryan, made the announcement that Mr Simmie's recovery was hopeless, and he gradually sank and died as above stated.

The "Herald" gave an interesting sketch of George's life:

The Honourable George Simmie, who represented the Northern Province in the Legislative Council of Victoria, was a native of Perth, Scotland, and was the son of the late Mr John Simmie, farmer, of that place. He was educated at the local school, and on the completion of his school days, was apprenticed to the trade of a stone mason. In 1852, at the age of 24, he came out to Victoria and on his arrival journeyed to the Ovens goldfields. His connection with practical mining was not, however a lengthy one, and after a successful though short career, he returned to Melbourne. Building operations were then in full swing, and Government was pushing on public works, so Mr Simmie started contracting, at first on a small scale, but gradually increasing his operations until he acquired a large and important connection. For a long period of years, he successfully negotiated extensive contracts for the Victorian Government, private companies, and firms in different parts of the country.

In conjunction with Messrs Collier and Barry he carried out the building of the greater portion of the railway line from Bendigo to Echuca, and the famous Preston tunnel, which pierces right through a hill in order to convey water from the Coliban river, was efficiently and successful completed by Mr Simmie. In 1875 he also fulfilled the contract for the purifying works at Lovely Bank, in connection with the Geelong water supply scheme. Meanwhile he had begun to associate himself with Australian pastoral pursuits.

Continued …

In 1865, in partnership with the Hon. Simon Fraser (1832-1919), and Mr Craig, Mr Simmie purchased the Mt. Hutton station, Queensland, where they entered largely into the breeding and fattening of stock.

Eventually Mr Simmie closed his contracting business, sold out his interest in the Mt Hatton Estate, and purchased the interests of his partners in the Cornelia Creek station, Koyoga, which he owned till he died. In 1889 he became a candidate for a seat in the Legislative Council, and was elected after a keenly fought contest. On the expiry of his term of office, he was re-elected unopposed, and in 1901, when his seat became vacant by effluxion of time, he was again re-elected without opposition.

When under the New Constitution Act, reducing the number of members of both Houses, the re-distribution of seats took place, Mr Simmie, owing to the fragile state of his health, did not seek re-election, and thus terminated his political career after an uninterrupted service of 15 years.

In 1875 the late Hon. George Simmie married Mrs Alleyne, daughter of Mr John Wilson, Sydney There was, however, no issue of the marriage, but the. lady (who predeceased him by some years) left a family of one son and two daughters by her previous marriage. Of these, Mr Robert Alleyne, who is married to a daughter of Mr James Gunn, JP., of Koyuga was in close attendance on the deceased gentleman up to the time of his death, and resided at Cornelia Creek. The deceased gentleman took an active interest in and was an active supporter of the Echuca Presbyterian Church, of which he was a member, laying the foundation stone of the handsome new building which is erected at the corner of Hare and Pakenham-streets. The practical aid which he extended at the time was the means of lightening the load which was consequent on the new building.

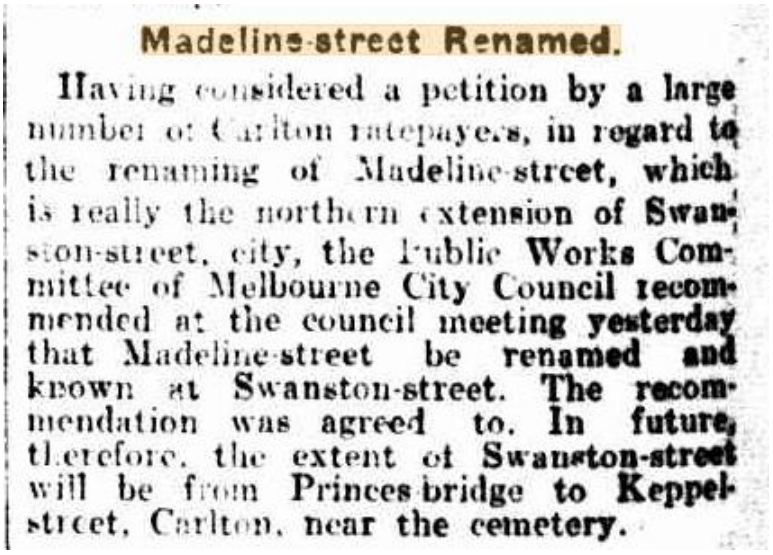
He also laid the foundation of the Echuca District Hospital, of which he was a life governor. Besides being the chairman of directors and the largest shareholder in the L. Kickham Flour Milling Co. Ltd., of this town, the deceased gentleman was one of the promoters and principal shareholders' and chairman of directors in the Deniliquin and Moama Railway Co. His estate, which runs to within a mile and a half of the Echuca Post Office, is a very fine one, and the solid, nature of recent improvements in the shape of fencing will long last as one evidence of the thoroughness of the methods adopted by the late Mr Simmie.

The present researcher is compelled to add as post script, George Simmie (1828-1906) the younger man, in 1862, built two homes prior to the arrival of his elder brother John and William Simmie settling their families at Palmerston Street Carlton immediately upon their arrival from Ruthvenfield, Perthshire Scotland to Melbourne, in the Colony of Victoria. Moreover, such was George's pleasure his brothers and their families joined him in Victoria he gifted these homes to his brothers. This obviously gave them, the John and William Simmie family units a great start in their adopted homeland.

A1-63. The researcher is inclined to view that earlier, in the 1850s, George built for the researcher's 4th great grandparents, James Sinclair (1821-1893) and Elizabeth Sinclair (1821-1877), nee Inglis, the house below that they owned.

A1-64. The home still stands and is located 400 meters from the Simmie homes in Palmerston Place Carlton that also stand. The Sinclair family home enjoyed by the researcher pioneer Sinclair family to Melbourne prior to 1854, can found at number 862 Swanston Street, Carlton and is pictured below.

A1-65. The researcher knows the property pictured above, to be Sinclair's "Link's Cottage." It is situated at the northern end of Madeline Street, Carlton with the new post 1925 address given as 862 Swanston Street Carlton occurred in 1925 (The Age, Melbourne, Victoria, Tuesday 3rd March, 1925. Page, General News, Madeline Street Renamed):



Madeline-street Renamed.

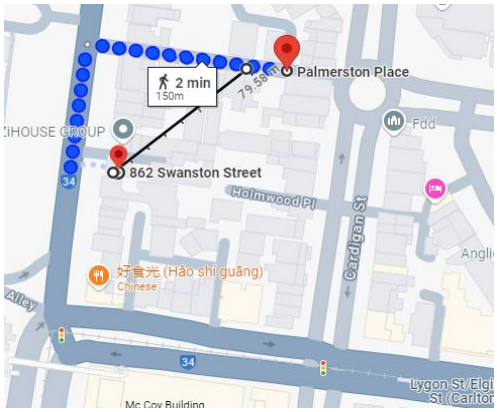
Having considered a petition by a large number of Carlton ratepayers, in regard to the renaming of Madeline-street, which is really the northern extension of Swanston-street, city, the Public Works Committee of Melbourne City Council recommended at the council meeting yesterday that Madeline-street be renamed and known as Swanston-street. The recommendation was agreed to. In future, therefore, the extent of Swanston-street will be from Princes-bridge to Keppel-street, Carlton, near the cemetery.

A1-66. It is James and Elizabeth Sinclair, nee Innes's daughter, Isabella who would later marry George's nephew, William Hay/Simmie (1850-1926), who lived literally around the corner.

A1-67. All of these homes situated in a tiny cluster in Carlton, and all of the same ilk and period, including the type of materials constructed were doubtless built by George Simmie (1828-1906) when he constructed homes, early in his illustrious career. All of these homes stand today.

A1-68. Pictured below is the researcher John L.R. Guest (1960-), and his 1st cousin once removed Noah Jack Hay (2009-) and his father, the researcher's first cousin, David Christopher Hay (1975-) on the corner of Palmerston Place and Madeline Street, Carlton (Swanston Street):

A1-69. The Google GPS proximity map submitted below shows the 150 - meter distance between the two households, 862 Madeline Street (Swanston) Street Carlton, where Isabella was raised, and 8 Palmerston Place Carlton, which was William Hay/Simmie (1850-1926) home. Noting further, Isabella Sinclair (1856-1928) who was aged 16 years in 1872, when she married 21-year-old William:



A1-70. The home "around the corner" where William Simmie/Hay (1850-1926) was raised [8] Palmerston Place Carlton is one of three bluestone dwelling built by George Simmie (1828-1906).

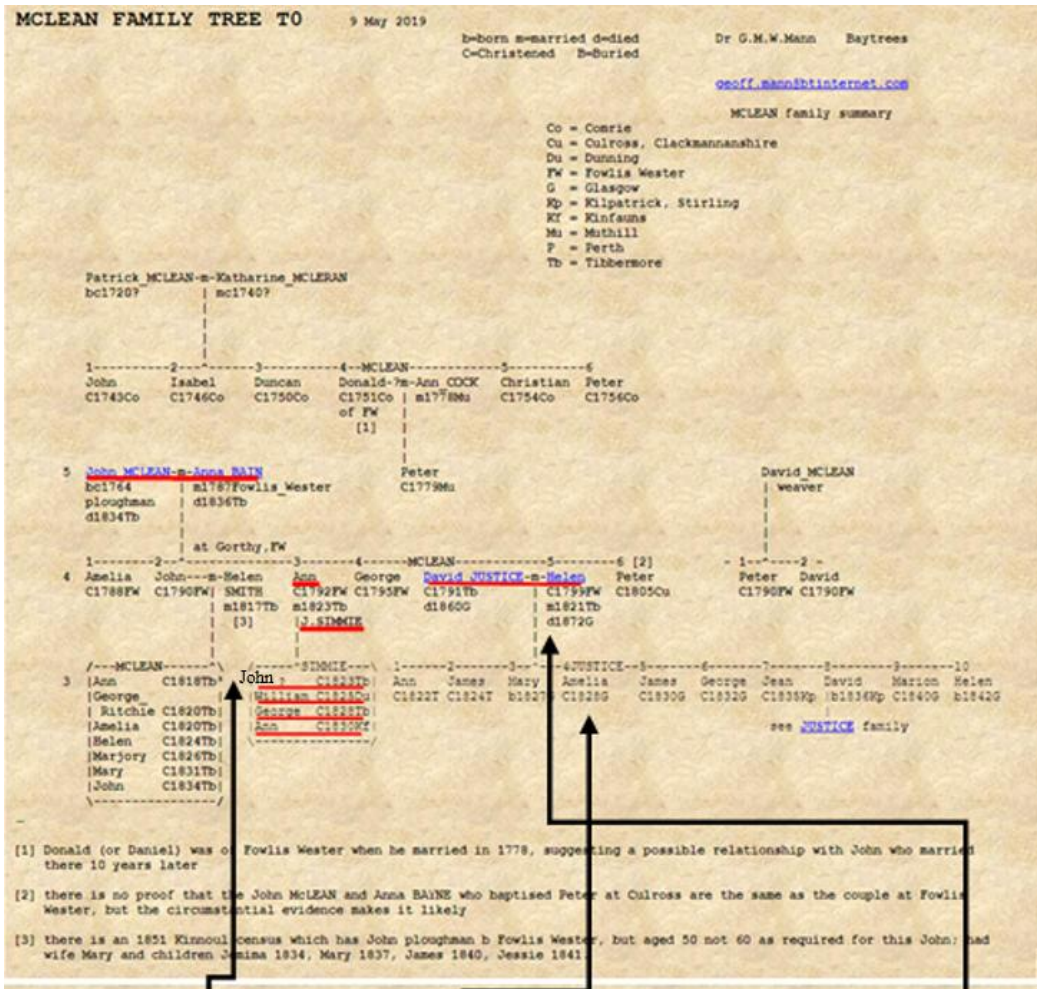
A1-71. Pictured below it bears a remarkable likeness to Links Cottage, 862 Swanston Street Carlton in terms of its basic structure and building materials and the time it was constructed (refer, paragraph A328, above):

A1-72. Pictured above in front of William Simmie/Hay (1850-1926) childhood home, is William's 2nd great grandson David Christopher Hay (1975-) and his son, William's 3rd great grandson, Noah Jack Hay (2009-).

A1-73. Overleaf is submitted Dr Geoffrey Mann PhD (2017) of London, England, trace of the present researcher's John L.R. Guest's Hay/Simmie-Justice-Mclean-Bain bloodline.

A1-74. Using Scotland BDM records, and Australian records, he was able to confirm the researcher lineage springing from the marriage union of John Mclean (1764-1834) and Ann Bain (1764-1836), both late of the Parish of Tibbermore, Perthshire, Scotland.

A1-75. The pedigree chart submitted below is part of Dr Geoffrey Mann PhD (2017) evidence-based trace of the Guest family's Hay/Simmie-Justice-McLean-Bains bloodline:



A1-76. The simple lineal chart submitted below shows the same but includes an update of William Hay (1850-1926) and Isabella Innes Sinclair (1856-1928) genealogical legacy taken to the researcher John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) and his first cousin, David Christopher Hay (1975-):

John McLean 1764-1834 = Ann Baynes 1764-1836
5th great-grandparents of Tibbermore, Perthshire, Scotland

Helen McLean 1799-1872
Daughter of John McLean

Amelia Mary Justice 1828-1901
Daughter of Helen McLean

William Hay 1850-1926
Son of Amelia Mary Justice
2nd great grandfather, first of Victoria, Australia

James Sinclair Hay 1879-1955
Son of William Hay

Augustus Halifax Hay 1910-1985
Son of James Sinclair Hay

Norma Irene Hay 1932-2021 *Daughter of Augustus Halifax Hay*	Graham Malcolm Hay 1945-2005 *Son of Augustus Halifax Hay 1910-1985*
John Lindsay Robert Guest 1960- *Son of Norma Irene Hay*	David Christopher Hay 1975- *Son of Graham Malcolm Hay*

A1-77. The relatively simple family chart listed on the following page shows more easily how the researcher, John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) of Melbourne, Victoria and his 1st cousin David Christopher Hay (1975-) of Perth Western Australia, and their subsequent families relate by blood to the apex Simmie brothers John, William and George late of the Colony of Victoria, as well as their sister Ann Adamson who settled in New Zealand.

JOHN GUEST (1960-) AND DAVID HAY (1975-) CHARTERED DESCENT FROM THEIR 5TH GREAT GRANDPARENTS, JOHN MCLEAN & ANN BAYNE FROM TIBBERMORE, PERTHSHIRE, SCOTLAND

With clarification of bloodies to original immigrant ancestors of Australia

John Mclean (1764 -1834) = Ann Bayne (1764-1836)
Tibbermore, Perthshire, Scotland

David Justice (1791-1860) = Helen McLean (1799-1872)

Ann McLean (1792-1838) = John Simmie (1796-1857)
Parents of John Simmie, William Simmie, George Simmie & Ann Simmie (Adamson) and parents in law of Ann Simmie, nee Justice.

Amelia Justice (1828- aft 1901) = John Hay
Biological parents of William Hay

Ann Simmie (nee Justice) 1822-1877 = **John Simmie 1823-1867**

William Simmie 1825-1901 = Flora Penny 1826-1897

George Simmie 1828-1906
Probably married first – Maud Jordan NSW
M2 – Isabella Forbes Alleyne

Ann Adamson (1830-1906), nee Simmie = Moses Adamson

Adoptive parents of William Hay

Biological relatives of William Hay

William Hay 1850-1926
= Isabella Innes Sinclair (1856-1928)
Otherwise known as 11 year old Marco Polo William Simmie, adopted son of John and Ann Simmie, nee Justice, and buried with them at Melbourne General Cemetery.

James Sinclair Hay (1878-1955) = Violet Ethel Hallifax (1882-1955)

Augustus Hallifax Hay (1910-1985) = Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1909-1976)

Norma Irene Hay (1932-2021) = Jack Guest (1921-1987)

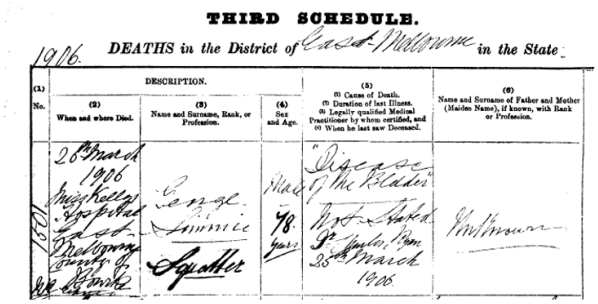
Graham Malcolm Hay (1945-2005) = Linda Crews (1946-)

John L.R. Guest (1960-) = Elizabeth Ellen Jusic (1963-)

ZERO PARTICIPANT # 1
To whom other blood relatives may calculate to family ancestors recognised above.

David Christopher Hay (1975-) = Melanie Anne Dziuba (1981-)

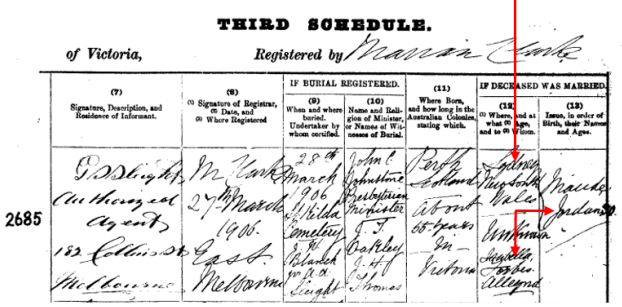
ZERO PARTICIPANT # 2
To whom other blood relatives may calculate to family ancestors recognised above.



THIRD SCHEDULE.

1906. DEATHS in the District of East Melbourne in the State of Victoria, Registered by Frances Clarke

(1) No.	DESCRIPTION. (2) When and where Died.	(3) Name and Surname, Rank, or Profession.	(4) Sex and Age.	(5) (1) Cause of Death. (2) Duration of last Illness. (3) Legally qualified Medical Practitioner by whom certified, and (4) When he last saw Deceased.	(6) Name and Surname of Father and Mother (Maiden Name), if known, with Rank or Profession.
1501	26 March 1906 Anglesea Hospital East Melbourne	George Simmie Squatter	Male 78 years	Disease of the Bladder Not Stated 23 March 1906	Wm Simmie



THIRD SCHEDULE.

of Victoria, Registered by Frances Clarke

(7) Signature, Description, and Residence of Informant.	(8) (1) Signature of Registrar, (2) Date, and (3) Where Registered	IF BURIAL REGISTERED. (9) When and where buried. Undertaker by whom certified.	(10) Name and Religion of Minister, or Names of Witnesses of Burial.	(11) Where Born, and how long in the Australian Colonies, stating which.	IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED. (12) (1) Where, and at what (2) Age, and to (3) Whom.	(13) Issue, in order of Birth, their Names and Ages.
G. S. Knight Authorized Agent 182 Collins St Melbourne	M Clark 27 March 1906 East Melbourne	28 March 1906 Melbda Cemetery Undertaker J. T. Oakley	John C. Johnstone Presbyterian Minister	Perth Scotland about 65 years in Victoria	Sydney New South Wales to Isabella Forbes Alleyne	Marcus Jordan Simmie

2685

TABLE OF NAMES

A

Ada Huntingdon, 270
Adam, 157, 166
Adam and Alyssa Lillee, 157
Adam Hay (1795-1867), 119, 121, 122, 123, 124
Adam Lillee, 157
Adeline Ada" de Warenne, 273
Admiral John Hay (1804), 119
Aethelwulf, 284
Agnes, 167, 169, 175, 180, 191, 218, 219, 237
Agnes Fairfax, 237
Ailsa Jean Crowe 1917-2016, 307
Ajahna Grace Lillee, 157
Alan Martin Crowe, 307, 308
Alfred, 172, 175, 284
Alfred and Annie Balding, nee Simmie, 299
Alfred Balding (1846-1923), 297
Alfred Balding (1847-1923), 297, 298
Alfred Balding 1847-1923, 305
Alfred Gordon Hallifax, 175
Allan Kemakeza, 50
Alyssa Frances Lillee, 157
Ambrose, 131, 184
Ambrose Hallifax, 132, 139, 147
Ambrose John Hallifax (1853-1887), 129, 150
Ambrose John Hallifax 1853-1887, 150
Ambrose William Hallifax, 184, 185
Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874), 130, 131, 136, 137, 144, 155, 182, 184, 185, 195
Ambrose William Hallifax, post and telegraph master, Kyneton, 130
Ambrose William Hallifax's (1821-1874), 134
Amelia Hay (1828-), nee Justice, 15
Amy Richards (1789-1883), 144, 147
Ancelli Aoste (House of Burgundy), 283
Anita Louise Bowen (1964-), nee Guest, 17
Anita Louise Guest, 27
Ann Bain (1764-1836), 305, 317
Ann Bain 1764-1836, 305, 307
Ann Balding (1852-1891) (nee Simmie), 99
Ann Guest, 283
Ann Justice (1822-1877), 295
Ann Mary Irons (1863-1959) (nee Simmie) was, 293
Ann Mclean 1764-1836, nee Bain, 307
Ann McLean 1792-1838, 305, 307
Ann Simmie, 79, 291, 293, 294, 305
Ann Simmie (1822-1877), 15, 77, 79, 99, 291
Ann Simmie (1822-1877), nee Justice, 15, 77, 79, 291
Ann Simmie 1852-1891, 305
Ann Vaughan, 64
Anna Vaughan, 64
Anne Paul, 149, 153, 155, 196
Anne Paul of Canberra, 149
Annie, 129, 174, 175
Annie Balding nee Simmie, 299
Annie Denham, 125
Annie Hallifax, 175
Annie Hallifax (1841-1938) nee Denham, 130
Annie Maria Blakeley (1843-1911), 174, 175
Annie Maria Denham, 129
Annie Maria Denham (1841-1938), 129
Annie Maria Denham (1841-1938)., 129
Annie Maria Hallifax, 126, 128
Annie Maria Turner, 130
Annie Maria Turner (1841-1938), 130
Annie Simmie (1852-1891), 297, 299
Annie Simmie (1852–1891), 297
Annie Simmie (1852-1891) nee Balding, 298
Aoife (Eva) MacMurchada, 283
Arnold Alfred Hallifax, 172
Athon de Courtenay, 283

Augus Hallifax, 125
Augustus, 15, 17, 23, 27, 129, 144, 185, 195
Augustus Halifax, 130
Augustus Halifax Hay, 25, 74, 126, 208
Augustus Halifax Hay (1910-1985), 23, 126
Augustus Hallifax Hay, 15, 17, 23, 27
Augustus Hallifax Hay (1910-1985), 15, 18, 38, 59
Augustus Hallifax Hay (1910-1986), 62
Augustus Hallifax Hay 1910-1985, 64, 65
Augustus Hay (1910-1976), 18
Augustus New Hallifax, 144, 185
Augustus New Hallifax (1825-1902) [I], 144
Augustus New Hallifax (1855-1886), 130
Augustus New Hallifax (1855-1886) II, 130, 131
Augustus New Hallifax [I] (1825-1902), 185
Augustus New Hallifax I (1825-1902), 195
Augustus New Hallifax's [II] (1855-1886), 128, 129
Augustus, "Gus" Hallifax Hay, 27
Aunt Shirley Natalia Hay (1931-)., 61, 62

B

Basina Thuringia, 284
Beatrice Restwold, 215
Beatrice Waterton, 216
Benjamin Matheson, 158
Bepina Naglan, 56
Beringer I, King of Italy, 284
Bishop Samuel Hallifax (1733-1790), 200
Bonnie Annie Denham Hay (1912-1973), 126
Breeanna Lillee, 158
Brett Hanley, 27
Brian Boru, High King of Ireland., 283
Brian S Smith, 202
Butler, R, 146

C

C R Elrington, 202
Captain John William Hay (1824-1857), Captain of His Majesty's 70th Foot and Military Secretary to Lord Harris, 119
Carmen Lillee, 158
Carmen Shirley Lillee., 167
Carmen Shirley Matheson, 167
Carmen Shirley Matheson (1953-) (nee Lillee)., 157
Casper McArdle, 67
Catherine de Burgh, 245, 247
Catherine Hallifax, 182
Catherine Isabel "Katie" Wilson (1903-1989)., 31
Catherine Loftus Simmie (1901-1991), 292
Catherine Simmie, nee Jenkins, 292
Catherine Waterton, 249
Catherine Waterton, nee de Burgh, 247
Cecilie Hallifax, 182
Cerdic, 283, 284
Charles Hallifax, 174
Charles L Halifax, 174
Charles Llewellyn Hallifax, 175
Charles Pratt, 247
Cheryl Anne Pratt (1956-), 49, 55
Cheryl Hanley, 27
Cheryl McFarland, 301
Chlodian de Franks, 284
Chloe and Nicholas Matheson, 158
Christ boys, 172
Christina Isabel Hay (1884-1958), 85
Christina Isabella Hay, 79
Clovis, 283
Constance Assenhull, 241, 243, 244
Craig Hanley, 27
Cyril Francis McArdle (1916-1997), 62
Cyril Rupert Parsons (1895-1979), 300

D

Damien Lillee, 158
Darren John Halifax, 185, 187
Darren John Halifax (our Hallifax clan chief), 155
Darren John Halifax's (1965-), 158
David, 270, 273, 275
David Christopher Hay, 27, 37, 47
David Christopher Hay (1975-), 37, 47, 74, 316, 317, 319
David Christopher Hay (1975-) of Perth Western Australia, 319
David Hay (1975-), 75
David Justice Hay (1918-1918), 126
David Justice Hay (23rd June 1918 -29th July 1918), 28
David Justice Hay 1918-1918, 28
David Sellwood, 305, 307
Dean Lillee, 157, 166
Deborah Hanely, 27
Debra Tanter, 133, 134
Debra Tanter, Chair of the Cemetery Trust, Campbells Creek, Castlemaine, 133
Dennis, 157, 158, 161, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 172, 175, 185, 192, 193
Dennis Keith Lillee, 157, 167, 185
Dennis Keith Lillee (1949-), MBE., AM, 155
Dennis Lillee, 161, 164, 166, 169, 172, 174, 175, 183
Doris Agnes Kneale, 167, 169
Dorothy Josephine "Dossie" McArdle (1923-2005), 62
Douglas Richardson, 253
Dr Geoffrey Mann, 115, 120, 317
Dr Ille, 207, 209
Dr J.W. Walker, 210, 219, 244, 249, 251
Dr Janet Niven (1902-1974), 95
Dr Walker, 215, 244, 248, 251
Dugdale, William, 258

E

Eagan, 283
Ealdgyth, Queen of Wales, 283
Ealhswith, Queen of the Anglo-Saxons, 283
Earl of Kinnoull, 119, 120
Ebony Lillee, 158
Edgar, 278, 279
Edgar Ætheling, 279
Edward, 172, 174, 175, 176, 179, 180, 181, 183, 184, 207, 278, 283, 284
Edward Charles "Diddy" McArdle (1907-1971), 62
Edward Hallifax, 173, 182, 183, 184
Edward I, 218, 223, 224, 230, 232, 233
Edward Marsh, 175
Edward Percy, 220
Edward Restwold, 215, 217, 219
Egan, 283
Egbert Athelings Winchester, 284
Eileen Mary Fenton, 44
Eleanor of Castile, 230, 232, 233
Elizabeth [Richards] [Italics mine],, 146
Elizabeth de Bohun, 234
Elizabeth Ellen Jusic 1963, 65
Elizabeth Ellen Jusic 1963-, 65
Elizabeth Fitzalan, 229, 230, 231, 232, 234
Elizabeth Inglis Hay, 79
Elizabeth Savage, 225, 234, 280
Elizabeth Savile, 239, 240, 241
Elizabeth Sinclair (1821-1877) nee Inglis, 92
Elizabeth Sinclair (1821-1877), nee Inglis, 96
Elizabeth Waterton's, 220
Ella, Brendon and Isabelle Matheson, 158
Ellen Lydia Evans (1884-1948), 126
Elsie "Anne" Naglan, 55, 56
Elsie "Anne" Naglan (1927-), 55
Elsie Frances "Googie" McArdle (1902-1967), 62
Emily Florence Matilda "Bobby" McArdle (1909-1976), 62
Emily Florence Matilda McArdle, 60
Emily Florence Matilda McArdle (1909-1976), 15, 60, 74

Emily Florence Matilda McArdle 1909-1976, 64, 65
Emily Florence Matilda Sandars (1909-1976), was Hay, born McArdle, 23
Emily Florence Orsino (1881-1969), 61
Emily Florence Orsino 1881-1869, 64, 65
Emily Hallifax, 182
Emily McArdle, 59
Emily Morgan, 184
Emily Natalia Hay, 25
Empress Matilda, 233
Ernest Albert Hallifax, 172, 174, 175
Ernest Albert Hallifox, 172
Ethel Violet Hallifax, 74

F

Fellbrigge (Lady), 249, 251, 252
Fine R, 244
Flora Penny (1825-1897) of Elmore, 297
Flora Penny (1827-1897), 101, 294, 297, 305, 307
Flora Penny 1827-1897, 305, 307
Flora Simmie (1822-1897) nee Penny, 295
Flora Simmie (1822-1897), nee Penny, 295
Flora Simmie (1827-1897) nee Penny, 298
Flora Simmie, nee Penny, 294, 297
Florence Hallifax, 175, 180
Florence Maria Hallifax (1877-1895), 126, 127, 128
Florence Maria Hallifax 17879-1895, 73
Florence Wisteria Hay (1903-1974), 73, 126
Francis “Frank” Pratt (1930-), 55
Francis Hallifax, 182
Fred McArdle (1878-1960), 61, 62
Fred Vaughan McArdle, 60
Frederick “Johnny” McArdle (1905-1989), 62
Frederick Vaughan Leslie McArdle 1878-1960, 64
Frederick Vaughan McArdle 1878-1960, 65

G

Geast (Guest), 283
George Francis Robert Harris (1810-1872), Baron Harris, 119
George Simmie, 86, 311, 313
George Simmie (1828-1906), 86, 101, 294, 297, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315
George Simmie (1863-1937), 297
George Sinclair (1759-), 97
George Sinclair (1788-1841), 93
George Sinclair (1850-), 96
Gheast, 283
Giles Ghest, 283
Gladys Lilian Hallifax, 172
Grant Bavister, 11
Guest-Hallifax, 156
Guiscard de Leumesin, 283
Gus Hay (1910-1985), 18
Gyles Guest, 283

H

Halifax, 5, 7, 15, 18, 23, 25, 38, 59, 62, 64, 65, 73, 74, 82, 85, 98, 126, 129, 137, 153, 156, 157, 158, 166, 167, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 184, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 195, 198, 199, 200, 201, 205, 207, 208, 209, 212, 217, 233, 235
Hallifax-Wessex, 211
Hanley, 5, 31, 57, 69, 85, 184
Harriet and Alfred Begbie (1857-1935), 151
Harriet Begbie, nee Hallifax, 150
Harriet Hallifax (1828-1863), nee Richards, 129, 140
Harriet Hallifax, nee Richards, 131
Harriet Maria Begbie (1851-1910), nee Hallifax, 149
Harriet Mariah Begbie, nee Hallifax, 133
Harriet Mariah Hallifax, aged 22 years, 133
Harriet Richards, 131, 132
Harris and Levi Guest, 72
Harris Guest, 65, 72

Harris Guest (2018-), 72
Harris Robert Guest, 5, 15, 98, 235, 258, 280
Harry Mansell Hallifax, 175
Hasler, P.W, 212, 215
Hastings, 255, 257, 258, 265, 269
Hay, 5, 15, 18, 20, 23, 24, 25, 26, 28, 29, 30, 31, 33, 34, 37, 38, 40, 41, 45, 47, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 59, 60, 62, 64, 65, 67, 68, 69, 70, 73, 74, 75, 77, 78, 79, 81, 82, 84, 85, 86, 92, 97, 98, 99, 104, 118, 119, 120, 126, 128, 129, 153, 157, 184, 208, 235, 291, 294, 299, 311, 315, 316, 317, 319
Heather June Williams, 298
Heinrich der Vogler or Heinrich der Finkler (Henry the Fowler), 284
Helen, 158, 165
Helen Hay, 79, 85
Helen Lillee, 165
Helen Munsie, 165
Helen Reddie 1806-1862, 65
Helen Walker (1832-1899), 94, 97
Hen.VI, 244
Henrietta Collander (1802-1849) died aged 46 years, 119
Henry Bowers (1933–1975), 31
Henry Herbert Linegar (1864-1915), 85
Henry I, King of England, 233
Henry II, Emperor of Germany, 279
Henry II, King of England, 233
Henry III, King of England, 233
Henry of Scotland, 273
Henry Percy, 4th Earl of Northumberland, 220
Herbert Hallifax, 175
Hopkinson, 248, 249
Howard and Howard 2001, 249
Hugh and Anna McArdle, nee Vaughan, 64
Hugh Dalton, 44
Hugh McArdle, 64
Hugh X de Lusginan, 283
Humbert Savoy, Founder of the House of Savoy, 283

I

Ian Douglas Campbell Annesley (1881-1973), 44
India Jade Lillee, 157
Irene Meagher, nee Mills, 110
Isabel de Valence, 257, 258
Isabella Hay (1856-1928), 96
Isabella Innes Hay (1856-1928), 30, 79, 92
Isabella Innes Hay (1856-1928) nee Sinclair, 30, 92
Isabella Innes Hay (1856-1928), nee Sinclair, 30, 79, 97
Isabella Innes Sinclair (1853-1854)., 96
Isabella Innes Sinclair (1856-1928), 77, 96
Isabella Innes Sinclair 1856-1928, 98
Isabella Innes Sinclair Hay (1906-1897), 126
Isabella Innes Sinclair Hay (1906-1907), 73, 74, 126
Isabella Innis Hay (1856-1926), 97
Isabella Innis Hay (1856-1928), nee Sinclair, 96
Isabella of Angoulême, 255
Isabella Sinclair (1856-1928), 316
Isabella Williatt, 77
Ivan Naglan, 56

J

Jack and Winifred Pratt, 56
Jack Bowers (1927–?)., 31
Jack Guest (1921-1987), 17
Jack Guest 1921-1987, 64, 65
James and Lucy McArdle, nee Mcintosh, 64, 65
James and Violet Hay, 73
James Benjamin Bowers (1900-1966), 31
James D'Arcy (1860-), 298
James Damside Penny (1848-), 298
James Dey Keith, 85
James Hay (1878-1955), 74

James John McArdle (1843-1900), 62
James John McArdle 1843-1900, 64, 65
James McArdle, 62, 63
James McArdle (1843-1900), 63
James McIntosh 1806-1883, 65
James Simmie (1866-1897), 297
James Sinclair (1821-1893), 92, 96, 315
James Sinclair Hay, 73
James Sinclair Hay (1878-1955), 18, 73, 85, 126
James Sinclair Hay (1879-1955), 73, 74, 85, 125, 128
James Sinclair Hay (1908-1982), 126
James Sinclair Hay [II] (1908-1982), 74
Jamesina Alice Harper 1861-1923, 307
Jane (Joan) Tempest, 218
Jane Waterhouse (1557-aft 1607), 209, 215, 244
Jane Waterhouse, nee Waterton, 218
Jane Waterton, 209, 210, 211, 217, 218, 234, 235
Jane Waterton 1557-aft 1607, 234
Janet “Jessie” Trewick (1853-1941) (nee Simmie), 99
Janet Aberline (1866-1954), 297
Janet and Thomas Trewick, 296
Janet Louisa Balding (1891-1979), 296, 299, 300
Janet Louise Parsons (1891-1979), nee Balding, 300
Janet Niven, 95
Janet Niven (1902-1974), 95
Janet Penny (1861-), 298
Janet Simmie (1853-1941)., 297
Janet Trewick (1853-1922), 295
Janet Trewick (1853-1941), nee Simmie, 295
Janet Trewick, (1853-1941), nee Simmie, 299
Janet Trewick, nee Simmie, 299
Janice Fay Legge, 292
Jason Peter Matheson, 158
Jazmyn Anne Hay (2006-), 53, 56
Jazmyn Hay, 53
Jemima Inglis Sinclair (1865-1869), 96
Jemma Jane Hallifax, nee Warmington, 174
Jillian Sylvia “Jill” Moore 1953-2019, 307
Joan (Jane) Tempest, 220
Joan de Burgh, 243
Joan Frances Bowers (1930–2002), 31
Joan Goushall 1401-1466, 234
Joan Tempest, 218, 219
Joan Waterton, 220
Jocelyn Percy, 220
Johanni de Hastings, 257
John “Arthur” Irons (1864-1942), 294
John and Liz Guest, 65, 72
John Clifford Jarvis, 74, 126
John Edmund Campbell Annesley (1925-), 43
John Guest, 3
John Hallifax (1647-77), 207
John Hay from 1845-1849, Surgeon and Oculist, 118
John Hay from 1845-1849, Weaver Street, Grocer, 118
John Hay from 1849-1854, Wine and Spirits Merchant, 118
John Hay from 1851-1863, Contractor and Victualler, 118
John Hay from 1859-1861 (Home, 11 Kent Street), 118
John Hay, 1860-1863, Heating and Ventilating Engineer, 118
John Hay, employed by J.W. Cambell & Co, 118
John Hay, from 1850-1858 (Commission Agent), 118
John Henry Simmie 1931-2007, 292
John Holman Hay (1782-1853) senior, Chief Clerk to the Admiralty, 119
John Howard, 50
John J Coombes, 146
John L.R. Guest, 75, 98, 153, 193, 195, 235, 258, 280, 283, 305, 307, 316, 317
John Leeke, 222, 224, 225
John Leeke of Sutton, Derby, 224
John Leeke of Sutton, in the dale of County Derby, 222
John Leonard Halifax, 192
John Leonard Halifax (1933-2015), 187, 188, 189, 190

John Lindsay Robert Guest, 3, 11, 17, 20, 27, 64, 65, 126, 147, 148, 165, 184, 185, 189, 195, 198, 202, 208, 233, 281, 286, 319
John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) of Melbourne, 3
John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-),, 3
John Lindsay Robert Guest 1960-, 64, 65, 208, 233
John Macarthur Simmie (1899-1958), 292
John Mclean, 305
John Mclean (1764-1834), 305, 317
John Mclean 1764-1834, 305, 307
John Richards, 146
John Richards (1796-1848), 144, 145, 146, 147
John Savage, 225, 226, 228
John Simmie, 79, 85, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 297, 305, 307, 308, 313
John Simmie (1823-1867), 15, 79, 99, 291, 295, 297
John Simmie (1857-1915), 99, 297, 308
John Simmie (1861-1950), 291, 292, 293
John Simmie 1857-1915, 307
John Simmie Hay, 79, 85
John Stuart Simmie (1953-), 292
John Waterton, 244, 245, 247
John William Hay, 119, 120, 122, 123
John William Hay (1824-1857), 119
John, King of England, 233
Jonathon Rodney Wherry, 188
Joseph Hallifax, 182
Joseph Jenkins, 136, 137, 139
Jospeh Jenkins, 140
Judith of Balvaria, Empress and Queen of the Franks., 284
Julia Hallifax, 182
Juliane de Leybourne, 258
June Eva Rose Jarvis (1930-1980) nee Hay, 126
June Halifax (1937-), (nee Johansen), 187

K

Katheine R Annesley (1920-2014) (nee McIntyre), 43
Katherine Savage, 232
Katherine Savage, nee Stanley, 225
Katherine Stanley, 228, 234
Kathleen Morgan, 202
Kathrine Stanley, 225
Keith, 157, 166, 167, 168, 185
Keith and Shirley Lillee, 166
Keith Lillee, 157, 166, 167, 168
Keith Lillee (1926-2012), 157, 167, 168
Kevin Angus Fred Hay, 31
Kevin Angus Frederick Hay, 31
Kevin Rudd, 50
King Ceawlin of Gueissme, 283
King Charles I (the Great – Charlemagne), 284
King Charles III, 287
King David I, 273, 275
King David I of Scotland, 273, 275
King Goejong, 178
King Henry I of Germany, 284
King James I, 220

L

Lady Katherine Savage, 225
Laura Lillee, 157
Laura Ruddle, 157
Lauren Petersen, 32
Lee, 157, 202
Len, 172
Leonard, 167, 169, 170, 172, 173, 174, 187, 191, 192, 193
Leonard Gordon Hallifax, 167, 169, 172, 192, 193
Lesley June Johansen, 187
Leslie Bowers (1929–1962), 31
Leslie Frank Hallifax, 172
Leslie Fredk Hall McArdle (1901-1902), 62
Levi Guest, 65

Levi John Guest, 5, 15, 98, 235, 258, 280
Lieutenant John Hay (1827-1916), 118, 119
Lilian “Lilly” Hallifax, 172
Lillee, 5, 156, 157, 158, 161, 162, 163, 165, 166, 167, 168, 184, 189, 192, 195, 198, 199, 200, 233
Linda Crews, 35
Linda Crews (1946-), 35
Linda Hay (1946-) (nee Crews), 45
Linda Lillee, 158
Lister, 209, 210, 212
Lister John, M.A, 209
Lister, J, 209
Lord Harris, 119
Lord Molins, 283
Louis I (the Pious), King of France, 284
Louis the Pious, King of France,, 284
Louisa Perry of Melbourne, 298
Louise Perry, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 302, 303, 308
Louise Perry of Melbourne, 296, 298
Lucy Jane McIntosh (1849-1889), 62
Lucy Jane Mcintosh 1849-1889, 65
Lucy McIntosh, 62, 63

M

Mac Aodhagáin, 283
Malcolm III of Scotland, 273, 277
Malcolm III of Scotland (1031-1093), 277
Marco Polo, 99
Margaret Bowers (1943–1977), 31
Margaret Canmore, 279
Margaret of Scotland, 278
Margaret of Wessex, 273, 277, 278
Margaret of Wessex (1045-1093), 277
Maria Blakeley, 174, 175
Maria Blakeley’s, 175
Mary Ann Irons (1863-1959) nee Simmie, 294
Mary Ann Irons (1863-1959), nee Simmie, 295
Mary Ann Simmie (1863-1959) (Ann Simmie, 1863-1959), 294
Mary de Burgh, 253
Mary de Grey, 251, 252, 253
Mary Hallifax, 182
Mary Simpson Robinson (1881-1950), nee Ferguson, 94
Mary Simpson Robinson Sinclair (1881-1950), nee Ferguson, 94
Mary Veronica "Bonnie" McArdle (Robertson) (1922-2008), 62
Matherson, 5
Matilda of Flanders, 233, 283
Maud Herbert, 220
Melanie Anne Dziuba (1981-), 49
Melanie Anne Hay (1981-), nee Dziuba, 54
Melbourne, 3
Melissa Hamblin, 307
Messrs Collier and Barry, 313
Michael “Mike” Hamblin, 307
Michael “Mike” Hamlin (1952-), 309
Michael Hamblin, 307
Michael John Hay, 27, 31
Michael John Hay (29th October 1961 – 26th November 1999), 31
Michelle Hanley, 27
Mick Malone, 35
Mike and Jill Hamblin, 309
Mike Hamblin, 89, 307, 308, 309, 310
Mitchell Jason Guest, 17, 27
Mitchell Jason Guest (1973-)., 17
Molly Katelyn Annesley (2014-), 42
Mr Grant Bavister, 11
Mr Irons, 166
Mr Roberte Watterhouse, 209
Ms 7D14/45, 199, 202, 209
Muriel, 219, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 228, 234, 235
Muriel Leeke, 221, 222, 223, 232, 234
Muriel Waterton, 219, 221, 224, 235, 278

N

N M Herbert, 202
Nathalia Orsino (nee Mirabella), 68
Newton, 203
Newton, R, 203
Nic Brokenshaw, 179
Noah Jack Hay (2009-), 54
Noah Jack Hay (2009-)., 317
Norma Halifax, 192
Norma Irene Hay (1932-2021), 15, 20
Norma Irene Hay 1932-2021, 64, 65, 208
Norman d'Adreci, 211
Norroy king of arms, 237

O

Oram, R, 273

P

Patricia "Pat" McArdle (–1960), 62
Patricia Mary Bowers (1934–?), 31
Patrick Robert Ian Annesley (1955-), 41
Paul, 5, 17, 41, 149, 150, 153, 155, 176, 184, 192, 269, 276, 277
Peter (Pierre) Orsino, 68
Phyllis Emily Hallifax, 172
Pine, L.G, 258
Powell, 5, 188, 192
Prince de Courtenay, 283
Prince Henry, 273
Princess Elizabeth Plantagenet, 233, 234
Princess of Leinster, 283
Professor Turi King, 11

Q

Queen of England, 283

R

R B Pugh, 202
R.J. Little, 191
Rachael Lillee, 158
Ray Opie, 35
Raymond Matheson, 158
Rear Admiral John Hay (Lord Hay of Tweeddale and Yester (1793-1851), 118
Rector Thomas Wye, 207
Reginald Vaughan "Reggie" McArdle (1912-1968), 62
Rev. Robt. Waterhouse Hallifax, Vicar of Springthrorp, 208
Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838), 198, 199, 200, 207
Reverend Robert Hallifax 1761-1838 of Standish Gloucestershire,, 198
Reverend Robert Hallifax 1761-1838, M.A. of Magdalen College, Oxford, 235
Reverend Robert Waterhouse Hallifax, 209
Richard and Constance, 243, 245
Richard de Clare, 283
Richard Inglis Sinclair (1861-1863), 96
Richard Miroslaw Dziuba (1953-), 49
Richard Styles, Bailiff of Cheltenham, Gloucestershire, England, 5
Richard Tempest, 219
Richard Waterton, 241, 243, 244, 245
Richards, 131, 146
Richardson, D, 257
Ricky Graham Guest, 17, 27
Ricky Graham Guest (1963-), 17
Riley Alexander Hay (2008-), 51, 56
Rob Guest (1982-), 72
Robert Glover, 244
Robert Glover (1580), 225
Robert Guest, 3
Robert Hallifax, 197, 198, 201, 202, 204, 205, 207, 209, 210
Robert Hallifax (1586-1629) (Waterhouse), 210
Robert Hallifax (1761-1838), 201, 205, 207
Robert Hallifax 1586-1628, 235
Robert Hay, 78, 79

Robert Hay, Wood Carver, 79
Robert John Guest, 3, 5, 15, 65, 98, 235, 258
Robert John Guest (1982-), 3
Robert John Guest (1982-) of Melbourne, 3
Robert Louis Stevenson, 45
Robert McArdle (twin of Emily) (1909-1909), 62
Robert Neff, 176
Robert Waterhouse, 213
Robert Waterhouse (1544-1598) an MP, Barrister, JP, and Reader of Inner Temple of Shibden Hall, Yorkshire, 210
Robert Waterhouse, Esq, 217
Robert Waterton, 222, 237, 239, 241
Robt. Waterhouse Hallifax, Esq, 208
Rodney George Wherry, 188
Roy Sandars, 24
Roy Victor John Sandars, 62
Rupert James Clarke (1882-1954), 126
Ruth Katherine Annesley (1984-), 42

S

Salvatore Orsino, 68
Samuel Hallifax, 202
Samuel Hallifax, Bishop, 202
Sarah Hallifax, 198, 204
Sarah Maria, 155, 184, 185
Sarah Maria Gaze, 155, 185
Sarah Maria Hallifax (1791-1875), 156, 168, 195
Sarah Sentence, 205
Sebastiano Mirabella, 15, 70
Sebastiano Orsino (1843-1934), 67, 68, 69, 70, 71
Shirley, 157, 166, 167, 169, 192, 193
Shirley Doris Lillee, 157, 173, 192
Shirley Doris Lillee (1929-2014), 157, 173, 192
Simon Fraser, 312, 313, 314
Sir Adam Hay (1795-1867), 121, 122
Sir Cotton Gargrave, 218
Sir Gilbert Waterhouse, 213
Sir Gilbert Waterhouse I, 283
Sir John [Robert] Waterton [mine], 237
Sir John "Robert" Waterton, 237
Sir John de Burgh, 249, 251, 252, 253
Sir John Robert Waterton, 239
Sir John Savage, 224, 225, 228
Sir John Waterton, 237
Sir Richard Tempest, 218
Sir Robert Goushill, 229, 230, 231, 232
Sir Robert Waterhouse, 209, 210, 212
Sir Robert Waterhouse (1544-1598) of Shibden Hall, Halifax, 212
Sir Robert Waterhouse (1544-1598) of Shibden Hall, West Yorkshire, MP, 209
Sir Robert Waterhouse (MP), 210, 211
Sir Robert Waterhouse (MP) (1544-1598), 211
Sir Robert Waterton, 221, 239, 240
Sir Thomas Stanley (Lord Stanley), 228
Sir Thomas Waterton (1501-1558) of Walton Sandal, Yorkshire, 221
Sir Thomas Waterton [I] (1501-1558), 218, 219
Sir Thomas Waterton [II], Esq (1526-1575), MP and Lawyer, 216
Sir Thomas Waterton I, 218
Sir Thomas Waterton I (1501-1558), 219, 220
Sir Thomas Waterton I -1558, 234
Sir Thomas Waterton II Esq, 218
Sir Thomas Waterton II, Esq 1526-1575, 212
Sir Thomas Waterton, Esq II 1526-1575, 234
Sir Thomas Woodcock, 11
Sir William Assenhull, 243
Sophie Eva Rose Clarke (1909–1993), 74, 126
Stanley Edward Hallifax, 172
Stella Jayne Lillee, 157
Stonehouse, 249
Susan Hay, 27
Susan Paterson (nee Hay), 31

T

Tahnee Paterson, 32
Tamara Hamblin, 307
Terry Nolene Landt (1965-), 17
Terry Norlene Guest, 27
Terry Norlene Landt (1965-), nee Guest, 17
Thomas Alexander Hay (1896-1970), 85
Thomas Bowers (1932–1977), 31
Thomas de Burgh, 247, 248, 251, 252
Thomas E Hallifax, 182
Thomas Edward Hallifax, 180, 183, 184
Thomas Edward Hallifax (1819-1893), 184, 195
Thomas Edward New Hallifax, 174, 175, 176, 179, 181, 183
Thomas Edward New Hallifax (1842–1908), 174
Thomas Geste, 283
Thomas Hallifax 1621-1676, 235
Thomas Hallifax 1653-1711, 235
Thomas Hallifax 1717-1789, 235
Thomas Mathew Trewick, 299
Thomas New Hallifax, 155, 183, 184, 185, 196, 197
Thomas New Hallifax (1789-1835), 155, 196
Thomas New Hallifax 1789-1835, 185, 235
Thomas New Hallifax, of Chancery-Lane, London, solicitor, esquire, 195
Thomas Walker Sinclair (1876-1932), M.D, 94
Thomas Waterton [II], Esq (1526-1575),, 215
Thomas Waterton II, Esq (1526-1575), 223, 224
Thomas Waterton II, Esq's, 218
Thomas Waterton of Walton and Sandal,, 212
Thomas, Lord Stanley, 228, 229
Tobias Matheson, 158
Tom Licence, 287
Trevor John Lillee, 167
Trevor John Lillee (1950-2013), 158
Trevor Lillee, 158

V

Vanessa "Ness" Annesley (1973-) nee Hay, 45
Vanessa Joanne Hay, 27, 37, 41
Vanessa Joanne Hay (1973-), 41
Veronica Denise "Nesse" Bowers (25th February 1939 - 28th August 1998), 31
Vicki Hanley, 27
Vincent "Vince" McArdle (1924-1995), 62
Violet, 73, 74, 125, 126
Violet Ethel Hallifax, 73
Violet Ethel Hallifax (1882-1955), 73, 125, 126
Violet Ethel Hallifax 1882-1955, 208
Violet Ethel Hay, 125
Violet Ethel Hay (1882-1955), nee Hallifax, 82, 129

W

Wally and Laurie Dziuba, 55
Wayne Hanley, 27
Wendy Marlene Guest, 27
Wendy Marlene Share (1958-), 17
Wendy Marlene Share (1958-), nee Guest, 17
William and Isabella Hay, 85
William and Isabella Hay, nee Sinclair, 85
William Andrew Gray (1950-), 301
William de Bohun, 234
William de Huntingfield, 258
William de Valence, 258
William Flower, 237, 239
William Hallifax, 155
William Hallifax 1696, 235
William Hallifax Hay (1902-1902), 73, 126
William Hallifax Hay (1902-1902)., 126
William Hallifax Hay, born 1902, died 4th December 1902, 128
William Hay (1850-1926), 18, 30, 77, 78, 79, 82, 84, 86, 96, 126, 297, 311, 319
William Hay (Simmie) (1850-1926), 99, 107

William Hay 1850-1926, 98
William Hay/Simmie (1850-1926), 77, 291, 311, 315, 316
William Hay's (1850-1926), 104, 126
William Herbert, 220
William Herbert, 3rd Earl of Pembroke, 220
William I, 221, 233, 283
William I, King of England, 283
William I, King of England 1028-1087, 233
William Pearson MLA, 136
William Simmie, 99, 295
William Simmie (1825-1901), 295, 305, 307
William Simmie (1827-1901), 297
William Simmie 1825-1901, 305, 307
William Simmie/Hay (1850-1926), 299, 317
William Sinclair, 97
William Sinclair (1818-1892), 94
William the Conqueror, 211
Wladislav "Wally" Dziuba and Leokadia "Laurie" Zolnier, 55

This book, otherwise known as Volume II, resulted from restoration of the Guest family records beyond the researcher's mother. The researcher, John Lindsay Robert Guest (1960-) of Melbourne was joined by his cousins be degree, Dennis Keith Lillee (1949-), M.B.E., A.M. and Darren John Halifax (1965-), B.A to reconcile all lineal family members they enjoyed, who are all offspring of Reverend Robert Hallifax (1761-1838), M.A. of Magdalen College, Oxford, England known to the College of Arms, Hallifax registered pedigree, Ms 7D14/45, 16th December, 1788.

The record Ms 7D14/45 fell into disrepair as family members migrated to Australia and was updated on the 31st March 2023 after John, Dennis and Darren submitted documents to His Royal Highness.

For the curious, beyond Hallifax registered pedigree, Ms 7D14/45 and prior to the year 1586, awaits a more ancient lineal ancestry, whereby working with the Crown's authorities in England the memories of them, female and male are further restored showing these ancient bloodlines are extant in Australia.

JOHN GUEST has a Master of Business, Graduate Diploma Industrial Relations & Human Resource Management, a Bachelor of Education, and a Bachelor of Arts degree.

Together with his wife ELIZABETH ELLEN GUEST, over the past 26 years family held documents and those issued by the Crown's authorities have been gathered and submitted in this book. Working with present family representatives in Australia, New Zealand, Ireland, Canada, USA and England, and authorities the Crown relies, a significant amount of the Guest maternal family history and family membership was reconciled and restored.

The first of his maternal lineal ancestors to call Australia home are, Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) and his wife, Harriet Hallifax (1828-1863), nee Richards. Harriet is the daughter of Captain John Richards (1796-1848) of the Great Kapunda Copper Mine in Burra Burra, South Australia and Amy Richards (1798-1883), nee Eddy.

John and Amy Richards, the author's 4th great grandparents, migrated with their adult children including Harriet aboard the ship Barque Medway arriving from the United Kingdom, docking at Port Adelaide on the 27th July, 1846. They, along with other family members Baldock, are recognised by the Pioneers Association of South Australia (PASA) as amongst the founding families of the free colony.

Ambrose William Hallifax (1821-1874) bloodline is a feature of this book. He married Harried in Adelaide on the 16th October 1849. He is the grandson of Reverend Hallifax (1761-1838), M.A. of Magdalen College, Oxford, who is known to the College of Arms Hallifax pedigree Ms 7D14/45 registered on 16th December 1788, and recently updated through this research on 31st December, 2023.

Ambrose's older brother, Thomas Edward Hallifax (1819-1893) is Dennis Lillee and Darren Halifax's 3rd great grandfather.

Darren bears the Hallifax (Halifax) patronymic known to the College of Arms record Ms 7D14/45 and is made the families present Hallifax representative.